NEW WORLD WAR

Revolutionary Methods
for
Political Control

Second Edition

Mark M. Rich

Table of Contents

Peer Review & Contributions

Peer Review

This book was not properly peer reviewed. To begin with, because some of these subjects are emerging or uncommon specialties, there were not many experts available. Furthermore, much of the available material pertaining to some subjects, such as nonlethal weapons, was produced by those with connections to the military/financial elite. Other possible reviewers could not be located. This resulted in a limited number of potential contacts.

Out of the 30 or so people that I contacted, 15 didn't respond. About 6 responded but declined to review the material. Several more agreed to review my work, but never did. Ultimately, only 5 people reviewed some of the material, during which time there were delays and sporadic responses to my messages. The result was a peer review process that I'd consider to be incomplete. The editing process was also delayed and interfered with. This occurred with my previous book, and will probably happen with all future publications.

Contributions

This book is dedicated to Claire L. Rich.

Volume I

Current Political Situation

Overview

In this book I'll be explaining a portion of a concealed system of control that exists in our society. To do this, I'll be providing evidence that some prominent groups, which are considered to be humanitarian in nature and which influence the direction our society, are involved in repugnant activities that are extremely destructive to humanity in their pursuit of power.

A global revolution is now taking place to accomplish this, which these groups are controlling. It includes new technology and tactics that are being used on civilians such as psychological operations, as well as electromagnetic and biological weapons.

This revolution also contains interconnected events including: a revolution in military affairs, scientific methods of controlling the public, documented governmental overthrows, an onslaught of repressive legislation aimed at reducing civil liberties, and an expansion of enemies which allows for the targeting of civilians.

In some cases we'll see the same groups and individuals surfacing over and over again, involved in these events. At a glance, these activities, which have occurred over a period of decades, might seem to be unconnected. But upon closer inspection we'll find that they are part of the same process. When viewed within the larger context of this global revolution, itself, caused by a quest for power by a wealthy few, they begin to make sense.

One of the biggest problems that most people have when they're told that this is occurring is understanding why. Why would a group spend an unlimited amount of resources, effort, and time, over a period of at least decades to consolidate control of the planet? Why would they be pursing a goal that most people would consider unnecessary? And, how could they have kept this concealed for so long?

In order to understand this, as well as how a group can appear to be humanitarian but in fact be vigorously working in multiple areas of society for the single purpose of achieving control, it will be necessary to examine the subject of psychopathy.

In the form of the pharmaceutical complex they influence the medical industry, US government, mainstream media, patient advocacy groups, and organized psychiatry. This has allowed them to disseminate massive propaganda to promote phony mental illnesses to provide complete cover for their policies.

The institutions which influence the direction of our society, which they absolutely control, will regard books like this as conspiracy theories. We're told by them that such people don't exist … such things don't exist in our world. However, I'll provide many examples, including historical facts, which will show that this view is illogical.

In some cases I've used independent media sources. As an example, the online encyclopedia *Wikipedia* is considered by some to be less accurate than more traditional reference guides. However, I've personally found it to be mostly accurate on basic subjects.

Wikipedia is therefore used as a supplemental source, typically for details and information that are already accepted by the general public. Other sources are derived from independent media, which most researchers who are aware of the current state of affairs would probably consider to be accurate.

However, a majority of the evidence is from official sources. This is particularly the case with subject areas and information that are not generally known and may be difficult to believe.

These sources consist of military and government articles, films, and congressional committee reports. They also include information from government advisory groups, books, mainstream media reports, expert testimonies, and speeches.

For simplification purposes I'll use plain English in my writing. So my writing style will include violations of grammatical codes. For instance, I'll often write that an article or book mentioned something, when in reality it is the author who made the remark. Or, rather than use the terms *he/his* or *she/hers* I'll use the word *their*.

One of my goals is to inform you that these wealthy interests exist and are obsessed with achieving power over the entire population of the planet. At times I'll be repeating the same message in order to get my point across. I could have approached writing this book from the perspective of separating my personal experience from my research. It could be argued that such an approach is necessary in order to maintain a strict or scientific outlook.

I have chosen not to do that. It is my opinion that such experience brings a critical insight into a matter. It has been said that there is no substitute for direct experience. Therefore, in addition to the sourced evidence and regular footnotes, I'll include notes of my interpretation of my experience as a targeted individual. Rather than repeatedly use phrases such as "I've noticed," "In my experience," or "It seems to me," in some instances I'll simply make my point.

This is a subject that most people would probably rather avoid. Writing this book has at times resulted in feelings of fear and revulsion. But, beyond that, it has ultimately been inspiring, maybe even liberating.

Some subjects are difficult to explain and understand, partially because words don't exist which adequately explain them, and our worldview does not contain concepts which allow us to easily interpret them. So I have done my best to explain something which has properties that exist beyond the bounds of language.

Thank You,

Mark M. Rich

Introduction

In this volume we'll discover that confirmed monsters exist in our society who attack people at will. They're referred to as *psychopaths*. They have been described as *intraspecies predators* with no conscience that have a need for absolute power over others.

Some of them form associations to establish control over societies. They accomplish this by concealing their goal of achieving power with ideas of a better world to deceive people into supporting their activities. At the same time, they use terror to traumatize people into accepting laws which reduce their civil liberties.

Evidence will show that several closely connected groups have been directing a global revolution to consolidate control of the planet. This involves changing the governing structures of the various countries and merging them into a single world government.

This global revolution contains a *revolution in military affairs* which is characterized by a drastic change in the methods of warfare. Particularly, it is a transition from major theater wars to low-intensity conflict. And more specifically, it is defined by a targeting of groups and individuals.

This new war-form brings with it new weapons and tactics to be used on civilians. They include high-powered microwaves and lasers, which the public is told are nonlethal weapons, as well as psychological operations. These new weapons, and the military revolution which they're part of, are helping to accomplish this planetary revolution.

The purpose of the revolution is to make the world a better place. And the new weapons will save lives, we're told. Military and civilian experts in areas of history, military affairs, and nonlethal weapons are used to promote the revolution and the accompanying weapons to the public. These leading experts also infer that the groups which are facilitating this transition, and which will be in control of the planet (if it is ever completed), have only the best of intentions for humanity.

To many in the world, America has been a symbol of freedom. But evidence will be provided which illustrates that it no longer exists as it did. As part of this global revolution its governing structure has been infiltrated by people of wealth who now run it. We'll notice, however, that these military and civilian leaders repeatedly praise the symbol, and warn that it is in danger and must be protected. As we'll see, their solution is an aggressive targeting of civilians with this new technology.

Not only is the solution that these experts offer completely destructive to the values that the symbol once represented, but the values that we're told are in danger no longer exist. It will become obvious to some readers that these experts are deliberately misleading their audience.

We'll also learn how dictators in the past have carried out attacks against their civilian populations in order to pass repressive laws. We'll then examine some recent tragic events that have resulted in arrangements which further this political agenda. Other material presented will make it clear that, despite the most humanitarian intentions professed by the groups guiding this revolution, they are psychopathic and intend to reduce the population of the planet to a state of neo-slavery.

The true nature of this revolution will be further revealed in Volume II where we'll see examples of ongoing efforts to remove civil liberties and expand the definition of the enemy. Documentation will be given which suggests that elected officials, particularly the US Congress, are aware that this is occurring, are complicit in the process, and are rewarded for their participation. It will be shown that initiatives by Congress are helping the financial elite accomplish their ultimate goal.

Having established a profile of the people steering this revolution and the current state of affairs will give us a better understanding of how the technology will really be used and who it will be used on. Then in Volume III we'll have a closer look at the weapons of the new war.

How the wealthy elite who are controlling this have been able to get away with attacking citizens with this technology for decades will be revealed in Volume IV.

Revolution in Warfare
Basic Theory

The new weapons and tactics, which will be discussed here and expanded upon in Volume III, are part of a revolution in warfare. There are various definitions of what constitutes a revolution in warfare.

Some authors have assigned the labels such as a *revolution in military affairs (RMA)* or *fourth generation warfare (4GW)*. Authors differ in their definitions of RMAs, the number of them that have occurred, and their relationship to society.

The basic theory is that throughout history warfare has developed mostly in an evolutionary manner. However, occasionally, ideas or inventions caused fast and drastic changes. These changes not only affected the application of military force, but changed the larger geopolitical arena to the advantage of those who mastered the technology.

There are two types of RMAs. The first kind is driven by technology and is what most people think of as an RMA. They are referred to more accurately as *military technical revolutions (MTR)*. Some call them small revolutions. An MTR is the use of new technology on existing strategies of warfare. Examples of this include the invention of gunpowder, the airplane, the submarine, and the Intercontinental Ballistic Missile (ICBM).

Another type, which some suggest is a true RMA, includes an MTR, as well as changes in the organizational structure, strategy, ideology, and training of the military. This kind of RMA changes not just the way wars are fought, but is accompanied by profound changes in society, in areas such as diplomacy, politics, economy, business, etc. Some wars, which occurred during the industrial revolution, such as the Napoleonic Wars, are examples of this.

Warfare is said by some to have been revolutionized when Alexander the Great combined infantry and cavalry forces. Some say the Roman army's use of arrows, staffs, shields, and precise formations against the more numerous barbarian hordes was an RMA.

The tactic of using a spear on horseback, invented in the 1500s, which joined the power of the horse with the thrust of the spear, is claimed by some to have been an RMA. The invention of gunpowder during the late Middle Ages, which replaced swords and bows, was another.

The German Blitzkrieg, which used radios in tanks and planes to coordinate them in a highly maneuverable way, was an RMA according to some.

RMAs linked to the industrial revolution include the Napoleonic Wars, which for the first time used the resources of the industrializing nations to equip mass armies, as well as the American Civil War, which used the railroad and telegraph to extend mobility, communications, and logistics.

The invention of ICBMs, which allowed for the destruction of massive sections of a country, affecting not just its military, but its economy, social, and political system, is considered by some to have been an RMA.

But the military revolutions we're concerned with here are ones connected to massive societal changes. So to simplify matters, for the purpose of this study there have so far been two great military revolutions, both of which have been caused by larger societal changes.[1] Military revolutions occur when changes are made in technology, strategy, organizational structure, training, ideology, tactics, and other areas of the military, as well as society itself.

---

[1] In their book *War and Anti-War* Alvin and Heidi Toffler state that there have been only two major ones, with the third having just begun. The book *In Athena's Camp: Preparing for Conflict in the Information Age*, authored by David Ronfeldt and John Arquilla and published by the RAND Corporation, indicates there have been four so far, with a fifth underway. 4GW advocates also suggest that four have occurred, with a fifth emerging. See the book *The Sling and the Stone: On War in the 21st Century*, and the article *Fourth Generation Warfare Evolves, Fifth Emerges*, both by Colonel Thomas X. Hammes, USMC.

Revolutions, generally speaking, occur when the entire structure of a society changes. This includes civil institutions, families, culture, value systems, and technology. This societal revolution causes an RMA. A true military revolution occurs only when an entire society is transformed at every level, which then compels the armed forces to undergo a massive change. This societal change causes the true military revolution, which results in a mostly simultaneous change in technology, organization, strategy, tactics, training, ideology, and logistics.[2]

This change in the military, which is caused by the larger societal change, transforms the relationships between the military, the economy, and society. This is a profound revolution that rarely happens. This has occurred only twice in history. The third one is now beginning.

Although military theorists differ in their beliefs regarding these RMAs, they all agree one is now taking place. It is the biggest in our planet's history and will massively shift the geopolitical structure. According to official sources, it will result in the abolishment of the nation-state. Nonlethal weapons, including directed-energy weapons and psychological operations, are said to be at the center of this revolution.

Wave Theory

To understand the larger context in which this RMA is occurring, the *wave theory* of global change promoted by futurists Alvin and Heidi Toffler will be instructive. Even if you don't agree with their ideas, because of the influence of their work on world leaders and the accuracy of their predictions, it will be helpful to examine their basic theory.

Heidi has been an adjunct professor at the Institute for National Strategic Studies at the National Defense University in Washington D.C. She has multiple honorary doctorates and has served on the Advisory Board of the US Committee for the United Nations Development Fund for Women. Alvin has served as a visiting scholar at the Russell Sage Foundation, and visiting professor at Cornell University. He has multiple honorary degrees. He has served on the Advisory Council of the US Comptroller-General and is a member of the International Institute for Strategic Studies.

In the early 1980s Alvin's book, *The Third Wave,* became the interest of generals in the US military who suggested it to high-ranking military personnel under their command. Their books, *War and Anti-War*, *Powershift*, and particularly, *The Third Wave*, have influenced presidents, prime ministers, business leaders, educators, psychologists, and social scientists. With great accuracy, they have been able to predict future trends in our society, in areas such as economics, social psychology, military affairs, politics, pop culture, religion, etc.

According to Alvin Toffler's wave theory, there have been several revolutionary changes that have occurred globally. They include the agricultural revolution, the industrial revolution, and the current information/technological revolution. These waves of change have moved at different speeds.

When they occur, they cause turbulent forces that affect our planet in areas of work, family, economy, politics, ideologies, etc. In the case of the Third Wave, it is the end of industrialism and the rise of a new civilization. The disastrous forces that accompany these waves may appear to be unconnected, but are in fact part of the larger event.

Understanding these revolutionary waves is the secret to making sense of the conflicts spanning many areas which we see around us, says Toffler. When we understand the wave theory, most of these seemingly senseless and separate events reveal themselves as part of the same pattern, and things become comprehensible.

---

2   There are different schools of thought regarding whether these RMAs cause the larger societal changes or are caused by them.

The First Wave occurred sometime around 8000 B.C. It began to lose momentum between 1650 and 1750 A.D., and almost came to a halt in the mid-1900s. First Wave civilizations were attached to the land. They were part of the agricultural revolution, regardless of their language, religion, or belief system.

Most soldiers were farmers who volunteered for combat but also needed to run their farms. Some of them were paid with land for their services. Prior to the First Wave, most people lived in small migratory groups and they fed themselves by hunting, foraging, fishing, and herding. Then, about 10 thousand years ago the agricultural revolution occurred and slowly moved across the planet offering a new way of life. This was the First Wave. It is almost finished. Only a few tribal populations remain to be influenced by agriculture.

Before the First Wave lost momentum, the industrial revolution started in Europe, which unleashed the Second Wave of planetary change. This Wave moved more rapidly than the first across continents. When it occurred, two distinct changes were taking place simultaneously at different speeds.

The Second Wave began somewhere in the range of 1650 to 1750 A.D. and produced an industrialized civilization which dominated the planet until it also lost momentum. It arrived at different speeds in industrialized nations such as Japan, Britain, France, Sweden, Germany, and the Soviet Union. In America it peaked during the 1950s.

Industrialism included assembly lines, factories, new social systems and family types, machinery, vehicles, appliances, mass media, mass production, mass destruction, public transportation, etc. Industrialism was a change in economic, political, and social systems, as well as a way of life. It gave rise to the nation-state and its related mentality. At this time, the Second Wave has already revolutionized Europe and North America in just a few centuries and it continues to spread. It has not yet been completed but has lost momentum.

The Third Wave began in the late 1970s. It is basically information, technology, electronics, education, training, and services. But mostly it is information and technology. The Third Wave is gaining momentum and will continue to occur over the course of many decades. Toffler says it is the equivalent of the *technetronic age* described in Zbigniew Brzezinski's book, *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era*.

So, many countries are feeling the simultaneous impact of two or even three separate waves moving at different speeds with various forces behind them. Each time one of these massive global changes has happened there has been a collision of societies, or what some refer to as a *clash of civilizations*. This includes wars, rebellions, uprisings, overthrows, strikes, and political turmoil. When this occurs, one civilization relies on an older war-form than another.

It has been suggested that the industrialized North defeated the more agrarian South during the Civil War in the US because of this. A better example of this clash would be when the Meiji Revolution in 1868 caused the industrial revolution in Japan, during which time the Samurai were replaced by drafted soldiers. This included new weapons which were used during the 1877 Satsuma Rebellion when the Samurai made their last stand against the army of the Emperor.

The Emperor's force included some Samurai as well as draftees armed with Gatling guns, mortars, and rifles. Here, one side relied on a single war-form while the other combined them. The colonial wars, which were waged during the 1800s and early 1900s, are another example. The Second Wave industrial elites of Europe, North America, and Japan fought First Wave agrarian civilizations in Africa, Asia, and elsewhere.

By conquering these lands the elites gained control over much of the planet. Cecil Rhodes, for instance, seized vast territories in South Africa from tribal groups. During these conflicts the forces of the industrial elites were equipped with machine guns while the tribal groups used edged weapons.

However, they were not successful in conquering these territories just because of the new technology, but because they were the result of a Second Wave society. They were also better trained, systematically organized, and had other advantages. They were fighting a Second Wave War while their adversaries were using a First Wave war-form. They represented a clash of civilizations, a different way of making wealth, and their militaries reflected that clash.

This occurred in almost every country undergoing industrialization. And, although these conflicts were seemingly unconnected, they were all part of the same global movement. The Second Wave is instructive to understanding the conflict now taking place. Because, according to Toffler, ideologies associated with the Second Wave are the primary obstacles to the creation of a new civilization.

Introduction to the New War

Fundamental changes in the way the US wages warfare are now occurring which has intellectual, social, technological, ideological, organizational, and operational significance. A re-organization is happening in the military which is centered on the use of this technology.

It includes autonomous robots, tiny robots less than a millimeter in size, nanotechnology, the use of satellites, advanced forms of communication, self-producing intelligent sensors only a few nanometers in size, biotechnology, and nonlethal weapons.

It also consists of sophisticated remote sensors for surveillance, long-range precision strike weapons, advanced C4ISR systems, UAVs, and intelligence networks, as well as autonomous wide-range, high-speed collection devices capable of identifying specific targets and providing near-real-time information on an adversary. These intelligence systems are terrestrial, aerial, and space-based.

In this new type of warfare, small-scale battles will be common as governments find it more cost effective compared to large conventional forces. Small units armed with advanced weapons that offer precision strike capabilities at great distances will be used.

The DOD's *Quadrennial Defense Review Report* of 2006 says that complex covert wars of long-duration will be waged by Special Forces units of the US military and its allies in multiple countries around the world simultaneously. These wars will include persistent surveillance on enemy personnel, global mobility, and rapid strike capabilities.

These small units, which some call *4GW Forces*, act on mission orders to neutralize threats that exist among the civilian population. The *Marine Corps Gazette* described them as "small, highly mobile elements composed of very intelligent soldiers armed with high technology weapons" that "range over wide areas seeking critical targets." These forces are allegedly equipped with advanced surveillance technology which has artificial intelligence. Their targets are mostly civilians.

In 1970 Zbigniew Brzezinski, co-founder of the Trilateral Commission, described that not only was a completely new arsenal of weapons under development, but the concepts of strategy were transforming. He said these new weapons included weather attacks, autonomous warships, chemical and biological weapons, and death rays. According to Brzezinski, this technology could be used for conducting "secret warfare" by a small number of security forces. Some of this technology, including directed-energy weapons, may be used by the US for assassinations under conditions which offer plausible deniability.

Concealed Political Control

The Omega Research Foundation's report to the European Parliament in September of 1998, *An Appraisal of the Technologies of Political Control*, observed that a revolution in military affairs was indeed occurring, and warned that the technology will be used by the security forces of various countries for suppressing internal dissent.

The British Society of Social Responsibility in Science (BSSR) issued a similar alert.[3] The BSSR was founded in May of 1969 in response to the use of biological weapons by the US in Vietnam. In the mid 1970s they conducted research on emerging technology that could be used by the leaders of democratic governments to neutralize their internal enemies. This was described in their 1977 book, *The Technology of Political Control*.

The technology of political control includes the use of advanced scientific techniques and technology to neutralize a state's internal enemies. This type of control is directed mostly at the civilian population. It is not intended to kill but to coerce. It includes advanced methods for monitoring dissent, and devices for controlling protests, as well as new weapons.

The BSSR observed that the history of these military revolutions consists of an uninterrupted process of a small group of ruling elites using new technology to destroy their opposition. This new technology, they predicted, was to be used by the military, the intelligence services, and the police, to isolate and neutralize people who were most likely to lead widespread political protest.

The technology was to be blended into the existing political conditions of liberal democratic nations. Although proponents of the technology would claim that it was more humane than conventional weapons, the underlying motives for its use were not humane.

Instead, it would be used to conceal the level of force being applied. And its use would be covered-up. According to the BSSR, a new group of military strategists, including high-ranking officers and civilian experts on defense subjects, would surface to promote the new technology. These experts would try to convince the public that the technology should be used to counter internal dissent.

To achieve this, the experts would write articles and give speeches on the subject, with the intention of accomplishing several goals. First, they would provide the technical information on how to deal with counterinsurgency. Also, they would influence the military command, the government, the media, and the civilian population to gain their support for this technology.

The writings of these new experts would contain omissions and distortions. The experts would also link actual existing threats with internal dissent to justify the use of the technology on civilians. By these efforts, the experts would prepare society for the use of the technology on civilians to suppress dissent.

Interestingly, in their influential article of July 1994, *The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War*, published by the US Army War College, Steven Metz and James Kievit mentioned that in the early 1990s there had indeed emerged an influential group of military strategists consisting of senior military and civilian leaders, which they described as "visionaries" who were promoting this technology.

Also, says Metz and Kievit, the public's perception of this technology would need to be changed in order to remove significant constraints on its use. According to Metz and Kievit, the American people would not favor the use of the new technology unless they were led to believe that the nation was in danger. The promotional campaigns for this technology basically began in the early 1990s by the lobbying efforts of Janet Morris and John Alexander through the US Global Strategy Council (USGSC).

These individuals still continue to publish books and articles promoting it as part of a *New World Order*. Later studies in the mid to late 1990s would be conducted by the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) to promote its use. Books by the Tofflers, the RAND Corporation, the National Research Council (NRC), and others continue these efforts.

---

3   Although the BSSR declared that these military theorists would originate in Britain, because they mentioned that the technology of political control was to be used globally, it is inferred that similar experts would emerge in other countries, such as the US. This certainly appears to be the case. They also mentioned that the RAND Corporation would be involved.

The Other World
Introduction to Psychopathy

In future chapters we'll explore a pattern of activities exhibited by several groups that have been hyperactively establishing control of the planet, as well as a method known as *problem-reaction-solution* that rulers have used to set up dictatorships.

So, to better understand the ruthless mind-set necessary for such practices it will be helpful to have an understanding of psychopathy. Psychopathy is a character deficiency that includes traits and behaviors such as: unreliability, failure to learn by experience, lack of insight, an absence of delusions or nervousness, superficial charm, charisma, frequent lying, deceitful and manipulative behavior, and a lack of conscience.

Other traits are: a poverty of general emotions, lack of remorse or shame, incapacity for love and empathy, antisocial behavior, frequent need for excitement, an inflated ego, an ability to rationalize destructive behavior, and a need to have power over others.

It is present in about 4% of the population, that is, one in twenty-five people.[1] Psychopaths can be found in every race, culture, profession, and class. The significant amount of damage they cause is common. Other terms that have been used to describe psychopathy include Antisocial Personality Disorder (APD), Conduct Disorder (CD), and sociopathy. APD and CD are used to describe these character types in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders IV*. The term sociopath, although not an actual medical term, is used by some as a substitute for psychopath.

Those who believe the deficiency is caused by environmental factors use the term sociopath, and believers of the biological theory use the term psychopath. Researchers seem to differ regarding traits, terms, and the degree of disturbances that constitute a diagnosis. However, it is generally agreed that these terms are similar. So for the scope of this study they are synonymous.

It is important to note that psychopaths don't simply have a diminished capacity for remorse, empathy, or love, but a complete inability to experience these emotions. They have literally no conscience whatsoever.[2]

A conscience has been described as a need to do right or be good. It leads to feelings of remorse, shame, or guilt when people do things that are against their moral values. It also causes feelings of goodness and integrity when we view our actions as correct. It can be viewed as a result of biological drives that influence people to avoid causing fear and hatred in others. In order to have a conscience, a person must be able to identify themselves with others. They must have empathy.

Cause

The exact cause of psychopathy is unknown. It appears to be the result of environmental or biological factors. It may be hereditary, although this hasn't been confirmed. Some types of brain scans can allegedly detect psychopathy by measuring responses to questions which should trigger emotional reactions. It is usually untreatable and incurable. Therapists will often not work with them due to their pathological lying.

There are social rules that most adults learn to live by and follow without thinking because they're so basic. Human beings automatically trust each other to follow these social rules. They trust that, despite their shortcomings, they're all at least trying to contribute to the human race. However, on a fundamental level, some people are radically different. Researchers describe psychopaths as having an empty hole in their psyche where the most evolved of human functions should be.

In his book *Political Ponerology: A Science on the Nature of Evil Adjusted for Political Purposes*, Dr. Andrew Lobaczewski explains that the reason for this is that these individuals do not have certain information that exists on a basic level, which he refers to as the *instinctive substratum*.

---

1 According to some researchers, there is at least an additional 6% of the population who aren't technically psychopaths, but who exhibit antisocial traits. See the book *Snakes in Suits: When Psychopaths go to Work* by Paul Babiak, PhD, and Robert D. Hare, PhD.

2 Some researchers suggest that some of them have a conscience but can control it more so than normal people.

The instinctive substratum is essentially a set of instructions that is a vital part of the life of individuals and entire societies. It was developed over a period of time as the human species lived in groups. It contains information, wisdom, and particularly, an emotional content that allows people to develop their feelings and social bonds.

The necessity for a social structure and the need to play a worthy role within the structure is encoded at this level. It also has information that counters our self-preservation instinct that compels us to want to contribute to the human race, rather than exclusively to our own personal interests.

This common substratum plays a critical role in linking us to society. It enables us to perceive other people's emotional states. It allows us to detect and understand human customs and moral values. It has allowed civilizations throughout the centuries to create human, social, and moral concepts that are notably similar. Basically, this substratum is critical for the survival of the human species.

Beginning in infancy, it starts to stimulate activities that allow for the development of higher mind functions, and the formation of our character. A more subtle structure is then built upon this substratum as we grow older, eventually becoming an observable part of our personality. This common substratum applies to most normal people.

However, each society has a minority of people who are not normal. This does not include people who are statistically abnormal, such as those with very high intelligence. Instead, it pertains to individuals who are both statistically small in number and who contain an irregular substratum. These individuals can affect millions of others in negative ways. Such individuals are carriers of a substratum which contains gaps regarding emotional information that is responsible for the deficits of higher feelings, as well as abnormalities in psychological, moral, and social concepts.

Upon this irregular substratum, such an individual's character develops. As this happens, character defects develop in conjunction with these gaps. The result of the individual's character formation upon this foundation has been called *psychopathy*.

It is taken for granted and self-evident that underneath it all we're all basically the same. However, it has been suggested that these people are not quite human as we know it. A person carrying a deviation on this level will be more distinguishable among his own race and time-period than a person with a normal substratum living in a different time-period or culture.

The emotional content which these characters lack on this basic level impairs their ability to self-reflect, which is an important part of personal growth. Self-reflection occurs during disintegrative and integrative periods when we undergo changes caused by life events. These are usually uncomfortable periods.

These events cause us to perform internal inspections of our character. During these times, changes are made to our personalities. Errors are corrected. New outlooks are formed. These changes are then integrated into our personality and help us pass through the disintegrative stage.

Positive feelings which we experience after passing through these stages validate our new outlook. We see things differently. The conditions we survived take on a new meaning. It is a type of purification. We achieve a higher level of understanding of the laws of life. We understand ourselves and others better. Basically, we grow.

High-level emotions play an essential role in guiding us through a normal developmental process. They are responsible for the act of self-reflection and serve as confirmation signals that we have successfully completed a stage of growth. The combination of emotions such as empathy, shame, guilt, and remorse, as well as a biological drive to do well, are considered a conscience. The conscience triggers the act of self-reflection.

If the issues that led to the disintegration have not been resolved because the uncomfortable feelings were repressed, the circumstances were too overwhelming, we lacked the information necessary for reintegration, or some other reason, then the results are devolutionary.

In this case our personalities contract. We become smaller. This is a type of retreat where our psyche retains the sensation of failure. To compensate, our egos become larger. We become neurotic and more difficult to get along with.

Dr. Lobaczewski mentions that due to the emotional deficiency on a very basic level, psychopaths are unable to access these high-level emotions which are critical for personal growth. They are unable to self-reflect. Therefore, they are unable to grow. They are basically stuck. It appears that perhaps unconsciously these characters are able to understand that this process is necessary, but are unable to complete its phases due to their emotional deficiency.

The inflation of the ego (e.g. selfishness, a need for power, immaturity, a sense of entitlement, beliefs of superiority) is a substitute for growth. Or, in other words, it is a type of false-self that allows them to consciously deal with their failure.

Profile
Outline
Psychopaths are completely aware of being different, which is why they go out of their way to conceal themselves. Although they are able to hide their beliefs and traits from others, their psychological makeup is amazingly consistent.

They all exhibit antisocial or aggressive behavior whether overt or covert, they are all egotistic, they all demand whatever they believe they are entitled to, they all appear selfish, they all demand that others respect them or submit to them. And foremost, they must have power over others.

Like normal people, some are lazy, others are ambitious. Some are very smart, others are not. Most are somewhere in between. The less intelligent ones are driven to satisfy basic needs such as food or sex. These individuals may be less charming, they may attempt to deceive in blunt ways, and then resort to abusive demands when their tactics fail.

Others have better manipulation skills, using charm and verbal fluency to get others to submit. These individuals may seek high-level positions of power, control, or fame.

Whatever their position, their lives are reduced to an endless game of attempted domination over others. They manipulate and attack others in ways that are often undetectable. They do so not just to accomplish their goals but because they find it enjoyable. It offers them excitement and sadistic pleasure.

Their World
Psychopaths view the world much differently than normal people. Researchers vary in their opinions as to whether or not a normal person can ever understand this different world. It has been stated that normal people using the common worldview will not be able to understand how psychopaths think.

There are several factors regarding the worldview of the psychopath. First, there is their self-image, next is the way they see others, and finally, the way they see the world. Psychopaths see themselves as superior to normal people. They see normal people in the following ways: objects, obstacles, targets, simple to deceive, naive, weak, inferior, a separate species.

An important consideration here is that these individuals do not regard normal people as human beings worthy of any compassion whatsoever. They absolutely despise weakness. In fact, they become experts in the weaknesses of normal people. They are completely aware of being different. They understand that they live in a separate world and must conceal themselves. They are also aware that most people are not aware that this other world exists.

Because they do not have access to certain emotions, psychopaths view the behavior of normal people as curious or silly. The emotional reactions of normal people appear to be strange or even funny to them. They also think that that the emotional lives of others are as empty as theirs.

In addition to seeing themselves as superior creatures, they believe their worldview is superior to that of the normal person's. The worldview of normal humans is considered by psychopaths to be incomprehensible and without justification. They view the social structure dominated by normal people as a system of force and oppression. They see the customs and ethics of such a society as foreign, silly, and ridiculous. For instance, they see religion as foolish.

They know the difference between right and wrong but don't allow it to limit their behavior. They can't understand why so many others are unwilling to deceive people. They even think that others don't have a conscience and are play acting, and therefore, rationalize that at least they're being real in a society of phonies.

Psychopaths construct their separate worldview while functioning in a society of normal people and easily perceive the flaws of the common worldview used in such a society. In fact, they rely on these flaws. More on worldviews will be covered shortly.

No Conscience

A conscience allows us to determine whether our actions are right or wrong. It leads to feelings of remorse, shame, or guilt when people do things that are against their moral values. It also causes feelings of goodness and integrity when we view our actions as correct.

It inspires people to avoid causing fear and hatred in others. In order to have a conscience, one must understand that they are the same as others on a very basic level. Psychopaths have no conscience.

Psychopaths exist in a primarily cognitive world. They are completely unable to feel high-level emotions such as love, compassion, remorse, guilt, or shame. They are also unable to accurately detect these emotions in others. Psychopathy is basically an emotional disorder.

Psychopaths do experience primitive emotions such as frustration, anger, rage, envy, and hatred, as well as minor hints of depression. They also experience sadistic pleasure and excitement. Although they don't experience high-level emotions, they are fully aware that most people have them. Many even take time to mimic them in order to blend in and manipulate their victims better.

During conversations, they avoid words with emotional content because they do not understand them. However, they may deliberately use them if they believe it will advance an act of deception. Trained observers can usually detect this type of acting because the proficiency they achieve in faking emotions is shallow.

Intelligence/Professions

Measured by standardized tests, their intelligence is about average or slightly lower than normal. Psychopaths as a group are not highly intelligent. Neither are they gifted artists or craftsman. They also exhibit a lack of wisdom which appears to have no impact on their IQ. Academically, they are similar to normal people. The common myth of their "genius" (which they like to play upon) is really attributed to the special skills they develop which allow them to deceive and manipulate people.

On average they are not as goal oriented as normal people. Although, they frequently brag about how ambitious they are. Many graduate from college or obtain other professional credentials, usually by working the system rather than genuine effort. Once in the workforce, they usually avoid tasks that they consider boring or difficult.

Psychopaths function fine as lawyers, doctors, psychiatrists, teachers, police officers, military personnel, mercenaries, business people, politicians, writers, artists, actors, cult leaders, and many other professions without breaking the law.

Their careers, family, social skills, and other circumstances are part of their mask. The true difference between these psychopaths and the ones that end up in prison is that they are better at appearing normal. Although they may attain positions of high status and success, they are parasitic in nature and prefer to live off the efforts of others.

Whatever their job, they engage in repeated acts of deception and manipulation. They manipulate and attack the people around them as often as they can without getting caught. They do this both for personal gain and simply because it gives them a thrill.

Egotism/Power/Rationalization

Psychopaths have tremendous egos. That is, they have an inflated self-worth or a grandiose sense of who they are. They demand that others respect and submit to them. They are conceited, boastful, and selfish.

The ego has been described as the thinking "I" or the "self" which views itself as separate from others and the world. It is part of the psyche that experiences and reacts to the outside world. It perceives and adapts to reality.

It is the organized part of the personality structure that is responsible for a variety of mental processes such as judgment, tolerance, reality-testing, control, planning, defense, information processing, intellectual functioning, and memory. Psychopaths exhibit egoism (also called egotism or selfishness) in the extreme. Egoism is the view that morality is ultimately determined by one's own self-interest. It is the belief that self-interest is the correct motive for all human conduct and that it is the valid end of all actions.

Psychopaths have a need for complete power and domination. Therefore, they are excessively prone to seek positions in society where they can have power over others. All exhibit overt or covert Antisocial/aggressive behavior.

They believe they are entitled to demand what they think is rightfully theirs. They think it is their right to take things that normal people would consider a violation of boundaries. This usually makes them appear selfish. They also don't like to wait for things. They demand them immediately.

They have an ability to rationalize any type of behavior, no matter how harmful, so that it appears warranted. They are able to do this in a manner which can persuade reasonable people that their behavior is justified. They also don't like to take responsibility for their actions, and may deny them.

Poor Behavioral Control/Unreliability

Psychopaths exhibit poor behavior controls, frequently expressing irritability and impatience. For instance, they may quickly become angry, then, just as quickly let it go. During these fits they may use threats or verbal abuse. They are consistently irresponsible and unreliable, even about important things relating to their situations. They make poor life judgments and fail to learn from experience. They exhibit a lack of insight concerning themselves.

Lying/Thrill Seeking

Psychopaths are deceitful and manipulative. They are known for their pathological lying. They will lie about anything under any circumstances. While lying, they can appear completely sincere as a result of proper body language.

They are perfectly capable of making eye contact and are likely to exploit the widespread misconception that those who make eye contact are telling the truth. Telling lies does not change their physiology. When they're caught in a lie they are able to alter the storyline to make it appear believable. Their ability to lie with absolute impunity is incredible. Their lies are said to be so potent that most people instinctively trust them. Their lies often advance a goal.

When most people lie, there is usually an observable reason. Typically, something of value has been gained. However, psychopaths will also lie about things that most people wouldn't waste energy lying about. In other words, they will lie when they stand nothing to gain of apparent value. Researchers suggest that this is because they find it pleasurable. Deceiving people gives them a thrill.

Psychopaths require considerable excitement to keep from becoming bored. So they frequently partake in thrill-seeking, which may cause them to move from relationship to relationship, or to seek new ventures. It also results in risk taking in social, financial, and legal areas, as well as physical risk taking. In addition, psychopaths will attack people simply because they think it is fun.

Special Abilities and Advantages

Apparently, due to their deficiencies in certain psychological and moral knowledge, they develop what some researchers describe as *special abilities* which most normal people do not have. These abilities give them an advantage over most normal people. I've categorized these in major areas that include perception, manipulation, attacks, and concealment.

Psychopaths learn to recognize each other at an early age. They develop an awareness of being radically different from those around them. They are better than most normal people at perceiving the intellectual lives of others. They have a special type of insight into the psyche of others, which allows them to read people and size them up very quickly. This includes the detection of any likes, dislikes, motives, needs, weak spots, and vulnerabilities. This information can be instantly used for manipulation.

Their impression management skills allow them to manipulate people. They appear alert, friendly, and easy to talk with. There is nothing noticeably odd about them. They seem to be happy and well-adjusted people. They are usually entertaining and are capable of telling fascinating stories that seem believable. They tend not to be delusional, irrational, anxious, or neurotic. Many are quite likable.

Some psychopaths also have what seem to be excellent communication skills, which are enhanced by their tendency to initiate conversations due to a lack of inhibition. During an initial conversation, their speech is characterized by a type of verbal fluency which flows with ease. Their messages are usually filled with jargon, clichés, and other flamboyant phrases.

These communication skills are more apparent than real because the actual content of their message is minimal. In addition, although their use of words appears to be correct, a closer observation reveals that they are improperly used.

This may not be obvious to a casual observer because people often pay more attention to the way messages are delivered rather than the content. Regardless of the lack of content, the messages are delivered in a confident manner. Other attributes which allow them to manipulate people during conversations include charm, seduction, persuasiveness, and charisma.

They can also instantly adjust their con as the situation changes to suit their plan. They are masters of impression management. When interacting with such an individual, most people would not suspect they were dealing with a psychopath.

However, some of the less intelligent ones are not as smooth. They don't have the social or communication skills to interact with people. Instead, they rely on threats, coercion, intimidation, and violence to dominate and control others.

Like their true personalities, their attacks are usually concealed, causing emotional and psychological damage. Their special insight into the psyche of others allows them to easily terrorize most normal people.

Because they understand that they are radically different, many of their efforts are geared toward creating a *mask of sanity*. They go out of their way to appear normal and decent. They are also natural actors. Furthermore, because it is assumed that we all have a conscience; it is almost effortless for psychopaths to conceal themselves.

Researchers who interact with them describe them as *social chameleons* and *invisible human predators*. They are able to mask not only who they really are but also their intentions. They can carry on this deception for extended periods.

In addition to these abilities, they posses an ability to lie with complete sincerity; an ability to rationalize any type of behavior in ways that appear convincing; and a lack of human emotions such as love, empathy, and remorse which allow them to carry out their acts. Plus they have an aggressive/assertive personality which allows them to take the initiative in certain environments. Some who are intelligent can also use their mental skills to their advantage.

Their special knowledge, however, loses its influence when normal people learn to understand them. Because the intelligence of normal people is usually superior, normal people can learn to understand how they think and act.

Negative Behavior

Dr. Reid Meloy explains in his book *The Psychopathic Mind* that these characters suffer from a type of unconscious inferiority complex, which is obscured from their conscious self. According to Dr. Meloy, their hatred and envy of those they consider superior is the driving force for their behavior.[3]

Dr. Lobaczewski similarly suggests that their hyperactive need to achieve power over others is driven by internal anxieties which are a result of their inability to grow. In his book, *People of the Lie*, Dr. M. Scott Peck arrived at the same conclusion.

These researchers advise that the extreme egotism displayed by these individuals, with all of its traits (e.g. selfishness, entitlement, need for domination and power, perpetual lying, etc.) serves the primary purpose of fooling themselves rather than others. Motivated by these internal anxieties, they pursue goals and engage in battles that normal people would consider impractical, immature, or foolish. Normal people observing their behavior might be perplexed.

When a normal person applies logic within the common worldview to determine why a psychopath has committed an act, they will be baffled. The application of such logic may take the form of statements such as: *Why would they do something like that when they have gained nothing? That was foolish. That makes no sense, why would they do that?* This type of reasoning is irrelevant when dealing with psychopaths.

Realizing the immaturity of antisocial characters is critical to understanding their behavior. Their chronological age or position in society should not be considered an indication of their maturity level. Some of their absurd acts and goals make perfect sense when you adjust your outlook to view them as being perpetrated by degenerate children.

Attacks/Manipulative Cycling

Most psychopaths don't technically break the law and most never to go prison or mental hospitals. They lead seemingly normal lives by not hurting people in ways that attract attention. Their attacks are usually covert and subtle.

They are typically not held accountable for the physical, emotional, and psychological damage they inflict. Few victims report them to the police due to the shame they feel for being deceived. Although they usually don't commit crimes, their behavior is a type of crime within the context of natural law.

As one of their special abilities, they can terrorize most normal people, often in covert ways. Just as they are able to mask themselves they can mask their attacks, which are often psychological and emotional. Their subtle arsenal of tactics is designed to place people on the defensive, make them retreat, or submit— all done while being concealed.

---

3   The theory that psychopaths attack others due to underlying feelings of inferiority is disputed by some.

Psychopaths need frequent amusement and like to play games with people. Absent any goal, they will deceive and manipulate people because they find it exciting. They feel sadistic pleasure while mocking and controlling others. It offers them a thrill. To them it is fun.

Many psychopaths focus on a single person at a time because it takes much effort to maintain a facade for multiple different people simultaneously. However, some do enjoy the challenge of running multiple deceits. Some are opportunistic and will take advantage of anyone. Others are more patient and wait for what they consider to be the perfect victim. Some enjoy the challenge of attacking confident people, while others prefer the weak and vulnerable.

Some may target groups because members usually subscribe to an ideology which is easy to exploit. As long as they can appear to support these beliefs while in the presence of the group, their true motives won't be discovered.

As we've learned, normal growth resulting from self-reflection is not experienced by psychopaths. Instead, their egos become larger. They do, however, engage in a type of ego maintenance, or what some researchers describe as an *attack cycle* or *manipulative cycling*. The manipulative cycling protects and enhances the inflated ego. Drs. Paul Babiak and Robert Hare provide their version of the process which has three phases, including assessment, manipulation, and abandonment.

During the assessment, psychopaths size people up to determine their usefulness as a source of money, power, sex, influence, etc. As they're determining if a potential target serves a need, they're also identifying the person's psychological strengths and weaknesses.

In addition to selecting people to attack for what they can provide, they also select people they perceive as a threat to their survival. In these cases, they're not looking to obtain anything from the individual, only to beat them into submission. Dr. Martha Stout refers to this motive as *existential vengeance*. Upon closer inspection, we find that this motive serves another purpose. It offers them the satisfaction of devaluing people they see as better than themselves.

After they have determined that a person will be useful, they use impression management skills consisting of charm and deceit to manipulate the individual in order to gain their trust. While this is happening, they're making a great first impression. Upon this impression, they create a fictitious character (a mask).

The mask can vary depending on what they've determined that the victim needs to see. For instance, they can appear trustworthy, strong, naive, dominant, honest, submissive, or whatever else will allow them to gain someone's trust.

The other trait which contributes significantly to their success in gaining trust is their ability to lie with utter conviction. They manipulate the potential victim by giving them carefully tailored messages. The feedback from these messages is analyzed and adjusted to build and maintain control. They then exploit from the person whatever they've determined to be useful.

Because psychopaths view people as objects, their victims only have value for what they can provide. So, once a person has been used, they are discarded. The abandonment may also happen if they are bored or otherwise just through with the individual. It is usually abrupt.

Worth mentioning again is the tendency for psychopaths to select certain people to attack because they see the psychological destruction of them as essential to their survival. Some specific traits exhibited by those who are identified for such reasons include: those who are morally admirable, classier, better looking, more popular, smarter, more accomplished, etc. Psychopaths are said to derive the most sadistic pleasure mocking, controlling, and humiliating such people.

Dr. Meloy, who describes psychopaths as the embodiment of the hatred of goodness, says that it is their hatred and envy of those they consider better in some way that motivates their behavior. In addition, psychopaths will preemptively attack anybody who they believe has a certain insight into their true nature.

The cycle has been described as a type of purification process for the psychopath. The apparent purpose is to remove value from the targeted person (to devalue them). It appears important to the psychopath that the person is degraded. This devaluation completes the cycle. Most people who are attacked by these characters report feeling drained and bewildered. Some researchers suggest there may even be energy consumption.

Although psychopaths are able to keep up their facade for extended periods of time, there are situations where certain people are able to get a glimpse of their true identity.[4] First, astute individuals who are versed in psychology may spot them. In addition, people who are able to observe them over a long period of time will discover them.

Also, it requires much mental energy for them to maintain their masks. They can't do it constantly. They need to rest. And they usually do this around individuals who they don't see as a threat or valuable. Such individuals are in a perfect position to provide normal people with critical insight into their true identity.

Worldviews

In the following chapters we'll see that the behavior demonstrated by some influential groups is identical to the procedure for dictatorship creation. To better understand the true nature of what is now occurring, however, some readers may need to slightly alter their worldview. This has already been accomplished to some extent now that we understand that these people exist, and will be expanded upon at this time.

Psychopaths exist in their own world and are able to perceive and function in the other world (the world of the normal people). It has been said that normal people can learn their conceptual language quite well, but psychopaths are never able to accurately understand the worldview of normal people.

Unlike the normal people, however, they are aware that this other world exists. They interact with it daily. And in this other world are the normal people with their silly ideas. While in this other world they must conceal themselves from the normal people who are not aware of their true nature.

They also know that the normal people have these things called *emotions* which limit their behavior. They understand that they have no such limitations. They see this limitation as a weakness. They also realize how simple it is to terrorize these normal people.

Although they can maneuver in this world, some of it, such as its customs of decency, is incomprehensible to them. The world of the normal community is morally condemning for them. They despise it. They frequently mock and cheat it. Their world has its own laws and customs.

The *common worldview* of the normal person cannot conceive this other world. But just as someone can learn and use a foreign language with some difficulty, by replacing their common worldview with a modified version, a normal person can learn to comprehend this other world. This does not imply that they fully understand it or approve of it.

---

4 A targeted individual (TI) can provide some insight into how this technology is really used as well as the mind-set of the people who use it. In future notes I'll explain some of my personal experiences as well as my interpretation of the documentation based on these experiences. However, because some of the behavior that I'll be describing is usually relegated to people confined to a certain chronological age group, some readers may have difficulty believing that technology and resources are being used for such purposes. I've noticed that their use of the state's resources to play foolish games is the norm. A rational adult using the common worldview will probably find this inconceivable. Therefore, as part of the worldview adjustment, *their* value system, as described in their profile, must be considered. For instance, having carried out an act of deception, no matter how small, is a considerable gain for the psychopath. It has value to them. It will be useful to remember that these people require considerable excitement. They like to play games with people and mock them.

New World War

A *worldview* is a kind of world perception that individuals and civilizations use as a guide to mentally orient themselves as they interpret and interact with society. It helps them develop and use knowledge. It includes concepts pertaining to religion, politics, economics, culture, science, values, emotions, and ethics, as well as opinions about what is true and false.

While instincts and other influences affect an individual's development of a worldview, the family, community, and environment play considerable roles. Worldviews vary according to time, civilization, and race. Despite the minor differences spanning these realms, a single common worldview exists.[5] It is a synthesis of the societal concepts of various civilizations and eras. This worldview is useful because it originated from the natural experiences of societies which were relatively civilized.

However, this common worldview is not complete or highly accurate. It contains flaws. For instance, it is not totally accepted, it lacks data from many individual experiences which are essential, and it is not applicable in certain situations.

Our civilization was insufficiently resistant to evil because it develops beyond the commonly perceivable areas of human consciousness. Specifically, within the common worldview there is a significant distance between what is considered proper thought and psychological reality. Another gap exists between legality and morality. Within these chasms evil is born and thrives.

A careful observation of some factual historical and current events, which will be provided in the chapters that follow, will reveal that the common worldview is unrealistic. It is not consistent with objective reality. It is a fantasy.

Psychopaths are completely aware that society is limited by the common worldview. They count on such naivety. Their activities are made possible by such unrealistic views. Protected by the common worldview, they function freely in society, attacking the naive normal people.[6]

Summary

A considerable number of people in our society have no conscience. They exhibit a need to have power over others and seek positions in society which they believe will help them achieve it. They are often successful because of their special abilities which allow them to manipulate most normal people.

They can easily conceal themselves and their intentions. Most of them move freely within society, hidden by the common worldview. They see others as objects to deceive and control. They frequently attack people for no reason other than feelings of sadistic pleasure. Most of their attacks are not illegal.

---

5   Dr. Andrew Lobaczewski refers to the common set of societal beliefs which prevent us from comprehending and explaining the beliefs and behavior of psychopaths as the *natural worldview*. I prefer the term *common worldview* because I find that it more easily describes the universal nature of these views.

6   Just as the existence of an invisible monster that regularly attacked people in their own towns would justify an enormous effort by world leaders to warn as many people as possible, the existence of what is thought to be a separate species of human beings living in your communities should be considered to be one of the most important issue affecting humanity, particularly because they have been identified as the primary cause of historical atrocities. The naivety of the public regarding this is partially due to the fact that there has been no major effort by the various mental health agencies to warn them. In any normal society such alerts would be issued. There appears to be two primary reasons why this has not occurred. They are usefulness and concealment. Psychopaths serve a purpose. According to Dr. Lobaczewski, these and similar characters are installed in vital positions to help run a system that is controlled from the top by people like themselves. They are also used in the security forces. Dr. Victor Frankl, a man who survived the Auschwitz death camp, provides an account of his experience in his book, *Man's Search for Meaning: An Introduction to Logotherapy*. According to him, the Nazis would use sadists as a type of specialized group who would find enjoyment in attacking prisoners in even the smallest ways. When the evidence that has been presented so far is combined with information that we'll be exploring in future chapters, a pattern begins to emerge which suggests that there is a war against the normal people that is directed by the incredibly wealthy psychopaths who run our society. This war is taking place during the transition to a single world government. As we'll learn, some of the interests that built Nazi Germany and Communist Russia are behind this revolution. Psychopaths are considered valuable to them because they are outnumbered by decent people and they understand that there must be a steady supply of them to attack the normal people. Not to say that all psychopaths are in on it. Similar to the normal people, most of them are completely unaware of it. Any type of awareness-raising campaign regarding psychopathy would eventually expose the leaders of our society. They would not allow the mental health system which they run to launch such initiatives. Evidence which shows that the entire mental health industry is controlled from the top by such people will be provided in Volume IV.

It has been stated by some experts that a lack of conscience is a deeper human division than intelligence, gender, or race. Dr. Martha Stout describes it as the single most meaningful characteristic that divides the human species. We are basically oblivious to the fact that 1 out of 25 people in our society are part of what some consider to be a separate species.

Because a conscience and high-level emotions such as love are human traits, some have suggested the creation of a subspecies category of the human species in order to properly classify these people. If this were to occur, two categories would need to be created, one for the psychopaths and another for the normal people.

Dictatorship Creation
Psychopathy's Role

Researchers have mentioned that throughout history particular characters are continually the cause of wars, occupations, genocide, and other acts of human degradation. Unfortunately, because the thought-processes of these characters are so completely bizarre, humanity has not been consistently successful in recognizing and stopping them.

At this time, those who have studied such events are certain that the characters who are usually responsible are psychopaths. We now have information which we lacked centuries ago that allows us to comprehend what is happening as part of a larger historical pattern.

A new area of study has been created to help us understand and prevent this destructive cycle.[1] An accurate profile of these people, how they are able to do it, and the attributes of a system that has fallen under their control, has been documented. An explanation of how they accomplish it will be provided now.

In any society during any time period psychopaths create small active networks to further their ambitions. Their primary consideration is how they will go about gaining control over the population. Members of these networks often seek positions of political influence. Their pursuit of power is hyperactive.

They believe it is necessary to transform society into what they consider to be a utopia, where they are not rejected by the normal people for what they are, or need to submit to their laws and customs. If they have access to tremendous wealth, it will be used for this purpose. In their society, the normal people would submit to them and would be forced to view reality in their deviant way.

But most of all, in the society they seek to create, they would have power over the normal people. They will hurt and kill any number of people to achieve this. They are prepared to fight, suffer, and die for this new world.

Overthrows

An entire country can be taken over without a visible military invasion. The governing structure of a country, as well as the areas of society which people rely on for representation, can be usurped without the general public being aware of it.[2]

Other than war, two methods which can be used to establish control of the governing structure of a country include coup d'etats (also called overthrows) and infiltration.

An overthrow is the rapid seizure of the political control of the state administration by a conspiratorial group. It is used to establish control over a constitutional system of government, and is one of the primary methods for installing a dictatorship.

---

1. When the Nazis, and later the Communists occupied Poland, Dr. Lobaczewski and his colleagues attempted to research and document the essence of what was occurring. They discovered that the concepts that they had used most of their lives up until that time were inapplicable. When they referenced the available scientific literature to understand what was happening, it was useless. They literally didn't know what to make of it. They had no alternative but to resort to drastic measures. So, using scientific methodology while experiencing extraordinary difficulties in the midst large-scale evil, they created a new psychological discipline. They learned that what they were experiencing was part of a historical process that had occurred over and over again. They pinpointed the cause to people with a specific profile, particularly psychopaths. The new area of study which they formed is known as *political ponerology*, derived from the Greek word *poneros*, which means evil. Political ponerology is the study of the growth of political evil. Among its many features is the prominent role of psychopathy during the creation dictatorships. It can be classified as a social science or a psychological science.

2. While explaining the characteristics of a dictatorship run by psychopaths in this chapter, I have merged information from sources which acknowledge that these characters are usually responsible, with material that doesn't specifically mention that they are. In reality, there is probably no difference. Researchers who have studied psychopathy's relationship to dictatorships now understand that it is typically a recurrent factor. It compliments other material quite well and makes it easier for us to understand the motives and behavior of the people who create these regimes. But I thought it was worth mentioning that the following books don't particularly mention that psychopaths are the repetitive cause: *Civilian Resistance as a National Defense*, by Adam Roberts; *From Dictatorship to Democracy: A Conceptual Framework for Liberation*, by Gene Sharp; *The Anti-Coup*, by Gene Sharp and Bruce Jenkins.

With an infiltration, the conspirators have also seized control of the government, but are not yet completely identified with the nation. In the initial phase they recruit the cooperation of other groups and parties, and the regime develops in stages, with its complete totalitarian traits emerging only after a period of time.[3]

While overthrows occur more rapidly than infiltrations, in both situations the controlling structure of the government is seized. So to simplify matters, for the course of this chapter these two methods have been combined. Even with a coup a consolidation process occurs over a period of time during which the group establishes control over the rest of the government and society. This process could also be described as a type of infiltration. Overthrows and infiltrations are both basically takeovers.

At first, the group only occupies the top offices of decisionmaking and administration. It removes some people from these positions and replaces them with its own people. The number of people killed is kept to a minimum so as not arouse suspicion.

They are always conducted by those who are quite willing to violate constitutional and legal barriers. The usurpers usually like to maintain order by keeping the bureaucracy, civil service, military, police, and local governments intact, but under their control. Once the top offices of government are occupied, the usurpers can then consolidate control of the entire country.

During the takeover, people in certain governmental positions are recruited. A rigorous *negative selection* process occurs where normal individuals are removed due to conflicts with the group. Psychopaths and others with psychological anomalies find their way into the group.

Gradually, all of the offices of government are taken over. This eventually extends to the legal system, academia, mainstream media, and economy. Around this time the conspirators are no longer seen as subversive but are considered legitimate.

At some point after the organization has attained a sufficient number of psychopathic individuals, its inner-core members can remove their masks of sanity and relax. Then, with the utmost formality, the leadership openly discusses ideas that are morally sick.

This type of government has been called a *pathocracy*, which is a sick democracy run by a group of psychopaths that rules over a society of mostly normal people. The term is derived from a joining of the words pathology (the study of disease) and democracy (a system of government run by the people).

The pathological structure creates a new ruling class which seeks to prolong its reign. This privileged class is continually threatened by the society of normal people.

Because a considerable portion of this class never developed any practical skills, if society ever returned to normal, in addition to losing their privileges they would be subjected to judgment by the normal people. Therefore, the survival of the system that best accommodates them is paramount.

The attributes of a psychopathic state begin at the top and eventually affect every factory, business, city, town, and smallest village. In such a system, the development of every area of social life is controlled by the pathocracy, including the economy, culture, science, and technology. The regulation of areas of the social sciences such as psychology and psychiatry is of primary importance.

One beneficial characteristic of a free society is the existence nongovernmental organizations (NGOs), which, at least in theory have no connection to the state. These NGOS include: family and religious organizations, cultural associations, sports clubs, economic institutions, trade unions, student associations, political parties, villages, neighborhood associations, agricultural clubs, human rights organizations, music groups, and literary groups.

---

3   In this chapter I have condensed the phases of the infiltration process which are described in the book *Civilian Resistance as a National Defense* by Adam Roberts, used as a source. For simplification purposes I have reduced the number of phases and combined characteristics of different phases into a single phase. However, the basic idea is the same.

NGOs have great political significance. They are the centers of power that are used by the people to influence their government and control the direction of their society. These centers of power are almost always the first to be infiltrated by those installing a dictatorship.[4] After the regime has established control over the NGOs they are used to dominate both the individual members of the organizations as well as the areas of society which the organizations represent.

A combination of seemingly beneficial ideas is used by the group to gain the support of the public. Just as individual psychopaths will create personal masks to hide their true identities, a network of them controlling a government will conceal its true objectives using something called an *ideology*.

An ideology is a set of ideas regarding goals, expectations, and actions. It is a vision or a way of looking at things that is used to promote adherence to conformity. It is also a primary method of creating change in society. Political ideologies have goals which include how society should function and methods to achieve those goals.

The ideology used by the group serves multiple purposes: It conceals its true nature, allows it to justify its vile activities, and is the basis for the propaganda which it uses to motivate the masses by exploiting their need for a better world. It also allows the society which a group of psychopaths is deceiving to silence its conscience. Furthermore, an ideology can be used to conceal the system after it has been established and to spread it into other nations.

All leadership positions in a pathocracy, including police units, secret police, and proponents of the pathocracy itself—down to the leaders of every single community—are occupied by individuals exhibiting psychological anomalies as a rule.[5] Because such individuals constitute a small percentage of the population and are valuable to the pathocracy, intellectual and professional skills are not considered when these positions are filled.

However, individuals with obvious psychopathic traits must be removed from political positions with public exposure, so as not to reveal the actual contents of the group. People who are adequately connected to the group and who are sufficiently loyal to it are then chosen for these leadership positions because they have thought-processes similar to normal people. They are rewarded for serving as part of its mask.

The regime seeks complete submission to its control. This is made possible by the secret police (also called the political police) which has been fully developed in the latter stages of the takeover. In totalitarian regimes, the political police are not just concerned with neutralizing actual internal enemies, but *potential* enemies as well.

This too is made possible by the ideology which contains teachings that portray the enemy (also known as the *out group* or the *its*) as the single obstacle to the good life (also referred to as the *better world* or *utopia*) for the nation and humanity as a whole. Once properly disseminated, the ideology fosters the public's support for the pitiless destruction of the *out group* as part of an undeniable policy.

In order to install and maintain a dictatorship the streets must be controlled. Therefore, a portion of the civilian population is recruited into the secret police network. These individuals, who unofficially work for the state, are told that an internal enemy exists who must be watched. The network is used to enforce the rule of the dictators on the street-level.

---

4 For example, as we'll see, Trilateral Commission co-founder Zbigniew Brzezinski—a man who proclaimed that electromagnetic weapons will be used for conducting secret warfare, and who has advocated reducing people to slaves—was a member of the board of directors of Amnesty International. See *Wikipedia*, Zbigniew Brzezinski.

5 Dr. Lobaczewski further describes the spread of the regime's influence to every single town as having attributes similar to a biological disease. See *Political Ponerology*. Mohandas K. Gandhi likewise mentioned that the governing structure of his country exhibited symptoms of a disease. In the March 1930 issue of *Young India*, he mentioned that a system of control was established by the British Crown in India, which was so extensive that it reached down to every village leader. It included a class of subordinates, which according to Gandhi, was used to terrorize people. See the books, *Gandhi as a Political Strategist*, by Gene Sharp, and *Gandhi and King: The Power of Nonviolent Resistance*, by Micheal J. Nojeim.

Indoctrination through mind-control and propaganda is possible after all mainstream media has been centralized. The media and the film industry are constantly used to further the aims of the dictators. To recruit other psychopaths to support the new regime a type of siren-call is issued via news broadcasts and agents. These broadcasts contain what can be described as coded messages that are hidden from most normal people, but are easily understood by psychopaths. Simplified, the message is this: "If you join our cause we'll give you power."

The new leadership is actively supported by about 6% of the population, about $^1/_{10}$th of which is composed of psychopaths, and the rest being similar character types. Then an additional 12% is able to distort its thinking to somewhat support the new conditions. This is a total of about 18%. These numbers vary a percentage or two from country to country.

Because the pathocracy is forever threatened by the normal people, the physical, psychological, moral, and economic destruction of as many normal people as possible becomes a biological necessity. This can be accomplished using death camps. Another method is war. War serves multiple purposes. And it has two fronts: the internal and external, both of which contain enemies.

An external war allows the psychopaths to kill a considerable number of normal people who have been deceived into fighting for some great cause. War also allows the regime to expand and prolong its existence. There is always a highly developed system of armed forces in dictatorships, which legalize violence in order to maintain themselves. In some cases the violence is concealed so that legitimacy is maintained.

As the regime solidifies its control over the country it is continually criticized by the normal people. In order to remove this threat to their power, the psychopaths must use all means of terror. This includes the targeting of patriotic groups and individuals.

Terror is a standard trait of totalitarian regimes. It is used to beat the civilian population into submission. It is also commonly used as a preventive measure, or, in other words, as a type of show of force. Furthermore, it is used in part of formula to get people to accept laws that they would normally refuse. After the civilian population has been terrorized and the threat of an enemy has been manufactured, repressive laws are easily passed.

The Groups Facilitating the Revolution

Introduction

Now that we have an understanding of why a group of people would be motivated to control the planet, have a basic knowledge of how overthrows occur, and are aware of the methods they use to pass their repressive laws, it will be easier to explain that several groups functioning in unison have been involved in a process of global consolidation.

There are many organizations involved in the current global revolution. They appear to the public as separate initiatives with little political influence, devoted to the betterment of humanity. They include: the RAND Corporation, Council on Foreign Relations, Bilderberg Group, Trilateral Commission, Round Table, Royal Institute for International Affairs, and various large tax-exempt foundations.

That these organizations exist can't be denied. Although there is some debate as to what their true motives are, it is a matter of public record that they exist. When the US Congress examined some of these organizations in the 1950s, they were able to glimpse behind their ideology and learned that despite their seemingly positive intentions, they were in fact installing a global government.

It will be helpful to remember that when evidence is presented in this and future chapters which illustrates a pattern of these groups advocating the reduction of civil liberties, targeting of civilians, and globalism, that they do not serve the public as they appear to. As we've discovered, psychopaths will form groups for the sole purpose of obtaining power, which they conceal with an ideology that professes only the most humanitarian purposes.

However, as Dr. Lobaczewski suggests, if such a group had its ideological mask removed, nothing would remain except moral and psychological disease. In this and future chapters we'll take a glimpse behind the ideological masks of these groups.

Round Table

Former Georgetown University Professor Carroll Quigley has authored multiple books and served as a consultant to the US Department of Defense, the Brookings Institution, and the Smithsonian Institution. He studied a portion of this network for decades and was permitted to observe its records in the early 1960s. He published some of his findings in his books, *The Anglo-American Establishment* and *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time*, which are considerably sourced in this chapter.

In February of 1891 a group of wealthy men from Oxford and Cambridge formed an organization in Great Britain known as the Round Table. This group has gone by other names, such as the Milner Group, Times Crowd, All Souls Group, etc. The group was headed by a multimillionaire named Cecil Rhodes.[1]

Members of this group would eventually include: Arthur Balfour, Sir Harry Johnston, Lord Rothschild, Albert Grey, Arnold Tonynbee, Lord Alfred Milner, Arthur Glazebrook, George Parkin, Henry Brichenough, Lyttelton Gell, and Edmund Garret.

Others were: Sir John B. Seeley, Reginald Baliol Brett, Leopold S. Amery, Edward Grigg, Philip H. Kerr (Lord Lothian), Jan Christiaan Smuts, Lord Aston, Lord Brand, Lionel Curtis, Geoffrey Dawson, William T. Stead, H.G. Wells, and Lord Bertrand Arthur Russell.[2]

The funding for this group would come from Rhode's fortune, a portion of which he left in his trust after his death in 1902. This trust was managed by Lord Milner until 1925 and more funding for the Round Table group originated from wealthy families such as Beit, Astor, and Bailey.

---

1   According to Professor Quigley, this group consisted of an inner core of associates who knew exactly what the group was formed for, as well as a large number of people who formed the outer circle. Most of the outer circle members were not aware of the true objectives of the group. See *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time*.

2   Some sources mention that Wells and Russell were members of the Round Table. Professor Quigley says in his book, *The Anglo-American Establishment*, that Wells was not technically part of the Round Table, but was a member of a closely associated group known as the Fabian Society, which had frequent meetings with Lord Milner. Lord Russell was also a member of the Fabian Society and was part of this network. See *www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fabian_Society*.

New World War

Then, beginning in 1925 significant contributions came from other wealthy families associated with international banking and private foundations such as Carnegie, Morgan, Rockefeller, and Whitney. The purpose of the group was the global expansion of the British Empire. It was to bring all of the major countries of the planet under the rule of the British Crown.

A portion of Rhodes' fortune was devoted to a program at Oxford University known as the Rhodes Scholarship, which allows for students to learn ruling class concepts. The scholarship, according to Professor Quigley, is run by the Round Table group which uses it to promote the global expansion of the British Empire.

Between 1910 and 1915 the group studied the causes of the American Revolution and the lessons they learned. They discussed more subtle and efficient methods for expanding the empire globally.

"They were constantly harping on lessons to be learned from the failure of the American Revolution and the success of the Canadian federation of 1867," Professor Quigley tells us. They learned the dangers of using military forces to rule their vassal countries from London.

It was decided that military occupations were too costly and overt. Instead, bonds of economic captivity were to be established in all target countries. The debt vassal countries were to be given the illusion of freedom in an informal empire. The British elite found this to be a more effective method of enforcing their rule than keeping soldiers in the streets or using them to collect taxes in support of the empire. They also decided it would be best to change the name British Empire to *Commonwealth of Nations*, which would eventually become the *League of Nations*.

From 1884 to about 1915 this group worked nonstop to extend the British Empire. They established these informal Round Table groups for discussion and lobbying in each target country where the political, financial, and educational leaders of each nation would be recruited. By 1915 the Round Table group existed in South Africa, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, India, and America. It still functions in 8 countries.

The American branch was run by George Louis Beer, Walter Lippmann, Frank Aydelotte, Whitney Shepardson, Thomas W. Lamont, Jerome D. Green, Erwin D. Canham, and others. The informal name given to the American branch of the Round Table was the *Eastern Establishment*, which has played a significant role in American history. It includes wealthy families on the east coast that formed financial alliances such as Rockefeller, Whitney, Payne, Morgan, and others.

They function through a network of banks, insurance companies, utilities, and other corporations. They have used foundations, academic centers, and other tax-exempt refugees to shelter their financial endowments. The Eastern Establishment is outside of parties. It began influencing both major political parties in 1880 and gained considerable control over them by 1900. This alliance of wealthy families is centered in New York, with satellite bases in Pittsburgh, Cleveland, Chicago, and Boston.

League of Nations

The Paris Peace Conference, which took place in Paris from January 18, 1919 to January 21, 1920, was the meeting of the Allied victors at the end of WWI to set the peace terms for Germany and other nations. Also discussed at this meeting were changes to the geological conditions of parts of Europe. The conference was organized by President Woodrow Wilson and his foreign policy advisor Colonel Edward M. House.

A treaty known as the *Treaty of Versailles* was created during this conference which contained guidelines to consolidate the countries of the planet into a League of Nations as a way of preventing future wars. This league was heavily promoted by Wilson and House.

An important consideration here is that Wilson's campaign was backed by Bernard Baruch, who, along with the Rockefellers, profited hundreds of millions from the war. And Colonel House had close relationships with international banking interests such as the Schiffs, Warburgs, Kahns, Rockefellers, and Morgans.

Also at these meetings were American delegates associated with J.P. Morgan such as Thomas Lamont and Bernard Baruch. In addition, Round Table members from England attended as expert advisors. Round Table members such as Lord Milner, the South African Prime Minister Jan Christiaan Smuts, and Philip Kerr prepared drafts for the organization of the league.

A type of constitution for the league was created by the group entitled *The League of Nations: A Practical Suggestion*. It contained mandates and articles, including the *Covenant of the League*. This constitution was presented by Smuts at the conference. Lord Milner signed the *Treaty of Versailles*. And between 1920 and 1938 most members of the Council of the League of Nations which attended its sessions were members of this Round Table group or close to it. However, the US congress didn't ratify membership in the league, so it was not successful.

According to some researchers, the League of Nations was a method for the British and American elite to seize control of other countries under the guise of maintaining world peace. This certainly appears to be the case since it was run by the Anglo-American Establishment.

Royal Institute for International Affairs

Beginning in 1919 the Round Table group decided to create what Professor Quigley refers to as *front groups*. This occurred at a meeting in May of 1919 at the Hotel Majestic in Paris during the Treaty of Versailles. This meeting was attended by Lionel Curtis, Lord Milner, Philip Kerr, Lord Robert Cecil, and other Round Table members.

The name for the front would be the *Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA)*. An additional one would be created later called the *Institute of Pacific Relations (IPR)*. These RIIA/IPR groups sprung up between 1919 and the early 1930s in all major British dominions, including: America, Australia, New Zealand, Canada, South Africa, China, Japan, France, The Netherlands, and the Soviet Union.

They were formed around the existing Round Table groups which had already been established in these countries. In America it was known as the *Council on Foreign Relations (CFR)*, and was originally run by J.P. Morgan. These fronts for the Round Table allowed it to formally expand its ideas of British imperialism.

Council on Foreign Relations

The Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) was officially established in July of 1921 as a counterpart of the RIIA created in 1919. Although the CFR and RIIA became independent organizations, they have always maintained close ties. It was originally run by Morgan men and financed by Morgan money.

The founding president was John W. Davis, with Paul Cravath as the vice president. The CFR included a council of 13 others from the Morgan Bank such as Owen D. Young, Russell C. Leffingwell, Norman Davis, Frank L. Polk, Whitney Shepardson, Isaiah Bowman Stephan P. Duggan, Otto Kahn, and George Wickersham. Some other early members include: Henry Davison, Harold Swift, W. Averill Harriman, Thomas Thacher, John Foster Dulles, Allen Dulles, Thomas Lamont, Paul Cravath, Paul Warburg (one of the creators of the Federal Reserve), Mortimer Schiff, and various other Morgan partners.

The CFR exerted control over public opinion using media outlets such as the *Christian Science Monitor*, the *Boston Evening Transcript*, the *Washington Post*, the *New York Herald Tribune*, and the *New York Times*. It is made up of international bankers, members of other think tanks, foundation executives, ambassadors, past and present presidents, lobbyists, secretaries of state, media owners, university presidents, Supreme Court and federal judges, and military leaders from the pentagon and NATO.

CFR members have included executives from the following media outlets: *New York Times, Washington Post, Los Angeles Times, Knight Newspapers, NBC, CBS, Time, Life, Fortune, Business Week, US News and World Report*, etc.

The CFR basically describes itself as a nonprofit, nonpartisan organization, dedicated to improving the understanding of foreign policy by exchanging ideas. Past funding for the CFR has come from General Motors, Bristol-Meyers Squib, Texaco, Xerox, German Marshal Fund, McKnight Foundation, Dillon Fund, Ford Foundation, Rockefeller Foundation, Andrew W. Mellon Foundation, Starr Foundation, and the Pew Charitable Trusts.

When the core members of the CFR decide that the US Government should adopt a particular policy, significant resources are organized to promote the policy and to discredit any opposition. It has been the source of some major government decisions, and serves as a recruiting ground for high ranking government officials.

A September 1922 issue of its magazine *Foreign Affairs* mentioned that world government was necessary if peace and prosperity were to be realized. *Study Number 7*, released by the CFR in 1959, mentioned building a "new international order" which would be under the control of the UN.

Researchers have concluded that despite the appearance of being an innocent forum for the exchange of ideas, its ultimate goal is the consolidation of the global economy into the hands of a few wealthy families who intend to create a global dictatorship. The CFR has been described by the Reece Committee, which investigated tax-exempt foundations in the 1950s, as a "virtual agency" of the US Government which has propagandized the creation of a global government.

It is completely interlocked with other large think tanks and tax-exempt foundations, which the committee discovered were using the social sciences to install this global state. This makes perfect sense, because the CFR is a front for the Round Table group, which, according to Rhodes' *1877 Will* exists for: "The extension of British rule throughout the world, the perfecting of a system of emigration from the United Kingdom and of colonization by British subjects of all lands ... [as well as] the ultimate recovery of the United States of America as an integral part of a British Empire..."

Tax-exempt Foundations

A congressional investigation known as the Commission on Industrial Relations setup in August of 1912 was the first to examine the major tax-exempt foundations. It was initially created to study labor conditions and the treatment of workers by the major U.S industrial firms, but extended its investigations to the charitable organizations (tax-exempt foundations) that they were interlocked with. They were particularly interested in Carnegie and Rockefeller.

What they discovered seriously concerned them. During the commission hearings, future Supreme Court Justice Louis D. Brandeis testified on January 23, 1915 to what he described as an "emerging danger" that was so powerful that the existing governmental structure was insufficient to control it. He further explained it as a *state within the state* that could "summon forces from all parts of the country" at any time to carry to what it deemed necessary.

The commission learned that, rather than being used for charitable reasons, the foundations were being used by these wealthy elites for unlimited purposes. They had enormous financial resources and were privately managed. The commission concluded that because these private financial entities represented such a grave menace to the republic they should be eliminated. However, no actions were taken to dismantle them.

Another attempt to investigate foundations occurred between 1952 and 1953 under the Cox Committee led by Congressman Edward E. Cox. On August 1, 1951 Congressman Cox introduced a resolution in the House of Representatives to conduct a thorough investigation into tax-exempt foundations. His resolution was passed in the same year.

Evidence that Congressman Cox had observed made him conclude that some of these institutions were being run by people who were using them for subversive purposes. "They should be investigated and exposed to the pitiless light of publicity," he commented. Unfortunately Congressman Cox died before his investigation was completed.

The commission met the same fate as the one before it. No actions were taken to prevent the expansion of these large foundations or make them accountable to the public. Although the final report released in January 1953 was a whitewash, it did conclude that these foundations were basically subversive and using their resources to destroy the republic in favor of socialism (communism).

One more attempt to investigate tax-exempt foundations occurred between 1953 and 1955 during the Reece Committee hearings, run by Congressman Carroll Reece of Tennessee. Congressman Reece planned to continue the investigation started by Congressman Cox. It was approved in July of 1953. Once again, the Rockefeller and Carnegie foundations, and the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, were investigated.

Other organizations which came under investigation included: The Ford Foundation, the RAND Corporation, The American Council of Learned Societies, The National Research Council, the Social Science Research Council, and the American Council on Education.

The committee also had an interest in investigating the National Education Association, the League for Industrial Democracy, the Progressive Education Association, the American Historical Association, the John Dewey Society, the Anti-Defamation League, and the Council on Foreign Relations.

The committee discovered the following:

- That many of these groups were interlocked at the top, with their officers and trustees having cross memberships in multiple groups.
- That the foundations were funding projects in the social sciences for social engineering that were destructive to the moral, religious, and governmental principles of our society.
- That the foundations were engaging in subversion by funding projects and promoting socialist/communist ideas to destroy the sovereignty America.
- The foundations combined their forces to function as a single entity in order to maximize their efforts.
- The foundations created intermediary organizations which they used as public fronts to sponsor their private subversive political projects.
- They used public relations firms and the media to portray themselves to the public as humanitarian groups.
- The foundations, intermediaries, and interlocks were also strongly controlling public education using their vast funds.
- The goal of these groups was the creation of a global government.

The committee's research director Norman Dodd was able to see the minutes of the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, where their Board of Trustees discussed if there was any method other than war to cause rapid change in a nation's policies. According to Dodd, it was decided in the beginning of 1909 that war was the ideal method.

The next issue that the Carnegie board discussed was how to involve the US in a major war. Dodd was also able to examine the correspondence that the board had with President Wilson, where Wilson was told not to let WWI end too quickly. When Dodd observed the minutes of the Carnegie Foundation he noticed that their members were congratulating themselves on having gotten America involved in WWI.

They were pleased with the resulting possibility of world government which it caused. Dodd was also able to determine that the Ford Foundation was using its funds to alter life in the US so that it could be merged into Communist Russia.

Unfortunately the committee was unable to conduct a complete investigation because the foundations and think tanks controlled the mainstream news and portions of the federal government at that time. However, they did try to warn the public of the fact that there existed a concentration of power with unlimited financial resources that was capable of "invisible coercion."

The commission mentioned that it was extremely difficult for them to convey what they had discovered through any media outlet without the information being slanted, discredited, and even ridiculed. Congress learned that these wealthy interests were beyond criticism through these channels. The committee itself described the attacks against it as "incredible."

Norman Dodd, the Research Director of the committee claims that the trials were discontinued because witnesses were being harassed, placed under surveillance, and stalked. Blackmail, death threats, and framings were used. Dodd himself says he was placed under surveillance, stalked, and had his reputation destroyed.

Communist Russia

The famous author H.G. Wells, who was connected to this group and is known for his fiction work, has also written nonfiction books such as *The Open Conspiracy* (1928) and *The New World Order* (1940), in which he described how a global revolution was taking place that would result in a communist world community that would follow a world religion.

Professor Quigley mentioned that these wealthy elite have used communists and other groups to consolidate the countries of the planet, and would continue to use them. The Bolshevik Revolution of 1917 in Russia was funded by interests such as Rockefeller, Rothschild, Schiff, Morgan, Warburg, and Harriman. Jacob Schiff, head of Kuhn, Loeb and Co. and a long-time associate of the Rothschilds provided $20 million for the revolution, and continued to fund Stalin's first five-year plan.

Averill Harriman's Brown Brothers Harriman, working with the J.P Morgan's Guaranty Trust Company also funded the revolution of 1917. After the communists took power, Rockefeller Standard Oil of New Jersey purchased most of the Russian oil fields. Standard Oil of New York then built an oil refinery to arrange for its product to be marketed to Europe.

At the end of WWI the US Federal Reserve was lending millions to the new communist dictatorship through Chase, Guarantee Trust, and other New York banks. In the 1920s Averill Harriman and J.P. Morgan helped setup the *Ruskombank*, the first Soviet central bank. The vice president of Guaranty Trust, Max May, became the first president of Ruskombank.

In the late 1960s Rockefeller and other industrialists built synthetic rubber plants and an aluminum factory in Russia totaling about 250 million dollars. Chase Manhattan built the 5-million-dollar Kama River truck factory which was successfully used for military purposes, including the creation of armored vehicles and rocket launchers.

Wall Street continued to fund Communist Russia as it supplied war materials to the Vietnamese communists which the US was fighting in Vietnam. Communist Russia was built primarily from Wall Street. According to some researchers Wall Street created this communist dictatorship as one of its colonies in a global empire.

The Nazi War Machine

Wall Street also brought Adolph Hitler into power, built the Nazi War Machine, then covered up its connection to Nazi Germany. An examination of this process reveals that the Council on Foreign Relations was an active participant.

Germany went into a recession and could not pay the harsh penalties which were decided during the Treaty of Versailles. So in April 1924 a banker connected to J.P. Morgan named Charles C. Dawes introduced another payment plan for Germany known as the *Dawes Plan*. The Dawes Plan, a solution for the hyperinflation crisis, was officially started in September of 1924. It allowed the Anglo-American Establishment to take complete financial control over Germany.

Hjalmar Schacht, president of the central Bank of Germany (Reichsbank) from 1923 until 1930, was a frontman for the Bank of England and J.P. Morgan. He was also a personal friend of Montagu Norman of the Bank of England. In 1926 Schacht began to back the National Socialist German Workers Party (Nazis) and acted as a liaison between German industrial leaders and foreign financial leaders such as Montagu Norman.

The British support for the *Hitler Project* reached to the highest levels, including Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain, Philip Kerr of the Round Table who advised Chamberlain, Montagu Norman, as well as the Prince of Whales who later became Edward VIII in 1936.

On January 4, 1933 Adolph Hitler met with Baron Kurt von Schroeder of the Schroeder Bank at von Schroeder's villa, where his financial backing was arranged until he seized power, and a plan was finalized to topple the government of Germany and install a fascist dictatorship.

Also at the meeting were John Foster Dulles and his brother Allen Dulles, senior partners in the law firm Sullivan and Cromwell of New York, which provided the legal council to the Schroeder Bank. John worked for J.P. Morgan and had been a founding member of the CFR since its inception in 1921. Similarly, his brother Allen was the CFR's director in 1927.

On January 30, 1933 Hitler became chancellor of the Reich. Norman visited Berlin in May of 1934 to arrange for further financial stabilization of the new regime. Hitler made Schacht his minister of economics and president of the *Reichsbank*.

The Nazi war machine was then built primarily from Wall Street. Evidence which proves this includes bank statements, congressional records, mainstream media sources, excerpts from congressional investigations, and statements from the Nuremberg Trials.[3]

The financial interests that built Nazi Germany were: Morgan, Rockefeller, Warburg, General Electric Company, Standard Oil, National City Bank, Chase Bank, Kuhn, Loeb and Company, DuPont, General Motors, and Ford Motor Company.

More US companies that were involved include: Brown Brothers Harriman (BBH) and Union Banking Corporation (UBC), both of New York. Prescott Bush, grandfather of George W. Bush, was a partner at BBH and a director of UBC.

Max Warburg and his brother Paul Warburg (Federal Reserve architect) were both on the boards of directors of Interssen Gemeinschaft Farben (I.G. Farben) in Germany and America, respectively. I.G. Farben produced the Zyklon-B gas used in the Nazi concentration camps.

The American branch of I.G. Farben included CFR members such as Henry A. Metz (a founding member), Charles E. Mitchell, and Paul Warburg himself.

International Business Machines (IBM) of New York supplied the Nazis with the technology to build the *hollerith machines* which were used in concentration camps to determine when people would die according to their age, weight, height, and other attributes.

Nazi Germany's two largest tank producers were Opel, (a subsidiary of General Motors in the US, which was controlled by J.P. Morgan), and the German Ford A.G., (a company which was a subsidiary of Ford Motor Company of Detroit). Nazis visited the Ford factory in Detroit where they learned the techniques of straight-line assembly which were adapted to construct their dive-bombing stukas.

---

3   For this information see the book, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler* by Professor Antony C. Sutton.

Wall Street continued to build Nazi Germany until 1944. The confirmation that these industrialists built the Nazi War Machine was also mentioned in the post WWII Kilgore Committee, which attributed it to a mistake.

The building of Nazi Germany by Wall Street was covered up by the Council on Foreign Relations through the Control Council which moved into Germany after the war and was given the task of preparing directives for the arrests of war criminals.

It was headed by Louis Douglas of the Morgan-controlled General Motors; William Draper, partner in the Dillon, Read firm; and General Lucius Clay, the deputy military governor for Germany. All three were members of the Council on Foreign Relations.

Fascist Italy was also funded by Wall Street. In November of 1925 J.P. Morgan loaned the Mussolini fascist government $100 million to stabilize the lira, in effect securing the fascist regime. In 1926 Italy's finance minister Volpi di Misurata was convinced by Montagu Norman of the Bank of England and J.P. Morgan to set up a central bank known as the Bank of Italy. Morgan banker Benjamin Strong met with Volpi to finalize this.

Fascist Plot

During his military career, General Smedley D. Butler of the USMC went on military campaigns in Cuba, the Philippines, Honduras, Panama, Nicaragua, Mexico, Haiti, France, and China. For his service he was awarded the *Congressional Medal of Honor*, twice. However, later in life he realized that he was used by Wall Street to seize territory for oil.[4]

General Butler went public in 1934 after he was approached by agents of Wall Street and offered up to $300 million to lead an army of 500,000 veterans with weapons from Remington Arms Company into Washington D.C. to overthrow the federal government. The coup was to be funded by the American Liberty League which was a front for interests such as Morgan, DuPont, Mellon, Rockefeller, Pitcairn, and Pew.

By this time Wall Street had already setup a central bank in Fascist Italy and had been running the German economy since the Dawes Plan of 1924, and controlled its central bank as well. Presumably, they planned to replicate the systems that they were establishing in Europe.

The plot was investigated by the House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) in New York, which found Butler's primary claim to be truthful. The mainstream media was used to discredit him and the committee. The wealthy elite who arranged the plot were never investigated.

A Central Bank as a Method of Control

Historically, violence has been the primary method of controlling populations. At some point during the industrial revolution the wealthy elites made a change from the low-quality version of power which they used to control society (violence) to a better method (the money system).

Before that, money could not be used as the main tool of social control because most people were not part of the money system. But as soon as factories began to emerge and people no longer grew or gathered their own food they became dependent on money for survival. The money system transformed all power relationships. Violence was no longer necessary as the primary tool for societal control.

"A slavemaster or feudal lord transplanted from antiquity into today's world," observed Toffler "would find it hard to believe, even astonishing, that we beat workers less—and they produce more." However, Toffler assures us, "the use of violence as a source of power will not soon disappear. Students and protesters will still be shot in plazas around the world."

---

4   Control by the Anglo-American establishment was also accomplished through its oil cartel beginning in the 1920s in Mexico, the Middle East, and other places. These companies are in the Middle East today, in countries such as Turkey, Syria, Lebanon, Saudi Arabia, Jordan, Iraq and Kuwait. See the book, *A Century of War: Anglo-American Oil Politics and the New World Order*, by William Engdahl, which also describes how multiple mysterious deaths have occurred across the planet of individuals opposed to the Anglo-American invasion of their homelands. These deaths typically take the form of accidents and suicides.

It is now possible to control a country by its credit system because most people depend on it. In order to control a nation you must control its economy with a central bank, which is a privately owned corporation. The central banks of France, Germany, Russia, and England were not owned by their governments, but by private interests.

Karl Marx outlined a centralized credit system in the *Communist Manifesto*, which advocated the centralization of credit controlled by the state. Lenin said that creating a central bank was 90% of communizing a country. A nation whose economy is controlled by a private central bank has been called a *debt vassal state*.

According to Professor Quigley, the goal of this network is to first control all of the governments of the world, then merge them into a global government, which is to be controlled in a feudalistic manor by the word's central banks. These central banks are established by international bankers who have been described by Professor Quigley as those who are highly educated, cultured, civilized people, who favor the arts and are involved in academia.

They frequently donated to colleges, professorships, opera houses, symphonies, libraries, and museums. They include: Baring, Lazard, Erlanger, Warburg, Schroder, Seligman, Speyers, Rockefeller, Miraboud, Mallet, Foud, Rothschild, and Morgan.

The international bankers are different from regular bankers in several ways: They are cosmopolitan and international, they work closely with governments, and they are devoted to secrecy and the secret use of money to influence politics.

In all major countries they setup various banking activities. This international banking fraternity functions through both corporations and governments. They often sought to control the money supply of nations. To do this, it was necessary to conceal or even mislead both governments and people about how money could be used for such purposes. The influence of these bankers on a nation's economy is so great that a single international banker alone could destroy a nation's economy by manipulating its stock market.

By the 1920s control over most countries in continental Europe had been attained by the Anglo-American Establishment by creating central banks, most of which were setup under the direction of Montagu Norman, members of the New York Federal Reserve, and representatives of Morgan. Also, by this time Russia was communized with a central bank, making it appropriate for tyranny. All of this was done under the guise of creating stable credit systems.

Presidents such as Andrew Jackson and Thomas Jefferson had frequent battles with wealthy elites who attempted to take over the federal government of America by controlling its money supply. In January of 1835 there was an assassination attempt on Andrew Jackson, where he would have been shot if a pistol didn't misfire.

President James Garfield warned on July 2nd of 1881 that the nation's economy could be easily controlled by a few people if they could gain control of the money supply. Garfield was shot later in July and would die several weeks after.

Lincoln was also opposed to the international bankers. He refused loans from the Rothschilds to finance the North during the Civil War. Lincoln warned that these wealthy elites were trying to overthrow the federal government. He was said to have been assassinated for opposing the international bankers.

However, a central bank was eventually created in America, known as the *Federal Reserve*. One notable figure who contributed to its creation is a German banking associate of the Rothschilds named Paul Warburg, who migrated to the US in 1902 to lecture on the need for a central banking system. Warburg would eventually become a partner in Kuhn, Loeb, and Company, run by Jacob Schiff, whose family also had ties to the Rothschilds which went back a century.

The Federal Reserve Act was drafted on land owned by J.P. Morgan on Jekyl Island off the coast of Georgia by Paul Warburg, Frank A. Vanderlip of Rockefeller's National City Bank, and Senator Nelson Aldrich. Other attendees were representatives of J.P. Morgan such as Henry P. Davison and Benjamin Strong. It became law in December of 1913. The international bankers had officially established control of the United States.

In June of 1932 Congressman Louis McFadden warned of an impending global state, controlled by international bankers, which they would create to "enslave the world for their own pleasure." Congressman McFadden said this would be possible because the bankers were in control of the nation's money supply by way of the Federal Reserve.

Prior to that, in December of 1913, Congressman Charles Lindbergh told the public in a congressional record that an "invisible government" had been created when the Federal Reserve Act was passed. He specifically mentioned that the government had been overthrown by a group of wealthy elites that he referred to as the "money power."

In his book *End the Fed*, Congressman Ron Paul had this to say about the Federal Reserve: "The Federal Reserve should be abolished because it is immoral, unconstitutional, and impractical, promotes bad economics, [and] undermines liberty. Its destructive nature makes it a tool of a tyrannical government."

United Nations

The United Nations (UN) is an intergovernmental organization founded on October 24, 1945 to replace the League of Nations. Its goal is to achieve world peace, prevent wars, and facilitate cooperation in areas such as international law, security, economic development, and human rights. It contains multiple subsidiary organizations which carry out its missions.

Also connected to the UN are the World Bank (WB) and the International Monetary Fund (IMF), which were created in 1944 to facilitate global monetary cooperation in order to abolish poverty. The World Trade Organization (WTO), which sets rules for international trade is also associated with the UN.

The UN was formed after a conference known as the United Nations Conference on International Organization (UNCIO) which took place from April 25 to June 26 1945 in San Francisco. This conference was attended by leaders from 50 nations, and a variety of NGOs which were involved in drafting the UN charter. Also at this meeting were 47 CFR members including Alger Hiss and Harry Dexter White, both exposed as communist spies. Other CFR members were Nelson Rockefeller and John Foster Dulles.

As we've observed, these individuals, and the CFR in general, had much to do with building Nazi Germany. On December 14, 1946 the UN took a gift of $8.6 million from John D. Rockefeller Jr. to purchase the 18 acres of land which it now sits on along the East River in New York City. Professor Quigley mentioned that the Anglo-American Establishment decided that UN would be at the top of this global government.

Other astute researchers on this subject have agreed that the UN is yet another front for the international bankers, to be used as the controlling center of a world government, with the IMF and WB as the world's central banks.

The UN Charter, which the CFR would like to have the *US Constitution* replaced with, is essentially a charter for global communism. The Communist Party USA is said to have strongly supported the UN in its early history through its journal *Political Affairs*.

H.G. Wells, who mentioned that communism would be used as a consolidation tool and who supported the League of Nations, referred to this movement as "outright world-socialism" that was scientifically planned and directed.

Trilateral Commission

In the form of the Trilateral Commission, the financial elite continued to infiltrate the federal government of the US by arranging for James Carter to become president in 1976. Both Carter and vice president Walter Mondale were members of the Trilateral Commission, an organization started in 1973 by David Rockefeller and Zbigniew Brzezinski to achieve global government. The establishment needed a new image and used the mainstream news to portray Carter as an innocent outsider concerned with human rights.

According to former Arizona Senator Barry Goldwater, the commission was created by Brzezinski and Rockefeller to seize control of the federal government of the United States. Carter then installed other Trilateralists into important positions, such as his secretary of state (Cyrus Vance), national security advisor (Zbigniew Brzezinski), treasury secretary (Michael Blumenthal), defense secretary (Harold Brown), UN ambassador (Andrew Young), and senior state department officials (Richard Cooper and Warren Christopher).

Ronald Reagan was not a member of this group, but his vice president George W. Bush was, and the White House during his administration contained many commission members. However, Reagan was a member of the closely related *Bohemian Grove*. George W. Bush was also a Trilateral Commission member. He and his son George W. Bush are members of *The Order of Skull and Bones* and the Bohemian Grove.

The Bilderberg Group

The Bilderberg Group, founded in 1954 by Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands (a former member of the Nazi SS), is an elite group that meets every spring at varying locations around the planet to make global policy. The Rockefellers and Rothschilds played an important role in its creation.

The group is composed of European nobility including royal families from Britain, The Netherlands, Sweden, and Spain, as well as heads of multinational corporations, Wall Street investors, high-level politicians from Europe and North America, military leaders, international bankers, and media executives. There are about 100 members who attend regularly, with cross memberships in groups such as the Trilateral Commission, Council on Foreign Relations, Bohemian Grove, and the Order of Skull and Bones.

Some past attendees include Henry Kissinger, Lord Peter Carrington, Queen Beatrix of The Netherlands, Prime Minister of Finland Esko Aho, German Chancellor Helmut Kohl, German banker Hans Otto Pohl, Franz Vranitsky President of Austria, and King Juan Carlos and Queen Sophia of Spain.

Others that have attended are Jacques Chirac of France, Etienne D'avignon Societe General of Belgium, Ali Babacan Minister of the Economy in Turkey, President of the French National Assembly Jean Louis Debre, and members of the Rockefeller and Rothschild dynasties.

Their meetings are said to be financed by tax-exempt foundations, such as Ford, Carnegie, and Rockefeller. All mainstream media outlets have attended these meetings. Some include representatives from *ABC, NBC, PBS, US News and World Report, Time Magazine, New York Daily News, Atlantic Monthly, Wall Street Journal, Dow Jones and Company, Los Angeles Times, New York Times*, the *Washington Post*, and others.

Since the years of Dwight Eisenhower, Bilderberg has had a direct influence on the White House. This control extends to its interlocked organizations such as the Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission. They are accustomed to selecting and "owning" the president of the US. Jerry Ford and his vice president Nelson Rockefeller both attended these meetings. President James Carter and his vice president Walter Mondale attended Bilderberg meetings.

William Clinton attended a Bilderberg meeting in 1991 and became president in 1992. He was also a member of the Trilateral Commission. Senators Hillary Clinton and Barack Obama are said to have attended a Bilderberg meeting together in Chantilly, Virginia on June 6, 2008.

At Bilderberg meetings major policies which have global significance are decided. For instance, the plan for a common European currency (the euro) was formulated by the Bilderbergers. The euro was a major step toward global government and made it easier for the international banks to consume smaller banks. A global currency is said to be in the making.

These are the people who decide who will be allowed to run for offices of the president, prime minister, chancellor, etc., which the public then votes into office. Researchers who have studied this group warn that their objective is to create a global dictatorship, under the guise of a fake democracy. The UN, which is run by these wealthy interests, will be directing this global government, which will be equipped with a global army. Despite their seemingly humanitarian objectives, the Bilderbergers are absolutely obsessed with "raw power."

Their Goal is Neo-Feudalism

Introduction

Toffler's Third Wave theory is a revolutionary premise which includes globalization, or what some refer to as the *New World Order*. As this revolution occurs, many negative events will increasingly occur, he tells us, including upheavals, turbulence, overthrows, and widespread violence.

These are not random events but are all connected to this global revolution. And, these perils offer fascinating new potentials, we're told. According to him, we won't totally destroy ourselves. This global civilization will be a positive alternative to what we had. It won't quite be a utopia. Instead it will be a realistic, attainable, practical utopia, or what he calls a *practopia*. In the end it will be a better world.

H.G. Wells too agreed with this group's plan for global domination. He rationalized that because humankind is facing turbulent forces that will destroy it, fundamental changes in the world system must be made. Wells thought that this global system could abolish poverty, slavery, and despair. Professor Quigley also agreed with the group's overall idea that a single world government would promote peace and prosperity.

On the surface, this appears to make sense. Few of us can argue with initiatives to advance the human race. After all, who doesn't want improvement? Who doesn't want peace? This movement is made possible using an ideology that associates the restructuring of the governmental systems of the various countries with ideas such as improvement, peace, technology, and evolution. These ideas can be expressed using the single term, *advancement*.

Globalism, mentions Toffler, is more than an ideology that serves the interests of a small group. Just as nationalism represented an entire nation, globalism represents the entire planet. It is an evolutionary necessity. It is a step toward "cosmic consciousness," which, he says includes making radical changes to the *US Constitution*.

More specifically, the ideological message contained in this movement is that in order for a country to advance, its governing structure must be changed, its constitution must be altered, and it must be merged into a global government.

The Contract

In the US, this means that the *Constitution* needs to be updated in order for our society to improve. The basic message is that it is old, outdated, and no longer necessary. This idea is not completely irrational at a glance because things do change. Technology improves. Our understanding of events sharpens. Therefore, things do need to be updated.

However, changes that remove crucial safety measures that guarantee basic human rights are not an improvement. As an example, the creators of the *US Constitution* had an understanding of a historical pattern of tyrants repressing populations. This document was created as a safety measure to prevent a destructive historical norm from happening. Some things, regardless of how old they are, should never be altered, particularly when they are guidelines which prevent tyranny.

These individuals recognized that whenever governmental power was consolidated, tyranny always resulted. So, the *Constitution* was designed to limit the power of the federal government by separating it into three branches. It was also designed to prevent the growth of the federal government.

The *US Constitution* cannot be properly understood without the *Declaration of Independence*. Abraham Lincoln said it was the principles through which the *US Constitution* should be interpreted. The *Declaration* states that governments are constructed to serve the people, and secure their unalienable rights, such as freedom and the pursuit of happiness. A government has only the power that people give it.

The basic reason for the American colonists' decision to separate from Britain was that a series of intolerable acts were imposed by the British Crown against them. For years the Americans pursued peaceful resolutions with the crown but received retaliation instead of discussion. Each attempt by the early Americans to resolve the matters peacefully only brought more injury.

In addition to trying to resolve the matters they sought to inform the people of England of what was occurring, but they were mostly ignored. So they decided to leave a record of what happened so that future generations would know why they separated. The record is known as the *Declaration of Independence*. It described how the king of England engaged in a series of injurious acts to establish a tyranny over the states. They included:

- Holding legislative meetings in far-off places in order to fatigue people into compliance.
- Sending armed troops to live among the people and murder them.
- Trade sanctions.
- Forcing people to be brought to England to face false charges with no trial by jury.
- Controlling and ravaging the coasts, and burning towns.
- Sending large armies of mercenaries to commit murder, and other acts.

"The history of the present King of Great Britain" states the *Declaration* "is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations, all having in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over these States." It continued, "We, therefore, the representatives of the United States of America … do, in the name, and by authority of the good people of these colonies, solemnly publish and declare, that these united colonies are, and of right ought to be free and independent states, that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British Crown."

So, the *US Constitution* was created to prevent the government from violating a person's rights contained in the *Bill of Rights*, and to limit the size of the government. It was basically a contract. The First Amendment allows people to peacefully hold the government accountable to it by petitioning it for its violations.

According to the *Declaration*, when a government becomes destructive and no longer serves them, when it violates the contract, it is the duty of the people to change it. If their petitions for redress are ignored, it is their duty to abolish it.

Therefore, the technique of linking the advancement of our civilization with the removal of a critical safety measure that guarantees basic human rights is a blatant act of deception. Those who are able to see this global movement in its true form (a fake democracy) are labeled resisters, nonstate actors, or nationalists, who are standing in the way of progress.

According to Brzezinski, as this process occurs, certain ideologies must be adopted by people in order for conflict to be avoided. To minimize the significance of the *Constitution*, Brzezinski mentioned: "There is no doubt that America emits a compelling and appealing message of liberty to the world. However, much of the message is procedure, with its emphasis on a constitutional process that guarantees human rights and freedom of choice."

Brzezinski mentioned how a national constitutional convention was necessary in order examine the relevance of the existing contract. The convention would also develop methods to streamline (consolidate) the administrative structure of the US Government. Anytime a consolidation such as this occurs it results in tyranny.

"In the past," explained Brzezinski, "the division of power has traditionally caused programs of inefficiency, poor coordination, and dispersal of authority, but today the new communications and computation techniques make possible both increased authority at the lower levels and almost instant national coordination."

Once again, these recommendations are done under the guise of making things more efficient, making improvements, etc. In the context of the role of agencies of the federal government, the RAND Corporation advocated a similar consolidation process in 2003, stating, "divided authority could be a formula for bureaucratic gridlock and inaction, with many having the right to say 'no,' but no element strong enough to see a program proposal through to approval and successful execution."

Toffler says the *US Constitution* was a magnificent achievement for the system of government that was in place at that time. However, it is now obsolete and must be radically changed. A whole new system of government must replace it.

He declared: "That piece of paper, with the *Bill of Rights* ... is increasingly obsolete ... and hence oppressive [and] dangerous to our welfare. It must be radically changed and a new system of government invented … capable of making intelligent, democratic decisions necessary for our survival in a new world."

That's correct, Mr. Toffler just referred to the *Bill of Rights* as dangerous. According to Toffler, the primary enemies of this new civilization are those who are resisting globalization. These individuals and groups are believed to be an obstacle to human evolution. The basic struggle taking place during globalization is what Toffler refers to as the *super struggle*, which is between those who are holding on to certain ideologies (freedom) and those who are advancing the New World Order (neo-feudalism).

Wells similarly wrote that if constitutions and leaders of countries could be dealt with they would not be attacked. He specifically mentioned that it would be more difficult to merge America into this global system because its government was legally bound to a constitution. The primary enemies to this movement, he said, would be those who valued local independence. Wells mentioned that these individuals would be destroyed using scientific methods.

"The forces of nationalism," announced the US Army War College in its April of 2002 article *Information Operations and Asymmetric Warfare…Are We Ready?*, are interfering with "world unification." These current and future threats, they explained, will be identified and dealt with using electronic warfare (EW).

According to Dr. John B. Alexander, conspiracy theorists believe that the Trilateral Commission, Bilderberg Group, and Council on Foreign Relations are attempting to take away their individual freedom, and that these think tanks are controlling the development and use of NLW to create a docile society under their rule. He informs us that these beliefs are unfounded.

Feudalism

In his 1977 book, *The Grand Chessboard*, Brzezinski mentioned that when it is complete, this global empire would be based on the structure of earlier empires, which includes a hierarchy of vassals, tributaries, protectorates, and colonies.

A *vassal* is a term related to a system of feudalism that existed in Medieval Europe. A vassal was a feudal tenant under the protectorate of a feudal lord. Closely related terms include *serf, peasant,* and *slave*. In part 1A, *The American Heritage Dictionary, Fourth Edition* defines a serf as "a member of the lowest feudal class..." and "a person in bondage or servitude" in part 3. It explains a vassal as a "slave" in part 2A.

Merriam-Webster's Collegiate Dictionary, Eleventh Edition states in part 1A of its definition that a serf is: "A member of a servile feudal class bound to the land and subject to the will of its owner."

The *Oxford English Dictionary, Sixth Edition*, describes a serf as "a person in a condition of servitude or modified slavery," and defines it in part 1 as a "slave." Under feudalism vassals were born into a permanent system of bondage. "To some degree," Brzezinski elaborates, "[that] terminology is not altogether inappropriate."

Professor Quigley sums up this consolidation process as: "Nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and the economy of the world as a whole. This system was to be controlled in a feudalist fashion by the central banks of the world acting in concert."

Congress is Complicit

There is no question that individual members of the US Congress are serving their constituents. However, the evidence presented here, which will be expanded upon in the next volume, suggests that the US Congress as a whole has been completely subverted. Congress appears to be actively helping these wealthy interests establish their global dictatorship legally.

Congressmen are handled by agents of corporations called *lobbyists*. Corporations assign at least two lobbyists for each member of congress. The lobbyists provide these elected officials with documentation in order to persuade them to favor legislation which benefits the sponsoring organization, which may be a special interest group, corporation, or a foreign government.

There are also think tanks which provide policy reports to influence the views of congress. These lobbyists have access to vast amounts of funds and research results to support their views on any piece of legislation.

The pharmaceutical industry has the largest number of lobbyists in Washington, with two for every member of congress. In many cases these corporate agents are actually writing the laws and regulations which US citizens must follow.

In the late 1960s there were less than 70 lobbyists in Washington. By the mid 1980s there were about 8 thousand, some representing foreign governments. Now there are over 30 thousand, outnumbering congressmen, senators, and their staffs 2 to 1.

The influence lobbyists have on congress far exceeds that of the individual citizen. From 1998 to 2004 these corporate agents spent over $12 billion lobbying congress. In 2004 alone, corporations and national organizations spent about 5.5 million per day lobbying congress and other federal agencies.

Congressmen are influenced in a number of ways, including campaign contributions and legal bribes in the form of gifts. Millions of lobbying money is spent taking these elected officials on vacations, sporting events, shopping sprees, tours, etc. Some of these take place under the guise of "fact finding" ventures.

"Representatives in the House and Senate," explained Lou Dobbs in his book, *War On The Middle Class*, "look upon those 'gifts' not as bribes to do the bidding of their corporate ... masters, but rather as perks appropriate to their lofty positions of power."

Corporations also influence congress by using their lobbyists to contribute to the political campaigns of these politicians to help them get reelected. Some of this is done through political action committees (PACs). PACs are organizations created or promoted by elected officials, and serve as support organizations for fund raising, media ads, and publicizing certain views of a particular issue. Although lobbyists have restrictions on how much money they can give to members of congress, PACs allows them to circumvent these restrictions.

The money that these elected officials receive via PACs is given under the condition that they will continue to pass laws that are favorable to the sponsoring interests. Although this activity is supposed to be monitored, the House Ethics Committee is ineffective.

Because members of Congress are influenced by corporations, it is relatively simple for them to be used to further these corporate objectives.

The following initiatives by Congress serve this global political agenda:

- The proposal of a thought-based law known as the Violent Radicalization and Homegrown Terrorism Prevention Act of 2007 (HR1955), introduced by Representative Jane Harman on April 19 of 2007, passed in the House 404 to 6 on October 23 2007.
- As part of an effort to limit free speech on the internet, the United States Senate Committee on Homeland Security and Governmental Affairs, led by Senators Joseph Lieberman and Susan Collins, released the May 8, 2008 report *Violent Islamist Extremism, the Internet, and the Homegrown Terrorist Threat*, which mentions that extremists are using the internet to recruit followers into a global terrorist movement.
- On April 24, 1996 the Omnibus Counter-Terrorism Bill of 1995 (S. 390/H.R. 896), that was introduced after the public had been traumatized by the Oklahoma City Bombing, became law under the Antiterrorism and Effective Death Penalty Act of 1996 (AEDPA), which was signed by President Clinton. It authorized an increase in the targeting of American citizens. Tremendous support was given to the bill in Senate and House which voted in favor of it 98 and 293, respectively.
- Congress passed the USA Patriot Act with an overwhelming majority of 98 votes in the Senate and 357 in the House. This ended the *Bill of Rights*. Although the original bill which they approved was switched in the early morning hours with a different one, they still voted for it. Regardless, in summer of 2005 Congress again voted in favor (251 in the house and 89 in the senate) not only to extend the act, but to broaden its scope and make most of it permanent. This time they were completely aware of its blatant constitutional violations.
- The Posse Comitatus Act of 1878, which prohibited both the National Guard and regular military from working with local or federal police to target the US population, was abolished by the John Warner National Defense Authorization Act of October 17, 2007. It also allows for militarized police roundups of protesters, "potential terrorists" and "undesirables." It allows the president to put US troops in any city for to suppress public disorder. The Act was passed by a unanimous vote in the Senate and 396 in the House.
- The Military Commission Act of 2006, which basically abolishes habeas corpus, was passed by congress with an approval of 65 in the Senate and 250 in the House. All that is necessary for any US citizen to be secretly imprisoned indefinitely with no trial is for the president to declare them an enemy combatant.

Congressmen are also profiting from the Global War on Terror. 151 of them received a total of at least $15 million in personal income between 2004 and 2006 from defense contractors, through dividends, capital gains, royalties, and interest.

In the early 1990s the US Congress started to become increasingly receptive to nonlethal weapons for domestic use due to the lobbying efforts of the US Global Strategy Council. They worked with the DOD to test and field these weapons through the National Defense Authorization Act of 1996, due to an expansion in *military operations other than war*.

They continue to support the development of directed-energy weapons with their defense budget authorizations. Congress has funded these new weapons. They are aware that they exist and that some of them are classified. They also know that they're being used on civilians.

Warnings by Historical Figures

According to Professor Quigley, this group has been able to hide itself quite successfully. The public has not been aware of its impact on world affairs because it is not closely integrated, but instead appears as a series of overlapping inner-core groups that are concealed by formal front organizations, which themselves have no obvious political significance.

As we've discovered, these formal front organizations include the Bilderberg group, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, and other think tanks, as well as intergovernmental organizations such as the United Nations, and the various tax-exempt foundations.

These organizations have interlocking memberships. They exist to further the ambitions of the wealthy elite who wish to control the planet. For decades, presidents, congressmen, authors, committees, and highly-decorated military officers have encountered this network in one form or another and were able to perceive its true intention of enslaving people. They have issued us warnings.

Congressman Lawrence P. McDonald wrote in November of 1975: "Money alone is not enough to quench the thirst and lusts of the super-rich. Instead, many of them use their vast wealth, and the influence such riches give them, to achieve even more power."

He continued: "Power of a magnitude never dreamed of by the tyrants and despots of earlier ages. Power on a worldwide scale. Power over people, not just products." He warned that the most important issue of our time is the effort by these wealthy elite to create a global government which would combine capitalism and communism. He said that their intentions were *incredibly evil*.

In the early 1980s resolutions calling for an investigation into the Trilateral Commission and the Council on Foreign Relations were drafted by the American Legion and the Veterans of Foreign Wars. Congressman McDonald, who would have led the investigation, introduced the resolutions into the House of Representatives, but nothing happened. In 1983 Congressman McDonald died during a curious incident involving a Russian missile which blew up the commercial airliner he was on, killing all 269 passengers.

Officials that participated in multiple congressional investigations going back to 1912 stated that a wealthy cabal existed which posed a serious danger to the public, and was capable of using invisible force to carry out anything it deemed necessary.

A global government was its ultimate goal, according to these investigators, who could not complete their studies because the attacks against them were incredible. Presidents such as Jackson, Jefferson, Garfield, and Lincoln were aware that these wealthy elites were relentlessly trying to overthrow the republic. They issued warnings to the people. Garfield and Lincoln were assassinated and Jackson was almost murdered.

In his farewell speech on January 17, 1961, President Dwight D. Eisenhower cautioned that a combined force consisting of the military and corporations existed. He referred to it as the *military-industrial complex*. It was capable of influencing every city, state, and office of government.

He announced: "We must guard against the acquisition of unwarranted influence, whether sought or unsought, by the military-industrial complex. The potential for the disastrous rise of misplaced power exists and will persist. … We must never let the weight of this combination endanger our liberties or democratic processes."

Even Professor Quigley, who approved of this group's goal, stated: "No country that values its safety should allow ... a small number of men to wield such power in administration and politics." He described the idea that this small group was controlling the publication of documents relating to its activities, monopolizing the writing and teaching of history, and shaping public opinion as, *terrifying*.

In New York City on April 27, 1961, President John F. Kennedy warned of a common danger that was threatening our society in every sphere of human activity. He said that a ruthless mechanism was operating covertly from behind the scenes to establish control of the entire planet. And that although no war had been declared, no greater threat to our society had ever existed.

These enemies to freedom, said Kennedy, use infiltration and subversion. They rely on covert methods of expanding their control. This group accumulated vast material and human resources, including military, diplomatic, economic, intelligence, and political, which it was using to covertly expand around the globe. He referred to it as a massive conspiracy which he intended to expose. Here is an excerpt from his speech:

The very word "secrecy" is repugnant in a free and open society; and we are as a people inherently and historically opposed to secret societies, to secret oaths and to secret proceedings. We decided long ago that the dangers of excessive and unwarranted concealment of pertinent facts far outweighed the dangers which are cited to justify it. … Today no war has been declared—and however fierce the struggle may be, it may never be declared in the traditional fashion.

Our way of life is under attack. Those who make themselves our enemy are advancing around the globe. The survival of our friends is in danger. And yet no war has been declared, no borders have been crossed by marching troops, no missiles have been fired.

I can only say that no war ever posed a greater threat to our security. If you are awaiting a finding of "clear and present danger" then I can only say that the danger has never been clearer and its presence has never been more immanent.

For we are opposed around the world by a monolithic and ruthless conspiracy that relies primarily on covert means for expanding its sphere of influence—on infiltration instead of invasion, on subversion instead of elections, on intimidation instead of free choice…

It is a system which has conscripted vast human and material resources into the building of a tightly knit, highly efficient machine that combines military, diplomatic, intelligence, economic, scientific and political operations. Its preparations are concealed, not published. Its mistakes are buried, not headlined. Its dissenters are silenced, not praised. No expenditure is questioned, no rumor is printed, and no secret is revealed.

Problem-Reaction-Solution

Introduction

In his book *The New World Order* H.G. Wells said that to cause this global revolution, conditions of "discomfort and resentment" would need to be arranged. Similarly, Toffler mentioned that to accelerate the drastic changes that will be occurring globally, crises will be strategically placed on existing political systems.

Without using crises, politicians will not be motivated to make these radical structural changes. This will only occur, he says, when the problem is already so advanced that they see no alternative. "By seducing or terrorizing the population," Toffler suggests, "it becomes possible to persuade one's subjects that the existing power system is not only inevitable and permanent, but morally right and proper, if not actually divine."

Problem-reaction-solution (PRS), also known as *order out of chaos*, has been used in some form for thousands of years. The use of this formula by various governments, groups, and individuals is a historical fact. In its basic form, it consists of using a fictional or real event, such a crisis, to bring about radical change. It is usually employed when the change to be brought about is controversial and/or disliked. It often includes a type of framing called a *false flag operation*, which has been used by governments and the civilian sector.

For example, the leadership of *Country A* wants the natural resources of *Country B*. But the leadership of *Country A* realizes that their citizens will oppose an unjust war. So the leadership of *Country A* creates a problem by staging a terrorist attack against its civilian population. Through the media, the leadership of *Country A* makes it abundantly clear that *Country B* is responsible. The people of *Country A* are traumatized and demand justice. So the leadership of *Country A* reluctantly (seemingly) complies, and offers the solution by launching a war against *Country B*. This formula is ancient. Some historical examples follow.

The Great Fire of Rome

On the night of July 19 in the year 64AD a fire broke out in Rome, which burned for a total of nine days and destroyed about two-thirds of the city. Although fires were common in Rome, it is now believed by many that this was deliberately started by a Roman Emperor named Lucius Domitius Ahenobarbus, also known as Nero.

At an earlier date, Nero had petitioned the Senate with a plan to demolish one-third of Rome in order to build a series of villas and a lake, which he referred to as Neropolis. The Senate, however, refused his request. Shortly thereafter, a fire spread across large sections of the city. Groups of citizens, apparently at the direction of Nero, prevented anyone from putting the fire out, by threatening them with torture.

Because the people held Nero responsible, he shifted the blame to groups of Christians, which he habitually tortured and fed to lions. Although Christians did eventually confess to the crime, it is generally known that he created the crisis as an excuse to build his Neropolis.

Hitler's Reichstag

The Reichstag was Germany's version of congress or parliament. On the night of February 27, 1933 the Reichstag building in Berlin Germany was set on fire. Although the fire was blamed on Marinus van der Lubbe, it was later learned that it was set with the cooperation of the German government.

One month later on March 23, *The Enabling Act*, also known as the *Law to Remedy the Distress of the People and the Nation*, was passed by the Reichstag. This was basically Germany's version of the *USA Patriot Act* which suspended most civil liberties outlined in the *German Constitution* as well as habeas corpus. It eliminated the Reichstag's participation in the creation of laws and allowed the Nazis to create a legal dictatorship.

Operation Northwoods

Operation Northwoods was a 1962 plan by the US DOD to stage acts of simulated or real terrorism in the US and blame it on the Cuban Government in order to generate US public support for an invasion of Cuba. The plan included state-sponsored acts of terrorism having real casualties.

"In the early 1960s," announced *ABC News* in May of 2001, "America's top military leaders reportedly drafted plans to kill innocent people and commit acts of terrorism in US cities to create public support for a war against Cuba."

The plan included sinking boats of Cuban refuges, hijacking planes, blowing up a US ship, and committing acts of terrorism in Washington D.C., Miami, and other major US cities. It was developed as a way to trick the American people and international community into supporting the war. According to *ABC News*, it received approval from every single one of the Joint Chiefs of Staff before making it to President Kennedy.

The proposal was given to Kennedy by the leader of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, General Lyman L. Lemnitzer of the Council on Foreign Relations. General Lemnitzer ordered all documents pertaining to Northwoods destroyed, but somehow these remained.

The plan was mistakenly discovered and made public on November 18, 1997 by the John F. Kennedy Assassination Records Review Board, which was overseeing the release of government records related to John F. Kennedy's assassination. General Lemnitzer was denied another term by Kennedy. However, in 1963 the UN made him a Supreme Allied Commander of NATO, which is one of the two highest-ranking positions in the multinational military alliance.

Free Speech Zones

Individuals and groups portraying themselves as protesters may be used by the security forces to create turmoil in order to justify a drastic change (solution).

In the case of a group, this can occur without the knowledge of most of its members. Only the leadership of the group needs to be aware of its true purpose. This appears to have happened during the 1999 WTO meeting in Seattle.

The World Trade Organization Ministerial Conference of 1999 (also called the Battle of Seattle), which occurred from November 30 to December 4 at the Washington State Convention and Trade Center in Seattle, Washington, was the largest anti-globalization protest in US history, with at least 40,000 protesters.

A protest group known as the *black bloc* is a collection of affinity groups that assemble during anti-globalization and anti-corporate protests. They wear black clothing and masks to conceal their identities. They routinely vandalize property, assault police, riot, and instigate fights.

The chaos demonstrated by the black bloc which caused riots during the event was one of the main reasons for the implementation of free speech zones. Free speech zones are areas (sometimes cages or concrete walls) set aside in public places for protesters to exercise their free speech. The supposed purpose of the zones is to protect the safety of those attending the political gathering, as well as the protesters themselves.

It was reported by multiple media outlets, such as the *BBC*, *Associated Press*, and *PBS*, that during the event most protesters were peaceful. It was only a tiny fringe group of anarchists (the black bloc) that caused chaos.

On one day of the protest, the black bloc showed up and moved through the peaceful crowd, vandalizing local businesses, lighting fires, smashing windows, and spray painting negative slogans. The group had a considerable amount of time to wreak its havoc. The reason for this, it was reported, was that the police were unable to stop them because the crowd was too thick, or they were caught off guard.

After a significant amount of vandalism occurred the police joined with the National Guard and Washington State Troopers and began to control the crowd. As reported in the *BBC*, one protester was baffled by the behavior of the police, who forced peaceful protesters back while they allowed the black bloc to commit vandalism directly in their view.

The immediate result was a decision by the mayor of Seattle to introduce a ban on protesting for 25 blocks around the convention center where the meetings were taking place. In October of 2001 it was reported by the *Associated Press* that a federal court upheld the mayor's decision, citing, "Free speech must sometimes bend to public safety."

According to Paul Joseph Watson of the independent media outlet *Prison Planet*, the black bloc is a group of provocateurs run from the top by the security forces. It is used during major protests to cause riots and foster public hatred of peaceful protesters. Watson says that during the WTO protest in Seattle, the police allowed the black bloc to cause chaos as an excuse to target legitimate protesters.

The black bloc seems to have a convenient habit of evading police as it moves through crowds of peaceful protesters damaging property in its path. Unfortunately, legitimate protesters receive the backlash.

This group has been used to justify the attack of protesters in other countries as well. During the 2001 G8 Summit the Italian police planted small bombs in a facility used by anti-globalization protesters in order to frame them, according to the *UK Guardian*. It was done to portray the peaceful protesters as members of the black bloc, thereby allowing the police to conduct a raid where they beat people with batons, injuring dozens.

Agents provocateurs, in general, have been used by the security forces to disrupt groups of people protesting this global revolution. For instance, in August of 2007 it was reported in the *Toronto Star* and the *Globe and Mail* that video footage and photographs proved that Canadian police used them to instigate violence during anti-globalization protests which took place at the North American Leader's Summit in Quebec Canada.

Since the WTO meeting in 1999, the National Lawyers Guild has noticed significant nationwide changes in the state's handling of major protests that consist of: content-based permit procedures and harsh liability insurance requirements; checkpoints to search demonstrator's bags without probable cause; unjustified use of nonlethal weapons; misdemeanor charges and detention without access to counsel; unjust arrests; high bails up to $1 million; and free speech zones.

Although these zones have been used sparingly since the 1960s, around the year 2000 their use expanded greatly. They are now regularly used during anti-globalization protests and national conventions to censor people by putting them out of sight of the mass media and the visiting dignitaries. The chaos that occurred during the 1999 WTO meeting in Seattle was the primary impetus for the use of these zones all across the nation, as well as the UK and Canada.

Russian Apartment Bombings

In the beginning of September 1999 a series of apartment bombings occurred in Russia which lasted for about two weeks and killed nearly 300 people. According to the official story told by former Russian President Vladimir Putin and the Federal Security Service (FSB), the bombings were caused by Chechen terrorists.

The suspicious events surrounding these bombings lead many researchers to conclude that they were false flag operations perpetrated by the FSB, the successor of the Committee for State Security (KGB), as an excuse to resume military activities in Chechnya and bring Vladimir Putin and the FSB to power.

During one attempted bombing, some residents noticed suspicious activity and phoned the local police who arrived to discover a military-grade explosive in the basement of the building. They setup roadblocks hoping to catch the people matching the description. Upon discovering this, the perpetrators used a public telephone to contact a source, apparently for instructions on how to avoid the roadblocks.

When an operator traced the call, it led directly to the FSB in Moscow and when the people who made the call were arrested by the police, each produced documents showing they were FSB agents. The next day, the head of the FSB announced that the entire operation had been just a training drill. However, the police concluded that the live bomb they found was the exact type used in the other bombings.

An investigation of the bombings, which resulted in a conviction of Chechens on charges of terrorism during a closed-door trial, was conducted by the FSB. But no Chechen claimed responsibility. A motion for another investigation was filed by at least one member of the Russian Parliament but was blocked by Putin.

Not satisfied with the official report, some citizens formed a private committee to investigate the bombings. The committee was disbanded, however, after multiple deaths ensued. No more investigations took place.

A former Russian military intelligence officer named Aleksey Galkin proclaimed that the apartment bombings were false flag operations, perpetrated by the FSB to facilitate the second Chechen War. A tycoon named Boris Berezovsky also suggested that the bombings allowed Putin to invade Chechnya and facilitated his rise to power. He is positive that the FSB was responsible.

As reported by the *BBC* in March of 2002, a former FSB member and director of the Russian Conversion Explosives Center, Nikita Chekulin, agreed with Berezovsky, and mentioned that his sources revealed that before the bombings the security forces purchased large amounts of the explosive Hexogen, which was found at one of the sites.

Another former FSB officer named Alexander Litvinenko also concluded that the apartment bombings were organized by the FSB. Litvinenko, who authored a book which contained information describing them as false flag operations, would eventually die of radiation sickness.

Putin, the former head of the FSB, was the Prime Minister before the bombings. After blaming the attacks on Chechen rebels which caused public outrage, he was able to launch a military invasion of Chechnya, clearly positioning himself as a savior who would neutralize the Chechen rebels and restore order. It also allowed him to win the presidential election in 2000.

Other Incidents

Other Incidents which are believed to have been PRS false flag operations include:

- The sinking of the USS Maine in 1898 as a pretext for the Spanish-American war.
- The explosion of Japanese railway cars in 1931, which was done by Japanese officers as an excuse to seize Manchuria which was occupied by the Chinese.
- During the Gleivitz incident in 1939, German leadership fabricated evidence that they were under attack by Poland as an excuse to invade the country.
- On November 26, 1939 the Soviet Union fired artillery into their village of Mainila, near the Finnish border, to use the attack as an excuse to attack Finland four days later.
- In 1954 Israel bombed US and UK interests in Cairo and blamed it on Egypt to provoke a war between the West and Egypt. This eventually came to be known as the *Lavon Affair*. Israel took responsibility for it in 2005.
- The attack of two US war ships by North Vietnamese vessels (*Gulf of Tonkin Incident*) may have been staged in order to involve the US in the Vietnam War.

Questionable Events
Oklahoma City

The Oklahoma City Bombing which occurred at 9:03 AM on April 19 consisted of the destruction of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City, which killed 168 people. At first the damage was attributed to a single ammonium nitrate/fuel oil (ANFO) bomb weighing 1,200 lbs placed inside the building. It was immediately described as a domestic terrorist act committed by extremists.

Several mainstream news sources which received their information from federal, state, and local officials who were on the scene, described that two additional high-tech, unexploded bombs were found in the building. They included news outlets, such as *KWTV-9, KFOR TV-5*, and *Channel 4 News*. These reports were consistent with a Department of Defense Atlantic Command memo, a FEMA Situational Report (SitRep), a US Forces Command log, and an Oklahoma Highway Patrol radio log.

Then, the original story began to change considerably. The FBI increased the size of the bomb to 4,000 lbs. And within 24 hours the story changed again. Federal officials said that the explosion had not occurred inside the building but originated from a car parked in front of it which contained the ANFO bomb. Then the car was changed to a truck and the size of the bomb was eventually increased to 4,800 lbs.

An independent investigation was made difficult because the debris was immediately hauled away and covered in a landfill guarded by wackenhut guards. Multiple independent engineers, explosives experts, and military analysts conducted their own studies, however, and with the available evidence concluded that the government's story of a single ANFO bomb was "technically impossible."

One included former head of the Los Angeles office of the FBI, Ted L. Gunderson, who claims that the damaged done to the Murrah Federal Building was definitely not the result on an ANFO bomb, but a very high-tech military bomb, built by those who had access to classified information.

General Benton K. Partin has a lifetime of explosives experience. He personally delivered a letter entitled, *Bomb Damage Analysis Of Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building*, to 56 members of congress, in which he stated that reports by the media and federal government that the source of the damage to the building was a single ANFO bomb weighing 4,800 lbs parked outside the building was, "impossible."

General Partin described that explosives had to have been placed inside the building at the supporting columns, and expressed how unfortunate it was that the evidence had been hauled away and covered in a landfill. He urged congress not to rush into passing any antiterror legislation.

Sam Gronning, a licensed professional blaster with over 30 years of experience, agreed with General Partin. According to him, no ANFO bomb placed outside the building could have caused that damage. He has never seen anything to support the official story in his entire career.

Professor of physics at the University of Oregon, Dr. Frederick Hansen, has a career which includes professorships in engineering, aeronautics, and chemistry. He similarly agreed with General Partin's conclusion. Only bombs placed inside the building at certain columns could have caused it.

Dr. Ernest B. Paxson, a US Army explosives engineer with decades of civilian defense-related projects, revealed that only bombs placed on each of the failed columns inside the building could have caused that type of damage. An ANFO bomb placed outside the building might have created a hole in the wall but would not have damaged the support columns.

Samuel Cohen, a physicist and creator of the neutron bomb, is also an expert on explosives. In a letter sent to Oklahoma State Representative Charles Key, he wrote that it would have been, "absolutely impossible and against the laws of nature," for a truck full of fertilizer and fuel oil, no matter how much was used, to bring the Murrah building down. Cohen expressed that it could only have occurred with high-tech explosives placed strategically within the building at the failed columns.

Also worth mentioning is that multiple employees of the courthouse next to the Murrah building reported that a bomb squad van was in the vicinity as early as 7:30 AM. The occupants of the van, according to witnesses, were wearing dark shirts with white-silver lettering, which read, *Bomb Squad*. Also, some witnesses reported hearing at least two explosions. During the investigation, the FBI refused to interview these types of witnesses.

The *Oklahoma Daily Gazette* obtained hotel receipts which confirmed that Danny Coulson, the head of the FBI Anti-Terrorism Task Force, checked in to the Embassy Suites Hotel in Oklahoma City at 12:20 AM on the morning of the bombing. What was the FBI doing there nine hours before the blast?

This tragedy triggered a public outrage and the Omnibus Counter-Terrorism Bill of 1995 (S. 390/H.R. 896) was the solution. In May of 1995 *The Spotlight* reported that the leadership of both political parties may have exploited the outrage of the public by considering legislation that threatened the constitutional rights of Americans.

The bill received much support in Congress and was passed in the Senate with 98 votes and 293 in the House. On April 24, 1996 it became law under the Antiterrorism and Effective Death Penalty Act of 1996 (AEDPA), which was singed by President Clinton. Such domestic antiterrorist bills that were stalled in Congress before the bombing were quickly passed shortly afterward, observed *WorldNetDaily*.

September 11

Because the terrorist attacks of September 11, 2001 are closely connected to the new war, a few inconsistencies in the official story must be covered. To properly explain the events surrounding 9/11 in a comprehensive manner would require more information than will be presented here. For this reason I'll only mention the following facts:

- In addition to the Twin Towers collapsing on 9/11, World Trade Center Building 7 also collapsed. Building 7 was a 47-story steel-framed skyscraper located one block from the twin towers. It was not hit by a plane but collapsed suddenly at 5:20 that evening, imploding in the exact same manner as a professionally engineered demolition.[1]
- It fell symmetrically at near-freefall speed and landed in a compact pile of rubble, barely damaging the surrounding buildings. These types of collapses are only consistent with controlled demolition. There was no mention of the WTC Building 7 collapse in the *9/11 Commission Report*.
- Fire has never before in history caused any steel-frame building to collapse. The sudden vertical, explosive, and total collapse of the Twin Towers at near-freefall speed can only be rationally explained by controlled demolition.
- The WTC steel would have revealed much about how the towers collapsed. Unfortunately, it was immediately removed and shipped overseas, which is a violation of federal crime scene laws.
- Whenever contact is lost with any airplane over US airspace, NORAD fighter jets are launched to investigate, usually in under 20 minutes. However, on 9/11 nearly two hours passed with no interceptions.

---

1   These are listed on the *9/11 Fact Card* which is available at 911Truth.Org. The websites of the professionals who are advocating an independent investigation can also be found there. The following films provide substantial evidence that 9/11 was a false flag operation: *Martial Law 9/11: Rise of the Police State* by Alex Jones, *Loose Change* by Dylan Avery, Korey Rowe, Jason Bermas, and Matthew Brown, and *9/11: The Great Illusion* by George Humphrey. Also see the books, *The 9/11 Commission Report: Omissions and Distortions*, and *The New Pearl Harbor: Disturbing Questions about the Bush Administration and 9/11*, both by David Ray Griffin.

- Massive put option bets were made by unidentified insiders just prior to 9/11 on stocks from American Airlines and other corporations impacted by the attack. Whoever they were made millions.
- According to the *BBC* and the *Guardian* some of the alleged hijackers were still alive after the attack.
- The Bush Administration delayed the creation of a 9/11 Commission for over a year. It only occurred after a group of people who had lost relatives in the tragedy forced it into existence. Similar investigations, such as those for Pearl Harbor, space shuttle disasters, and the JFK assassination, all started in about a week.

These are not conspiracy theories. They are facts which should be investigated. There are many, many other facts and inconsistencies regarding the official story that scholars, architects and engineers, media professionals, firefighters, lawyers, scientists, and others are now questioning. Remember, 9/11 is the basis for the entire Global War on Terror.

On September 14, 2001 former Senator Gary Hart announced at a televised meeting in Washington, D.C. Sponsored by the Council on Foreign Relations that the president could use the 9/11 tragedy to carry out the New World Order.

In an interview with the *New York Times* on October 12, 2001, Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld mentioned that 9/11 offered an opportunity, similar to what WWII offered, to change much of the world. Likewise, the *National Security Strategy of the United States of America*, issued by the Bush administration in September of 2002, announced that the 9/11 event opened up vast new opportunities.

The USA Patriot Act was signed into law by President George W. Bush on October 26, 2001, less than two months after the attack. As we'll see shortly, this act focuses on US citizens and has allowed the military to target legitimate dissent.

Concealment for False Flag Operations

Drills and sting operations may be run by the security forces in conjunction with state-sponsored terrorism as a cover in case they get caught, or to create confusion. If their connections to these terrorist attacks are discovered, they can always claim they were incompetent during a drill or sting operation gone badly.

Remember how the real bomb found during the Russian Apartment Bombings was dismissed as being part of a drill? Also, during both the first World Trade Center bombing in 1993, and the bombing of the Murrah Federal Building in 1995, the FBI and BATF were working with the alleged terrorists under a sting operation.

"The most sensible conclusion anyone came to after examining evidence like this," explained *WorldNetDaily* in December of 1999, "is that the Oklahoma City bombing was a sting operation that went wrong. But, incredibly, the same conclusion can be drawn about the [first] World Trade Center bombing."

The funding and/or planning for both the first WTC bombing in 1993 and Oklahoma City led right back to federal law enforcement such as the FBI and BATF. The FBI used an informant named Emad A. Salem to infiltrate an Arab group in New York to coax them into bombing the WTC back in 1993. When the group asked him to create a bomb, he requested a harmless device from the FBI, but instead was given materials to build a live bomb.

"To make a long, complicated story short and simple," commented *WorldNetDaily*, "The FBI spent $3 million of your tax money to blow up the World Trade Center. The story's essentially the same at Waco, Ruby Ridge and other government-made disasters."

In what *The Boston Globe* describes as a "bizarre coincidence" US intelligence agencies planned a drill on September 11, 2001, which consisted of an aircraft flying into a building. Adding to the coincidence, the drill was scheduled to occur less than an hour after flight 77 (which was hijacked) left Dulles International Airport. This confusion caused NORAD, which is charged with protecting the airspace, to stand-down for the first time in its 50-year history.

Summary

There are numerous documented historical examples of PRS in practice, as well as countless others which have not yet been officially recognized.[2] It's probably one of the most-used tactics to bring about massive change. Although it's simple in theory, most people don't think along these lines, because they themselves would never resort to such methods.

These acts may not make sense if viewed as isolated incidents. But when examined as essential steps in establishing a dictatorship, a picture begins to form. Things also become clearer when a couple of things are considered. First, despite most officers being loyal patriots, federal law enforcement agencies and local law enforcement are controlled from the top by the financial elite. Second, those who are controlling this revolution believe that chaos is necessary in order to make the massive changes that are necessary for them to install a worldwide dictatorship.

"Who benefits most from terrorist activity?" asked *WorldNetDaily*. "Americans might be shocked to learn that their government is involved in such escapades," they commented. "But those who study history should expect such things. It's been going on since the beginning of time."

Most of us would never give up our personal freedoms—unless it was required to in exchange for protection against a threat. In his documentary, *The Capitalist Conspiracy*, author G. Edward Griffin revealed that the best way to promote world government is to deliberately create problems which require solutions that result in an expansion of government.

According to author Griffin, this can be accomplished by terrorizing people into giving up their personal liberties and national sovereignty, so that world government will seem acceptable. "The real action," says Griffin "is in the reaction."

"The fact that the United States has not faced a recent military or national security disaster," observed Metz and Kievit in their 1994 US Army War College article, "has hindered the development and application of new technology to conflict short of war." "Two things could inspire efforts to develop and apply cutting-edge technology," they advised. "One is the emergence of an active and powerful coterie of visionaries within the national security community... The other is defeat or disaster."

"But the pursuit of power," declared Brzezinski, "is not a goal that commands popular passion, except in conditions of a sudden threat or challenge to the public's sense of domestic well-being."

So, whenever a crisis occurs, or the threat of a crisis looms, or a series of crimes unfold which is hyped by the media, understand that the wealthy interests who run the planet may be attempting to terrorize you into accepting new legislation.

---

2   For more examples of PRS see the film *TerrorStorm: A History of Government-Sponsored Terrorism*, by Alex Jones. Also see Volume I of my book *The Hidden Evil*.

Volume I Commentary

According to some experts on the subject of psychopathy, there are two subspecies of the human race. They include the normal people and the psychopaths. The psychopaths are aware of this but the *others* are not. There are 1 out of 25 people in our society that have no conscience and are obsessed with having power over people. It is their nature to attack normal people who they see as weak and naive prey. They exist on every level of society and can conceal themselves rather well.

In most situations there is no curing them. Curing implies that mental or emotional problems, as deep as they may be, are preventing a person from functioning normally, and that the instinctive substructure which the personality sits on has certain qualities. However, the substructure of these individuals does not contain the qualities which are necessary for them to function in a manner that most of us would consider normal.

Because this difference occurs on such a very deep level—literally on the level that a makes a human being human—they could realistically be categorized as a separate subspecies.

A historical pattern exists which shows that these intraspecies predators are usually the ones installing dictatorships. To accomplish this, they form active networks to gain control over the society of normal people. Their pursuit of power is relentless.

Governments can be overthrown by such groups without the population realizing it because governmental functions remain intact but are brought under the control of the dictators. After the conspirators have seized the top level of government, they recruit other factions into supporting their policies. Although they may be denied legitimacy at first, they may eventually be accepted. Gradually, control is established over all developmental areas of society, as well as the mass media, economy, military, police, and local governments.

NGOs, which people use to influence the direction of society and which could be used to expose such a pathocracy, are the first organizations targeted for infiltration. Areas of the social sciences including psychology and psychiatry must also be controlled in order to provide cover for the system.

The group capitalizes on the public's need for a better world to conceal their goal of achieving power. A set of ideas and a plan to accomplish them is presented to the public. The plan will typically include repressive legislation and the proclamation of an enemy. A crisis may be manufactured to help achieve this.

As the dictatorship is being established, internal and external enemies are created to maintain it by uniting the people against a common threat. The utopia is possible only when the enemy, who is seen as the obstacle, is removed. A new class of people is used to enforce the rule of the dictators and to attack the internal enemies.

An external war allows the pathocracy to expand and kill large numbers of normal people. In addition to the use of external wars, the psychopaths believe it is critical to their survival that systematic methods are used to physically and psychologically destroy as many normal people as possible. A manufactured crisis, such as a state-sponsored terrorist attack, may be used by the regime against its own populace to pass repressive laws in order to set up and expand the dictatorship.

When a group of psychopaths has established control over a society, they create a large-scale mask to hide the true nature of their system. At a superficial glance, such a pathocracy will have the appearance of decency. According to congressional sources, the US Government was overthrown in 1913 when the nation's economy was seized by investors functioning through a private institution known as the Federal Reserve, which now controls America's money supply.

A process of infiltration of the US Government can be observed over a period of decades by groups such as the Council on Foreign Relations, Bilderberg Group, Trilateral Commission, and large tax-exempt foundations, all of which promote world government. Some of these organizations officially exist for charitable purposes and to serve humanity. We find traces of the same network active in the creation of the League of Nations and the United Nations, organizations which the public is told were created to achieve world peace.

However, the same interests that that created these IGOs profited from the wars that led to their development and even built the opposing forces. Elements of the same network contributed to the construction of fascist and communist dictatorships which contained death camps.

They selected Adolph Hitler, built the Nazi War Machine, and covered up their connection to it. They financed the Bolshevik Revolution and continued to fund Communist Russia for decades. They attempted to overthrow the US Government by force in 1934. And by the 1920s they established central banks in many European countries as a way of controlling them.

The US Congress was able to glimpse the true nature of this network when it investigated factions of it in the 1950s, and learned that it was a menace to society. It suggested that any society which valued its freedom should beware.

In the early 1960s elements of this network within the US Government almost carried out terrorist attacks in major US cities to promote a war against Cuba during Operation Northwoods, which had the written approval of every single member of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. There are some crucial unanswered questions regarding the Oklahoma City Bombing, which resulted in the passing of antiterror legislation that targets US citizens.

Facts regarding 9/11, including the total, symmetric, nearly freefall collapse of a 47-story steel building, which was located a block away from the twin towers and was not hit by a plane, raise some serious questions that have not been properly answered. Elements of this same network have stated that the 9/11 tragedy could be used to carry out a New World Order.

Presidents, congressmen, and historical figures that have been able to detect traces of this network at various times have issued warnings that it was a threat to humanity. They told us this would happen. Any person who is unaware of the history of these groups or the takeover which occurred in the US might believe that the policies now being promoted were formed by the authentic government that was originally established to serve the people.

The idea that the US Congress is repeatedly introducing and passing legislation that is destructive to the principles on which the republic was founded, and is doing so without the complete knowledge of its enslaving effects, is implausible.

Some individuals in Congress are warning the public. However, it is clear at this point that Congress as an organization has been entirely subverted. It is serving the pathocracy. Also, because it was essential that people believed that directed-energy weapons were humane and that this global revolution was necessary to improve our society, military and civilian experts on history and warfare have been used to sell them to the public.

The pattern of infiltration, state-sponsored terrorism, repressive legislation, control of developmental areas of societies, enemy creation, and wars is characteristic of the process for dictatorship creation described in this volume. Historical evidence has shown us that multiple groups which form a single network have been vigorously establishing control of the planet. This behavior is consistent with dictatorship creation and the pathological factors therein. Observable reality suggests that a network of wealthy psychopaths is controlling this global revolution.

The expanded worldview outlined in this volume, taken from new information in the psychological sciences, has allowed us to see past their clever lies of a better world. It has allowed us to see what they've done, what they're doing, and what their actual plans are. Now that we know how the people who run our society really think, now that we can see them for what they are, we have established a foundation that will allow us to realistically perceive how this technology will be used on the public.

Volume II

The New War

The New War
Description

Part of this RMA includes a change in competing forces because most nations can't challenge the US with a direct military force. Now that most nations have been conquered, either by military might or economic subversion, the regular state-to-state type of warfare will be phased out.

The US and its allies will now be waging war against individuals and groups all across the planet. The global military campaign being used to wage this new type of warfare has been called the global war on terror (GWOT), and the long war (LW). It was explained by the RAND Corporation in the book, *In Athena's Camp*, this way: "In the future, few rational opponents will be likely to challenge, or will even be capable of challenging, the US in a contest with large, multi-dimensional military forces."

Such an adversary, says RAND, will not seek to destroy the US with military power, but to ruin its core values, particularly if those values are not consistent with their deeply held religious, cultural, or ideological beliefs.

The United States Army's School of Advanced Military Studies mentioned in its May 22, 2003 report, *Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats*: "Due to the conventional military dominance, the United States will most likely face regional threats that will challenge it through asymmetric approaches, such as area denial strategies, economic competition, and information warfare."

Specific names given to the small wars that will be waged globally include, *asymmetric warfare (AW), fourth generation warfare (4GW), third wave warfare (3WW), network centric warfare (NCW, netwar), NATO networked enabled capability (NNEC)*, and *military operations other than war (MOOTW)*. Others are *low-intensity conflict (LIC), irregular warfare (IW)*, and *unconventional warfare (UW)*. Related terms include *effects-based operations (EBO), civil-military operations (CMO)*, and *peace operations (PO)*.

There is a variety of terms and definitions used to describe this type of warfare. The definition of a single term may be overlapping or contradictory, when multiple sources are observed. Some sources portray a particular type of warfare as synonymous with other types, thereby associating its characteristics with those other kinds.[1]

Some terms that have been replaced by more recent ones may still be used by some authors. Some are more or less theories than they are types of warfare. However, there is a pattern of strategies and tactics that these methods of warfare share, which I refer to as *shared characteristics*.

---

1   The *US Army Special Operations Forces Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130)* manual of September 2008, states that although the terms fourth generation warfare (4GW) and asymmetric warfare (AW) are not an actual DOD terms and are not exactly the same as UW, they have been used to describe unconventional warfare (UW) and irregular warfare (IW) because there are similarities. The book *Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology*, by Lt Col, David J. Dean, USAF, describes low-intensity conflict (LIC) as being similar to unconventional warfare. LIC is also the same as irregular warfare (IW), small wars, military operations other than war (MOOTW), unconventional warfare (UW), and asymmetric warfare (AW), according to the August 2006, *Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare* article, by the US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center. The *Land Warfare Papers* report entitled *Defining Asymmetric Warfare* of September 2006, similarly places low-intensity conflict (LIC) in the same category as irregular warfare (IW), asymmetric warfare (AW), and military operations other than war (MOOTW). The Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP) report *Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War,* of November 2002, infers that asymmetric warfare (AW) and effects-based operations (EBO) are the same by using them interchangeably. It also indicates that netwar is a component of EBO, and that they can be used in combination. RAND's book *In Athena's Camp* suggests that terms such as network centric warfare (netwar), military operations other than war (MOOTW), low-intensity conflict (LIC), and even revolution in military affairs (RMA), have been used interchangeably. The article *Learning to Adapt to Asymmetric Threats*, published in August of 2005 by the Institute for Defense Analyses for Office of the Under Secretary of Defense, says that fourth generation warfare (4GW), asymmetric warfare (AW), and unconventional warfare (UW) are basically the same. There is no agreed upon name for this type of warfare according to the Joint Warfighting Center's *Irregular Warfare Special Study* of August 4, 2006, which proclaims that it's been labeled unconventional warfare (UW), fourth generation warfare (4GW), irregular warfare (IW), situations short of war, etc. What this means is that there is no single term for the new war, and that although there are differences in the multiple terms that are used, they're basically the same.

For the scope of this study, the types of warfare just mentioned are synonymous because they have been described as such by credible sources and because I've noticed that each contain most of the shared characteristics, which are:

- They are international, protracted, political wars that are fought among the people.
- They are an interagency joint effort between the military, federal law enforcement, and local and state law enforcement, which is known globally as the multinational force (MNF), as well as nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) and intergovernmental organizations (IGOs).
- They use the civilian population and private sector of the host nation (HN) during civil-military operations (CMO) against a state's internal enemies.
- They must be perceived as legitimate by the host nation's civilian population in order to gain their cooperation.[2]
- They rely on psychological operations, isolation, and nonlethal weapons, typically for the destruction of the enemy's will.
- They use synchronization of tactics and strategies.

Unity of Effort/Interagency

These wars are interagency, international operations that use a combined, highly coordinated and synchronized approach to achieve *unity of effort*, also called *unified action*, during attacks. The organizations that are involved include local and state law enforcement, which cooperates with federal agencies and the host nation's military. In the United States this means the FBI, NSA, CIA, and FEMA.

The military forces of most countries are participating through an allied military force called the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO). They are working with the civilian population as part of civil support, also called *civil-military operations (CMO)*. Non-military participants include: nongovernmental organizations (NGO), private voluntary organizations (PVO), and intergovernmental organizations (IGO). Nationally, this combined force is called the *interagency*; globally it's called the *multinational force (MNF)*.

The private sector is also involved. So, this includes not just people in communities, but workplaces, stores, restaurants, businesses, etc. Basically all of the core entities that compose a nation are involved. Some of these activities are being directed by the United Nations (UN).

Because of the advancements in communication, this interagency, international force, which is fused with the civilian population, functions as a single unit, or what the US Army refers to as unified action. Their activities on the strategic, operational, and tactical level are closely synchronized due to technological advancements.

---

2   There are many references in government sources regarding legitimacy. Almost all of them state that these operations must be *perceived* as legitimate by the civilian population which it uses to combat these new enemies. It is the perception of legitimacy which they emphasize, rather than the actual practice of being legitimate. "Legitimacy is a condition growing from the perception of a specific audience of the legality, morality, and correctness of a set of actions," says the US Army in its *Peace Operations Field Manual* of December 30, 1994. The September 2008 *Unconventional Warfare* report of the US Army Special Operations Forces explained it this way: "The purpose of legitimacy is to develop and maintain the will necessary to attain the national strategic end state. The basis for legitimacy is the legality, morality, and rightness of the actions undertaken, as well as the will of the US public to support the actions. Legitimacy is frequently a decisive element. ... Creating and maintaining an enduring, functioning state requires the government to be legitimate in the eyes of the population." Notice how this material suggests that the actions of the MNF must not necessarily be legitimate, only *appear* legitimate to the people. The *Military Operations Other Than War* article by the Joint Chiefs of Staff, describes legitimacy as, "a condition based on the perception by a specific audience of the legality, morality, or rightness of a set of actions." It continues: "If an operation is perceived as legitimate, there is a strong impulse to support the action, and in MOOTW, legitimacy is frequently a decisive element." These and other documents indicate that those directing these forces are concerned primarily with the appearance of legitimacy. "Legitimacy is perceived by interested audiences as the legality, morality, or fairness of a set of actions," the *Peace Operations Joint Publication* of October 17, 2007 tells us. "Such audiences may include the US public, foreign nations, civil populations in the operational area, and the participating forces. If a PO is perceived as legitimate by both the citizens of the nations contributing the forces and the citizens of the country being entered, the PO will have a better chance of long-term success."

Synchronization

Synchronization is a type of unified action which consists of multiple operations conducted simultaneously in the battlespace, usually at a high tempo. It is an ancient military tactic where the speed and sequence of attacks is arranged to achieve victory. It is a product of C4ISR (which will be explained shortly) and an important concept in this new type of warfare.

The US Army explains unified action as: "the synchronization, coordination, and/or integration of the activities of governmental and nongovernmental entities with military operations to achieve unity of effort. It involves the application of all instruments of national power, including actions of other government agencies and multinational military and nonmilitary organizations."

Synchronization is an international, interagency function involving the UN, NATO, NGOs, government contractors, the private sector, as well as a HN's military, local, state, and federal government agencies.

The idea is that launching multiple attacks or a series of attacks done in a particular sequence will have a multiplying effect that will "immobilize, suppress, or shock the enemy," according to the US Army. Synchronization occurs on the strategic, operational, and tactical level.

It consists of a vertical and horizontal sharing (harmonizing) of information. On the vertical level, the type of environment, objective, and forces determine the guidance and flexibility necessary for an operation. Synchronization occurs horizontally across the battlespace on the tactical level between forces and organizations. The MNF uses automated computerized methods to synchronize information. The transmission of this information occurs frequently and quickly.

The activities that are synchronized continually change in relation to any new information obtained by intelligence. It involves the rapid processing and transmission of information gained by intelligence to commanders, planners, and forces in the battlespace.

Because of the speed at which the processing and transmission of information occurs, the attacks which are directed at an enemy may be the result of near-real-time, or even real-time intelligence. In the past, force maneuvers were delayed by the transmission of information. Now, due to technological advances, it is the commanders who must wait for their previous instructions to be executed before instantaneously transmitting the next set of commands, which may be the result of real-time intelligence.

The book, *Understanding Information Age Warfare*, by David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Richard E. Hayes, and David A. Signori, sponsored by RAND and MITRE Corporations, explains it this way: "In fact, as the speed of decisionmaking and information flows associated with the C2 process increase, the dynamics [attacks and movements] associated with the force elements in the physical domain will define the limits of overall synchronization."

Expanded Battlefield

The battlefield for this new type of warfare has expanded into the civilian sector. For this reason, it's now called the *battlespace*. The battlespace is global. The battles take place among the civilian population where the military uses civilians as irregular forces.

The physical architecture of the battlespace has several levels. At the top is the space level which includes satellites. The near-space level has UAVs and high-flying aircraft. Then there is the maneuver level which contains people, robots, vehicles, ships, and low-flying aircraft.[3]

"Defense of the Homeland involves a global, multi-domain battlespace," proclaimed the Department of Defense in its June 2005, *Strategy for Homeland and Civil Support* report. "The global reach of potential and existing adversaries necessitates a global perspective."

---

3   For simplification purposes, this is a modified version of the various layers in NCW described in the MITRE Corporation's October 24, 2005 article, *From Netted Sensors to Swarming*, which contains more layers and elements.

The civilian population is playing an important role in the expanded battlespace, according to the DOD. In order to succeed in these new missions, the actions of the military and civilian organizations will be coordinated far more closely than they were in the past. In its *Network Centric Warfare* publication of 2000 the DOD had this to say regarding the civilian population being used by the military: "Although civilians have been involved as victims and in supporting [combat] roles throughout history, they will play an increasingly important role in the battlespaces of the future."

"The operational environment will expand to areas historically immune to battle," the US Army tells us in its February 27, 2008 *Field Manual Operations* report, "including the continental United States and the territory of multinational partners, especially urban areas." "All operations," it continued, "will be conducted 'among the people' and outcomes will be measured in terms of effects on populations."

According to the Army, the new enemy will increasingly seek protection among the civilian population. The essential "struggle of the future" they say, will take place primarily among civilians and will therefore require US security dominance in these areas.

Domestic War Rooms
Command and Control Centers

Military campaigns have been typically directed from war rooms. They are also called *command centers,* or *command and control centers (C2)*. A C2 center is a military term for a station which allows the planning, direction and control of operations, monitoring, decisionmaking, and execution.

The word communications was added to this term, making it C3, and eventually computers were added, amounting to C4. It is now referred to as *C4ISR* with the addition of intelligence, surveillance, and reconnaissance.[4] A more detailed explanation of this term follows.

Command is the formulation of intent such as planning, control is the information obtained from the results of the action taken, as well as the conclusion as to whether or not the action was successful. Communications and computers are the hardware and software used to implement the command and control.

Intelligence, surveillance, and reconnaissance are the hardware and software systems of sensors, people, data collectors, and platforms, as well as the use of tools to extract the information from data. These are collectively referred to as *C4ISR*.

C4ISR has multiple interacting components including: battlespace monitoring, awareness, understanding, sensemaking, command intent, battlespace management, synchronization, and information systems. Most C4ISR centers are equipped with computers and communications that collect, process, filter, store, display, and disseminate information, according to predefined policies. Physical C4ISR centers can be mobile or stationary and due to the possibility of online meetings, they may be virtual as well.

Civilian Use

In the late 1960s, the police in the US began to use these centers to deal with disturbances in major cities. One of the first to be used by police in New York City is known as the Special Police Radio Inquiry Network (SPRINT).

---

4   I've noticed that the term C4ISR has been described in several ways. It can mean a physical location such as a C2 Center or a War Room. It can also describe a communications system consisting of hardware and software. For instance, LandWarNet, ForceNet, Air Force C2, and WIN-T have been explained as C4ISR hardware/software systems. The term can be used to depict the concept of communication. It also seems to be used to explain a combination of these.

SPRINT referred all incidents to the department's computer which fused it with other relevant data in the database then sent it to radio dispatchers, who observed the incident on a computer in its relation to patrol cars in the area and contacted the appropriate one.

Riot control rooms which were connected to the SPRINT were then setup in New York City in 1969 with closed-circuit TV cameras, deployable helicopters, and fixed cameras in the city. Similar ones were created in the late 1970s in Los Angeles.

By 1969 the Directorate for Civil Disturbance Planning and Operations (DCDPO) had built a domestic war room in the Pentagon to monitor political protests, according to a 1972 Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights report, *Army Surveillance of Civilians*. It was constructed based on ones used in Vietnam and was equipped with situational maps, computers, closed circuit TVs, hot lines, illuminated switchboards, etc.

Similar centers were created in the late 1960s across the US, which were run by the Military Intelligence Group (MIG) to monitor protesters. According to the Senate report, the DCDPO viewed these peaceful protesters not as loyal Americans exercising constitutional rights, but as "dissident forces" in a counterinsurgency war.

The BSSR mentioned that the police, military, and decisionmakers would be increasingly working together at these centers using advanced technology that allowed for the real-time collection of information and the immediate deployment of resources to deal with domestic threats.

The C4ISR centers that are used by civilian and military forces when dealing with domestic threats in the new war are known as *civil-military operations centers (CMOCs)*. NATO calls them *civil-military cooperation centers (CIMICs)*. The CMOC is the physical meeting center for civil affairs units. They are located in the civilian sector and there may be more than one in a city. CMOCs can also be virtual through online networks.

The deployed civil-military units are also equipped with the latest tactical communications equipment including digital radios (DR) and are in constant contact with the CMOC. These centers are also connected to the Global Information Grid (GIG), which will be discussed shortly.

Daily meetings take place at these centers between representatives of the military, NGOs, IGOs, private sector businesses, civilian leaders, local officials, and government agencies. One of the primary IGOs is the UN, which is represented by state department officials. Some of the discussions which occur at these meetings include information pertaining to ongoing activities against domestic threats.

The CMOC receives and validates information regarding domestic threats in the AO. This information may originate from the interagency or another source. It then forwards the requests to the local civil-military force for action. The CMOC also coordinates the activities of civilian-military forces at the tactical level, and is in constant contact with these forces.

Communications
Global Information Grid

The DOD's change to NCW, which uses geographically dispersed and organizationally complex units consisting of relatively small forces, required an extensive information capability to quickly and efficiently track down an adversary that could be anywhere on the planet.

The *Global Information Grid (GIG)*, developed partially by the MITRE Corporation, provides this capability. The GIG has been called the DOD's global C4ISR unit for netwar. It is a globally interconnected set of information, capabilities, processes, applications, sensors, weapons, and management tools.

Its information management allows for the collection, processing, storing, and distribution of information. This information is instantly available to authorized users such as warfighters, decisionmakers, and support personnel. Authorized people can use a variety of different devices/systems to securely access the information anytime, anyplace on the planet. It also connects facilities such as bases, posts, camps, stations, and mobile platforms.

It allows for community collaboration of its geographically dispersed users. It can connect tactical forces with decisionmakers, essentially placing the decisionmakers in the battlespace. Sensors and other intelligence sources connected to the GIG provide real-time situational awareness throughout the entire battlespace.

The exceptional situational awareness, provided by instantaneous communication, allows for better decisionmaking. Also networked with the GIG are directed-energy weapons and other types of electronic warfare capabilities. The GIG uses existing commercial satellite and ground-based systems as its backbone. GIG nodes such as aircraft, vehicles, and ships are equipped with a *digital radio (DR)* known as the *joint tactical radio system (JTRS),* which is a type of computer that runs a radio application.[5]

The GIG will eventually integrate all of the DOD's information systems, services, and applications into a seamless, reliable, secure, network. The GIG is also connected to communications systems used by coalition and allied forces. According to some sources, the integration of all DOD elements into the GIG won't be completed until 2020. However, it has been functional since 2005.

Each service has its own tactical mobile C4ISR system which is similar and connected to the GIG. The Marines and Navy use ForceNet, the Air Force uses Command and Control Constellation (C2 Constellation), the Army's is LandWarNet and the Warfighter Information Network-Tactical (WINT-T).

Before explaining these tactical communications systems in more detail, it will be helpful to be familiar with the tactical mobile networks that forces are now using as a result of the DOD's transition to netwar. These mobile networks allow for real-time information sharing and synchronization, and therefore facilitate the *battleswarm.*

Tactical Mobile Networks/Digital Radios

As part of the transformation to NCW the military has increasingly used a type of wireless, self-configuring, *mobile ad hoc network (MANET)*, which is based on the mesh network standard. MANET technology was developed by the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), the US Army, and the Office of Naval Research (ONR), and has existed since at least the mid 1990s.

---

5   According to the Department of Defense's June 2007 publication *Global Information Grid Architectural Vision*, communications technology used in the GIG will include a tiny hands-free computer that is embedded in clothing and is presumably undetectable to the casual observer. This will allow the DOD to be connected to individuals in a covert manner and direct them in real-time. The DOD also mentioned an interest in linking people to the GIG using *human computer interaction (HCI)*, which is a highly advanced natural way that allows people to interact with the GIG. The interaction is characterized by sensory channels and cognitive capabilities that are fused with communications. Although the description of HCI used for this purpose is brief and vague, the goal seems to be the transfer of information directly into a person's sensory pathways (e.g. auditory and visual). DARPA has developed the Small Unit Operations Situational Awareness System (SUO-SAS), which is an ad hoc network that allows dismounted warfighters to covertly and securely communicate with others in complex environments such as urban or wooded terrains. While the details provided by DARPA pertaining to SUO-SAS are minimal, this reveals another interest in covert communication technology. See the DARPA report, *Subcommittee on Terrorism, Unconventional Threats and Capabilities,* March 27, 2003, by Dr. Tony Tether. The US Army's *Bioeffects of Selected Nonlethal Weapons* report of 1998 similarly mentioned that *microwave hearing* could be used to send private messages to people. The military's interest in using this technology, which was demonstrated in a basic form several decades ago, was also reported in the *Wired* article of February 18, 2008, *Pentagon Report: Nonlethal Weapons Could Target Brain, Mimic Schizophrenia.* The 1995 DOD contract entitled *Communicating via the Microwave Auditory Effect (F41624-95-C-9007)* revealed an interest to communicate with military personnel by transmitting instructions directly into their brains. It described a revolutionary technology that had already been demonstrated with microwave hearing that could be used for numerous purposes including special operations.

A MANET does not require a fixed router infrastructure used in a regular network. Instead, each device/node contains as a wireless router and is capable of sending and receiving data. These mobile nodes form a mobile mesh network with each other in an ad hoc manner. Each node can move independently in any direction by frequently and dynamically changing its links to other devices. MANETs are rugged, secure, spectrum-agile, mobile networks that form a communications system from the strategic to the tactical level.

To transfer data, a MANET uses existing wireless communications systems such as wireless LANs, cellular, and satellite networks. They can function on their own or be connected to the internet.

The physical devices used in a MANET are sometimes referred to as *nodes*, which have integrated network devices such as wireless routers and omnidirectional antennas. The nodes can be placed on aircraft, boats, vehicles, and even people. A particular device which allows for the creation of a MANET is the *digital radio (DR)*, also called the *software-defined radio (SDR)*. The military's version of the DR is the JTRS.

JTRS is a vital part of NCW. It is to be used by the various services deployed in the tactical areas of the battlespace to communicate seamlessly through MANETs. JTRS were designed in the mid 1990s by defense contractors for the US military. The technology for JTRS, however, goes back to the 1980s when they were developed by the military to be used as part of *electronic warfare (EW)*.

A JTRS is a computer that can be programmed to imitate a radio. Like a computer, it runs applications, which can be added and configured. One of these applications allows it to mimic a radio. A JTRS can be upgraded and programmed remotely.

JTRS are multi-band, multi-mode, multi-channel radios with digital/analog converters that have computer networking capabilities. They use a wideband networking waveform which allows them to access a range of frequencies from 2 MHz to 2 GHz, including from HF to UHF.

They allow for the wireless transmission of data, voice, and multimedia files between nodes in the battlespace using MANETS. Some have sensors which provide information pertaining to the environment in real-time. JTRS are also connected to the GIG, and can communicate with satellites using GPS receivers. They are capable of establishing communication with all other levels of command.

Because the regular physical components of a radio, such as mixers, filters, amplifiers, and modulators are run by software, JTRS have a small, open physical architecture. These devices can be placed on ships, aircraft, and vehicles, tiny robots, worn on clothing, or used in handheld devices.

Another type of JTRS is the *cognitive radio (CR)*, which, in addition to the JTRS capabilities, has artificial intelligence (AI). It was first introduced in 1999 as an extension of the SDR/JTRS. DARPA has been involved in the creation of CRs through programs such as the Adaptive Cognition-Enhanced Radio Teams (ACERT), and Situation Aware Protocols in Edge Network Technologies (SAPIENT). Like JTRS, a CR is a computer that can run a radio application to mimic radio signal processing. Its physical architecture is small because all of the regular hardware components associated with radio signal reception is run by software.

The CR is an intelligent device that is aware of itself, the needs of the user, and the environment. It understands, learns from, and adapts to its environment. The CR is not just programmable, it is trainable. It can be trained by the user or its network. And a CR is not just aware of its location, it is aware its environment. Using its sensors, it continually monitors the internal and external environment and adjusts its parameters based on user behavior, network state, and the radio frequency environment.

The CR is aware of environmental factors including heating, doors, ventilation, air conditioning, lighting, appliances, and electronic devices such as telephones, pagers, etc. It can also be equipped with audio, video, and many other types of sensors. It can be programmed to respond in a specific way when the sensors detect something particular.

Like other digital radios the CR uses existing signals from cellular, radio, and satellite systems. It continually monitors these systems and adjusts its transmission and reception parameters to function within the range of unused frequencies emanating from these sources, which it uses to forms MANETs.

The Warfighter Information Network-Tactical

The Warfighter Information Network-Tactical (WIN-T) is one of the Army's C4ISR systems. It is a mobile tactical communications network that provides reliable, secure, seamless video, data, image, and voice transfer during combat. It is the Army's tactical portion of the GIG. It allows for the continuous communications on the move with joint, allied, and coalition forces.

WIN-T facilitates real-time organization of battlespace nodes using JTRS which create MANETS to keep mobile forces connected and synchronized. These MANETS allow warfighters to maintain constant battlespace situational awareness while on the move and to synchronize their attacks more precisely.

It was designed for joint operations so the commander could conduct multiple simultaneous missions. It allows commanders at all levels who may be stationed at various locations throughout the battlespace to collaborate, providing tactical communication from the GIG to the battlespace commander. WIN-T links warfighters in the battlespace with decisionmakers. It was built by General Dynamics, Lockheed Martin, Cisco Systems, and BAE Systems. The backbone for this network consists of existing terrestrial, airborne, and satellite communications systems.

LandWarNet

LandWarNet is another tactical communications system used by the US Army which connects to the GIG. It is the Army's enterprise system that moves information through a seamless network from the operational level down to the tactical level of the individual soldier. It provides integrated applications, services, and network capabilities at every level.

LandWarNet uses JTRS to create a self-forming, self-synchronizing MANETs which allows "opportunistic alliances" to join the force and attack a target. It automatically dispatches nodes in an area to join the network. If connectivity is temporarily lost by a node, then priority nodes retain support by following predetermined policies.

It also allows the commander to conduct continuous operations simultaneously. The widest range of strategic, operational, and tactical resources are available to the warfighter because LandWarNet synchronizes forces on land, air, space, and sea. Weapons platforms and sensors, as well as services and applications are also connected.

NGOs, the interagency, and other decisionmakers can be connected to the force at the tactical level using LandWarNet. Extraordinary situational awareness of the operation is achieved by constant intelligence updates from sensors and other netcentric service updates, up to the highest levels, that have an impact on the operation. All of this is available to the warfighter in real-time while on the move.

ForceNet

ForceNet is a reliable, robust C4ISR system used by the Navy and Marines which links nodes such as people, sensors, networks, and weapons into a networked combat force. It is used across the entire battlespace, from sea, to space, to land, and is integrated with C4ISR systems of other services.

It stores, processes, and synthesizes large amounts of information from all nodes in a repository that is available to users if they have proper security clearance. It uses a visual representation to allow decisionmakers the ability to see situational information and provides decisionmaking tools for combat operations and logistics. It allows leaders at every level to access vast amounts of information.

With ForceNet, warfighters are able to synchronize their attacks throughout the battlespace. By connecting distributed groups of decisionmakers, warfighters, and allied forces to a common C4ISR, it allows for unprecedented levels of situational awareness, essentially making them an integrated fighting force.

Command and Control Constellation

The Command and Control Constellation (C2 Constellation) is the portion of the GIG used by the Air Force for NCW, which allows for the collaborative planning and synchronization of attacks. Its NCW-enabled C2 Constellation allows for the integration and collaboration between different nodes including satellites, weapons platforms, vehicles, and aircraft, down to small devices such as PDAs.

Warfighters connected to C2 Constellation are provided with intelligence updates from a sensor network that spans from land to space. These air, space, and terrestrial nodes are available as resources to the warfighter. Joint and coalition forces are also connected to this. C2 Constellation uses JTRS to form MANETs.

The New Enemy

Introduction

This new war is being waged against a wide range of potential threats. According to the DOD and other sources there is a new enemy that lives among the people. These threats to US national security are "complex and ill-defined" the Los Alamos National Laboratory tells us.

Regarding these new enemies, the *Unconventional Warfare* publication put out by the US Army in September 2008, proclaimed: "Adversaries threaten the United States throughout a complex operational environment, extending from critical regions overseas to the homeland."

The US Army's Strategic Studies Institute revealed in its June 15, 1998 report, *Nonlethality and American Land Power* that in the future, military forces will be facing opponents who were schooled in America.

"[We] must also focus on non-traditional threats at home," mentioned the US Army War College in its April of 2002 report, *Defending the Homeland*. "The country must refocus and fix its attention ... on defending the homeland against a wide array of threats."

This new enemy includes groups and individuals that are not members of a military force. "We're not in a war against nations or big armies, we're in a war against individuals," proclaimed US Air Force Lt. Col. John Forsythe in a February 8, 2005 *Defense Daily* article.

In an article entitled, *Man-Hunting, Nexus Topography, Dark Networks, and Small Worlds*, which appeared in the winter, 2006 issue of *Iosphere*, Chief Warrant Officer 3, John R. Dodson announced: "The asymmetrical threats currently challenging U.S. national policies are not that of large standing armies. They are individuals and groups of like-minded individuals."

The enemies are seldom states, says Toffler Associates, in a report published for the Defense Intelligence Agency. Instead, they are individuals and groups who are threats to national security and must be neutralized.

The US Army declared that this war will be waged against confirmed enemies as well as a wide range of other *potential* threats. The multinational force will rely heavily on the civilian population to neutralize the new enemy that lives among them. "New asymmetric threats have emerged," announced the Department of Defense in its 2007 *Annual Report*. "This is an enemy that lives and hides among the civilian population," they emphasized.

"Today's threats" revealed Applied Energetics, a government defense contractor, "are often characterized by a non-state enemy who operates among a civilian population, in urban and congested areas." The new enemies have been described as insurgents, nonstate actors, asymmetric threats, irregular threats, adversaries, etc. Before we examine the new enemy in more detail, let's have a look at the various terms used to describe them.

Labels of the New Enemy

Adversary

The February 27, 2008, *US Army Field Manual Operations* defines an adversary this way: "An adversary is a party acknowledged as potentially hostile to a friendly party and against which the use of force may be envisaged." Adversaries also include members of the local populace who sympathize with the enemy. So, an adversary is someone who might be hostile or people who support them.

Irregular Enemy

The US Army's 2008 *Unconventional Warfare* document describes an irregular enemy in the following manner: "Irregulars, or irregular forces, are individuals or groups of individuals who are not members of a regular armed force, police, or other internal security force." They are usually nonstate-sponsored and unconstrained by sovereign nation legalities and boundaries. Irregular enemies use unconventional or asymmetric methods to counter US advantages.

The Army says that irregular enemies include but are not limited to: specific paramilitary forces, contractors, individuals, businesses, foreign political organizations, resistance or insurgent organizations, expatriates, transnational terrorists, disillusioned transnational terrorism members, black marketers, and other social or political "undesirables."

Nonstate Actor

Nonstate actors (NSAs) are those who operate outside the control of states or governments recognized by the United Nations. They include but are not limited to, terrorists, vigilante groups, civil defense groups that are not under government control, and insurgents. Other types of NSAs are dissident armed forces, guerrillas, liberation movements, freedom fighters, rebel opposition groups, farmers' cooperatives, local militias, and some individuals.[1]

In addition, all of the various organizations in the NGO category can be considered nonstate actors if they are not under state or corporate control. The RAND Corporation further describes an NSA as, "those who seek to confound people's fundamental beliefs about the nature of their culture, society, and government." Other adversaries, according to RAND, are "civil-society activists fighting for democracy and human rights." RAND then links these social activists to state-run militant anarchist groups such as the black block, thereby labeling them domestic terrorists.

The book *Network Centric Warfare*, authored by David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, and Frederick P. Stein, and sponsored by the Department of Defense, explains actors as: "entities that have the primary function of creating 'value' in the form of 'combat power' in the battlespace. Actors employ both traditional (lethal) and nontraditional (nonlethal) means."

In another RAND publication released in 2005, written by Deborah G. Barger, entitled, *Toward a Revolution in Intelligence Affairs*, a nonstate actor is described as anyone who either acts or plans against US national security interests. Individuals using such asymmetric approaches, says RAND, will become the dominant threat to the US homeland.

Insurgent

The August 1, 2007, Air Force Doctrine document on irregular warfare, defines an insurgency as "an organized movement aimed at the overthrow of a constituted government through use of subversion and armed conflict."

An insurgency is a revolutionary war, says the US Army. According to the DOD's *Dictionary of Military and Associated Terms*, an insurgent is a "member of a political party who rebels against established leadership." Insurgencies usually occur when a population is oppressed and are waged by people who orchestrate what the Air Force calls an *information operation (IO)*, which is basically the dissemination of information. Insurgents use the news media and the internet for communicating, training, recruiting, and funding.

They also blame the ruling entity as the cause of latent widespread social, political, or even religious grievances. They may use violent or nonviolent methods to convince the population that their cause is moral. Some insurgencies are international.

---

1   There are some conflicting definitions of nonstate actors. For instance, James Madison University's article *Non-State Actors and Their Significance* does not include farmers' cooperatives as NSAs, but the online encyclopedia, *Wikipedia*, does. See *Non-state Actor/Entity* at *wikipedia.org/wiki/Non-state_actor*.

Insurgents are those who try to persuade the populace to accept political change. If persuasion doesn't work they may use intimidation, sabotage, propaganda, subversion, military force, or terror. Some insurgents attempt to organize the population into a mass movement, according to the Air Force, to separate from or overthrow the existing government.

If all of these conditions must exist in order for someone to be labeled an insurgent, then those using nonviolent methods to cause change may not be included. However, if only a few nonviolent actions, such as influencing a population, compelling a ruling party to change its behavior, spreading information (IO campaigns), or organizing a mass movement against oppression are required to meet this explanation, then those resisting tyranny may be considered insurgents.

A New Enemy for a New World War

As official sources mentioned earlier, these descriptions of the new enemy are indeed vague allowing for many possible interpretations as to who the enemy is. According to these definitions, the enemy does not necessarily use violence to promote political change. Their methods may be nonviolent.

The primary consideration here is that they are groups or individuals who are not under government control, are against the established leadership, and may influence the population to promote political change. Then there are the *potential enemies* who will be targeted because of an action they *might* take in the future. We'll discover in the next chapter that nonviolent protesters are being labeled terrorists. These enemy variations will be referred to throughout this book as the *new enemy*.

The Enemy's Structure and Tactics

RAND explains the resistance structure of the new enemy in the following way: They are formal or informal and may be large or small, with an inclusive or exclusive membership. The organizational structure is flat with no central leadership or command. The group has little or no hierarchy but may have multiple leaders.

Decisionmaking consists of a decentralized process and consensus which promotes individual initiative and autonomy. A powerful underlying set of beliefs may bond members of this structure, which allows them to share a set of common interests and objectives. This feature provides for tactical decentralization, allowing each to carry out operations as a functional unit.

Individuals in these organizations may further their political ideas by "wrapping themselves in nationalism," and acting like local Robin Hoods, who seek to "influence, if not control, their governments and their foreign and domestic policies," says RAND. "They engage in systematic activities to evade government controls."

This is an interesting statement by RAND, particularly because it was believed that the government existed to serve the people, not to control them. Other US government sources describe similar structures for these "insurgent groups" in their irregular warfare publications. According to these sources, the insurgent groups will be masters of NCW and will function more like an extended family than a military.

"The methods of warfare employed by our new adversaries," says the DOD, "seek to destabilize a state and capitalize on this instability." According to the US Army, this is accomplished using methods that appear to be peaceful and routine, but will be used to damage the global distribution of power.

While the adversary leadership structure and tactics that RAND and the US military just explained is somewhat vague, it could easily be interpreted to include those used by nonviolent groups in the past to resist tyranny. Such movements have been led by committees or groups of leaders.

For instance, Mohandas K. Gandhi and the Indian National Congress used such tactics against the British Crown in South Africa and India. They were used by Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. in the American south. Many other nonviolent groups worldwide have used these methods to educate and mobilize their fellow citizens in order to resist an occupying tyrannical force or to expose a social evil.

These information wars, the Army tells us in its *Unconventional Warfare* manual, have been waged in the past by individuals and groups against tyrannical governments. "Combined with political purpose," it explained, "political warriors have sought to resist the occupier, or subvert and overthrow the oppressor."

In its May of 2003 *Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats* article, the School of Advanced Military Studies of the United States Army Command and General Staff College announced that the US will most likely face regional threats that will challenge it through asymmetric approaches. These approaches will include area denial strategies, economic competition, and information warfare. And the enemy will be using "information attacks" and "direct action attacks."

The new enemies are those using *information attacks* to strike against the large corporate trade or political institutions, according RAND. Most are nonstate actors. Such an adversary, says RAND, will not be focusing its attacks at the military, but instead at the core of the international system, particularly if it is at odds with their deeply held cultural, religious, or ideological beliefs.

Resistance to Global Movement

"The most pressing threats of the new security environment are violent reactions to the world's movement toward a single international system," revealed the Department of Defense in its November 2002 report, *Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War*. "The overt hostility toward what is perceived to be a heavily American globalization," it added, "make it plain that this evolution will be neither easy nor without significant peril."

Likewise, the CFR had this to say regarding the resisters of this global movement: "In the transformation of a process … there are often elements less subject to evolution." According to the CFR these evolutionary resisters are using a dispersed resistance movement that is concealed within the civilian population. They suggest that the US military change its tactics to neutralize these resisters.

"As globalization increases world integration," explained the US Army, "the scope of threats to US security and public safety becomes more global." "The enemies of integration," advised Toffler Associates, "pose the most serious threat to world order." The security forces, therefore, will be increasingly locating and neutralizing these threats to globalization, according to the US Army.

So, these government think tank and military reports are telling us that the new enemy includes groups and individuals with particular political views who are standing in the way of human development as our society evolves into a global civilization.

Information Warfare

These new enemies exist all over the planet. According to the US military and government defense contractors, they use computers, the internet, fax machines, cell phones and public media to convey their messages. The internet is used for communications, propaganda, funding, and training, they tell us.

The enemies use their position within a state's military, political, or social structure to further their objectives. They use information operations to influence state forces within the population. In various publications, the act of transmitting information has been called netwar, information operations, information warfare, information attacks, etc. According to the RAND Corporation, most of this netwar is waged through the media, including newspapers, magazines, TV, faxes, and particularly the internet.

Information attacks, according an article called, *A Theory of Information Warfare*, that appeared in the spring, 1995 issue of *Airpower Journal*, are attacks aimed at the knowledge or belief systems of adversaries. Information operations (IO) have also been called cyberwar, information warfare (infowar), network centric warfare (netwar, NCW), and command and control warfare (C2W).

The DOD describes IO as: "The integrated employment of the core capabilities of electronic warfare, computer network operations, psychological operations, military deception, and operations security, in concert with specified supporting and related capabilities, to influence, disrupt, corrupt or usurp adversarial human and automated decision making while protecting our own."

Because there is no reference to the use of IO by enemies in this definition, when an enemy is said to be engaging in IO, it can be considered that their activities meet this definition. However, the context with which IO, and its related terms have been used by official sources suggests that the act of simply conveying information, alone, can be described as an IO.

The following definition of infowar appeared in a 1999 edition of *Air and Space Power Journal*, in an articled called *What is Information Warfare?*: "Information Warfare is any action to deny, exploit, corrupt or destroy the enemy's information and its functions; protecting ourselves against those actions and exploiting our own military information functions." So, information attacks, information operations, command and control warfare, information war, etc., are all basically the same.[2]

The new war is one fought for political purposes. It is done for the support and influence of the population. "Its battles are fought amongst the people," the US Marine Corps tells us, "and its outcomes are determined by the perceptions and support of the people."

What makes this new type of warfare different, says the DOD, is the focus of its operations, which is a relevant population, as well as its purpose, which is to gain or maintain control or influence over, and support of, that relevant population. The focus is on the legitimacy of a political authority to control or influence a population.

Because the multinational force must be perceived as legitimate by the civilians whom it relies on, information is a devastating weapon. The ideas which influence a person's perception are transmitted by information. "Information warfare techniques," explained Steven J. Lambakis in Joint Force Quarterly's *Reconsidering Asymmetric Warfare* article, "pose asymmetric threats to the United States and its interests." This new war is a "war of ideas and perception," as described by the US Marine Corps.

The book, *The Information Revolution and National Security*, published by the Strategic Studies Institute describes information warfare as a type of virus or cognitive agent that infects people with a unit of information and continues to create copies of it in the minds of people. The SSI portrays this as a destructive social process, which damages existing political structures by disrupting an establishment's methods to achieve political consensus (control). The use of these viruses, it explains, offsets the physical use of force, moving off the high-tech battlefield and into the human realm.

During a discussion called *Strategic Communications—The Information Battlefield*, at the 2007 Proceedings of the Combat Studies Institute Military History Symposium, Lieutenant General William B. Caldwell declared: "Essentially, the survival of these non-state actors depends on having a fertile ground of accepting populations to sow their seeds of discontent and lies."

"The target of information warfare, then, is the human mind," suggested Professor George J. Stein, in an *Airpower Journal* article entitled, *Information Warfare*. "The battle," he emphasized, "remains the battle for the mind." The US Marine Corps announced: "The credibility and perceived legitimacy of the US effort or the cause we support must never be put at risk by deceptive information operations."

Future enemies will be striking the American homeland using "information attacks," declared Steven Metz and Douglas V. Johnson in their 2001 article *Asymmetry and US Military Strategy*. The DOD's *Network Centric Warfare* report further states that nonstate actors use dangerous information warfare as instruments of power. What all of this means is that *this is an information war*.

---

2   The *Naval Law Review's* 1998 report, *A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons* by Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, says C2 warfare is a component of IW. The, *What is Information Warfare?* article published by *Air and Space Power Journal* on November 2, 1999 says that information warfare (IW), information operations (IO), and command and control warfare (C2W) are the same.

Initiatives to Remove Civil Liberties
USA Patriot Act

The USA Patriot Act of 2001 describes domestic terrorism in Section 802 as activities that: "involve acts dangerous to human life that are a violation of the criminal laws of the United States or of any State," as well as acts that "appear to be intended … to intimidate or coerce a civilian population … to influence the policy of a government by intimidation or coercion; or … to affect the conduct of a government by mass destruction, assassination, or kidnapping; and … occur primarily within the territorial jurisdiction of the United States."

Basically, if you appear to be intimidating a civilian population or government to influence policy, then you are a potential domestic terrorist. Although this phrase may seem like an irrelevant detail, it allows for the targeting of people who are peacefully expressing their ideas.

This act widens the definition of domestic terrorism. It's an example of how a phrase, or a single word, can be used to significantly expand the scope of potential enemies. The RAND–MIPT Terrorism Incident Database provides a much more vague definition of domestic terrorism. It defines it as: "Incidents perpetrated by local nationals against a purely domestic target."

The USA Patriot Act focuses on American citizens rather than foreign terrorists, according to Texas Congressman Ron Paul, who also says that there have been attempts to pass the provisions outlined in the Act for years, not to prevent terrorism, but to restrict freedom. The act increases the ability of law enforcement to conduct investigations, including the collection of email and internet activity, telephone, financial, medical, and other records.

It legalizes searches through a suspects house or business place without their knowledge or permission. In addition, the issuance of National Security Letters, which allows for warrantless searches, has been made easier. So, the act expanded both the arsenal of tactics that law enforcement can use on people, as well as the scope of people that can be targeted. It was passed in both houses by a large margin.

In his book *Unconquerable Nation: Knowing Our Enemy, Strengthening Ourselves*, published in 2006 by RAND, Brian Michael Jenkins linked terrorists to those who are against globalization by writing that the two groups will be forming an alliance.

The book *Terrorism in Asymmetrical Conflict*, written by the Stockholm International Peace Research Institute (SIPRI), describes terrorists as anti-system actors and mentions that those who are against globalization are part of an anti-system network, thus labeling them terrorists. Similarly, in its *Militant Extremists in the United States* report of April 2008, the Council on Foreign Relations says that those who oppose the WTO are potential domestic terrorists.

USA Today reported in November of 2004 that according to representatives of the Anti-Defamation League, US Marshals, and the Southern Poverty Law Center, domestic terrorists include those labeled white supremacists and anti-government people, as well as those who oppose corporations.

So, now the description of a terrorist has expanded to include those who are against globalization and corporations. We've learned that to battle terrorism the *Constitution* has been eroded. This is what the groups that are promoting this revolution have stated would be necessary, as we've seen.

For instance, there is currently a significant effort underway to limit free speech on the internet and in public. People engaging in lawful, peaceful protests are being punished, which is a violation of the 1st Amendment of the *Bill of Rights*. The 4th Amendment, which prevents against unreasonable searches or seizures by demanding a warrant or probable cause, is being ignored.

Additionally, the writ of habeas corpus in Article I of the *US Constitution*, which allows a prisoner to petition the courts, has been removed. Furthermore, the Posse Comitatus Act of 1878 which prevents the military from being used against citizens has been abolished.

In its 2007 *Posture Statement*, the United States Special Operations Command (USSOCOM) declared: "The global terror movement is broadening in scope to include other affiliated, independent, and emerging terrorist groups." The new terrorists, says USSOCOM, includes "groups, and even individuals possessing entrenched anti-Western or anti-globalization agendas."

RAND's 1999 book, *Countering the New Terrorism*, says terrorism is developing into netwar, which is an information war, on the level of MOOTW. RAND says that although terrorists will continue with violent attacks, their strategy will shift toward nonlethal ones, or information attacks. "Indeed, terrorism has long been about 'information,'" RAND explains. This is yet another expansion of the scope of enemies by labeling nonviolent methods as tactics which terrorists use.

"This is the battle of ideas," agreed the White House's 2006 *Strategy for Winning the War on Terror* plan. The terrorism we confront today, it says, originates from "subcultures of conspiracy and misinformation." "Terrorists," it continued, "recruit more effectively from populations whose information about the world is contaminated by falsehoods and corrupted by conspiracy theories."

NYPD Report

The report, *Radicalization in the West: The Homegrown Threat*, was put out by the NYPD Intelligence Division on August 15, 2007. Its intended audience is politicians and law enforcement throughout the country. The report mentions a 4-step process which leads someone to become radicalized.

The process includes a pre-radicalization phase, which is the person's situation in life before becoming an extremist. Most during this phase have ordinary jobs, live ordinary lives, and have little or no criminal record. They are basically unremarkable.

The next phase, self-identification, includes a life-changing experience, which the report mentions is one that changes their beliefs and opens them up to new worldviews. During this phase the person may be frustrated with the politics of their government and may seek other like-minded people. The next phase is indoctrination, where the person's new beliefs are intensified. Finally, jihadization results, where they see themselves as holy warriors.

The process can begin in prayer groups, prisons, schools, mosques, informal meetings, or on the internet, which it describes as an extremist recruitment center. According to the report, the whole process can take as little as a few weeks. And while it takes place, the person will often be engaged in non-criminal behavior.

Thought processes should be identified and interrupted, the report suggests. Although the phases of radicalization are described, the criteria that constitute a radical viewpoint are not explained in detail, leaving it open to interpretation. In addition, the potential terrorists demonstrating these radical views are ordinary citizens with no criminal history, exhibiting subtle and non-criminal behavior.

Whoever actually authored this report made these descriptions vague to include almost any behavior. And they obviously had an understanding of the phased process that commonly occurs when people encounter evidence of this emerging global police state, which drastically changes their worldview, awakens them, and motivates them to educate themselves and others.[1]

"Where once we would have defined the initial indicator of the threat at the point where a terrorist or group of terrorists would actually plan an attack," they announced, "we have now shifted our focus to a much earlier point."

---

1 Although this report seems to have originated from the NYPD that used the RAND Corporation for an "outside expert's view," RAND most probably drafted this report, while the NYPD put their name on it.

In a section of the report entitled, *Outside Expert's View*, Brian Michael Jenkins, a senior advisor to the RAND Corporation, had this to say: "This is the most comprehensive review across national boundaries" and "will undoubtedly become the basis for comparison with additional cases." He added, "Radicalization makes little noise. It borders on areas protected by the First and Fourth Amendments." So according to Jenkins, portions of the *Bill of Rights* are protecting these extremists. He's obviously implying that in order to deal with them free speech must be limited.

HR1955 (A Law against Thoughts)

The *Violent Radicalization and Homegrown Terrorism Prevention Act of 2007 (HR1955)* was introduced by Representative Jane Harman (D-CA) on April 19 of 2007 in the House, and passed 404 to 6 on October 23 2007. It is basically the proposal of a thought-based law. Its purpose is to deal with domestic terrorists and violent radicalization by creating a national commission to study methods to prevent those who hold radical and extremist belief systems while trying to promote a political, religious, or social change.

The bill had 15 co-sponsors including: Christopher Carney (D-PA), Donna Christensen (D-VI), Yvette Clarke (D-NY), Charlie Dent (R-PA), Norman Dicks (D-WA), Al Green (D-TX), James Langevin (D-RI), Zoe Lofgren (D-CA), Nita Lowey (D-NY), Daniel Lungren (R-CA), Ed Perlmutter (D-CO), Ted Poe (R-TX), Dave Reichert (R-WA), and Bennie Thompson (D-MS).

It was only opposed by Jeff Flake (R-AZ), Dana Rohrabacher (R-CA), Neil Abercrombie (D-HI), Jerry Costello (D-IL), Dennis Kucinich (D-OH), and John Duncan (R-TN). Although Ron Paul was not present, he expressed his opposition to the bill as well.

To draft the bill, Harman worked closely with the RAND Corporation. According to the Center for Constitutional Rights, RAND appears to have helped her draft it.[2] Two weeks before Harman introduced it, Brian Michael Jenkins, a senior advisor to RAND, gave a speech on *Jihadist Radicalization and Recruitment* to Harman's congressional subcommittee on terrorism. As we've discovered, Mr. Jenkins has announced that free speech outlined in the *Bill of Rights* is allowing the extremists to spread their radical ideas.

In Section 899A, the Act defines homegrown terrorism as: "The use, planned use, or threatened use, of force or violence by a group or individual born, raised, or based and operating primarily within the United States or any possession of the United States to intimidate or coerce the United States government, the civilian population of the United States, or any segment thereof, in furtherance of political or social objectives."

It describes ideologically-based violence, similarly, which includes, "the use, planned use, or threatened use of force or violence by a group or individual to promote the group or individual's political, religious, or social beliefs."

There are a couple things to consider about these definitions. First, they mention the "planned" use of force or violence. Planning, among other things, includes thoughts. Furthermore, the title *ideologically-based violence* means violence based on ideas. So this is an idea-based law, or, a law against ideas. "That means that no force need actually have occurred as long as the government charges that the individual or group thought about doing it," commented the *Baltimore Sun* in its *Here Come the Thought Police* story of November 19, 2007.

Also notice the phrase "force or violence." The word "force" does not necessarily mean physical force. For instance, in part 1B of its definition, *Merriam-Webster's Collegiate Dictionary, Eleventh Edition* describes force as "moral or mental strength." According to this, force is not necessarily physical but can mean the use of mental or moral abilities. It further describes force as the "capacity to persuade or convince" in part 1C.

---

2   In all likelihood, the RAND Corporation completely drafted this bill too and Mrs. Harman simply signed her name to it.

The *American Heritage Dictionary, Fourth Edition* defines force as "the capacity to do work or cause physical change; energy, strength, or active power." It is later describe in part 3A as, "intellectual power or vigor, especially as conveyed in writing or speech," and "a capacity for affecting the mind or behavior," in part 3C.

This means that force includes speech and ideas. So using *force* can basically mean having strong feelings or expressions about an issue. HR1955 would really be a law against certain ideas and expressions. This was acknowledged by the Center for Constitutional Rights, which announced that HR1955 focuses on ideology rather than criminal behavior, threatens the First Amendment, and that the definitions are so broad they could be used to investigate constitutionally protected activities.

HR1955 defines radicalization as: "The process of adopting or promoting an extremist belief system for the purpose of facilitating ideologically-based violence to advance political, religious, or social change." Notice how the definition focuses on the process rather than the actual embracement of such a belief system, or a crime committed as a result. In this manner it is similar to the NYPD's *Radicalization in the West: The Homegrown Threat* report of August 2007. Interestingly, RAND participated in both of these initiatives.

Section 899D recommends the creation of a Center of Excellence consisting of behavioral experts to study the social, criminal, political, psychological, and economic root-causes of such radical thoughts and feelings. The Center would then educate federal, state, local, and tribal homeland security officials on methods to identify and deal with those exhibiting such beliefs.

Section 899B says that it's critical that methods be developed to counter the thoughts and feelings of these domestic terrorists, because such thoughts pose a threat to homeland security. And in Section 899E, we discover that this would be an international effort.

HR1955 was mostly ignored by mainstream news. Representative Kucinich, however, one of the few congressmen who voted against the bill, had this to say: "It really sets the stage for further criminalization of protest. … This is the way our democracy little, by little, by little, is being stripped away from us."

On August 7, 2007, the Senate version of the bill (S1959) was introduced to the senate by Susan Collins (R-ME), and co-sponsored by Senator Norman Coleman (R-MN). It is currently pending in Senator Joe Lieberman's Homeland Security Committee. If the bill is enacted, it will amend the Homeland Security Act of 2002.

Free Speech on the Internet Under Attack

The RAND Corporation has mentioned that the extremists and terrorists are more interested in keeping the internet up than taking it down, because it allows them to disseminate their views and mobilize forces. Therefore, free speech disseminated via the internet is also under attack.

On February 5, 2008, the director of the FBI, Robert S. Mueller stated that groups of self-radicalized, homegrown extremists operating in the United States will be increasingly spreading messages of violence using the internet. According to Agent Mueller, these groups are not officially connected to foreign terrorist organizations but are inspired by their hateful message.

The USSOCOM, SIPRI, and NYPD Intelligence Division publications all mention that terrorists are using the internet to communicate, recruit, train, and gain financial support. HR1955 similarly portrays the internet as a conduit for the promotion of radical ideas to United States citizens, including a broad and constant stream of terrorist-related propaganda.

The White House's *Strategy for Winning the War on Terror* report had this to say about the internet: "The ability of terrorists to exploit the Internet and 24/7 worldwide media coverage allows them to bolster their prominence as well as feed a steady diet of radical ideology, twisted images, and conspiracy theories to potential recruits in all corners of the globe."

On November 6, 2007 *C-Span* broadcasted the House Homeland Security Subcommittee hearing on Terrorism and the Internet, which was chaired by representatives Jane Harman (D-CA), and Dave Reichert (R-WA). It included the former director of the RAND Corporation and an advisor from the Simon Wiesenthal Center, who linked 9/11 Truth sites to terrorist groups.

Mark Weitzman of the Simon Wiesenthal Center accused these sites of promoting conspiracy theories regarding 9/11 being an inside job. "These falsehoods and conspiracy theories" agreed Bruce Hoffman, former director of RAND, "have now become so ubiquitous and so pervasive that they are believed."

The United States Senate Committee on Homeland Security and Governmental Affairs, led by senators Joseph Lieberman and Susan Collins, released a report on May 8, 2008 called *Violent Islamist Extremism, the Internet, and the Homegrown Terrorist Threat*.[3]

It mentions that terrorists and other extremists are using the internet as part of a comprehensive messaging campaign to recruit followers into a global terrorist network. There is a growing number of radical homegrown extremists in the US that identify with terrorist objectives, said the report. The internet is used by the extremists to communicate and gain information on destructive tactics.

The internet also functions as a virtual extremist learning center for those seeking information on the extremist ideology. Some of this information is produced by organized extremist groups while other material is created by individuals.

The finding cites the August 2007 NYPD report, *Radicalization in the West: The Homegrown Threat*, as an excellent example of how regular people become radicalized into a terrorist ideology. It also warns that these groups and individuals may not be part of a known terrorist organization.

Testifying at the US Senate, Committee on Homeland Security and Governmental Affairs on October 30, 2007, the Assistant Commissioner of NYPD's Intelligence Division, Lawrence Sanchez, called the internet the most important factor in the radicalization that is occurring in America. According to Sanchez, it provides guidance for those seeking to adopt extremist beliefs.

MIAC Report

The Missouri Information Analysis Center's Strategic Report of February 20, 2009 distributed to the Missouri State Highway Patrol, warned officers of possible encounters with conspiracy theorists who claim that law enforcement, the military, and federal agencies are being used by an elitist group to set up a global dictatorship called the *New World Order*.[4]

The conspiracy theorists, according to the MIAC report, claim their 1st and 2nd amendments are being altered or removed, and that because the federal government is not following the *Constitution* it is no longer valid. The report focuses on identifying people exhibiting certain characteristics and labeling them members of a dangerous militia movement which hates law enforcement.

It is similar to the Phoenix FBI *Joint Terrorism Task Force* report and the *Virginia Terrorism Manual* which basically link militias and defenders of the *US Constitution* to terrorists.

---

3 The *New York Times* on May 25, 2008 revealed that Senator Lieberman tried to get YouTube to remove videos he finds offensive, in the article *Joe Lieberman, Would-Be Censor*.

4 The MIAC report was sent to the independent media outlet *Prison Planet* by concerned police officers. It's available at www.prisonplanet.com. Prison Planet announced in their March 13, 2009 *Police Trained Nationwide that Informed Americans are Domestic Terrorists* article, that the MIAC document reflects the situation occurring nationwide where people are being harassed, arrested, and labeled as terrorists for distributing 9/11 Truth material, or displaying certain political bumper stickers. Both the MIAC report and *Prison Planet's* coverage of the unfolding tyranny are consistent with the reports in mainstream media shown in this chapter.

The indicators outlined in the MIAC report that officers are told to look for consist of bumper stickers that are against the New World Order, Federal Reserve System, Internal Revenue Service, FBI, CIA, ATF, or the United Nations. Campaigns stickers for parties that promote the *Constitution* are also listed. Additional clues they're told to observe include anyone displaying an upside down US flag.[5]

The report also lists the possession of films such as *Zeitgeist* and *America: Freedom to Fascism* as evidence that an officer is dealing with a violent militia member. "You are the enemy," the report warned the officers. "The militia subscribes to an anti-government and NWO mindset, which creates a threat to law enforcement officers."

The People Are the Enemy

In order to combat the extremists who are spreading the conspiracy theories, RAND suggests a closer cooperation between civilians and the military. On September 19, 2005 it was reported by *The Nation* that through the JTTF, the military, federal law enforcement, and local police are aggressively targeting potential domestic terrorists.

Likewise, articles by *MSNBC*, the *ACLU*, and *Democracy Now*, explain that the US military, including the National Guard and Army, are working with local police, the FBI, and other federal agencies to conduct surveillance on US citizens suspected of being potential terrorists.

Reuters also mentioned that the military will be waging the War on Terror domestically, in its March 3, 2009 story, *Bush-era Memos Saw Rights Limits in US Terror War*. "Constitutional free-speech protections and a prohibition on unreasonable search and seizure could take a back seat to military needs in fighting terrorism inside the country," it described. In its *Military Expands Intelligence Role in US* article of January 14, 2007, the *New York Times* similarly noted an aggressive expansion by the military, CIA, and FBI into domestic intelligence gathering.

"The FBI hasn't just monitored environmental and anti-war rallies in Colorado Springs," announced the *Colorado Springs Independent* on December 8, 2005, "the agency also has opened official counterterrorism cases in connection with the demonstrations, using a definition of 'terrorism' that is so vague it could fit almost any crime."

The Drake University chapter of the National Lawyer's Guild came under scrutiny by the FBI after it organized a protest in November of 2003 at the Iowa National Guard Headquarters. In 2004 the JTTF monitored protesters throughout the country that were planning to appear at the Democratic and Republican National Conventions.

In 2004, the Fresno California Police Department monitored a local group peacefully protesting the war in Iraq as part of the JTTF. The California National Guard conducted surveillance in 2005 on the Gold Star Families for Peace.

People in Missouri who were planning to attend the DNC in 2004 were attacked by 24/7 surveillance. Regarding their experience, Denise Lieberman, former ACLU legal director in eastern Missouri stated, "the subpoenas and surveillance were not [intended] to get information but to harass and intimidate them." Even the *Washington Post* reported in January of 2009 that antiwar and defense contractor protesters in Maryland, New York, and Colorado, have been labeled white supremacists and potential terrorists and placed under surveillance.

"In an ideal future," says RAND, "free speech should be protected as a public good and a personal right." "However," they add, "the protection of all forms of free speech may create permissive conditions."

This pattern is unfolding all across the country. "The US military has stepped up intelligence collection inside this country since 9/11," mentioned *MSNBC* on December 14, 2005, "which now includes the monitoring of peaceful anti-war and counter-military recruitment groups."

---

5   Section 176, Chapter 10, Title 36 of the *United States Flag Code*, says that this is exactly what should be done when the country is in peril.   See www.usflag.org.

"Newly leaked Pentagon documents," revealed *Democracy Now* on December 15, 2005, "have confirmed the military has been monitoring and collecting intelligence on anti-war groups across the country."

As we've seen, the description of terrorism has expanded tremendously. According to these official reports, the terrorists now include people using information attacks, those promoting conspiracy theories, and anyone using the internet to spread radical ideas. The terrorists are also peaceful protesters and those who oppose globalization. Prior to becoming terrorists, most of these people had ordinary lives with no criminal record. However, they experienced a life-changing event which altered their worldview.

In 2006 Congress passed the Military Commissions Act, which allows for the indefinite imprisonment of anyone who either speaks out against government policies, or is thought to have donated to a charity that is categorized as a terrorist organization.[6]

Identified, Isolated, and Destroyed

Steven Metz and James Kievit mentioned in their article, *The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War*, that a revolutionary technology had been designed specifically to address this new global enemy.

To destroy the new enemy, an irregular approach is used, which has been called the asymmetric, indirect, or attrition-based approach. Rather than quick physical destruction, the goal is the psychological collapse of the enemy.

A protracted method of inflicting frequent physical and psychological pain over a long period of time is used to break the enemy's will. The Department of Defense's *Effects Based Operations* report described it in this manner: "For such a foe, the focus is not on targets but on actions that are directed toward political objectives and that revolve about the opponent's will and decisionmaking structure."

It continued: "In short, the approach to warfare is … directed at shaping behavior. … The effects-based strategy is conceived and executed as a direct assault on an opponent's will." The report also mentioned how pain would be inflicted relentlessly on what it described as a "victim" over a long period of time. The specific methods which are used to inflict this pain include nonlethal weapons (NLW) and tactics, biological/chemical weapons, and psychological operations (PsyOp). They leave no visible marks.

As previous evidence has shown, isolation is one of the principles of this new war-form. So, because peaceful protesters are now being labeled terrorists, these statements should be a concern to all people who value freedom.

The US Army Command and General Staff College mentioned in its May 22, 2003 report, *Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats*, that these enemies have been able to avoid attacks so far due to safe havens provided by international laws. However, that will be changing according to the report, which explained that these groups and individuals will be hunted down and attacked.

The report sites the work of the Tofflers, who tell us that the primary obstacles to this new society are those resisting globalization. Then, after linking these resisters to terrorists, it had this to say: "The only solution is to eradicate the entire organism." Essentially, they will be locating and destroying these resisters.

These new enemies depend on the public for support, agreed General Caldwell. They depend on the sanctuary and safe haven provided by local populations who furnish them with services and resources. They will be denied sanctuary anyplace on the planet, according to these sources.

In its *Unconventional Warfare* manual the US Army also stated that these new enemies will basically be hunted down, isolated, denied critical services, and attacked. This will occur amid numerous noncombatants, in densely populated urban areas. It will happen all over the planet, in your cities and towns, anywhere "pockets of resistance remain."

---

6   In its, *Supreme Court Says President Can Detain People without Charge*, article on March 7, 2009, *USA Today* reported that the president can detain people without charging them for a crime.

"We have formally acknowledged our battle against terrorism," proclaimed the National Research Council (NRC). They then tell us that it will be critically important to isolate individuals who live among the civilian population. The NRC then mentioned that NLW will be used to accomplish this.

The White House's 2006 *Strategy for Winning the War on Terror* says that the DOD will be eliminating all safe havens for terrorists. Under UN Security Council Resolution 1373, the US and its allies will be denying sanctuaries to anyone labeled a terrorist all over the planet.

"We will direct every resource at our command—every means of diplomacy, every tool of intelligence, and every instrument of law enforcement, every financial influence, and every necessary weapon of war—to the disruption and to the defeat of the global terror network."
—George W. Bush, Address to the American People, September 20, 2001

The USSOCOM's 2007 *Posture Statement* tells us that PsyOp and civil affairs will be the primary methods to detect and eliminate the underlying causes of extremist belief systems. These methods will be used to erode extremist ideologies.

In his *Non-lethal Weapons to Gain Relevancy in Future Conflicts* article, appearing in the March 1, 2002 issue of *National Defense,* Dr. John B. Alexander said that terrorists who live among the civilian population in densely populated cities around the world will be identified and attacked with NLW. "Tactically, the United States must find, fix, isolate, and destroy terrorist cells … and hostile command and control networks as quickly as they are identified," says the US Army. "The only solution is to eradicate the entire organism..."

According to Metz and Kievit, in some cases the technology will be used for executions under conditions which offer plausible deniability. Similarly, in its 1995 report, *Non-Lethal Technologies: Military Options and Implications*, the Council on Foreign Relations suggested that in a covert war against a global enemy, secrecy must be used to preserve the effectiveness of these new weapons and to create confusion as to the source of the attacks.

In his 1970 book *Between Two Ages*, Trilateral Commission cofounder Zbigniew Brzezinski mentioned that new technology, including electromagnetic weapons, would be available to the leaders of developed nations for conducting *secret warfare*, of which only a small number of security forces would be needed.

The Investigation
What Surveillance Really Means

The use of this technology to attack people is justified by an investigation where the targeted individual or group is placed under surveillance. Despite the evidence that surfaced about COINTELPRO and recent media announcements that the military is targeting citizens, this has been going on in some form since the early 1900s.

The investigation can be the result of any information linking an individual or group to subversion or extremism. In some cases the information is brought to the investigating organization by an informant or local police. There may be a preliminary investigation to determine whether a full-scale investigation is necessary.

After an investigation has been launched, a process of intelligence gathering occurs, which includes the subject being placed under 24/7 electronic surveillance, which may be conducted from fixed locations or mobile units. Information obtained through surveillance is evaluated in relation to the purpose of those conducting the investigation.

According to Frank J. Donner, author of *The Age of Surveillance* and former director of the American Civil Liberties Union Project on Political Surveillance, the intelligence process, which includes surveillance, can have passive or aggressive traits. While the passive method is typically less intrusive, both have punitive features.

Aggressive intelligence (also referred to as *active* or *overt* intelligence) is specifically designed to damage or harass the target. It is a faction of the state administration, says Donner, which exists to monitor, punish, and frustrate people in an extra-judicial manner. Those whose activities are seen as undesirable are singled out and attacked.

The agents who conduct these investigations are typically recruited on the basis of their social and political conformity. They have been described as ideological zealots and see themselves as the front line of protection against subversion. The investigations they conduct are said to impact them personally. They may become angry at their targets and behave antagonistic toward them.

The information gathered includes: vehicle records, social security records, voter records, private records such as those from credit agencies, bank statements, insurance documents, car rental agency information, employment applications, court trial information, automobile information, and personal information from the subject's home such as reading material, address books, and other information.

It also includes interviews with the subjects, which are done to intimidate them and get them to stop their activities. Others interviewed include the target's friends, relatives, neighbors, and teachers, as well as businesses and services which they use.

Beginning in the 1940s agents found they could influence employers, landlords, police departments, and government agencies by subtly suggesting that the individual under investigation was engaged in subversive activities. This typically resulted in the destruction of people's careers, home evictions, etc.

A variety of harassment techniques are used during the investigation as well. This includes entries into people's homes using unobtrusive access, tailgating, the use of informants, verbal abuse, IRS audits, insults, pranks, summons to jury duty, and communications interception to interfere with dialog between the subject and organizations or individuals.

Investigations of this kind last decades or indefinitely. The investigation is indefinite because it is not intended to gather information for a future legal proceeding. Instead, it is a justification for the state to legally attack a group or individual using its multitude of resources. The investigation is done for the single purpose of damaging people.

Because this type of investigation is covert, and due to the vagueness of the mental and emotional injuries inflicted, it is difficult to prove in a court of law. Even when some portions are provable, a successful lawsuit to halt the activities is unlikely.

History of Military Surveillance

The military's surveillance of civilians can be traced back to at least 1917. In its *Military Surveillance of Civilian Politics* report of 1973, the US Senate commented: "Military surveillance of civilian politics in the United States is as old as the Army intelligence itself."

During WWI civilians who were suspected of being German spies, or simply not patriotic enough, were placed under surveillance by the Army and Navy. Although its intensity varied thereafter, it continued throughout WWII with the Army's Counterintelligence Corps (CIC), then into the Cold War and the 1960s with the Military Intelligence Group (MIG).

In 1939, the FBI along with the Military Intelligence Division (MID) and the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) continued to conduct investigations on civilians who were thought to be subversive. One organization that had been placed under surveillance for over 50 years was a pacifist Quaker organization known as the American Friends Service Committee (AFSC).

Although the group was claimed to have been subversive, FBI files beginning in 1942 repeatedly concluded that it was a sincere pacifist group, free of subversion. However, the military, CIA, and IRS, along with local police, continued to monitor (harass) the group. Citizen informants were used to infiltrate the group. In addition to the group itself being placed under surveillance, its individual members were surveilled and harassed.

College campuses became the focal point of federal and military intelligence units during the 1950s. The FBI began infiltrating campuses during loyalty-security programs which it used to check potential applicants for government employment.

This allowed them to conduct investigations on students, during which time agents developed connections with professors, deans, registrars, and secretaries who furnished information. At this time the FBI recruited informants on campuses including students, operators, postal workers, landlords, dormitory maids, maintenance people, etc., who watched people for the agency.

Also beginning in the 1950s, the CIA developed ties to college campuses using academic research programs as front groups. One included the National Student Association, a nationwide group of college students created to support certain policies.

Others were the Independent Research Service, the International Student Conference, Policy Research Incorporated, the American Society for African Cultures, and the International Development Foundation.

The CIA would regularly recruit as informants the students and faculty members of these groups, which received funds from sources funded by the CIA. The CIA also recruited faculty and students as an investment protection method to monitor other students and faculty working on projects that they were funding.

The Military Intelligence Group (MIG) was on college campuses in the 1950s as well. Students and faculty were placed under active surveillance by the military which worked with college authorities and campus police. The military even placed its agents in classrooms.

Federal agencies and the military increased their investigations of students and faculty on college campuses beginning in the late 1960s during the antiwar movement, at which time it was even extended to high schools.

In the late 1960s a military bureaucracy known as the Continental United States Intelligence (CONUS) conducted widespread surveillance on civilians using multiple groups under its command. These included the USA Intelligence Command (USAINTC), the Continental Army command (CONARC), and the Directorate of Civil Disturbance and Planning (DCDPO).

CONARC was responsible for coordinating all military intelligence activities domestically, including civil disturbances and the surveillance of civilians. In 1965 various MIGs were combined to form USAINTC, which took over these responsibilities.

Both USAINTC and CONARC had an extraordinary communications grid connected to local police stations all across the country, and had deployed Army agents at the stations to run the equipment. USAINTC had hundreds of offices throughout the country. It kept its records of civilian dissidents and anti-war groups on computers, which the 1972 Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Right's report, *Army Surveillance of Civilians*, referred to as "voluminous and far-reaching."

The records kept by CONARC and USANIT originated from a variety of intelligence agencies such as the Army, Navy, and Air Force Intelligence, as well as the FBI, CIA, and local police units. According to the 1973 Senate report, the military's surveillance of civilians in the 1960s was both massive and unrestrained, using undercover agents to conduct overt investigations. "No individual, organization, or activity which expressed 'dissident views' was immune from such surveillance," the Senate report explained.

However, despite the attention given to the military's activities, the report observed that it had been targeting citizens since at least 1917. During WWI military intelligence units worked with a nationwide network of civilians who monitored people in their communities who were thought to be subversive.

From 1956 to at least 1971 the FBI conducted its own massive covert domestic spying program to neutralize internal dissent known as the Counter Intelligence Program (COINTELPRO). This was revealed by a 1975 US Senate investigation known as the Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities (also called the Church Committee).

It consisted of a series of projects conducted by the FBI where individuals and organizations were placed under surveillance and secretly attacked. COINTELPRO was allegedly launched for the purpose of protecting the nation's security and "maintaining the existing social and political order."

Although millions of pages of documents pertaining to the program were never released, and others have been altered, the remaining FBI records describe that COINTELPRO was designed to disrupt and subvert groups that were thought to be communist or socialist organizations. However, it appears that labeling individuals and groups as communists was simply an excuse to attack them. The program is known to have expanded considerably to include the targeting of nonviolent individuals, as well as antiwar, community, and religious groups.

The directives of the program, issued by FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover, were to "expose, disrupt, misdirect, discredit, or otherwise neutralize" these individuals and groups. The methods, which included psychological warfare, were originally developed to neutralize foreign agents. "Under the COINTELPRO programs," explained the Church Committee, "the arsenal of techniques used against foreign espionage agents was transferred to domestic enemies."

These were devastating methods used to destroy people under plausibly deniable conditions that left little trace. Some people placed under surveillance and attacked were not even aware that they were the target of an investigation.

The government used high-tech surveillance equipment, wiretaps, bugs, microphones, mail openings, etc. People's homes were entered while they were away. A secret network of government informants was used to attack people. With these methods, the government was able to gain a vast amount of information regarding people's personal lives, which was used for "unsavory and vicious tactics."

After people were placed under surveillance, their parents, children, spouses, landlords, college administrators, employers, and even church superiors, were frequently used by the FBI to apply pressure on them. The acquaintances and family of those placed under surveillance were basically intimidated into participating in a bogus investigation with the intention of destroying the targeted individual.

Psychological warfare was used, as well as character assassination, the disruption of communications, and fake media stories. Events were disrupted by spreading false information. The FBI would not only intercept mail, but would forge correspondence. Or, in other words, they would spoof the dialog between people. Tactics to destroy people's marriages and careers were used.

The FBI worked with the police to harass dissidents. In fact, framings were used, and officers of the law gave perjured testimonies to get people imprisoned. The FBI and local police departments conducted secret entries into people's homes under the guise of searching for evidence. Other government agencies such as the IRS cooperated by selectively auditing people.

COINTELPRO used an "army of informers" deployed across the country to harass people. Agents also used state-run organizations to harass people seeking services, such as health, safety, building regulations, welfare, unemployment benefits, licensing, etc.

"If COINTELPRO had been a short-lived aberration" expressed the committee, the "techniques, and control presented might be safely relegated to history." However, because the program existed unofficially for years before it was discovered, they warned that future activities could continue under the facade of investigations.

Executive Order 12333 signed into law by President Reagan in 1981 legalized COINTELPRO activities. It allows for the FBI, CIA, military, local law enforcement, and anyone acting on their behalf, to engage in counterintelligence activities. This includes the use of specialized surveillance equipment and any type of expert technical assistance; all done without a warrant. The US Patriot Act has since superseded this order.

The BSSR warned that the various democratic nations would be increasingly using such investigations to neutralize dissent. They mentioned that bases of operations would be used by the security forces for long-term surveillance of subjects, of which they would have detailed computer-based profiles.

The forces would be using high-tech surveillance equipment connected to computers, including sensors which could detect heat, odor, vibration, sound, magnetic fields, and other signals. These sensors were to be cleverly concealed inside the target's home.

Surveillance Technology and Methods
Persistent Surveillance

There have been multiple statements recently by government and official sources regarding the surveillance that is now being conducted globally. The investigations against political dissidents are aggressive and continuous.

For instance, a May 2003 report by Toffler Associates mentioned 24/7 "global persistent surveillance" accomplished using all sources. According to the report, surveillance technology is to be used to make the targeted individual aware that they're being watched, in order to alter their behavior. They explained: "Technology will afford the power of observation to operationally affect the behavior of targets. ... This uncertainty, in itself, will be a lever available to persistent surveillance operators."

In 2005 the RAND Corporation likewise announced in its *Toward a Revolution in Intelligence Affairs* publication: "Adversaries that know that they are persistently being watched are likely to change their behavior." The US Army mentioned that aggressive and continuous surveillance will be used against the enemy.

The DSB commented in its 2004 task force report that "intrusive and persistent intelligence against any potential global adversary," will be used. "Above all," announced the DOD in February of 2006, "persistent surveillance and vastly better intelligence" will be used against enemy personnel.

The Technology

Surveillance technology has been described as any system that can monitor or track the movements of individuals or their property. Satellites, millimeter waves, radar, x-rays, and radio waves are being used for surveillance. Different frequencies of EM energy vary in their ability to pass through objects.

Sensors

Sensors are devices used for surveillance and weapons targeting.[1] They are often integrated into C4ISR systems. Usually, each sensor is designed to detect something specific, which is why they are often networked. A network of a variety of sensors forms the core of most high-tech surveillance systems. At any level of the battlespace sensors can be installed.

Sensors can scan for radio frequency signals which emanate from various types of equipment or machinery. They can detect vibrations, heat, and magnetic fields. Sensors exist that can monitor the external environment such as ambient temperature, rainfall, wind, and solar radiation to provide information on a subject's immediate surroundings.

A network of multi-modal (multi-sensory) sensors is able to detect the same stimuli as that of a human being. There is a vast amount of sensor types. They can be used to monitor living creatures, vehicles, ships, aircraft, etc. Sensors communicate with each other as well as a base station.

Sensors known as *smart dust* are as small as a spec of dust. They are basically microelectromechanical particles that relay information to a base station. Although each spec only has a basic function, deployed in a network of thousands or millions, they can provide much information.

Sensors can be deployed on satellites, UAVs, aircraft, underwater, and ground stations. They can be fixed or dropped from the air using UAVs. Some are designed to function in all weather conditions. Fixed sensors which can be installed near the subject are known as *proximate* or *close-in* sensors. *Standoff* (distant) sensors can remotely detect signals. Standoff and proximate sensors can be networked in combination to provide real-time actionable information.

---

1   As an example of the precision of the tracking and targeting of these sensors, the DOD has repeatedly demonstrated the ability to stun a fly in flight so that it falls right in front of me.

The DOD has done a vast amount of research on sensor technology. Sensors will be used to track individuals, groups, and vehicles every place they go after they have been tagged. Sensors continue to become smaller and cheaper. Supersmart, programmable, self-producing nanosensors are said to be under development.

Millimeter Wave

Millimeter waves (MMW), in the frequency range of 30 to 300 GHz, are like X rays which can see through walls, only they are more accurate and less hazardous. Different frequencies of MMW can be used for different purposes. For instance, a device can be tuned to pass through walls to search a home. The human body emits small amounts of millimeter waves which allow it to be detected through structures. MMV can also be tuned to see through a person's cloths, or to search the contents of their belongings.

The objects which interact with a MMW device are converted through a computer to viewable images. MMW has been used in airports to screen passengers and urban combat settings to detect enemy combatants. This technology is said to be able to spot a single insect inside a piece of wood. Acoustic systems also exist which can see through walls and providing images of objects behind them.

Radar

Ground penetrating radar (GPR) can be used to detect underground facilities as well as people inside buildings. The GPR is connected to a computer and software exists which sharpens the images.

Satellite

Satellites can be used for surveillance or for directing and guiding weapons attacks. According to the DSB, satellites will be used to accomplish the persistent global surveillance of targeted individuals who have been tagged.

Lasers

Lasers can be used for high-precision locating and tracking in conjunction with radar systems. In passive mode, SBLs can allegedly observe objects and provide output at high resolutions. It has been suggested that SBLs can eventually be used to provide battlespace illumination, which is basically a space-based laser flashlight that can be shined anywhere on the planet.

As a future capability, the Air Force mentioned using a network of lasers connected to a computer that emit a wide range of frequencies to accomplish the complete internal and external inspection of a structure and produce a 3-dimensional image. DARPA has been working on similar technology to create detailed maps of the inside of structures without entering them.

HAARP

A multi-purpose platform based in Gakona Alaska known as the High Frequency Active Auroral Research Project (HAARP), can also be used for remote surveillance, including the detection of underground structures, and strategic communication. More on HAARP will be covered in the Weather Warfare chapter.

Mind-Reading
History

Probably no more "intrusive and persistent" method of obtaining information about a person exists than reading their mind.[1] Research on mind-reading has been vigorously pursued by US government agencies and various academic centers since the 1970s, and continues to this day.

Since 1973 DARPA has been studying mind-reading with EEG hooked to computers, using scientists at the University of Illinois, UCLA, Stanford Research Institute, Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and the University of Rochester.

They developed a system that could determine how a person perceived colors or shapes and were working on methods to detect daydreaming, fatigue, and other brain states. Although the device had to be calibrated for each person's brain by having them think a series of specific thoughts, the calibration was quick.

In 1974 another very basic mind-reading machine was created by researchers at Stanford Research Institute. It used an EEG hooked to a computer which allowed a dot to be moved across a computer screen using thought alone. When interpreting people's brainwaves, it was right about 60% of the time. During these tests scientists discovered that brain patterns are like fingerprints, each person has their own. So, each computer would have to be calibrated for a specific person.

Another method to address this issue was to store a large amount of generic patterns on the computer, so when it encountered a brain pattern it didn't recognized, it used one that most resembled it. Since then, DARPA has sponsored Brain-Computer Interface (BCI) and mind-reading programs at Duke University, MIT, University of Florida, and New York State University, Brooklyn.

The Human Computer Interaction group at Tufts University has studied mind-reading funded by grants from a government research and education agency known as the National Science Foundation (NSF). Carnegie Mellon University, Stanford University, and the MIT Sloan School of Management have studied mind-reading. The Computer Laboratory at the University of Cambridge in England has developed mind-reading machines based on facial expressions.

---

1   Another possible method to obtain information is *Remote Viewing*. RV is the ability to produce correct information about people, events, objects, or concepts that are somewhere else in space and time, and are completely blind to the viewer collecting the information. It can be used to describe people or events, produce leads, reconstruct events, make decisions, and make predictions about the future. See *Remote Viewing Secrets* by Joseph McMoneagle. RV tests were conducted by the US government over a 20-year period during Project Stargate, a classified initiative by the CIA which began in 1972 and lasted until about 1994. Most of the 154 tests and 26,000 trials took place at the Cognitive Sciences Laboratory at Forte Meade, Maryland. A majority of the results of the project are still classified. See the *Journal of Parapsychology* articles, *Remote Viewing by Committee*, September 22, 2003, by Lance Storm and *Experiment One of the SAIC Remote Viewing Program*, of December 1, 1998, by Richard Wiseman and Julie Milton. The success of the project varies depending on the source. Allegedly the original tests were conducted under rigid scientific conditions, which had impressive results. However, the same sources describe RV in general as ineffective. See *Discover Magazine's* article, *CIA ESP*, on April 1, 1996, by Jeffrey Kluger, and the *Washington Post's* report, *Many Find Remote Viewing a Far Fetch from Science*, on December 2, 1995, by Curt Suplee. According to author McMoneagle, an original viewer during Project Stargate, it is accurate about 50 or 60 percent of the time. Nevertheless, RV will be used to obtain intelligence, according to John B. Alexander. See *The New Mental Battlefield*, which appeared in the December 1980 issue of *Military Review*. Also see the June 1998 *Research Report Number 2* of the University of Bradford's Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), for how RV has been added to the NLW arsenal. According to multiple sources, US government agencies are now using the consulting services of RV professionals. This was reported on January 9, 2002 in the *University Wire's (Colorado Daily)* article, *Clairvoyant Discusses Reveals Details of Remote Viewing*, by Wendy Kale, and in the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists* on September 1, 1994, in its report, *The Soft Kill Fallacy* by Steven Aftergood. In his book *Winning The War: Advanced Weapons, Strategies, and Concepts for the Post-911 World*, Alexander had this to say regarding RV: "Since the beginning of history, humans have made anecdotal references to innate abilities to foretell the future, to know what was occurring at distant locations or the status of people separated from them, and to find resources they need without any traditional means of accessing that information." He continued: "Studies have demonstrated beyond any doubt that these nontraditional capabilities exist. ... [RV can] radically change our means of gathering intelligence. It holds the promise of providing information about inaccessible redoubts and advances in technology. More importantly, once these skills are understood, those possessing them will be able to determine an adversary's intent and be predictive about the events."

Other academic institutions that have participated in mind-reading projects include the University of California, Berkeley, University of Maryland, and Princeton University in New Jersey. Microsoft has studied mind-reading using EEG to better accommodate its users. Emotiv Systems built a mind-reading gaming device which uses EEG to infer the mental states of video game players. Honda Motors and Advanced Telecommunications Research Institute International (ATR) have studied mind-reading.

Neuroimaging Devices

Scientists discovered that the neural code of the human brain is similar to the digital code of a computer. To some extent, they have deciphered this code. Prior to this, they assumed that it was necessary to identify the neurons associated with specific acts, which would have made mind-reading much more difficult.[2]

They now understand that it's not necessary to monitor billions of neurons to determine which are connected to a particular thought or act. Only a small number of them need to be monitored to accomplish this. To monitor these neurons researchers use neuroimaging devices. They include event-related optical signal (EROS), functional magnetic resonance imaging (fMRI), electroencephalography (EEG), functional near-infrared imaging (fNIR), magnetoencephalography (MEG), and positron emission tomography (PET).[3] These devices may be combined for a more accurate reading.

There are basically two types of measurements, direct methods and indirect methods. Direct methods measure changes in electromagnetic fields and currents around the brain which are emitted from the surface of the scalp, or they monitor the neurons themselves. Indirect methods measure hemodynamic (blood movement) changes of hemoglobin in specific tissue compartments.

Both of these methods are almost simultaneous with neuronal activity. Regarding sensors, there are invasive ones which must be implanted, and non-invasive ones which can be worn on the scalp, in the form of a headband.

Electroencephalography (EEG) provides a direct method for determining brain states and processes by measuring the electrical activity on the scalp produced by the firing of neurons in the brain. EEG has been around for over 100 years. EEG is commonly used in neuroscience, cognitive science, and cognitive psychology. It is inexpensive, silent, non-invasive, portable, and tolerates movement.

Wireless EEG which uses non-invasive sensors that have physical contact with the scalp can transmit the signals to a remote machine for deciphering. Although, in 1976 the *Los Angeles Times* reported that DARPA was working on an EEG to detect brain activity several feet from a person's head, which was to be completed in the 1980s. EEG normally produces only a general indicator of brain activity.

However, in 2008 *Discovery News* reported that a company called Emotiv Systems developed an algorithm that decodes the cortex, providing a more accurate measurement. "We can calibrate the algorithm across a wide range of technologies with the same resolution you would get from placing an invasive chip inside the head," said Tan Le, president of Emotiv Systems.

Functional magnetic resonance imaging (fMRI) measures the blood flow in the brain in response to neural activity. Active neurons use oxygen, which is brought to them by blood. The more active a region of the brain is the more blood flows in the area. This movement of blood is referred to as *hemodynamic activity*. FMRI can detect which areas are receiving blood, which indicates that they're processing information.

---

2   Because neuroimaging technology decodes brain patterns to thoughts, some argue that it technically doesn't read a person's mind. However, because specific thoughts and brain states can be deciphered, here it is referred to as mind-reading. Additionally, most mainstream documents refer to this as *mind-reading*, despite the fact that it is actually brainwave-reading.

3   Magnetoencephalography (MEG) and positron emission tomography (PET) can also be used to infer a person's neurophysiological state. But because they are impractical for field use due to their large size and harmful radiation, MEG and PET won't be considered here. However, DARPA is in the process of developing a small helmet-sized MEG device which would be connected to a portable computer. See the article *Mind over Machine* in the February 1, 2004 issue of *Popular Science*, by Carl Zimmer.

The fMRI provides an indirect measurement of brain processes. It is the most common method of neuroimaging, and can produce 2 and 3-dimensional images. It is non-invasive, and can record signals from all brain regions, unlike EEG which focuses on the surface only.

Functional near-infrared imaging (fNIR) provides an indirect measurement of brain activity by detecting hemodynamic changes in the cortex. Although it is based on different principles, in that it uses light, it functions in the same manner as fMRI. FNIR can provide an almost continuous display of these changes in the cortex. It is inexpensive, non-invasive, and portable. A wireless headband with sensors exists for this device.

Event-related optical signal (EROS) is a brain-scanning device that focuses near-infrared light into the cerebral cortex to detect the density of neurons indicated by the transparency of brain tissue. Because it can only detect these changes a few centimeters deep, it can only image the cerebral cortex. Unlike fNIR, which is an optical method for measuring blood flow, EROS detects the intensity of neurons themselves and provides a direct measurement of brain activity. It is very accurate, portable, inexpensive, and non-invasive. A wireless headband with sensors exists for this device.

Capabilities

Mind-reading can be accomplished by first having a computer learn which brain patterns are associated with specific thoughts, then store the decoded information in a database. This machine learning is accomplished using a type of artificial intelligence (AI) called an *algorithm*. A very basic algorithm is a spell checker, which uses a database of common mistakes associated with a particular sequence of letters to present suggestions to a user.

"The new realization is that every thought is associated with a pattern of brain activity," proclaimed neuroscientist John Dylan Haynes, in *Newsweek International* on February 4, 2008. "And," says Haynes, "you can train a computer to recognize the pattern associated with a particular thought."

In a January 2000 issue of *US News and World Report*, Lockheed Martin neuroengineer Dr. John Norseen announced, "Just like you can find one person in a million through fingerprints ... you can find one thought in a million." This can be accomplished using AI and HCI, or what Dr. Norseen calls *biofusion*.

The decoded brain signals can be stored in a database. Then when someone is scanned, the computer detects the pattern and matches the signals to the database of known meanings. But it's not necessary to scan a brain to decode its signals for every single thought, such as a picture.

Instead, after the machine has learned how to decipher patterns associated with specific thoughts such as images, more images can be added to the program and the computer can use the process it used for the other images as a model to somewhat accurately detect additional thoughts.

Both words and images can be detected using mind-reading devices with varying degrees of accuracy. This can occur for words and images being viewed by a person on an external display, such as a book, or words and images just being thought of with no external stimuli.

"It is possible to read someone's mind by remotely measuring their brain activity," announced *New Scientist* in their *Mind-Reading Machine Knows What You See* article of April of 2005. The Computational Neuroscience Laboratories at the Advanced Telecommunications Research Institute International (ATR) in Kyoto Japan, and Princeton University in New Jersey, proved that by monitoring the visual cortex with fMRI they could determine which basic objects (sets of lines) a person was looking at.

When the objects were combined, they could even determine which one was being focused on. According to the scientists, it may be possible not only to view but also to record and replay these images. They announced that the technology could be used to figure out dreams and other secrets in people's minds.

Vanderbilt University in Nashville has conducted simple mind-reading tests using an fMRI/Computer, which learned what basic images a group of test subjects was looking at. They were able to predict with 50% accuracy which objects the test subjects were thinking of when they were asked only to remember what they had seen, without being shown the images.

On March 6, 2008 *ABC News* reported that neuroscientists at the University of California at Berkeley accomplished mind-reading by monitoring the visual cortex with an fMRI connected to a self-learning (artificial intelligence) computer program.

First, they used 1750 pictures to build a computational database for the computer to learn with by flashing the pictures in front of test subjects connected to an fMRI. This allowed the algorithm to decipher the brain patterns and associate them with the images.

In addition to deciphering these brain patterns, the computer recorded the process that it used to accomplish this, and built a model based upon it. Then, without scanning the test subjects, they added 120 new pictures to the program and allowed it to create its interpretation of what the new brain signals would be, based on the previous model.

Then they had the test subjects look at these pictures which they had never seen while being scanned. The computer predicted what they were looking at 72% of the time. The scientists announced that the model could be used as a basis to predict the brain activity associated with any image.

What this means is that it's not necessary to scan a brain to obtain the meaning of each signal. Once the model had been developed, they could simply add new pictures to the database/dictionary. The scientists suggested that out of 1 billion pictures, the computer would be accurate about 20% of the time.

Images which are not consciously seen by a person can even be detected by mind-reading machines. Researchers at University College London flashed pictures in quick succession to test subjects connected to an fMRI. Although some of these pictures were invisible to the subjects, they were accurately recorded 80% of the time by the computer.

Like a fingerprint, each person has their own *brainprint*. Therefore, calibration for each brain is necessary. This is accomplished by having the person think a series of specific thoughts. In the case of EEG, this calibration can take less than a minute. However, because the signals which represent thoughts are similar from one person to the next, a universal mind-reading database has been suggested.

Using fMRI, scientists at Carnegie Mellon University (CMU) discovered that the brain patterns associated with specific thoughts are quite similar among multiple people. This, they stated, would provide the opportunity to create a universal mind-reading dictionary.

Scientists at the University of California at Berkeley mentioned that a "general visual decoder" would have great scientific use. Likewise, the brain patterns associated with specific words that occur when people are reading are also basically the same. This similarity of brain functions associated with words seems to have been an evolutionary development which allowed for an advantage in communication.

A mind-reading machine capable of determining the brain pattern associated with a specific word was developed by scientists at CMU. Brain scans using fMRI were taken of test subjects who were given a variety of words to think of in order to train the computer. An important consideration here is that they were not viewing these words on an external display, only thinking about them. After the computer identified the brain patterns associated with those words, the subjects were given two new words to think about, which the computer accurately determined.

Although, in this particular study only a couple of words were tested, it proves that after a model of how to decipher brain signals was created, AI could accurately determine new words that subjects were thinking about. "These building blocks could be used to predict patterns for any concrete noun," proclaimed Tom Mitchell of the Machine Learning Department.

In February of 2004 *Popular Science* announced that a mind-reading computer could, in theory, translate a person's working verbal memory onto a computer screen. "You could imagine thinking about talking and having it projected into a room 2,000 miles away," says Professor Craig Henriquez at Duke University's Center for Neuroengineering, who has studied mind-reading for DARPA. He added, "It's very, very possible."

FMRI can be used to determine if someone is reading or writing. Neuroscientists can determine when a person is reading by monitoring their brainwaves. They can almost determine exactly what they're reading. And because these patterns are similar from one person to the next, a universal device for determining what people are reading is possible.

In March of 2008 both *Technology Review* and *ABC News* revealed that an fMRI could in theory be used to display a person's dreams. Then in December of 2008, scientists at ATR in Kyoto Japan announced that they developed a technology that would eventually allow them to record and replay a person's dreams.

Emotions from love to hate can be recognized by neuralimaging. The level of stress a person is experiencing can also be measured. Brain states such as honesty, deception, and even self deception, can be measured.

Patterns associated with decisions can also be read. Scientists from CMU, Stanford University, and the MIT Sloan School of Management were able to accurately predict the purchasing decisions of test subjects in a virtual shopping center. They monitored the subject's level of interest in a product as well as their decision to purchase it.

Neuroimaging can also detect decisions about how someone will later do a high-level mental activity. Neuroimaging can be used to determine if someone is speaking or reading. It can be used to detect areas of the brain that are active when someone is hearing a sound, or touching an object.

Brain patterns associated with specific physical movements, such as a finger, can be deciphered with neural imaging. The mere intention to make a physical movement can be detected before the actual movement is made.

Cameras

A type of mind-reading is possible with cameras connected to computers. One such device, called the *Emotional Social Intelligence Prosthetic (ESP)*, was developed at the MIT Media Laboratory in 2006. It consists of a tiny camera that can be worn on a hat, an earphone and a small computer that is worn on a belt. It infers a person's emotional state by analyzing combinations of subtle facial movements and gestures.

When an emotional state is detected, the wearer is signaled through the earphone to adjust their behavior in order to gain the attention of the target. The computer can detect 6 emotional states. It can also be adjusted for cultural differences and configured specifically for the wearer.

Around this time, the Computer Laboratory at the University of Cambridge, UK, developed a similar camera-based mind-reading machine. It uses a computer to monitor, in real-time, combinations of head movement, shape, color, smiles, and eyebrow activity to infer a person's emotional state.

It detects basic emotional states such as happiness, sadness, anger, fear, surprise, and disgust, as well as more complex states. It's accurate between 65 and 90 percent of the time. "The mind-reading computer system presents information about your mental state as easily as a keyboard and mouse present text and commands," they announced.

Used for Surveillance

Mind reading exists. The DOD and various institutions have vigorously researched this subject since at least the mid 1970s. "Mapping human brain functions is now routine," declared *US News and World Report*, in an article entitled *Reading Your Mind—And Injecting Smart Thoughts*, of January of 2000.

Both words and images, being viewed or thought, can be mind-read. Various emotional states as well as mental processes such decisionmaking, reading, writing, movement and the intention to make a movement, can be detected with mind-reading devices. Perceptions such as touch, sound, and light can also be detected.

The proposed uses for mind-reading technology are positive. Some include determining if people in comas can communicate, helping stroke patients and those who suffered brain injuries, aiding those with learning disorders, assisting with online shopping, and improving people's communications skills.

However, other uses that have been suggested include the monitoring of unconscious mental processes, and interrogation of criminal suspects and potential terrorists. Dr. John Alexander mentioned that the recent developments in mind-reading technology would take surveillance to new levels by allowing investigators to "peer into the inner sanctum of the mind," in order to determine if a suspect has caused, or will likely cause a crime.

Dr. Norseen has sent R&D plans to the pentagon to have tiny mind-reading devices installed at airports to profile potential terrorists. He suggested that these devices could be functional by 2005. In August of 2008, *CNN* stated that the US military's knowledge obtained from mind-reading research could be used to interrogate the enemy.

Law Enforcement Technology announced in September of 2005 the existence of a new forensic technology known as Brain Fingerprinting, which has already been used in hundreds of investigations as a lie detector by the CIA, FBI and law enforcement agencies in the United States.

Brain Fingerprinting is admissible in court, because unlike a polygraph, which relies on emotional responses, it uses a type of EEG called a P300 MERMER to see how the brain reacts to words and pictures related to a crime scene. Dr. Larry Farwell, its inventor, says it is completely accurate. According to the report it will be used to help speed-up investigations.

Volume II Commentary

You've seen that a war has been declared against groups and individuals globally who live among the civilian population. The weapons of this war include nonlethal weapons and psychological operations, which are synchronized and used in combination.

The war includes a unified action between a host nation's NGOs, local law enforcement, federal agencies, and military, which has been called the *interagency*. The military uses the civilian population as surrogate forces to achieve its objectives.

The enemies now include protesters who are targeted by the military after being labeled extremists and domestic terrorists accused of using information attacks. According to government think tank and military sources, the primary enemies are those who are resisting world integration, and, are thereby interfering with the evolution of our society.

Multiple efforts are in progress to shut down free speech on internet, and initiatives have been launched to identify thought processes that are considered to be extreme and outlaw them. Law enforcement has been educated that conspiracy theorists think that their civil liberties are being removed and that a global revolution known as the *New World Order* is underway. They are taught that people carrying certain films and patriotic material are dangerous enemies.

Some of the activities of the civil-military force are directed from domestic war rooms known as *CMOCs* that have been constructed in major cities around the planet. NGOs and IGOs such the UN meet with government officials at these centers to discuss the irregular threats in the area. They are in constant contact with deployed civil-military forces.

The military and DOJ began targeting citizens during WWI and continued up into the 1960s and 1970s with the FBI's COINTELPRO. Indefinite bogus investigations have been used as an excuse to attack the targeted group or individual. We now have an understanding of what surveillance really means.

People have been placed under 24/7 constant surveillance using advanced technology. The information gained from these investigations was not used for any legal proceeding, only to attack them. An army of informants has also used against them. Their friends, relatives, neighbors, landlords, colleagues, employers, and even the businesses they used, were all brought into the investigation. Their careers and lives are destroyed. These investigations were used to maintain the existing political order.

It has been announced that constant surveillance will be conducted on people during the new war using intrusive methods. Surveillance technology includes tiny proximate sensors that can be placed at the site or standoff sensors that can be used at a distance.

Sensors can detect various environmental stimuli, including anything a human being can sense. They can be used at any level of the battlespace to monitor the environment of the target as well as the target. Sensors are connected to a C4ISR system such as the GIG.

The GIG is a type of communications structure that links information, applications, services, surveillance systems, directed-energy weapons, EW capabilities, and people. It is used to track down an enemy anywhere on the planet. GIG nodes include aircrafts, ships, vehicles, and people, which use cognitive radios or other devices to form MANETs to synchronize their attacks.

A cognitive radio is a computer with an open architecture that can be made to resemble a radio. It has artificial intelligence and is able to learn from and act on stimuli in the environment using its sensors. It can also be programmed remotely and equipped with a GPS receiver.

Cognitive radios are used to form MANETs which foster the real-time communication and synchronization necessary to conduct battleswarms.

The DOD has mentioned that tiny, concealable, hands-free computers can be used to connect people to the GIG. In other documentation it has expressed an interest in establishing direct communication with its agents using microwave hearing technology.

Devices exist for seeing through walls. Satellites are used to track mobile targets. It has been recommended that mind-reading, which has been researched by the DOD since the 1970s, be used as an intrusive surveillance technology.

Advancements in communications allow for close synchronization of information, activities, and attacks on the strategic, operational, and tactical levels. On the tactical level it occurs between all forces in battlespace. It also happens vertically with decisionmakers, up to the strategic level. Synchronization is made possible by a C4ISR system. It is automated, frequent, and fast.

Synchronizing attacks is done to amplify their effects in order to shock the enemy. It can be done by launching multiple attacks simultaneously or a series of them in a particular sequence. Resources that can be synchronized for attacks include all instruments of national power.

We've seen evidence which indicates that front groups for the British Crown and Wall Street are actively pursuing plans for global domination. We now have an understanding of how they think, what they've done, and what their plans are. A variety of notable figures have warned us that this would occur.

We've observed that some of the historical disasters which have affected our society have consistently furthered their objectives. Recently, these crises have resulted in a substantial reduction of civil liberties and an expansion of enemies to include peaceful citizens. Aggressive efforts are now underway to remove existing freedoms.

As they solidify control of the planet, they have extended the battlefield into your neighborhoods. Their primary enemies are those resisting their political agenda, all of whom will be identified, isolated, and destroyed. An inclusion of the pathological factor, however, suggests that a more general class of people who are considered their natural enemies, will be attacked as well.

Now that we've removed their ideological mask, let's have a closer look at the technology and tactics that they have given to the security forces to neutralize the remaining resistance.

Volume III

Weapons of The New War

Introduction to Nonlethal Weapons
Description

Nonlethal weapons (NLW) have also been called non-injurious, disabling measures, immobilizers, strategic immobilizers, discriminate force, less-lethal, less-than-lethal, pre-lethal, mission kill, new age weapons, soft kill weapons, limited effects technology, neutralizing technology, reduced lethality weapons, low collateral damage weaponry, etc.

They are used to incapacitate and deter people and to minimize fatalities and damage to equipment, facilities, and the environment. NLW are not required to have a zero probability of producing death or serious injury. Currently, there are several definitions that include a variety of terms, weapons, and tactics.

The Department of Defense (DOD) defines them as: "weapons that are explicitly designed and primarily employed so as to incapacitate personnel or material, while minimizing fatalities, permanent injury to personnel and undesired damage to property and the environment. … Non-lethal weapons employ means other than gross physical destruction to prevent the target from functioning."

They are described by the National Institute of Justice (NIJ) as: "[The] identification and development of new or improved weapons and other technology that will minimize the risk of death and injury to officers, suspects, prisoners and the public, and contribute to the reduction of civil and criminal liability suits against police, sheriff, and corrections departments."

NLW cover a wide range of many technologies and tactics, most of which are classified. They include: biological warfare, directed-energy weapons, communications warfare, information warfare (IW), and psychological operations (PsyOp). Many of these weapons can be accurately delivered at long ranges. The people who operate these weapons are known as *users* or *operators*, and the people whom they are directed at are called *targets*.

These weapons can be organized by function (counter personnel and counter material), or technology (electromagnetic, chemical and biological, mechanical, ancillary, nanotechnology, etc.) Even within these two broad methods of classification there are numerous ways they can be organized.[1] For this introduction they'll be listed by technology, and then subcategorized by application.[2] A more detailed description of these weapons will appear later.

Directed-Energy Weapons (DEW)
- Microwaves—(counter personnel, counter material, counter function)
- Lasers—(counter personnel, counter material)
- Bright Lights—(counter personnel)
- Holographic Projections—(counter personnel)
- Acoustics (includes audible, infrasound, and ultrasound)—(counter personnel)

Chemical and Biological
- Calmatives—(counter personnel)
- Nanotechnology—(counter personnel, counter material)

---

[1] For instance, *National Defense's* March 1, 2002 article, *Non-lethal Weapons to Gain Relevancy in Future Conflicts*, by John B. Alexander classifies them by capability and lists them in three basic categories: counter personnel, counter material, and counter capability. Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley, USAF, uses the same classification method in his report, *Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield*, but uses only two categories, counter personnel and counter material. Also, one weapon may be used for a variety of purposes. Furthermore, the category in which a weapon belongs can be open to interpretation.

[2] This list is just a portion of the NLWs which are known to exist. Weapons such as rubber bullets, bean bags, water canons, spike strips, stun guns, foams, tear gas and pepper spray, multi-sensory devices, and entanglement systems, will not be covered, as this section introduces only weapons which can be more easily used in a clandestine manner. Although, the tactics which use some technologies such as blocking (barriers, entanglement, foams), and combined technologies (multi-sensory, flash/bang devices), will be explored later.

- Malodorants (nauseating smells)—(counter personnel)
- Antimaterial Chemicals—(counter material, counter function, counter personnel)

Miscellaneous
- Physical Barriers—(counter personnel)
- Computer Attacks—(counter material, counter function)
- Defoliants and Soil Destabilizers—(counter material, counter function)
- Weather Modification—(counter material, counter function)
- Psychological Operations—(counter personnel)

Used in Combination

NLW are to be used in combination. "These weapons," says the CFR, "must be deployed coherently, in synergistic coordination with information/psychological warfare technologies." In both their 2004 *Non-Lethal Weapons and Future Peace Enforcement Operations* and August 2006 *Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies* reports, NATO has suggested that NLWs should be used in combination to increase their effectiveness.

The NRC described that the synergistic use of directed-energy weapons could maximize effectiveness. According to the US military, the goal is to overwhelm the target by attacking all five senses, plus motor and cognitive functions.

Psychological Operations
Description

Psychological operations (PsyOp) are a planned process of conveying messages to a target audience (TA) to promote certain attitudes, emotions, and behavior. These messages are typically conveyed using a line of persuasion known as a theme.

PsyOp is basically the use of communication to influence behavior. It is used against adversaries, their supporters, and their potential supporters. It is defined by the US Army in the following way: "Psychological operations are planned operations to convey selected information and indicators to foreign audiences to influence their emotions, motives, objective reasoning, and ultimately the behavior of foreign governments, organizations, groups, and individuals."

An important consideration here is that a TA can be a group or individual. A TA is defined by the Joint Chiefs of Staff publication *Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations* as: "An individual or group selected for influence or attack by means of psychological operations."

PsyOp is used across the entire spectrum of conflict, with or without any accompanying military action, from special operations, to high-intensity and low-intensity conflict (LIC). This includes variations of LIC such as counterterrorism, peacekeeping, CMO, MOOTW, IW, UW, etc. Planning for PsyOp is the same regardless of the type of warfare in which it is used. It is used in conjunction with all instruments of national power. Most information pertaining to PsyOp is classified.

Despite the Army's definition, which states that it is only used on foreign audiences, the evidence presented so far suggests that it is being used on civilians domestically in the US and elsewhere. As we've seen, it has been officially declared that the military is indeed working with federal agencies in the US during the new war conducting PsyOp as part of CMO.

Furthermore, the Council on Foreign Relations considers PsyOp a NLW to be used on civilians.[1] The Defense Science Board, another advisory committee to the DOD, announced in its *Future Strategic Strike Forces* task force report of February 2004, that NLW and PsyOp are to be "directed at the physiological or psychological functions of specific individuals or the populace."

A book published in 2000 by the DOD's C4SI Cooperative Research Program, entitled *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority*, mentioned that information operations (PsyOp) will be conducted entirely in the civilian sector where the military will be working closely with civilians.

Although there seems to be a variety of ways it can be categorized, most military publications have it listed as a type of *information operation (IO)*, previously referred to as *command and control warfare (C2W)*. IO consists of five core capabilities that are used in concert and with any related capabilities to influence, disrupt, corrupt, or takeover an enemy's decision making process.

They include: psychological operations (PsyOp), military deception (MILDEC), operations security (OPSEC), and electronic warfare (EW), and computer network operations (CNO). IO is basically a way of interfering with the various systems that a person uses to make decisions.

Of the five, PsyOp, MILDEC, and OPSEC have been major factors in most military campaigns. They have recently been joined by EW and CNO. Used in combination, these core capabilities are the primary methods of influencing an adversary in this new type of warfare. EW, which includes interfering with the enemy's electronic informational systems and attacking them with directed-energy weapons, as well as CNO, which is used to attack an enemy's computer systems, will be discussed later.

There other terms used to describe PsyOp, including: military deception (MILDEC), effects-based operations (EBO), neocortical warfare, political warfare (PolWar), and psychological warfare (PsyWar). The meanings of these terms will be covered at this time.

---

1   See also the Joint Chiefs of Staff, *Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations* of September 2003, which categorizes PsyOp as a NLW.

The term *psychological warfare* is reported to have first been used in the English language in 1941 as a translation of the German phrase *weltanschauungskrieg* (worldview warfare), which means the scientific application of terror and propaganda as a way of securing an ideological victory over an enemy. Some researchers use the terms propaganda and PsyOp interchangeably.

Military deception (MILDEC) seeks to mislead the enemy by affecting all conduits of information which they rely on to make decisions. This includes all systems, groups, and even individuals, which the enemy uses as a source of information.

It does this to the point of managing the perception of the enemy. MILDEC is similar to PsyOp. PsyOp normally targets groups while MILDEC targets individuals. An individual targeted for MILDEC may also be part of a PsyOp target group. MILDEC is enhanced by *operations security (OPSEC)*. While MILDEC influences the enemy's interpretation of information, OPSEC prevents the enemy from receiving any unclassified but sensitive information.

Neocortical warfare is RAND's version of PsyOp that controls the behavior of the enemy without physically harming them. RAND describes the neocortical system as consciousness, perception, and will. Neocortical warfare regulates the enemy's neocortical system by interfering with their continuous cycle of observation, orientation, decision, and action. It presents the enemy with perceptions, sensory, and cognitive data designed to result in a narrow set of conclusions, and ultimately actions.

Another DOD term that is similar to PsyOp is the *effects-based operation (EBO)*. The DOD describes it as: "coordinated sets of actions directed at shaping the behavior of friends, neutrals, and foes in peace, crisis, and war." EBO uses the attrition-based approach for the slow physical and psychological destruction of the enemy. The goal is to break the will of the enemy.

Because of their synergistic use, PsyOp, MILDEC, and OPSEC will be called *PsyOp*. Also, the PsyOp term will cover related ones such as EBO and neocortical warfare due to their underlying similarities regarding techniques and goals. Furthermore, terms used in the UK such as *psychological warfare (PsyWar)* and *political warfare (PolWar)* are synonymous with PsyOp. For the course of this study all of these terms will be referred to as *PsyOp*.

PsyOp has been used since ancient times as a form of terror by kingdoms and groups. Some of the earliest human civilizations used symbols as instruments of power. The Chinese military philosopher Sun Tzu documented the sophisticated use of psychological tactics as early as the 5th century B.C. The Romans used disinformation against the Carthaginians during the Punic Wars.

Psychological manipulation of opposing forces continued throughout the Middle Ages and the Renaissance. The natives of North America used symbols and ceremony to boost morale and terrify their opponents. PsyOp is as old as the history of the human race.

More recently, it has been used by totalitarian regimes such as Fascist Italy, Nazi Germany, and militaristic Japan. It was used during WWII by both the US and Germany. It was used by US forces in Panama and Cuba, where pirated TV broadcasts were transmitted, as well as Guatemala, Iran, the first Gulf War, Vietnam, and other places.

Organizations which had a significant influence on the development of modern PsyOp include private foundations such as Menninger, Rockefeller, Russell Sage, and Ford, as well as the Carnegie Corporation. Some of these groups were involved in such research as early as the 1930s.

They worked with think tanks such as the RAND Corporation and Council on Foreign Relations, as well as universities such as Princeton and MIT. These groups went into partnership with the US military to conduct early PsyOp studies. They kept most of their research results classified.[2]

---

2   For more on this see *A Brief History of PsyOp* in the Appendix.

Structure

PsyOp is a core part of civil-military operations (CMO) and CMO is a major component in this new war. CMO combines military, federal agencies, NGOs, civilian organizations and authorities, and the civilian population. It takes place in friendly, neutral, or hostile operational areas. This includes populated civilian areas in which no other military activity is conducted.

The controlling faction of these PsyOp/CMO activities includes the military, federal agencies, NGOs, regional organizations, and international organizations that work with civil authorities. In the US this means FEMA, the DOJ, the CIA, and other federal agencies. PsyOp activities, regardless of national origin, are coordinated by and synchronized with these organizations.

These operations are run from the CMOCs described in *The New War* chapter of Volume II. The host nation (HN) provides the military with civil assistance in the area of operation (AO). This includes civilian resources such as materials, facilities, services, administrative support, and other resources. It also includes civilian logistics. PsyOp units work with the civilian population in the AO.

These units use civilians and their resources as irregular forces. These are global activities, occurring domestically in the US, allied countries, and opposing countries.

Products

Before describing the PsyOp units, their capabilities, methods of profiling, and the themes that they use to attack their TAs, it is necessary to have an understanding of products. What some publications describe as a product, others say is a distribution (dissemination) method. Others appear to use the terms product and distribution interchangeably when referring to the same thing.

Also, some things can be accurately described as both. For instance a TV broadcast can be a distribution method which transmits a product. The internet (which is part of the battlespace) can also be described as a distribution method which contains products. The context that these terms are used here should make their meaning clear.

A product is an action, event, or media used to get the attention of a TA and transmit a message. It is also expected to provoke a response in the TA to achieve psychological objectives. Some include novelties and gifts which may be commercially produced.

Products are typically used as part of a line of communication known as a *theme* to convey a message to the TA. The products used to transmit PsyOp messages are limitless. The three basic categories of PsyOp products are audio, visual, and audiovisual.

Audio products include radio broadcasts, music, telephone conversations, and loudspeaker announcements. Visual products include items that can only be seen. Some of these are commercially produced. Examples are print media such as newspapers, inserts, magazines, leaflets, posters, pamphlets, books, drawings, paintings, notebooks, calendars, and stickers. Existing literary media is also used to promote themes.

A wide variety of gifts, novelties, and supplies can be used as PsyOp visual products. In addition to the physical product itself, these products may contain short text or symbolic messages. They include: matches, lighters, soap, nail clippers, cards, balloons, puzzles, buttons, pins, T-shirts, hats, other types of clothing, toys, durable goods, sporting equipment, packaged foods, medical supplies, school supplies, etc.

Other visual products are: billboards, vehicles with lettering, statues, gestures, skywriting, and graffiti. Electronic visual products are text messaging, emails, web sites, fax, and chat rooms. Graffiti can be done using symbols or short messages in conjunction with other PsyOp products to fortify the theme. It has the benefit of being quickly distributed in the area of operation (AO) on sides of buildings, fences, etc., as well as on visual media which the TA is accustomed to viewing.

PsyOp audiovisual products use sight and sound to communicate with a TA. This includes TV, videos, and slides with sound, personalities, theater, internet, face-to-face communication, and performances known as *psychological actions (PsyActs)*, which will be discussed shortly. To help create professional quality audiovisual products, PsyOp personnel can use expert contractors with advanced audiovisual studios.

PsyOp Organizations

There appears to be some ambiguity in military documents regarding PsyOp organizational structure terms such as group, unit, team, element, etc. To simplify matters, the term *group* will mean the largest organization conducting PsyOp. A *unit/taskforce* will pertain to smaller factions within the group and there may be units within units. *Teams* and *elements* are the smallest factions of this structure.

Although the names of the organizations and the functions they perform are official military terms, I'll use the term *unit* to describe a PsyOp organization which may technically be a group or a team. This should be of little consequence, however, because the activities that these organizations perform are the same.

So far, multiple military and other government sources have revealed that PsyOp is being used on civilians in the US and other countries.[3] These admissions suggest that some the following military forces (or variations of them) are now functioning in your cities and towns: psychological operations group (POG), PsyOp Task Force (POTF), Tactical PsyOp Detachment (TPD), and Tactical PsyOp Team (TPT).

Before explaining these forces in more detail, another look at the battlespace will be instructional. In PsyOp the battlespace is sometimes referred to as the *operational area*, *joint operational area* (if it's being conducted by a joint force), *operating environment*, or *area of operation (AO)*.

The AO includes the air, space, land, and sea. An *area of responsibility (AOR)* is a portion of the battlespace which is under the control of a particular PsyOp unit, which is charged with the psychological preparation of that area. They prep the area to allow for the attack of multiple TAs.

Psychological Operations Group

PsyOp units work with civil affairs (CA) personnel to form the core of CMO planning. This includes a psychological operations group (POG), which plans, coordinates, and executes PsyOp activities at the strategic, operational, and tactical levels of warfare. The POG may contain a regional and dissemination battalion.

The POG consists of military and civilian experts in the following areas: psychology, communication, political science, language/linguistics, culture, sociology, economics, country specialties, history, and philosophy. It has sections that specialize in operations, plans, training, intelligence and information, and logistics including supply and transportation. An example of such as group is the US Army's 4th POG.

The Fourth Psychological Operations Group (4th POG) of the US Army is an active psychological operations unit located at Fort Bragg, North Carolina. It deploys anywhere in the world on short notice for all levels of conflict. It plans and conducts civil affairs and PsyOp in support of unified commanders or government agencies. The 4th POG is known as the strategic core of the PsyOp community.

It has intelligence sections that gather intelligence and analyze the TA. To help accomplish this, it uses military and civilian experts in linguistics, politics, culture, religion, and other subject areas. These experts profile the TA in order to decide how to best communicate with them.

---

3   As described in this and previous chapters, there have been multiple admissions by official sources that PsyOp is being conducted on the civilian population in the US and other countries. However, these sources don't usually mention the names of the units conducting the PsyOp. One exception is the US Army's *Civil Affairs Operations FM 3-05.40 (FM 41-10)* manual of September 2006, which, not only has multiple references to CMO/PsyOp being conducted domestically, but mentions that psychological operations task forces (POTFs) are being used, and that the entire operation is managed by the 4th POG under USSOCOM.

The 4th POG provides support such as propaganda, product development, media production, and tactical product distribution. It has quality print (graphics, photography), audio, and audiovisual production and distribution capabilities. Professionals in technical fields such as, print, graphics, communications, etc. support the group.

It has mobile radio monitoring stations that are capable of listening to almost any broadcast on the planet. The 4th POG is equipped with high-powered AM, FM, and shortwave radio transmitters for long-range broadcasting, supported by experts in communications and propaganda. It has propaganda development teams that can develop written material on any theme.

The 4th POG has portable printing facilities capable of producing professional quality magazines, brochures, pamphlets, posters, banners, books, etc. It also has tactical teams that conduct short-range PsyOp that are equipped with van-mounted printing, photographic, and media distribution facilities. The 4th POG is part of SOCOM.

United States Special Operations Command

The United States Special Operations Command (SOCOM), established in 1987, is a unified special operations command that oversees various special operations commands of the Army, Navy, Air Force, and Marines. It is headquartered at MacDill Air Force Base in Tampa, Florida. SOCOM conducts global overt and covert missions including unconventional warfare (UW).

SOCOM has multiple units, or special operations forces (SOF), some of which perform highly classified activities. Two notable units include the First Special Forces Operational Detachment-Delta (Delta Force) of the US Army, and the Naval Special Warfare Development Group (DEVGRU, the Navy Seals). SOCOM is supported by an intelligence faction known as Intelligence Support Activity (ISA) which provides Human Intelligence (HUMINT) and Signal Intelligence (SIGINT).

SOCOM conducts PsyOp, civil affairs operations (also called civil-military operations), counterterrorism, and other functions. Two SOCOM units which specialize in PsyOp include the 193rd Special Operations Wing (193 SOW) of the Pennsylvania Air National Guard, and the Army's 4th Psychological Operations Group (4th POG).

PsyOp Task Force

The PsyOp Task Force (POTF) is usually the highest organization that performs PsyOp in the battlespace. It may be part of a joint psychological operations task force (JPOTF) if other services or agencies are included. It plans develops, designs, produces, and distributes PsyOp products. This includes the various media, themes, and messages transmitted to the TA. In provides an in-depth profile analysis of the TAs in an AO. It recommends products to influence the TAs and evaluates their effect. SOCOM is usually the supporting command structure of a POTF, which uses factions of the 4th POG as the main PsyOp force.

Tactical PsyOp Detachment

The Tactical PsyOp Detachment (TPD) is a team of about 13 personnel with a captain and staff sergeant. It provides tactical PsyOp support to brigade and battalion-sized units in support of Special Forces. It is made up of several small teams known as Tactical PsyOp Teams (TPT).

The TPD conducts mission assessment, determines distribution priorities, and tracks the various products that have been distributed throughout the AO. All teams maintain contact with each other. The TPD is in constant communication with other forces such as the TPDD, POTF, or TPT during the entire operation.

Tactical PsyOp Team

A Tactical PsyOp Team (TPT) is a small group consisting of a team leader, his assistant, and a PsyOp specialist. The TPT may provide planning and PsyOp distribution support to larger units.

The primary purpose of the team is to enable the tactical commander to communicate directly with the TA in his AOR. A TPT can be part of a TPD or under the control of a unit commander. It helps to distribute products throughout the AO. TPTs conduct face-to-face communication with the TA. They also monitor the TA's reaction to PsyOp products in the AO and advise the commander on their effects. They can modify themes to adjust to the situation but must ensure that they remain within the guidelines of the approving upper unit.

Tactical Product Development Detachment
A Tactical Product Development Detachment (TPDD) is a small unit that works at the division or area level to instantly create PsyOp products for a specific situation in the AO. It provides products for PsyOp personnel that will have immediate tactical use in the AO.

The TPDD works with the civilian sector to supply most of its audio, visual, and audiovisual products for theater (battlespace) distribution. This includes civilian specialists in radio and TV programming, station management, casting, directing, editing, graphic arts, advertising, computers, design, music, photography, audio/video, and printing.

PsyOp Assessment Team
Prior to PsyOp activities, a PsyOp Assessment Team (POAT) moves into an AO to establish contracts with groups and businesses to use their services. It is a small team of about 12 people, including specialists in areas such as tactics, print, broadcast, communications, and logistics.

The POAT observes some of the following features of the AO: TA, production facilities, communications infrastructure, competing media, logistics support, tactical considerations, distribution capabilities, production media (print, radio, TV), broadcast equipment, etc. The POAT is mostly a planning team, although some of its members may remain when the operation becomes functional.

Equipment
The equipment used by PsyOp units can be the property of the forces themselves, other governmental agencies, multinational partners, or contracted from local media. Some units are equipped with audiovisual studios, printing facilities, and other equipment. They also have distribution assets such as radio stations, radios, TV stations, TVs, etc.

Production may be done by the 4th POG at Fort Bragg, media production centers that have been deployed to an AO, or contracted to private industry. Van-mounted facilities with broadcasting and print media production capabilities exist.

PsyOp units locate and establish contracts with mass media outlets in the AO. This includes newspapers, TV and radio stations, printing facilities, billboard companies, etc. They recruit these and other facilities to help them create and distribute PsyOp products directly to the TA.

The units also determine the location of radio and TV transmitters and repeaters, so they may be jammed and covertly replaced with their own signals, such as those emanating from an emitter mounted in a van. Airborne or seaborne platforms can also accomplish this. Terrestrial and satellite digital radio and TV broadcasts can even be used to transmit PsyOp products.

In addition to transmitting PsyOp products as part of an attack, spoofing these signals can also isolate the enemy. The Council on Foreign Relations, which considers PsyOp a NLW to be used on civilians, has advocated the interception and spoofing of people's radio and TV signals in all three of its NLW task force reports.

Also worth mentioning is *digital morphing*, which is a technology that has been used by the entertainment industry to manipulate voice, video, and photo media. Not only can a person's voice be spoofed by taking a 10 minute digital recording of their voice, but a complete audiovisual file of a person can be created.

In addition, morphing allows for graphics to be digitally imported into a live broadcast, basically, changing the broadcast in real-time. It has been researched by the Los Alamos National Laboratory and will be used for PsyOp. The DSB recognized the usefulness of this technology in its task force report, and similarly recommended its use for PsyOp.

C4ISR

PsyOp units use a C4ISR system which allows for the rapid, interoperable, reliable, and secure exchange of information throughout the chain of command. This C4ISR system may have a centralized control and distributed capability.

Units are connected to the intelligence cycle, which continually provides them with current and accurate knowledge pertaining to the TA, obtained from "all available sources" in order to update their products. This includes HUMINT and SIGINT. The C4ISR system also provides them with any relevant information pertaining to the battlespace itself. In addition, the C4ISR system allows for the generation and distribution of PsyOp products and themes. So, it is not only used for communications, it is linked to the PsyOp production and distribution process.

Each AO has a senior PsyOp officer. Messages and themes, which carry triggers that a TA has been sensitized to, are passed to these commanders in order to influence the TA. These themes and triggers will be explained shortly. PsyOp products are then disseminated to "shape the psychological environment" of the entire AO.

The TA's reaction to the various products is "continually" done as they move through the battlespace. This information is collected and evaluated through a variety of conduits, which allows the planners to quickly adjust the campaign based on the reaction of the TA.

TA Profile

TA analysis is necessary to plan and conduct a successful PsyOp campaign. This includes the creation of a profile based on the intelligence process that allows the planners to understand how the TA perceives their environment.

Experts in the behavioral sciences, religion, culture, politics, linguistics, and other subject areas help profile the TA. The more detailed the profile, the more successful the campaign will be. Factors that are considered include: politics, religion, economics, language, race, educational level, affiliations, location, social conditions, history, etc. Tests are conducted to determine the TAs reaction to a variety of environmental stimuli in order to assess their psychological vulnerabilities.

Themes and Symbols

Communication with a TA usually takes place using a theme. After a TA has been profiled, themes and distribution channels are selected.

A theme can be thought of as a series of PsyOp products that are used to promote a single message with the intent of modifying the behavior of the TA. To accomplish this, a multitude of different products which share a distinct characteristic can be used to promote a theme.

To develop themes, PsyOp personnel use the principles of marketing. The concepts for building PsyOp themes are the same as commercial advertising. PsyOp personnel use themes the same way marketers use advertising.

Themes are used to attack the vulnerabilities of a TA as well as create new ones which can be attacked. Themes that already have meaning to the TA are used and new themes are built on previous ones. PsyOp personnel understand what current themes are used with a particular TA, and are aware of any past themes. Themes are synchronized with all instruments of national power.

Symbols contribute to themes. A symbol is a PsyOp product spanning the visual, audio, and audiovisual realms that is used to convey a theme. A symbol is something that stands for something else by reason of association.

They may be visual (short text, statues, pictures, gestures), aural (music or spoken words), or audiovisual (actions and personalities). Over a period of time these symbols accumulate an emotional meaning to the TA.

There are several categories of themes (also called *appeals*) that can be used to change the behavior of a TA. Some include: legitimacy, inevitability, in-group/out-group, bandwagon, and self-preservation. Of particular interest are the legitimacy and inevitability themes.

Legitimacy themes use authority (e.g., law, regulations, police, parents, government, etc.), and reverence (worshiped entities and religion) to influence the TA. The US military has done extensive research on how religion can be used to control and attack people. Other types of legitimacy themes are tradition (consistency), and loyalty (military, friends, family, etc.).

Inevitability themes rely on the fear of death or injury for behavior modification. Inevitability themes stress that the TA will eventually lose (die). They exploit any successes that the military has experienced as well as any failures of the TA.

Any recent tragedies suffered by the TA are used in these themes. Themes developed for such tragedies must be distributed quickly or the negative feelings associated with the event will deteriorate. Personal threats of lethal force are also used in themes.

Other types of messages that exploit unfavorable conditions experienced by the enemy that can be conveyed to them include: financial and other types of failures; shortages of basic needs such as food, fuel, housing, clothing, and medical; racial and religious persecution; precarious situations; inferiorities and inefficiencies; physical discomforts and hardships.[4]

Psychological Actions

The military also establishes contact with a TA using *face-to-face communication (F2C)* and *psychological actions (PsyActs)*. F2C and PsyActs are similar. Both are audiovisual products consisting of *agents of action* who deliver messages to a TA.

---

4   In this note I've listed some products and distribution channels that I've noticed are used to promote themes. Some of these appear in military documentation. Many of them are distributed using informants as *agents of action*. These products and channels correspond to the *delusions of reference* outlined in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (DSM-IV)*. The reason for this will be discussed in *The Coverup* chapter of Volume IV. The themes include: telephone conversations with business vendors, family, and friends; overheard telephone conversations by informants in public, as well as friends and family; regular person-to-person conversations with friends, family, and others handled by the DOD; and overheard conversations by people communicating with each other in public; spoofed web pages, newsgroup postings, and email; TV and radio programs; print material, both authentic and material that has seemingly been spoofed, such as books, newspapers, magazines, flyers, mail, and advertisement inserts; digital displays on electronic devices and appliances; PsyActs; billboards, including stationary print and electronic ones, as well as mobile ones on buses and taxis; license plates, bumper stickers, commercial logos, and lettering on vehicles; graffiti and litter; loudspeaker announcements in stores, libraries, and transportation systems; songs in businesses, stores, and restaurants, as well as ones played by passing vehicles; ATM displays which distribute symbols and keywords; register receipts; totals at checkout counters; novelty items with symbols and text; messages and symbols on clothing, and colors of clothing worn by swarming citizens. There are many, many more products that I've noticed. These products are used to communicate themes that are satanic and masonic. For instance, a TI may be swarmed by vehicles with license plates showing variations of the digits 666 or 33. This also applies to articles of clothing warn by people during swarms, digital clocks on appliances or electronic devices in the TI's environment. Pedophilia themes are commonly transmitted through a variety of channels. It is standard practice for the DOD to use children and their parents in public PsyActs for sexually degrading themes.

Both require that the people involved follow a set of guidelines while *play acting* to deliver the messages. Both are used to modify the behavior of the A. F2C usually involves a single individual addressing another individual, or a single individual addressing a group.

PsyActs generally require more planning, more resources, and use multiple people to transmit messages. They require the coordination of a variety of resources, while F2C is simple. Because military documents are vague when differentiating between the two, and due to their similarities, the term *PsyAct* will be used to describe both of these for the scope of this study.

There are multiple references in military documentation that explain the process of presenting themes in a manner that is consistent with play or movie production. Words such as: sets, props, performance, theater, actors, cast, script, audience, etc., are used.[5]

In fact, to help create audiovisual products, the military can enlist the services of theater actor guilds and modeling agencies. Because a PsyAct is an audiovisual product, this means that these professional actors can be used for PsyActs. "Only the limitations of the supported unit in planning and accomplishing the action (and the imagination of PsyOp personnel) restrict the variety of operations that can be considered PsyActs," the US Army tells us.

The people who convey these messages are known as *agents of action* (also called *actors*) which the US Army describes as "persons, units, and agencies that perform PsyActs which enhance and amplify the overall PsyOp plan." These persons are not necessarily military personnel.

Some agents of action can be *key communicators*. Key communicators are individuals (including civilians) that the TA relies on for information and opinions. These individuals are usually seen as trustworthy to the TA. The military recruits key communicators to convey its messages. The idea is that if a message appears to originate from a trusted source it will seem more credible.

PsyActs are conveyed by these actors in the presence of the TA. This doesn't mean that the actors conveying the messages are speaking directly to the TA, only that that the TA is in their presence when the messages are transmitted.

PsyActs can take place during rallies, rumor campaigns, group meetings, lectures, theater, plays, speeches, dances, banquets, fiestas, festivals, religious activities, talks with individuals, during interviews on talk radio shows, and other social activities. The messages that are transmitted during these events can be subtly included in the presentation.

The agents of action follow a general script to convey these messages. These scripts are basic guidelines which allow the actors to adjust their message as the conversation progresses so that it doesn't sound fake. Otherwise, it will be rigid and unresponsive to the reaction of the TA. This type of communication includes *key words* or phrases spoken by the actors in the presence of the TA.

The messages conveyed by these agents of action can be the primary topic of discussion, or they can be cleverly planted into the presentation. This is a type of *live theater* performance that can be carried out in a variety of settings, which can include props and sets that help promote the theme.

Preparation of AO/Perception Management

Those who design PsyOp campaigns do so to allow for the attack of multiple TAs in the same area. PsyOp personnel change the environment to adapt to the different TAs that move through it. This has been referred to as the *psychological preparation* of the battlespace.

After a person has been profiled and products and themes have been selected, PsyOp personnel decide on distribution (also called *dissemination*) methods, which are the actual delivery of PsyOp products to the TA. Distribution is the physical and electronic method of linking developers and producers in order to accomplish the distribution of PsyOp products.

---

5   See the January 15, 2004 document *Joint Psychological Operations* by the Canadian Forces Doctrine Board (which contains the same terms and definitions as US PsyOp documents), as well as the US Army's report, *Psychological Operations Tactics, Techniques, and Procedures (FM 3-05.301)* of December 2003.

Products are distributed to the TA through audio, visual, and audiovisual means that are referred to as *channels* (also called *conduits* and *mediums*). Intelligence is used to determine the best delivery channel. PsyOp units study the channels which the TA uses to obtain information, and then refine the products in a manner that is consistent with those channels.

Part of PsyOp production involves tailoring the product to make it compatible with the way a TA is accustomed to receiving information. Factors that are considered here include media technique, language, and journalistic style. Others include the type of art, theater, music, and media format that the TA relies on for information/entertainment.

In other words, the product is not just tailored to accommodate a particular channel (e.g. audio, visual, audiovisual), but the style of a specific channel. This means the type of art (visual), music (audio), theater (audiovisual), etc. is replicated. In this manner, the product will be blended into the environment so as to not appear out of place, while still impacting the TA.

In addition to common languages, each individual has their own personal language known as a *representational system*, which they use to perceive, process, and organize stimuli in their environment. It also serves as a form of verbal and nonverbal communication with others. After learning an individual's representational system, it is possible to establish a finely-tuned conduit to communicate directly with them in a language that would only be understood by them.

The RAND Corporation explained: "Knowing what the adversary values and using the adversary's own representational systems allows us to correlate values, to communicate with the minds of enemies in the verbal and nonverbal language of the enemy."[6]

In order to change the behavior of a TA, their perception, thoughts, and emotions must be modified. This requires that their decisionmaking cycle is accessed and influenced. Some publications refer to this as *perception management*.

To accomplish this, the entire system which the TA relies on for information is interfered with. Each and every channel of communication is used as a conduit for PsyOp attacks. The Joint Publication of July 2006 entitled *Military Deception* explained: "Conduits consist of all the systems, organizations, and individuals through which information reaches the adversary."

According to the RAND Corporation, almost complete control can be established over an individual's consciousness, perception, and will, without causing physical harm. This is accomplished by interfering with their continuous cycle of perception, decisionmaking, and action. RAND says that the enemy will be *paced* during each phase of this cycle.[7]

Behavior modification also requires that the TA's environment is changed. Multiple PsyOp products are used in combination to "shape the psychological environment" of the battlespace in order to influence the TA. This is done using as many different products as possible.

To modify the behavior of the TA, their environment is changed using electronic, psychological, and physical means. These electronic, psychological, and physical actions include adding, modifying, or removing information from the environment. Obviously, the physical portion of this includes tampering with objects in the environment.

---

6   The RAND Corporation mentions how even the nightmares of an enemy will be influenced in the book, *In Athena's Camp*. According to RAND, Hitler used neocortical warfare to terrorize his enemies. RAND makes multiple references to the 3rd Reich (e.g. blitzkrieg, Hitler, etc.), as if to praise it.

7   Pacing is a technique used in hypnosis which basically means that an individual's ongoing actions or experiences are referenced in real-time by another person, which creates a fusion between the individual and the person making the comments. This connection allows them to establish control over the individual and make them susceptible to behavior modification. It is a way that behaviorists uses to enter the mind of an individual. Because pacing involves frequent commentaries on a person's ongoing actions, and since RAND mentioned that neuro-linguistic programming (NLP) will be used to communicate with the enemy in the same publication (*In Athena's Camp*), it appears that their message is that during persistent 24/7 surveillance, the enemy will be told continually that they are being monitored. This is consistent with the methods advocated by the DSB, RAND, and Toffler Associates that we learned about in the *Surveillance Technology and Methods* chapter of Volume II, where it was suggested that people who are under intrusive and persistent surveillance will be frequently told they are being watched.

"Through maximizing all media assets," stated the Army, "and contracting with local companies, PsyOp personnel will expand their range of dissemination to reach the TA and influence attitudes and behavior." The DOD announced that PsyOp themes are to be "powerfully disseminated directly to the targeted audiences" throughout the AO for "aggressive behavior modification."

"The information battle," proclaimed the US Marine Corps, "must be fought across all available mediums and no possible channel of communication can be ignored."[8] These attacks are concealed within communication, they describe.

This means that literally every single channel of communication that a TA relies on is interfered with and used to convey PsyOp themes (attacks). Remember, the battlespace is your cities and towns, which, by extension, means homes and workplaces. And a TA can be a civilian individual.

Other Tactics

Isolating people from their support structure and discrediting them are a standard part of PsyOp. PsyOp units conduct counterpropaganda in the AO. They attempt to diffuse any influence that the TA has on the civilian population in that area. They also seek to establish their own legitimacy. The types of support that they deny the TA include: political, financial, human, informational, and other.

This covers a wide range of resources that the TA is denied. According to a 2003 report by US Army's School of Advanced Military Studies, denying the enemy basic human needs may cause them to stop certain behavior until lower-level needs are satisfied. Some of these include: physiological, safety/security, esteem/value, self-realization, and belongingness.

Removing food and water (physiological), denying them refuge (safety), isolating them from the populace (belongingness), or discrediting them (esteem), may cause people to seek to correct these deficiencies before continuing with their behavior, the report tells us.[9]

The US military has specifically stated that it will deny critical services to the enemy. While it does not describe what these critical services are, it obviously includes proper medical treatment, which can be accomplished when the military works with civilian organizations during CMO.

---

8   In public, entire neighborhoods are staged with products, from litter, to graffiti, to signs on the sides of roads, to PsyActs that occur as I travel down the street. Just as the military has mentioned, the entire area is psychologically prepared, similar to that of a production studio for a movie, or an advertisement campaign. No possible channel of communication is ignored. I've determined that in stores these operations are performed by plain-clothed government security forces (military, federal law enforcement) who work with store clerks and shoppers who are part of the civilian defense network. This seems to be part of the admitted CMO practices, where the military temporarily takes control over private sector organizations in order to attack its targets with PsyOp. See the *Civil-Military Operations* section of the *Small-Scale Wars* chapter in the Appendix for more on how this takeover occurs. I've noticed that the military is in complete control of the store. This includes the timing and content of loudspeaker announcements; the movement of people, and what registers are available for checkout, what areas are accessible, and what products are available for the TA to purchase. The environment is prepared entirely with products and people who are aware of what they must do and are guided by the DOD to harass its targets and convey a theme. The DOD uses ongoing and short-lived themes to convey its messages, both of which are reflected in the environment. Some standard themes include pedophilia, satanism, freemasonry, threats, and insults. It appears that many of the people on the tactical level who prepare the environment have no clue what these products mean. But they are clearly understood on the strategic level. Particular brands of items that I begin to purchase are eventually removed from shelves, hidden by being moved to a different part of the store, and blocked with a variety of objects. The tactic of removing certain brands from the shelves and replacing them with ones intended to contribute to a theme also allows the DOD to establish more control over the TA's livingspace. It also achieves the objective of interfering with their food supply. The loudspeaker announcements, which convey the theme, are sounded the moment I'm closest to a speaker, thereby also serving as a devastating noise attack. These loudspeaker comments continue periodically for as long as I'm in the store. In between these announcements, songs which also contribute to the theme are played. Shoppers and store clerks will further contribute to the theme during PsyActs where key phrases are uttered during staged conversations that occur in my presence. Guided by the DOD, these people also habitually swarm (block and crowd) me. The stalkers wear articles of clothing and carry products, such as bags or store items with particular colors or symbols, which the DOD has sensitized me to. Brands of products and foldable signs which have symbolic meaning are placed on the ends of isles or checkout counters for special emphasis. Advertisement banners on walls also contribute to the theme. Even the total at the checkout counter is tampered with, often conveying variations of 666 and 33.

9   I've noticed that my favorite food items are continually removed from store shelves. New food products that I start to purchase are also eventually unavailable. Most TIs are either underemployed or unemployed. Some are homeless.

One way that PsyOp personnel can isolate the TA is by conducting a rumor campaign. Well-planned rumors launched by the military are devastating weapons. Their primary elements include the source, the rumor, and the receiver-repeater (R2). In order for the rumor campaign to be successful, the source of the rumor must be credible to the receiver, the rumor itself must be plausible, and the R2 must spread the rumor.

The rumor will be reduced to the memory capacity of the R2. This is referred to as *leveling*. The R2 levels the story by retaining only the information that they think is relevant or can remember. The R2 also sharpens the story, which means they selectively choose information to retain and expand upon when spreading the rumor. Another characteristic is assimilation, where the R2 adjusts the story to fit his viewpoint based on his experiences, prejudices, interests, etc.

PsyOp attacks are synchronized with core capabilities. This includes directed-energy weapons used for electronic warfare (EW), as well as computer hardware, software, and internet attacks, which are part of computer network operations (CNO).[10] They are also synchronized with "all elements of national power" such as CMO (the use of the civilian population, civilian resources, private sector businesses, etc).

Directed-energy weapons, computer attacks, and PsyOp are used in combination throughout the battlespace. The US Army described in its *Unconventional Warfare* report: "The innovative combination of electronic weapons platforms, networking systems, and strategic-and operational-level PsyOp, enabled by the net-centric operational environment, creates significant opportunities to seize the initiative and dominate an enemy."

EW is used to isolate, disrupt, and influence, the enemy's use of the electromagnetic spectrum. EW diminishes the ability of the TA to perceive and process information by broadcasting PsyOp products over frequencies used by the TA (jamming and spoofing). EW also includes the use of directed-energy weapons to attack people, equipment, and facilities.

CNO are used to attack, deny, deceive, degrade, and disrupt networks and computers used by the enemy. This means the destruction of hardware and software (degrading, attacking). It also means spoofing (deceiving). The battlespace includes the internet. Internet applications that transmit PsyOp messages include email, web sites, and chat rooms. When a TA goes online, they are entering the battlespace.

The US and its allies will terrorize the civilian population to achieve their political objectives. The DOD specifically stated: "Some IW activities, such as terrorism and transnational crime, violate international law. US law and national policy prohibit US military forces or other government agencies (OGAs) from engaging in or supporting such activities."

"However," they continued, "since our adversaries employ terrorism and transnational criminal activities against the interests of the United States and its partners, these activities are included ... as examples of the range of operations and activities that can be conducted as part of IW." Similarly, the US Marine Corps document, *Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare* of August 2006 mentioned, "frightening the population into inactivity is sufficient to [achieve] our goals."

Objectives

According to the US military, the ultimate goal of PsyOp is to modify the behavior of the TA. This is accomplished by destroying their will, which, itself, is brought about by continually inflicting pain.

So, there are several considerations here. First, the ultimate goal (behavior modification), and next is the condition which will allow the goal to be realized (the destruction of the TA's will). Finally, the specific methods which will facilitate the destruction of the TA's will (the use of pain).

---

10   Various documents have described how PsyOp, CNO, EW, and all other instruments of national power will be used in combination to attack people. See the following: *Joint Publication 3-13.1, Electronic Warfare*, January 25, 2007; Defense Science Board, Task Force Report, *Future Strategic Strike Forces*, February 2004; Department of Defense, *Information Operations Roadmap*, October, 2003.

To accomplish this, a relentless campaign is used to demoralize the TA, which includes creating perpetual negative feelings of intense fear and hopelessness. This is done to wear the TA down gradually and break their will. The DOD describes this as the attrition-based approach. It explained: "Attrition is the product of gradual erosion of the will. The victim of this psychological attrition gradually becomes convinced that nothing he can do will yield a satisfactory outcome to a situation."

The word "victim" is an interesting choice by the DOD to describe its PsyOp targets because themes are used to transmit painful stimuli (also called triggers) which a TA has been sensitized to. The triggers contained in these themes are understood by the military at the strategic, operational, and tactical levels of the campaign. They are passed to the commanders of a particular AO if the TA moves toward that portion of the battlespace.

Simplified, these PsyOp themes are a series of painful triggers used to generate a particular response. "A psychologist who is looking at our efforts," says the DOD, "would swiftly conclude that what we were talking about was nothing more than a series of stimulus and response interactions. That is, the behavior we seek to shape is nothing more than a response to a stimulus or set of stimuli."

"Messages and themes must be clearly understood," explained the School of Advanced Military Studies of the United States Army Command and General Staff College, at the "strategic, operational, and tactical level of war."

Themes which contain "triggers and thresholds" are "directly passed to the various actors within the commander's area of operation" to combat asymmetric threats. These actors include the civilian population. The triggers that they're referring to are part of a behavior modification program known as *neuro-linguistic programming (NLP)* which uses *anchors* and *triggers* to promote change. An anchor is created when an emotional state is linked to something such as an object, person, sound, smell, place, color, etc.

This is easily created by deliberately placing an individual in the desired state, then repeatedly subjecting them to whatever the intended stimulus will be until the emotion becomes linked (anchored) to it. An anchor can also be created in a single instance if the timing is right and the emotion is strong enough. Once the anchor has been established, whatever the individual was exposed to during the anchoring process becomes the stimulus (trigger) that will invoke the emotion.

NLP has been used by personal-growth experts to quickly and massively modify the behavior of individuals and groups. In addition, it can be used as a powerful weapon to deliberately create phobias. By surrounding an individual with painful stimuli it is possible to keep them in a perpetual state of fear or sadness. It is possible to cause them to suffer a nervous breakdown.

An intelligence and security unit of the US Army known as the Intelligence and Security Command (INSCOM) has conducted much research on NLP. NLW experts such as John Alexander and Mrs. Janet Morris, who have worked with the US military and various federal agencies, have described how NLP can be used to manipulate people.

The RAND Corporation has suggested that NLP experts should be recruited to help facilitate netwar, which includes the battleswarm. These painful messages are repeatedly hurled at the TA over and over again through various stimuli in an environment that has been psychologically prepped. "Pain is inflicted until the victim can stand no more," the DOD explains.

The BSSR described how the application of scientific knowledge could be used to torture people psychologically. As an example, they mentioned how the Portuguese secret police (PIDE) used psychological torture against the state's internal enemies accomplished by mounting anxiety. It was also used by the KGB against Communist Russia's dissidents. Unlike physical torture it is more acceptable to the public because it leaves no visible injury.

Summary

PsyOp attacks contain painful stimuli that are conveyed to the TA using a series of products referred to as a theme. The TA is relentlessly attacked with these stimuli through all channels of communication which they rely on. The painful stimuli are concealed to any casual observer.

The TA's environment is also changed. The TA can be a civilian individual. PsyOp is synchronized with EW (directed-energy weapons and the manipulation of electromagnetic signals), CNO (disrupting and destroying computers and networks), and all other instruments of national power. It takes place globally. The battlespace is your neighborhoods.

PsyOp uses civilians as irregular forces. Controlling these forces are NGOs and international groups that work with the military and federal agencies. Much of modern PsyOp was built by a small group of private interests, which we learned in the previous volume were using the social sciences to install a global government. Some of these are the exact same groups promoting the use of PsyOp on civilians.

Electronic Warfare Part 1

Introduction to Directed-Energy Weapons

Description

This chapter provides a basic description of what directed-energy weapons (DEWs) are and how they work. In their *Electronic Warfare* publication the Department of Defense (DOD) defines a directed-energy weapon this way: "DE is an umbrella term covering technologies that produce a beam of concentrated EM energy or atomic or subatomic particles."

It continues: "A DE weapon is a system using DE primarily as a direct means to damage or destroy adversary equipment, facilities, and personnel. DE warfare is military action involving the use of DE weapons, devices, and countermeasures to either cause direct damage or destruction of adversary equipment, facilities, and personnel, or to determine, exploit, reduce, or prevent hostile use of the EMS through damage, destruction, and disruption."

The two basic types of DEWs include lasers and microwaves. Microwaves and lasers are both part of the electromagnetic spectrum. They're made of the same electromagnetic energy which consists of light and radio waves.

This energy can be explained using either *wavelength* or *frequency*. The shorter the wavelength of any energy field within the spectrum, the higher its frequency is. Toward the low end of the spectrum, there are low-frequency radio waves, which are thousands of kilometers long. And at the other end of the spectrum are light waves, which can be a fraction of an atom in size.

For ease of identification, groups of consecutive frequencies within the spectrum are divided into ranges. The frequencies within these ranges may overlap, which makes determining which range a frequency belongs in more difficult. Because lasers have a shorter wavelength than microwaves, they vibrate at a higher frequency. Lasers and microwaves are merely different aspects of the exact same energy. The only difference between them is their frequency.

Another consideration is power. A high-powered microwave (HPM) and microwave oven both operate on the same frequency/wavelength. The only difference between them is the power level. Similarly, a laser pen and a high-powered laser have the same frequency, but the power level of a high-powered laser is much greater.

The concept of lasers, microwaves, and other types of DEWs using the exact same energy field, but at different frequencies, will help clarify how a single weapon can be used to exploit different frequencies of energy to produce microwave, laser, and other effects. This feature makes them *rheostatic* (scalable or tunable).

Microwave weapons consist of basically two major technologies. First are the millimeter wave devices which can be focused on a target at great distances and produce a burning sensation. An example of this is the Active Denial System (ADS). The second is the electromagnetic bomb (e-bomb), which can destroy electronic circuitry, communications networks, and harm organic matter at a distance, with a non-nuclear electromagnetic explosion (pulse).

Lasers consist of two basic groups. Low-energy lasers which can be used to disrupt vision, and high-powered lasers which can be used on people and material. So, both lasers and HPM can be used for counter personnel as well as counter material purposes.

DEWs are subject to diffraction, which is basically the reduction of focused power caused by the dispersal of their energy in the atmosphere. The shorter the wavelength, the less diffraction occurs.

Laser wavelengths are about 10,000 times smaller than microwaves. Therefore, they are more suitable for accuracy at long distances, because they diffract 10,000 times less. Diffraction can be used to the advantage of the operator. For instance, if a large area needed to be irradiated, high-powered microwaves could accomplish this, such as the e-bomb.

DEWs offer the following capabilities:

- They have pinpoint accuracy.
- They offer a low cost per use and maintenance.
- They have a virtually unlimited magazine capacity.
- They are simple to track, aim and shoot with sophisticated sensors.
- They are less lethal if tuned properly.
- They can operate in all weather conditions.
- They can engage multiple targets.
- They limit collateral damage.
- Their energy travels at the speed of light.
- Their energy can pass through walls at distances of hundreds of meters or even miles.
- They are silent and offer plausible deniability of their use.

In addition, they are *scalable*, which means a single weapon can be configured to produce a multitude of effects by adjusting its power or frequency. Some include tiredness, dizziness, nausea, vomiting, abdominal pains, convulsions, epileptic seizures, and temporary paralysis.

Other effects include: vibration of internal organs, cooking of internal organs, cataracts, burning sensations, controlled heating of the entire body to produce hyperthermia or fever, headaches, and a loss of short-term memory or cognitive processes. They can even be tuned to cause death by cardiac arrest or cancer. This energy can be transmitted accurately for long distances (in some cases many miles). Some can pass through most unshielded structures with little difficulty. And their use is virtually undetectable by casual observation.

These weapons are mounted on *platforms*, which have been described as physical structures that are used to support or deliver the weapons. A weapons platform can be a missile, aircraft, ship, vehicle, etc. Other platforms evidently exist, as described by the *Journal of California Law Enforcement*, which revealed in January of 2002 that not only can an HPM can be built into a van, but highly portable suitcase-sized weapons and ones that resemble radios exist. Such weapons, the *Journal* tells us, offer covert qualities and the deniability of use.

It's no longer necessary to place a military force or an assassin near a target due to the invention of these weapons. "The advantage of directed energy weapons over conventional ones is deniability," agreed Metz and Kievit, which "must be aimed at the American people, who do not sanction the imprisonment, much less execution, of individuals without a trial."

Tracking & Fire Control

Most directed-energy weapons require an *acquisition, tracking, pointing, and fire control (ATP/FC)* system. Much research on FTP/FC was done by the Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI) for the Space-Based Laser (SBL) program, which began in the mid 1980s and continues to this day.

ATP/FC systems allow a DEW to engage a large number of targets by placing a directed-energy beam on the aimpoint of each target. There are broad sensors which detect general activities, and refined sensors which provide a more accurate view of the target. These sensors are usually low-powered infrared lasers which propagate well through the atmosphere.

Wide-area (broad) sensors are used to detect certain activities, which are then passed to the more refined sensors which may be linked by computer to a decisionmaking algorithm. Information is passed from the broader sensors to the more accurate ones in succession. All of these sensors may be autonomous (self-directing).

Different sensors are used during the multiple phases, which include acquisition, tracking, pointing, and fire control. For instance, for a missile, infrared sensors would detect the heat signature of the missile during the acquisition phase. Another sensor would determine its flight path during the tracking phase. In the pointing phase, yet another sensor would locate a specific point on the missile and fire an energy beam to that point.

Then during the fire control phase, the results of the hit are transmitted back to the FTP/FC unit for assessment. At this time a computer algorithm containing pre-programmed sets of instructions may determine the next course of action based on the results. Then the next target is selected and the process begins again. Some systems include a feature which allows them to prioritize targets.

In its 1984 directed-energy plan, the SDI included the development of ATP/FC systems for future directed-energy weapons, including the creation of systems to track a target at a range of up to 3,000 miles within a diameter of about 4 inches. Another was to create a computer algorithm to handle the ATP/FC of at least 100 simultaneous targets at a rate of at least two shots per second, and then conduct damage assessment on each one.

Summary

Directed-energy weapons provide quick employment, deep clip capacity, scalability from lethal to non-lethal, simplified pointing and tracking, all weather capability, multiple target engagement, and long distance projection (tens of miles). They can also pass through walls without a trace. They provide surgical accuracy at the speed of light. They are also silent, and offer the military and law enforcement plausible deniability of their use.

High-Powered Microwaves

Introduction

High-powered microwaves (HPM) include two primary technologies.[1] The first is the *electromagnetic pulse bomb (e-bomb)*. The next is the *microwave amplification by stimulated emission of radiation (maser)* which uses millimeter wave technology. Both weapons produce power in the megawatt range.

They have a variety of applications based on their power level. At low levels they can confuse sensors and at higher levels they can burn electronic circuitry. They can disrupt communications systems and computer networks. They are used for counter-personnel and counter-material purposes. Many of the details regarding HPMs are classified.

Active Denial Technology

A maser is similar to a laser, but instead of using energy from the light portion of the electromagnetic spectrum, it uses energy from the radio portion of the spectrum, which is a lower frequency. Masers have existed since the early 1950s.[2]

The ADT is a type of maser which operates in the millimeter wave band. ADT was developed by Raytheon Corporation in cooperation with the US Air Force Research Laboratory (AFRL). The ADT's development was a matter of complete secrecy for about 10 years, and it was not until 2001 that its existence was revealed in mainstream news. Most of the testing regarding its human effects remains classified. The wave emitted from this weapon is just over 3 millimeters, or $1/10$th of an inch wide.

The Active Denial System (ADS) is an example of ADT. It operates in the 95 GHz frequency of the radio band of the electromagnetic spectrum. Specifically, this weapon operates in the millimeter wave area of microwaves, which approaches the far infrared (FIR) portion of non-visible light.

The ADS is a counter-personnel, non-lethal, directed-energy weapon, describes the JNLWP in their *ADS Fact Sheet,* which projects a focused beam of millimeter waves to cause an intolerable heating sensation on a person's skin. The invisible beam that it shoots, which travels at the speed of light, reaches a depth in the skin of only about $1/64$th of an inch.

According to the fact sheet, there is minimal risk of injury because of this shallow depth as well as the tendency for people to instinctively move out of the way after being hit. In addition, there are both hardware and software safety measures built into the computer system which the ADS is connected to which limit the shot duration.

It is powered by a 100 kW ultra-high radio frequency transmitter. The 95 GHz radio frequency beam which it shoots is created from an electric gyrotron generator. The generator can be adjusted. The device is cooled with a closed-loop de-ionized water cooling system. The ADS fires 4-second bursts. It has infrared targeting capabilities for nighttime use and is simple to point and shoot.

---

[1] Some publications classify millimeter wave and high-powered microwaves separately. See *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology*, by the National Research Council, as well as the University of Bradford's Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), *Research Report Number 4*, of December 2003. But other sources that I've encountered list them both as high-powered microwaves. See the Defense Science Board's report, *Future Strategic Strike Forces*, of February 2004, and the United States Air Force, School of Advanced Military Studies, United States Army Command and General Staff College article, *Directed Energy Weapons: Do We Have a Game Plan?, by* Major Timothy J. Lincoln.

[2] The book, *E-Bomb: How America's New Directed-Energy Weapons Will Change the Way Future Wars will be Fought*, by Doug Beason, claims that the maser was invented in 1958 by Charles Townes and Arthur Schawlow, while the *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook*, by Dr. Charles Stewart, says it was invented by Townes and Schawlow in 1954.

The power level of the ADS is adjustable from 100 Kw to 100 MW.[3] The power level and duration of the beam is controlled by a computer, which contains a setting that limits the depth of the beam to only $1/64$th of an inch. In addition, the computer allegedly shuts off the beam after only a few seconds of exposure, if it's tuned properly.

So, its power level and frequency can be adjusted. Its focal point can be adjusted too, from a small dot to a large area which would irradiate several people. The beam can be adjusted to focus on a single individual in a crowd of thousands.

Depending on the power level, it can cause a variety of effects. They include a heating of the entire body, an intolerable burning of a specific area, or a bee sting effect which can cover the entire body. It can also produce resonance (vibration) within the body.

The ADS passes through even the most bulky clothing with ease. It can pass through unshielded walls. Its official range is classified, but it is documented to have a distance of at least 1 km without losing any of its power. Its beam is silent and invisible. And because it operates at the high end of the microwave area of the spectrum (near light), it travels at the speed of light.

The Defense Science Board's 2004 report *Future Strategic Strike Forces*, says that for neutralizing individuals, while lasers could be used at long ranges for a strategic strike, the ADS will be effective at much shorter ranges. In its NLW report of 2005, the CFR added: "With its long range and rapid, universal, and reversible effect, ADS has many potential military applications."

It appears that the safety claims regarding the power level and shot duration of the ADS are the result of a setting which can be used if the operator chooses to do so, and not a limitation of the weapon itself. This was reported in *New Scientist* in July of 2005 when it was described that a person suffered an injury when the weapon was accidentally set at the wrong power level.

In its *Army Orders Pain Ray Trucks: New Report Shows Potential for Death* article, of October 2008, *ABC News* mentioned that the ADS could be used as a "flesh-frying killer." The *Guardian* warned in October of 2006, that the new weapon has the potential for a traceless form of urban political control.

The National Institute of Justice (NIJ), which is the research division of the Department of Justice (DOJ), has funded Raytheon for the production of smaller vehicle-mounted and hand-held weapons which use ADT. Presumably, these too are to be used on civilians, according to a University of Bradford NLW report in March 2006.

According to *New Scientist*, the US Department of Justice plans to give mobile ADT units to police forces around the country.[4] And *National Defense News* reported that some portable ADT weapons can be powered by a truck battery.

The NIJ's interest in these smaller weapons was only one of many possible domestic applications, says *ABC News*. There have been other proclamations in mainstream sources that the military and police have been preparing for the use of the ADS on civilians in a variety of scenarios.[5]

There are multiple masers which use ADT, including the Vehicle Mounted Active Denial System (VMADS), Silent Guardian, Portable Active Denial System (PADS, also called ADS2), and a type of *compound directed-energy weapon* with multiple lethal and nonlethal weapons mounted onto a single platform, called Project Sheriff. All of these weapons were developed by Raytheon for agencies such as the DOE and NIJ/DOJ, with the cooperation of the Air Force.

---

3   The official publication of the *JNLWP ADS Fact Sheet* lists no power level. However, other literature indicates that the power level can be adjusted. For instance, during the *National Public Radio (NPR)* show on October 29 2007, Dr. Gordon Hengst of the Air Force Research Laboratory, which developed the weapon with Raytheon, says that it has a power range from 100 kilowatts to 100 megawatts. See also the *New Scientist* article *Details of US Microwave-Weapon Tests Revealed*, July 22, 2005, which explained how a person was burned during a test with the ADS after the wrong power level was accidentally set.

4   Although they don't specifically state which type of ADT weapon it is, because they describe it as smaller and portable, presumably it's the ADS2 or one of its variations. See the article *Police Toy with Less Lethal Weapons*, which appeared in *New Scientist* in May 2005, by David Hambling.

5   See *New Scientist's* report, *Details of US Microwave-Weapon Tests Revealed*, on July 22, 2005, by David Hambling, as well as *National Defense's* article, *Directed-Energy: Low Power Weapons on the Rise*, February 1, 2008, by Breanne Wagner.

Active Denial System 2

The ADS2, also called System 2 and Portable Active Denial System (PADS), was developed by Raytheon Corporation beginning in 2005 for the Department of Energy's Office of Security and Safety Performance Assurance (SSA) and the Department of Defense's Office of Force Transformation (OFT).

The ADS2 is an enhanced, ruggedized version of the original system. A nonlethal weapons report by the University of Bradford, UK describes it as a smaller, more portable version of the original. It is a self-directed weapon. It can be mounted to a plane or vehicle.

National Defense Magazine says the ADS or ADS1 was the prototype version of this weapon, and the ADS2 is basically the same, but more stable. The ADS2 has improvements in its design that allow it to be used in many operational environments. It is available to the military, civil law enforcement, and private security companies, according to Raytheon Corporation.

Project Sheriff

Project Sheriff, also called Full Spectrum Effects Platform (FSEP), is a vehicle-mounted ADS developed by Raytheon in 2005 for the DOD's Office of Force Transformation (OFT), as well as the DOE's Office of Security and Safety Performance Assurance (SSA). Allegedly, the DOE will be using it to protect nuclear facilities.

The unit contains a suite of lethal and nonlethal weapons mounted onto a single weapons platform. Among its nonlethal arsenal are two weapons which can focus tight beams of sound and light. The first uses a laser to temporarily impair a person's vision by transmitting a focused beam of bright light into their eyes.

Next, the Long Range Acoustic Device (LRAD) is capable of transmitting an intensely focused beam of noise directly into their ear. This noise can be a warning made in real-time by an operator, or an MP3 sound file.

The FSEP is also equipped with a lethal weapon with an obscure description called the gunslinger, which contains acoustic and infrared sensors to detect the exact location of sound and movement, allegedly to locate and destroy snipers. After the origin of the commotion is detected, says *National Defense Magazine*, "it automatically swivels, locks in and fires in the direction of the assailant." The FSEP may be equipped with other weapons as well.

Silent Guardian

The Silent Guardian, built by Raytheon, is about $1/3^{rd}$ the size and power of other ADT systems. It is a 7.5 foot high, 5 ton, vehicle-mounted or stationary system, with a 45 x 45 inch dish antenna, and a 360 degree shoot zone. It has an auto-tracking feature, which can fire 2-second bursts of directed-energy up to 250 meters away. It can switch from standby to armed mode in less than 2 seconds. It can also engage alternate targets in less than 2 seconds.

Allegedly it will be used for checkpoint security, embassy protection, homeland security, and peacekeeping operations. The Silent Guardian uses an antenna to transmit a focused millimeter wave beam for the "precise targeting of specific individuals," says Raytheon. In addition to the auto-tracking feature, the operator can manually observe people through a targeting screen and attack them with the use of a joystic. The infrared sensors on the antenna are said to be able to detect the excessive heating of a targeted individual, which results in a signal being sent to the operator to move off that target.

Vigilant Eagle

Vigilant Eagle is a ground-based weapons platform developed by Raytheon. It consists of three primary units: a C2 unit, a sensor unit, and an amplified antenna grid which fires a beam of microwave energy. Its intended use is to detect and disable surface-to-air missiles at airfields and commercial airports. It does this by frying the electronic circuitry of the missile.

The sensor unit includes a constellation of distributed infrared sensors called the Missile Detect and Track subsystem (MDT). The infrared sensors on this platform are configured to detect missiles. The sensors are said to be so reliable and accurate that they provide a 360 degree dome of protection around an entire location.

False alarms are few because detection is verified by multiple sensors. The C2 unit is referred to as the Fire Distribution Center (FDC). It can both track and identify all objects in the airspace that are detected by the sensors. After it identifies an object, the C2 unit can then recommend appropriate action. The FDC has been used in the military since 1994, and has recently been installed to protect the airspace over Washington D.C.

The large rectangular antenna is called the Active Electronically Scanned Array (AESA). It consists of a group of microwave antennas whose rays flow into a solid-state amplifier, which combines them into single beam of energy. The result is a highly focused microwave beam with a range of at least 60 miles.

Electromagnetic Pulse Weapon

The electromagnetic pulse (EMP) weapon, also called the *e-bomb*, or the *radio flash weapon*, is capable of disrupting or damaging the circuitry of most electronic devices.

The weapon accomplishes this by sending either a single pulse or a series of fast, high-powered pulses of electromagnetic energy in the range of 100 MHz to 20 GHz. These pulses are similar to a lightening strike or a nuclear blast. The power level of these pulses can be several hundred megawatts (MW). The EMP weapon has a range of at least several hundred meters, but reportedly can be transmitted up to 15 Km.

The specific method by which the pulse attaches to the circuitry is called *coupling*. Coupling is simply the binding of an energy wave onto a conductor. There are two types of coupling. The first is called *front door coupling* and it happens when the energy wave binds to the antenna of a device. The other type is called *back door coupling*. It occurs when the wave binds to external components such telephone lines, network cables and power lines.

It can also occur with ports on the back of a computer, such as serial ports. After the energy binds, it then moves through the circuitry, frying or disrupting sensitive internal components, such as crystal diodes, ICs, mixers, logic circuits, etc.

The precise targeting of electronic devices can be accomplished in the following way: First the EMP weapon can be aimed in a specific area. The primary factor is not the power of the pulse, but the ability to focus the output. The energy must be accurately deposited at a certain range to be effective.

Next, it can be configured to send a single pulse consisting of a specific frequency, which will only destroy the circuitry of a device that functions on that frequency. In this manner, if an operator has the frequency signature of a target device, then only that single device will be affected, while others in the area remain unharmed.

Furthermore, a series of fast pulses consisting of multiple frequencies can be sent to an area, which will affect the circuitry of all devices operating on those frequencies. This type of delivery is referred to as an *ultra wideband pulse (UWBP)*. It can be adjusted to cover large areas, even an entire city.

In 1990, the *International Review of the Red Cross*, declared, "It is possible today to generate a very powerful microwave pulse … with an energy level of several hundreds of megawatts." Using specially adapted antenna systems, "these generators could in principle transmit over hundreds of meters ... [or up to] approximately 15 km."

There is allegedly no unshielded device that can withstand one of these strikes. Dr. Nick Begich declared, "With this kind of weapon there is no machine which could get by this invisible wall of directed-energy." The US Air Force, Center for Strategy and Technology at Maxwell Air Force Base says an EMP weapon could destroy any electronic device within its range.

Its intended targets include: missiles, aircraft, vehicles, boats, communications systems, computers, networks, radars, and radios. It can interfere with radio, shortwave, and television transmissions. It can also disrupt or destroy an ignition system. Another proposed use is to disrupt the electrical utilities of an enemy. An entire city can even be hit.

Platforms for the EMP weapon are air-based, sea-based, ground-based, and portable. They can be mounted on aircraft or ships. The ground-based weapons can be mounted on a hilltop or building. They can also be mounted in a van for concealment and mobility purposes. In 1997 the FAS advocated the use of a man-portable EMP weapons by police officers and ground troops.

The US Air Force would like to attach high-powered microwave weapons to low earth-orbiting (LEO) satellites to engage targets on the ground, air, and space.[6] According to the US Air Force they can be tuned to disrupt or destroy. They are capable of generating an UWBP to destroy a variety of devices during a series of preselected multiple frequency pulses.

"The space-based high-power microwave (HPM) weapon system is capable of engaging ground, air and space targets with a varying degree of lethality," declared the US Air Force in 1996. "Its effect is to generate high-electric fields over a target area," they announced, "thereby disrupting or destroying any electronic components present." The area which these spaced-based weapons can target can be as small as a couple of meters in diameter, up to hundreds of meters in size.

Summary

High-powered microwaves with ranges of up to 60 miles exist. Smaller variations of these weapons with adjustable levels of lethality also exist and have been deployed to police and military units to be used on civilians. These weapons are silent, traceless, invisible, and can easily pass through most unshielded structures.

---

6   The May 1996 report by the US Air Force, Air Command and Staff College, *An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025: An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities*, describes this as a future technology. While the Air Force says that there is only an interest in attaching high-powered microwaves to LEOs, the wording used infers that it has already been done.

High-Powered Lasers
Introduction

Lasers (light amplification by stimulated emission of radiation) offer the extremely accurate speed-of-light transmission of an invisible energy beam over very long ranges. They have an almost unlimited magazine capacity, limit collateral damage, and cost less per shot than conventional weapons.

They have both counter personnel and counter material uses. Some laser weapons are rheostatic, which means their power levels can be adjusted to produce controllable effects.

While laser research dates back to the late 1950s, the first tactical laser in the US, the Mid-Infrared Advanced Chemical Laser (MIRACL), a megawatt deuterium fluoride laser (DF) laser built by TRW, was tested against missiles and airplanes in 1973. In 1978, the Air Force Weapons Laboratory developed the first chemical oxygen iodine laser (COIL) laser.

Early research on tactical lasers was done by DARPA beginning in the late 1970s, and then transferred to the Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI) in 1984. Now the Ballistic Missile Defense Organization (BMDO), SDI's successor, continues this research today. In the late 1960s Russia had developed a nuclear laser capable of shooting down aircraft.

Lasers can be infrared, ultraviolet, and X-ray. Basically, the action of a laser consists of a casing with a mirror on each end. Inside the casing is something called a *gain medium* (also called a lasing medium). Energy is supplied to the casing, which bounces back and forth off each mirror.

As the energy moves back and forth it travels through the gain medium, which amplifies its power. Eventually, it gains enough power to pass through one of the mirrors, which is partially transparent, emitting a ray of light energy. The gain medium (the amplifying property of the action) can be a liquid, gas, plasma, or solid.

The two basic modes of operation are *pulsed* and *continuous wave (CW)*. Chemical lasers such as the COIL are CW. Solid-state lasers are usually pulsed. These pulses can be so close together that the beam appears to be continuous. The laser works by burning away layers of its target. The only difference between common lasers, such as a laser pointer or the laser in a DVD player, and a laser used to shoot down rockets, is power.

Lasers can be phased by combining multiple lasers of the same wavelength. When this happens the electromagnetic power is not just doubled, it is squared. So, two lasers produce the effect of four. Three lasers produce the effect of nine, etc.

Some lasers have better beam quality than others. For instance the COIL and free electron laser (FEL) have excellent beam quality, while the deuterium fluoride (DF) laser's isn't as good. These lasers will be discussed in more detail shortly.

Laser weapon platforms have a Beam Control System (BCS) built into their ATP/FC system to compensate for atmospheric beam disruption. The atmosphere consists of various gases such as nitrogen and oxygen, as well as water, dust, pollen, smoke, and rain. The temperature also varies from place to place and constantly fluctuates.

All of these conditions exist in an atmosphere which changes hundreds of times per second. This produces an extremely volatile environment. Because of this, the laser beam will expand, change course, scatter, reflect and even change the atmosphere which it travels through.

So, a feature called Adaptive Optics (AO) has been built into the (BCS) of the ATP/FC mechanism of some laser weapons. AO works best for a long-distance high-powered laser beam which needs to be sent through the atmosphere hundreds of miles.

First, a low-powered laser is sent to the target which measures the atmospheric conditions. This laser sends the information back to a computer. A flexible mirror sits behind the exiting mirror. The computer measures the conditions, then adjusts the flexible mirror 2,000 times a second using tiny motors. This occurs much faster than the atmosphere can change.

The mirror is adjusted so the high-powered beam will be predistorted in the opposite manner of the low-powered beam. When the high-powered beam exits the weapon, all inaccuracies caused by the atmospheric conditions have been corrected, and it hits its target. Although the atmosphere changes hundreds of times per second, the AO process occurs in milliseconds, quicker than the atmosphere can change.

There is a variety of ways to categorize lasers. For this chapter there will be two basic types: *chemical* and *solid state*.[1]

Chemical Lasers

Chemical lasers are capable of producing a CW beam in the multi-megawatt level. Lasers using chemicals as an action are very powerful. Many of these types operate in the infrared region.

They include the Chemical Oxygen Iodine Laser (COIL), the Hydrogen Fluoride laser (HF), the Deuterium Fluoride Laser (DF), and the Deuterium Fluoride-Carbon Dioxide Laser (DF-CO). Out of the three, the COIL has the shortest wavelength and travels through the atmosphere most efficiently.

The Airborne Laser (ABL) and the Advanced Tactical Laser (ATL) systems, which will be discussed shortly, both use the COIL gain medium.

The gas chemicals used in chemical laser actions function at low pressure, but its flow approaches the speed of light. Because of the corrosive nature of these chemicals, they require special storage and handling. Another disadvantage is that the platforms are somewhat large.

Pulsed-Energy Projectile

The Pulsed-Energy Projectile (PEP) is a pulsed DF chemical anti-personnel laser, which shoots ionized plasma up to a distance of 1.5 miles. Like all lasers, it travels at the speed of light and has pinpoint accuracy. It has a tunable effect from lethal to non-lethal. Some of its effects include temporary paralysis and shock.

A single burst can produce a compound effect consisting of a flash-bang (bright light and loud noise), with a substantial ultrasonic (kinetic) impact. This results in the target being blinded, deafened and thrown back, all at once.

Mission Research Corporation, the developer, says it can also be tuned to cause pain, choking, and heart fibrillation. According to the National Research Council the PEP is capable of causing temporary paralysis. The Center for Technology and National Security Policy, an advisory group for the allied militaries, describes the PEP as one of the most advanced counter personnel lasers being pursued by the JNLWP. In May 2005, *New Scientist* reported that the NIJ was working with Sterling Photonics of Albuquerque New Mexico to build a smaller, electric version of the PEP for police.

Tactical High-Energy Laser

Both the Tactical High-Energy Laser (THEL) and the Mobile Tactical High-Energy Laser (MTHEL) were developed by Northrop Grumman Corporation. These DF lasers are used to target rocket warheads by heating them up until they explode.[2]

---

1 According to the Defense Science Board (DSB), there are four basic types: chemical lasers, solid-state lasers, fiber lasers, and free-electron lasers. See its December 2007 task force report *Directed-Energy Weapons and Technology Applications*. The August 1, 1993 article by Don Herskovitz entitled *Killing Them Softly*, which appeared in the *Journal of Electronic Defense*, says there are several kinds including: gas, excimer, chemical, and a type that includes crystals and semiconductors which appears to be solid-state. Although semiconductor and glass fiber lasers are often placed in a separate category, they can also be described as solid-state. Some publications list fem-to-second lasers in their own category. But this appears to be a feature exhibited by some solid-state lasers. Fem-to-second lasers have glass fiber and semiconductor gain mediums, which indicates they're solid-state, and is the reason they're listed as a feature of solid-state lasers. See *The Encyclopedia of Laser Physics and Technology*, at www.rp-photonics.com. Although some material lists FELs in a separate category due to their gain medium, the book *The E-Bomb*, by Doug Beason, describes them as electrically-driven, solid-state lasers.

2 The Defense Science Board (DSB), mentioned in its task force report, *Directed-Energy Weapons and Technology Applications* in December 2007, that either the MTHEL or THEL has been discontinued, but was vague in describing which.

The US Army and the Israeli Ministry of Defense selected Northrop Grumman Corporation to create the MTHEL in August 2003. The MTHEL is a product of the Department of Defense's (DOD) Advanced Concept Technology Demonstration (ACTD).

The THEL will be used to protect forces in combat and critical infrastructures, including urban areas. It uses a combination of radar and laser sensors for rangefinding and tracking. First, the radar detects the target, and then the computer transfers the information to an optical tracking system, which refines the tracking and positioning of the beam director. In the summer of 2004 the THEL successfully demonstrated the simultaneous engagement of mortar rounds and rockets in August and June at the US Army's White Sands Missile Range in New Mexico.

According to Richard J. Bradshaw, the US Army's program manager for directed-energy weapons, the beam is capable of moving around solid objects. The laser sensor unit apparently detects these objects during rangefinding, and the computer calculates the distance and size of the object. Then, just before the laser beam hits the object, it's cut off, and resumes on the other side.

SkyGuard

SkyGuard, developed by Northrop Grumman, is a compact, multi-mission, portable laser weapons platform designed for local defense. It provides a 360 degree protective dome about 7 miles in diameter. A single SkyGuard system is said to be able to defend large areas, such as those occupied by a military force or a civilian population.

SkyGuard uses a THEL laser. Reportedly, it will be used by the US and allied governments to destroy ballistic missiles, rockets, artillery, and UAVs. Alexis Livanos, president of Northrop Grumman Space Technology, says SkyGuard is a fully functional weapon that will be used against "a wide range of threats."

Advanced Tactical Laser

The Advanced Tactical Laser (ATL) is a product of the ACTD, developed by Boeing for the US Military. It will be used for various tactical missions. Most information pertaining to it is classified. Although it was originally intended to be mounted on a C-130 aircraft, it is capable of being mounted on a variety of fixed-wing or rotary-wing craft, as well as trucks such as the humvee.

The platform consists of a laser, sensor unit, and control system. The action is a closed-cycle (no exhaust), 70 kW COIL system, designed to destroy stationary or moving ground targets. The ATL has an ultra-precision strike capability. The ATL, which is capable of attacking military targets at 15 miles away with surgical accuracy, will allow the military to, "covertly conduct precise engagements at tactically significant standoff distances," says the US Air Force. Reportedly, it will be used against vehicles, aircraft, rockets, communications systems, surveillance systems, and according to the US Air Force other military targets.

Airborne Lase

The Airborne Laser (ABL) is an air-based, multimegawatt COIL laser, designed to shoot down intercontinental ballistic missiles (ICBM) in their boost phase. It uses a variety of laser sensors connected to a computer to provide a 360 degree protective dome with a 700 mile radius. The detection, tracking and acquisition unit consists of several modules. First, multiple infrared laser sensors provide autonomous missile detection. Then the Tracking Illumination Laser (TILL) tracks it.

While this is happening, the Beacon Illuminator Laser (BILL) measures the atmospheric conditions and distance between the laser and the missile. This occurs in milliseconds. Finally, the laser is fired at the missile's fuel tank, causing the tank to explode. The ABL was originally designed to be mounted to a modified 747 aircraft, but according to the *Journal of Electronic Defense*, the military has considered other possibilities. It was tested successfully in 2006.

Solid-State Lasers

Solid-state lasers (SSL) have an electric gain medium consisting of crystals, semiconductors, or glass fibers, which produce a high-powered beam in the infrared spectrum. They're much smaller in size than chemical lasers and are easier to manage and transport. They are highly mobile, air-based, sea-based, and ground-based weapons that can be powered by the engine of a vehicle. They have kilowatt power levels, and typically produce pulsed, infrared beams.

Some solid-state pulsed lasers are referred to as *fem-to-second lasers*. Fem-to-second is a time measurement consisting of a millionth of a billionth of a second. If the pulse of a laser occurs within that time period, it's considered a fem-to-second laser.

A CW laser can cut through material but it heats it in the process. One benefit of the fem-to-second feature is that because the pulse occurs ultra-fast, the targeted material doesn't have time to heat up. Due to their potentially unlimited magazine capacity, low cost per shot, small size, ease of maintenance, and transportable nature, there is a significant effort underway to create smaller, lighter, more efficient solid-state lasers.

Under the section, *Joint High Power Man-Portable Thermal Laser*, the 2007 DOD annual report says that a counter personnel weapon is under development by the NIJ and AFRL, working with Colorado State University. This is to be a man-portable laser. Its effects, according to the report, would be similar to the ADS.

In March 2009, the *Los Angeles Times* reported that Northrop Grumman Corporation has developed a highly portable 100 kilowatt electric laser with lethal capabilities. The name of the weapon was not revealed.

High Energy Liquid Laser Area Defense System

The High Energy Liquid Laser Area Defense System (HELLADS) is a 150 kilowatt, mobile, high-energy, pulsed laser. It's about 2 cubic meters in size and weighs less than 1700 lbs. Although the gain medium consists of a liquid and solid combination, it's considered a solid-state laser. Most of the details regarding this weapon are classified. It is to be built by General Atomics, with the tracking system (presumably consisting of lasers) designed by Lockheed Martin Corporation.

Although mainstream sources depict the weapon as under development, DARPA had this to say: "The HELLADS program has completed the design and demonstration of a revolutionary subscale [150 kilowatt] high-energy laser that supports the goal of a lightweight and compact high energy laser weapon system."

It was intended to be an air-based weapon attached to an aircraft, but according to *New Scientist*, DARPA has managed to make it small enough to be mounted to a vehicle. Lockheed Martin says the laser can be placed on a range of potential platforms.

Laser Area Defense System

The Laser Area Defense System (LADS) is an extremely mobile solid-state laser, which can fire a beam at extended ranges. Not much information is available on this weapon. But, allegedly it will be used to shoot rockets, UAVs, ships and other targets, which its specification sheet says are a "growing concern for military and civilian leaders who must ensure the safety and security of people."

LADS can be powered by a commercially available generator or electrical grid, which give it an almost infinite magazine capacity. According to Raytheon, the control and tracking unit (presumably computer-linked sensors) offers precise search, track and engage capabilities for directing the high-powered laser on a target. It is capable of the fast, sustained, simultaneous engagement of multiple targets in a 360 degree area, at significant ranges.

Free Electron Laser

Free Electron Lasers (FEL) are electrically driven, solid-state pulsed lasers.[3] The gain medium is an accelerating electron beam which passes through a series of magnets. They have the most tunable frequency range of any laser. In fact, the FEL is a type of *compound directed-energy weapon* because it can be adjusted to emit rays ranging from gamma to microwave, and any specific wavelength in between.

This includes the millimeter wavelength, which also makes it a high-powered microwave. It has a potentially unlimited magazine capacity, and its rays are extremely accurate. It is expected to produce power in the megawatt level. In 2004 the creation a 10 kilowatt FEL was announced by the US Department of Energy's Thomas Jefferson National Accelerator Facility in Newport News, Virginia, and the Naval Sea Systems Command (NAVSEA) Directed-Energy and Electric Weapons Office.

The DSB says the FEL is equipped with a high-precision locating and tracking unit, which will allow it to detect, track and destroy supersonic missiles. This infers a sensor mechanism consisting of lasers and computers.

Laser Induced Plasma Channel

The Laser Induced Plasma Channel (LIPC), built by Applied Energetics, is a portable, solid-state, pulsed, fem-to-second laser, which uses a laser as a conduit to transport ionized gas (plasma). This has been called the Laser Guided Energy (LGE).[4]

Plasma is a type of ionized or electrified gas. A neon sign, for example, uses plasma. A natural example of plasma is a bolt of lightening. This weapon differs from other lasers, in the sense that the laser itself does not produce the effect; rather it is used to guide the electrified plasma which shocks the target. AE built this weapon for the US Military. DRS built its energy management system, sensors, and related platform technologies.

It is a counter personnel and counter material weapon. Its intended uses include stopping the engines of vehicles, ships, or aircraft, as well as destroying electronic equipment. It will also be used as a wireless taser on groups and individuals. The weapon offers the precision delivery of massive amounts of electricity.

The exact range of the weapon has not been revealed. However, considering its intended target sets (e.g., airplanes, ships), as well as the average range of other solid-state lasers, the weapon must have a considerable range. And the NATO *Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies* of August 2006 says that such a weapon is capable of transmitting electrical energy at long distances.

It is tunable from lethal to nonlethal. The weapon will be used for the "disabling of individuals and groups," said *National Defense Magazine* on February 2, 2009. But at higher power levels, it is a bolt of lightening. Another effect it can produce, if adjusted properly, is a flash-bang.

In 2002, *Time Magazine* mentioned a flashlight-sized device was being developed which could shock a person up to 1.5 miles away. "Shine that light on a human target," they advised in their *Beyond the Rubber Bullet* article, "and you have a wireless taser."

Space-Based Lasers (SBL)

In the early 1980s research on Space-Based Lasers (SBLs) was conducted under the Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI). In 1991 a megawatt laser called the Alpha, which was developed by the SDI, tested successfully in a simulated space environment. The Ballistic Missile Defense Organization (BMDO) is currently overseeing SBL research. Russia was also conducting tests on SBLs as early as the 1976. The US Air Force and the BMDO are currently funding the Space-Based Laser Integrated Flight Experiment (SBL-IFX) program, which aims to have high-powered lasers affixed to satellites by 2010.

---

3   According to the 2005 book, *The E-Bomb*, by Doug Beason, FELs have existed for decades.

4   The *Business Wire* report *DRS, Technologies and Ionatron Sign Strategic Agreement for Laser-Induced, Plasma-Channel Weapon Development and Application*, of May 4, 2006, says that the LGE and LIPC are two separate weapons, but indicates they use the same plasma technology.

The program team also consists of TRW, Lockheed Martin, and Boeing. Reportedly, these SBLs will be used to shoot down ICBMs anywhere on the planet. A beam from an SBL will destroy a ballistic missile target in its boost-phase.

An SBL allows for missile interception by focusing and maintaining a high-powered laser on a target until it achieves catastrophic destruction. Up to 24 orbiting satellites would be equipped with an HF megawatt laser capable of shooting a beam of energy up to 5,000 kilometers.

The lasers will be able to destroy missiles in less than 10 seconds, and retarget in ½ second. According to the US Air Force, these systems will be capable of detecting and negating such targets anywhere in the world at anytime.

In June of 2004 under the heading, *US Wants to Build Space Laser in Total Secrecy*, in the *Ottawa Citizen*, the Canadian Military warned that the public is being misinformed regarding the progress and scope of the SBL program. They said that the program exists so that space could be dominated by the US and its allies. And that information regarding it would become increasingly scarce. This may be true, because according to the US Military, destroying missiles isn't the only intended use for SBLs.

SBLs offer the capability to strike targets on the ground, says the DSB. The SBL will also be used for ground surveillance and reconnaissance, destroying enemy satellites, and airplanes. The SBL will be used in direct, offensive roles against adversarial targets, including the strategic interdiction of soft ground targets, and other military targets, says the US Air Force.

But an SBL isn't required to send a beam of energy from a single source to anywhere on the planet. According to the Air Force, a ground-based or air-based laser weapons platform can use relay mirrors to accomplish this. With a minimum of three space-based mirrors, a laser beam originating from earth could be directed anywhere on the planet at the speed of light.

The mirrors can be either space-based attached to low-earth orbiting (LEO) satellites, or air-based attached to unmanned aerial vehicles UAVs. The US Air force says that such an arrangement allows for a ground-based laser to perform all the same functions as an SBL. In 1991 the Air Force's relay mirror experiment successfully demonstrated that a laser can be shot from the ground to a mirror attached to a LEO and be reflected to a target on the surface of the planet.

According to the Air Force, this approach offers more pointing accuracy and beam stability than required by an SBL. In May 1996 the US Air Force suggested the use of solar-powered SBLs in their *An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025* report. Some proposed weapons include the solar-powered high-energy laser system and the solar energy optical weapon (SEOW).[5]

The solar-powered high-energy laser system is a space-based, multimegawatt, high energy solar-powered laser that will be used in several modes of operation. In its weapons mode with the laser at high power, it will be able to attack ground, air, and space targets, says the Air Force, with adjustable lethality.

The SEOW allows solar radiation to be focused on specific ground, air, or space targets. The weapon can also operate in surveillance mode, where it provides global optical surveillance by active or passive imaging. It can even be used to produce a space-based solar flashlight which illuminates air, ground, and space targets with focused solar radiation.

Uses and Effects

Admitted uses for lasers include disabling vehicles by targeting specific systems, such as the electrical system or the engine. They can also burst tires, or crack fuel tanks. They can interfere with communications signals, and cut through electrical or communications lines. They can also be used to melt or burn material and set fires.

---

5   Similar to their explanation of the space-based high-powered microwaves, the US Air Force says that these weapons don't exist, yet uses wording which suggests that some of them are functional.

Lasers can be used to crack glass in less than a second. In December 1997, *The Journal of Electronic Defense* announced that in addition to its missile defense, the Air Force was considering using the multimegawatt ABL, which has a 700 mile reach, for other missions.

Author Doug Beason describes in his book *The E-Bomb*, that like all technological advances the ABL will be used for purposes other than its original intent. Lasers such as the PEP will be used to attack military targets such as a "targeted individual" announced *National Defense News* on March 1, 2002.

The US Air Force's August 2003 report, *Non-Lethal Weapons*, advocates using DF and HF lasers on people. These are high-powered lasers that were originally designed to shoot down rockets.

They include the THEL and the highly portable SkyGuard. Vehicle-mounted lasers, says the US Air Force, have "direct applicability in the non-lethal counter-personnel area," by allowing the security forces to attack people at standoff ranges. "Once an asset has been turned over to the warfighter," reveals Beason, "it's almost guaranteed that a new, perhaps even more important application will be realized."

Depending on how they are adjusted, lasers can produce a variety of effects. The power level, frequency, duration of the beam, mode of operation (pulsed or CW) and atmospheric conditions determine the effects. They can temporarily or permanently blind a person, or cause afterimaging. Upon hitting a person, they can produce a combination of a bright flash, loud noise (flash-bang), and kinetic force. They can cause minor or severe skin burns in less than a second.

The eyes are the most sensitive external organs that are vulnerable to laser attack. Eye damage occurs at lower power levels and duration than that which affects the skin. Laser attacks to the eyes can cause burns, corneal lesions, cataracts, and retinal lesions. Depending on the frequency and power of the laser, the eye damage may be permanent or temporary.

Lasers can paralyze specific parts of the body with electric shocks and muscle spasms (tentanization). These spasms can be clonic, which means they occur in a quick manner of contraction and relaxation, or tonic which is the sustained contraction (locking) of certain muscles. At high powers, lasers can obviously cause death.

On July 10, 2005, the *Chicago Sun-Times* warned that laser weapons had been created that could neutralize targets from tens of miles away. And that such a strike would be so surgical that the military could plausibly deny responsibility.

"Laser technologies, which have application in both counter personnel and material scenarios," described the Naval War College on May 17, 2004, "can be extremely precise over long ranges [and] allow for the neutralization or destruction of legitimate military targets."

Summary

Lasers, which can cause a variety of effects, are considered NLW to be used on groups and individuals. They allow for the silent, invisible, and traceless precision attack of military targets at great distances.

Electronic Warfare Part 2

Sonic Weapons

Introduction

A variety of high powered sonic weapons (SW) exist spanning the infrasonic, ultrasonic, and audible ranges. Because they are weapons which direct sound onto a target, and sound is energy, they can be considered directed-energy weapons.

These weapons produce both psychological and physical effects. They include highly directional devices which can transmit painful audible sound into an individual's ear at great distances and infrasonic generators which can shoot acoustic projectiles hundreds of meters causing a blunt impact upon a target.

Infrasonic generators can cause negative emotions such as fear, anxiety, or depression, as well as biological symptoms like nausea, vomiting, organ damage, burns, or death—depending on the frequency and power level. Most of these weapons function between the frequency range of about 1 Hz to 30 kHz. These frequencies occur within the following waves: Extremely Low Frequency (ELF) 1 Hz to 30 Hz, Super Low Frequency (SLF) 30 Hz to 300 Hz, Ultra Low Frequency (ULF) 300 Hz to 3 kHz, and Very Low Frequency (VLF) 3 kHz to 30 kHz.[1]

Within the ELF region of the spectrum, there is a type of sound called infrasound, which occurs between 3 and 20 Hz. Infrasound is usually not heard, but it can be if the power level is sufficient. Next, audible noise begins for most people from about 20 Hz up to 20 kHz, and occurs between the upper ELF into the VLF ranges. Ultrasound begins in the VLF range at about 20 kHz, just above human hearing.

Another sound factor is power, usually described using a unit of measurement called a *decibel*. Decibels are used to measure the power of audible and inaudible sound, both of which produce effects. Any sound begins to become physically painful at about 120 decibels, although at lower levels it can cause discomfort. At about 130 decibels it becomes unbearable. In this chapter, words such as intensity, level, power, pressure, and decibel, are all used to describe sound power.

Resonance

All of the chemical reactions in the cells of living organisms are caused by the electromagnetic oscillations, pulsations, and vibrations, which are collectively referred to as *vibrational frequencies*. All physical matter is vibrating at its own vibrational frequency.

Resonance occurs when a connection is made between a source and a target which are vibrating at the same frequency. When this happens, the materials become joined and are said to be resonating. Once resonance has been achieved, an energy exchange takes place on the surface of the membrane of each cell. If the source of energy is more powerful, it directly impacts the targeted material resulting in a biological reaction.

Both infrasound and ultrasound are capable of producing resonance. This link can be established in the audible or inaudible sound ranges. A natural example of this harmonious synchronicity is frogs that sing in chorus. Mechanical examples include the pendulums of multiple clocks on the same wall which all swing in the same manner, or the string of a piano which vibrates after the same note is played on a nearby guitar.

Some organic and inorganic objects can function as resonance chambers. These objects are usually enclosures with a small opening. For instance, a glass or bottle will act as one. On a larger scale, the chest/abdominal area of the human body functions as a resonance chamber. Even an entire room with an open door or window can be used as a resonance chamber. Sound can be used to shatter or explode objects after resonance has been achieved.

---

1   There are many interpretations regarding what frequencies fall in specific areas of the acoustic portion of the spectrum from ELF to VLF. For instance, OSHA says ELF waves occur from 1 to 300 Hz, while the online encyclopedia *Wikipedia* lists them from 3 Hz to 3 kHz. Additionally, some references such as the UK Department for Environment, Food and Rural Affairs, group all frequencies occurring in ELF, SLF, and ULF in the ELF category, omitting SLF and ULF. See, *A Review of Published Research on Low Frequency Noise and its Effects*. The International Telecommunications Union radio regulations have the frequencies separated into separate categories with the given ranges, so that's how they're described here. See www.vlf.it.

Resonance can be induced electromagnetically by an infrasonic pulse generator, which can establish a link, for instance, to a person's inner organs by resonating it in their chest area. Once this connection occurs, the power level of the generator can be increased, which would automatically transfer the energy to the person. If the power level is moderate, the person may experience pain in the chest area, or their organs may vibrate. Increasing the power level will destroy their organs.

Infrasonic and Ultrasonic Weapons

Infrasonic and ultrasonic generators, also called *emitters*, and *VLF modulators*, are weaponized devices consisting of a directional antenna dish, which can send acoustic pulses to a general or a specific are. In 1972 France was using infrasonic generators which operated at 7 Hz on its civilian population.

And by 1973 the Squawk Box was used by the British Army in Northern Ireland. It was a directional weapon that could target specific individuals by producing audible sound at about 16 kHz, which turned into infrasound at 2 Hz when it coupled with the ears.

In the early 1990s Russia had developed a 10 Hz VLF modulator capable of targeting individuals over hundreds of meters, causing pain, nausea, and vomiting. It was adjustable up to lethal levels. Since at least as far back as 1997, the US DOD has had an interest in creating generators in the infrasonic and ultrasonic ranges of 7 Hz and 20-35 kHz, respectively, which can cause these effects.

Such a device could also target the brain. These changes in brain frequencies cause changes in brain chemistry, which then influence thoughts and emotions. Furthermore, transmitting directed-energy using an exact frequency and modulation will trigger a precise chemical reaction in the brain, which, in turn will produce a specific emotion in the targeted individual.[2]

Infrasound

Infrasound occurs within the ELF range from a few hertz up to about 20 Hz, which is the lower limit of human hearing. Normally the power of sound rather than the frequency determines the pain and damage threshold. However, from 1 to about 250 Hz the pain/damage threshold seems to increase with frequency as well as power.

So, within this range, if the power level remains the same, but the frequency is increased, more damage can occur. Other than that, power is the critical factor which causes the damage, while the frequency determines what type of damage occurs.

Infrasound travels great distances and easily passes through most buildings and vehicles. It is normally sensed by the ears, but at high power levels it can couple with the body and be felt as vibrations.

Natural examples of this include: avalanches, earthquakes, volcanoes, and waterfalls. Whales, elephants, hippopotamuses, and rhinoceros use infrasound to communicate over great distances which includes hundreds of miles for whales. An electronic example would be a large sub-woofer. Infrasound is said to be superior to ultrasound because it retains its frequency when it couples with the human body.

From about 100 to 140 decibels infrasound causes a variety of biological symptoms depending on the frequency and power level. Basically, the higher the power level, the greater the damage.

The effects include: fatigue, pressure in the ears, visual blurring, drowsiness, imbalance, disorientation, vibration of internal organs, severe intestinal pain, nausea, and vomiting. Higher power levels can liquefy bowels, and resonate the internal organs causing death. Infrasound can also cause feelings of pressure in the chest, choking, irregular breathing patterns, and respiratory incapacitation.

---

2   At times I can feel a sensation, usually on the top or front of my head which precedes a negative emotion by a fraction of a second. This sensation appears to be the result of an electromagnetic pulse which causes the emotion. The pulsed emotion usually lasts only a few seconds, but occasionally has lasted up to about a minute. These emotions have included fear, anger/frustration, and something that resembles a combination of fear, hopelessness, and sadness. They are synchronized with other types of electronic warfare.

High powered, low frequency sound from about 30 Hz to about 100 Hz (just beyond infrasound) causes the following biological effects: fatigue, blurred vision, bowel spasms, pain or damage to internal organs, feelings of fullness in the chest cavity, chest wall vibration, difficulty breathing, difficulty swallowing, choking, and respiratory impairment.

Infrasound causes a variety of psychological effects depending on the frequency and power level. It can cause the following: loss of concentration, disgust, apathy, sadness, depression, fear, anxiety, and panic attacks. "These transmissions" said John Alexander in his December 1980 article, *The New Mental Battlefield*, "can be used to induce depression or irritability in a target population."

According to the *Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment* article, which appeared in the volume 9, 2001 issue of *Science and Global Security*, infrasound can produce localized earthquakes. A large room within a building can act as a resonance chamber to upset the foundation causing a miniature earthquake.

Ultrasound

Sound that occurs beyond human hearing (about 20 kHz) is considered ultrasound. Animals such as dogs, cats, dolphins, and bats can hear ultrasound. Some whales and dolphins use ultrasound to detect their prey and as a weapon to stun them. It is said to be less effective as a weapon because it doesn't retain its frequency when it couples with matter such as a human body.

Ultrasonic weapons produce a variety of effects depending on the power level and frequency. Many are the same as those produced by infrasound, plus heating and burning. They include: tickling in the mouth/nose area, discomfort, heating of the skin, nausea, abdominal pains, and vomiting. At higher decibels it causes burns and heating of body up to lethal temperatures. Another very painful effect is bone resonation, which could cause a person's bones to literally explode.

"Aimed at the head, the resonating skull bones have caused people to hear voices," revealed the Federation of American Scientists in their 1997 article, *Non-Lethal Weapons for Military Operations other than War*.

Sonic Projectiles

The same ELF modulators previously mentioned, which cause a variety of biological and psychological effects, can also function as emitters of infrasonic and ultrasonic projectiles.[3]

These weapons are basically sonic rifles and canons which can transmit invisible energy over hundreds of meters, causing a blunt impact. The Nazis are said to have developed a sonic cannon capable of shooting down allied bombers. In the early 1990s Russia had created a 10 Hz sonic cannon, which consisted of an infrasonic generator connected to a radar dish. It transmitted invisible projectiles the size of a baseball hundreds of meters affecting a blunt force on a target.[4]

It could also be adjusted to cause effects ranging from physical discomfort up to death. Effects short of death included abdominal pains, nausea, and vomiting. In addition, it could cause a person's bones to resonate, which is extremely painful.

The 1997 FAS report described that the US was developing such a weapon to cause these exact same effects. Then on July 16, 2002, *ABC News* announced in their *Sonic Bullets Acoustic Weapon of the Future* report, that the US Military had in its possession a sonic cannon. "This new technology," they declared, "is likely to affect almost every aspect of our lives, in ways we can only begin to imagine."

3 Some publications describe the VLF modulator as an adjustable, directional weapon, capable of producing acoustic projectiles as well as discomfort, pain, nausea, and vomiting. This indicates that it can be adjusted to send a single acoustic pulse (projectile) or a series of pulses. See the 2001 article *Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment* from *Science and Global Security*, the Federation of American Scientist's 1997 report, *Non-Lethal Weapons for Military Operations other than War*, and *Acoustic Weapons* at www.globalsecurity.org.

4 These sonic projectiles are as light as a tiny ping to as loud as something that resembles a baseball hitting a wall at high speed. I've noticed that they've hit various parts of the houses I've stayed in, as well as surrounding structures such as garages, workshops, and barns. Interestingly, sometimes the points of impact are on the insides of the walls. They've also hit the inside and outside of moving vehicles that I've been in. They are synchronized with other types of electronic warfare.

Vortex Gun

The Vortex Launcher, (also called the Vortex Canon, Wind Canon, and Shockwave Weapon), is capable of transmitting an invisible whirlwind of force to effect a considerable blunt impact on a target.

It can also be used to transmit chemical irritants to a specific individual or group. It will allegedly be used to disable or destroy personnel such as enemy combatants or disruptive crowds. Most of the current information pertaining to this technology is classified. But in the late 1990s the US Military is said to have developed a vortex gun in conjunction with various defense contractors, the US Army Research Laboratory, and Pennsylvania State University.

It has a distance of at least 50 meters. The UK, Russia, and Germany have also expressed interest in this technology. This weapon dates back to World War II when an Austrian-born Nazi scientist, Dr. Zippermeyer, invented a device known as the Wind Cannon (windkanone) intended to shoot down Allied bombers.

It was an explosion-driven vortex capable of transmitting a high-velocity whirlwind of smoke at least two hundred meters. It consisted of a combustion chamber the size of a building which generated the explosion, and a specialized nozzle at the end of a tube attacked to the chamber, which formed the vortex.

In addition to the explosion-driven method previously mentioned, the air pressure which passes through the nozzle can also be produced by an infrasonic generator. Although the projectile can be generated acoustically, the actual energy projectile which collides with a target consists of air or gas.[5]

After the air is generated, it exits the chamber through a special nozzle that forms the vortex. It works in the following way: As the burst of air exits, the air in the center of the nozzle moves much faster than the air on the sides, so it curves around from the center to the outer edges and forms a fast-moving circular air current (a vortex). A natural example of this is a tornado or the smoke ring of a cannon.

As far as movement is concerned there are a couple of considerations. First, the speed at which the whirlwind rotates, plus the speed at which it travels to its target. Both contribute to the blunt force effect upon the target. The faster the whirlwind itself rotates the more stable and solid the vortex. The vortex can be transmitted slowly, similar to the way a tornado whirling at two hundred miles an hour moves across the landscape at only a few miles an hour. Or it can reach its target very quickly.[6] A vortex can hold chemicals, which it can accurately deliver over a great distance.

A vortex can be composed of smoke, steam, or just air. Because smoke and steam are lighter than air, they allow for a more stable vortex. But an efficient vortex can be made using just air.

Normally, a burst of air passing through the atmosphere is impeded by friction and quickly loses its momentum. But because the outer edges of the vortex are circulating very fast, an almost frictionless environment is created around it, which allows it to freely glide along great distances. It strikes with the force of a solid object and can even bounce off structures and continue in a different vector.

---

5   Because of its infrasonic origin, some sources list this as an acoustic weapon. See the NATO document *The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073)*, and the University of Bradford's June 1998 *Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project Report Number 2*. Others, apparently referring to the projectile itself, list it separately. See, *Sound and Vibration Magazine's*, *Acoustic Noise as a Non-Lethal Weapon* article, October, 2004. *Georgetown Journal of International Law's* April 1, 2005 article, *Tangled Up In Khaki And Blue: Lethal And Non-Lethal Weapons In Recent Confrontations*, describes this as a developing technology. Others clearly indicate that it already exists in the form of a modified grenade launcher. See, *Weapons Grade: How Modern Warfare Gave Birth to Our High-Tech World*, by David Hambling.

6   Not much information is available on the exact speed at which the projectile travels. It may have a speed of 50 to 70 meters per second, according to the *Georgetown Journal of International Law* article. *Cabinet Magazine's* February 2001 article, *The Acoustics of War*, mentioned a vortex gun which shot a projectile at hundreds of miles per hour.

Electromagnetic Personnel Interdiction Control

The Electromagnetic Personnel Interdiction Control (EPIC) is a portable acoustic weapon created by Invocon Incorporated. The US Navy describes this as a developing technology which interferes with a person's equilibrium by sending acoustic pulses of energy which disrupt the chemical and mechanical processes of the vestibular system.

The vestibular system is a part of the inner-ear that determines how sound and positions are processed by the brain. So this results in disorientation, confusion, extreme motion sickness, and vomiting. The Navy declared that the weapon will operate through walls and other protective mediums that now provide cover for combatants in urban warfare situations.

Long Range Acoustic Device

The Long Range Acoustic Device (LRAD), also called the Sound of Force Protection, was developed by American Technology Corporation (ATCO). There are several models including the 1000, 500, RX, and X.

The weapon emits a tightly-focused beam of audible sound to an individual or group at up to 1 kilometer. A focused beam, which can be transmitted directly into an individual's ear, would be inaudible to others in the area. While the exact frequency is unknown, it has a power level of up to 150 decibels. It is weather resistant, lightweight, has a low power consumption, and very portable. It can be equipped with an autonomous tracking feature.

The weapon can transmit MP3 sound files, an ear-splitting warning tone, or an operator's voice which can be automatically translated into a different language. Its intended uses include, area denial and crowd control. According to its manufacturer, it is to be used for behavior modification and psychological operations. Reportedly, at high power levels it can cause loss of equilibrium, migraines, nausea and vomiting. It is now in use by the military.

Directed Stick Radiator

The Directed Stick Radiator (DSR), a creation of American Technology Corporation, is a small portable acoustic weapon, which fires a focused, painful, audible sound up to 100 yards. It is a 1-meter long, battery operated stick made of polymer. It operates in the 10 kHz region, and is adjustable up to 140 decibels.

The device contains a series of internal electric disks that function as amplifiers. It works in the following manner: An electrical signal is sent to the first disk in the rear, which sends a pressure pulse to the next disk, which amplifies the pulse, then passes it along to be amplified by the next disk. This process of amplification continues until the pulse exits the weapon. "It shoots out a pulse of sound that's almost like a bullet," described Elwood Norris, ATC's chairman.

The weapon can transmit speech and other sounds. It can also act as a directional microphone in reverse operation. According to its manufacturer, its kinetic effect is so intense that it can knock someone back and cause migraine headaches. *Business Wire* and the *BBC* have stated that in addition to being used to remotely incapacitate a specific individual it will be used for psychological operations.

A similar device is the person-portable Sonic Firehose developed by SARA. It can allegedly knock people to the ground by transmitting a high-decibel sound up to 1 kilometer. Universal Guardian Holdings has developed the Acoustic Defender which can deliver debilitating sound at up to 100 yards.

Computer Network Operations

Computer network operations (CNO), also called network operations (NW Ops, also written NetOps) are information warfare attacks used to deceive, degrade, disrupt, or exploit an adversary's electronic information infrastructure. CNO is used in conjunction with PsyOp and electronic warfare (EW), which includes the use of directed-energy weapons.

The US Air Force defines them as: "Offensive, defensive, and supporting activities that achieve desired effects across the interconnected network portions of the operational environment. NW Ops are conducted in the cyberspace domain via the combination of hardware, software, data, and human interaction."

The attacks include the physical destruction of a computer or the corruption of its software (operating system, programs). The Defense Science Board, an advisory committee to the DOD, mentioned that some attacks could be achieved through remote access, which would allow the covert usurpation of an enemy's computer.

In addition to individual computers, communications systems can be attacked such as radio nets, wireless communications networks, satellite links, tactical digital information links, telemetry, digital track files, telecommunications, and other systems. NetOp attacks may include spoofing, which NATO says is used as a NLW to mislead an adversary using faked or altered information.[1]

The CFR also advocated the substitution (spoofing) of information during computer attacks. "US and coalition forces," announced the US Air Force, "use cyberspace to not only enable their operations but also conduct direct operations against adversaries."[2]

Web spoofing allows an attacker to create a copy of the worldwide web. Access to the copy goes through the attacker's PC. The false copy looks just like the real web, but the attacker controls this false one. The attacker can view, record, and alter all data traveling in either direction. This means account numbers, passwords, etc. traveling either way from online forms can be read or modified.

To spoof the entire web it's not necessary for an attacker to store it entirely. Instead, when a page is requested from the target that does not reside on the attacker's copy of the web, the attacker's PC can obtain the actual page, and then forward it to the target's browser. This is called a *man in the middle attack* whereby the attacker's PC is virtually placed between the real web and the target PC.

It basically works in the following way: The target clicks on a link which points to the attacker's server. The attacker's server requests the authentic page from the real web server. The real server provides the authentic page to the attacker's server. Then, using some automated program, the attacker's server re-writes the page and forwards it to the target.

During this automated process, the actual data, (this means text, graphics, audio and video files, etc) can be substituted, added, or removed. In addition, all of the links on this spoofed page are changed to point to the attacker's server. This keeps the target trapped in the attacker's web. Offensive material can easily be inserted to antagonize the targeted person.

---

1   NATO mentioned spoofing in a general context. This means that not just an enemy's internet connection can be spoofed, but other media as well.

2   In early 2006 it was discovered that the NSA was using AT&T's data centers to intercept the internet and telephone traffic of millions of Americans in order to identify potential terrorists. To accomplish this, data mining equipment was installed at its San Francisco site which re-routed traffic to government facilities. The San Francisco site happened to be connected with other backbone service providers. So, this allowed the NSA full access not only to the AT&T switching center in San Francisco, but of other backbone service providers in the US and other countries. Although the NSA claimed the surveillance was limited to foreign communications, it was discovered to be a massive tapping of countless citizens. Another NSA data mining operation was discovered at AT&T's Bridgeton, Missouri facility, which is the backbone for all domestic and international AT&T internet traffic. The equipment at this facility was installed in a highly secure room, which included a biometrics security system (retinal and fingerprint scans) requiring top-secret security clearance. Although it was allegedly only used for surveillance purposes, *Salon Magazine* reported that it could also have been used for classified projects and other unknown government operations. When contacted by *Salon* and *Cnet,* spokespeople for AT&T stated that they could not comment for reasons of national security. See the following sources: *San Francisco Chronicle*, *Government Wants Case Tossed to Avoid Telling State Secret*, June 24, 2006, Bob Egelko; *Cnet*, *AT&T Sued Over NSA Spy Program*, February 1, 2006, Declan McCullagh; *Wired*, *Whistle-Blower Outs NSA Spy Room*, April 07, 2006, Ryan Singel; *Salon Magazine*, *Is the NSA Spying on US Internet Traffic*, June 21, 2006, Kim Zetter.

To begin the attack the perpetrator can put a link to the false WWW on a website that they know the target visits. Or they can send the target an email with a link to the false web. They may also be able to get their false web indexed on a search engine. These attacks can be launched using an unwitting person's PC as a proxy which would conceal the location of the perpetrators.

Most of the clues that would alert a target that their web has been spoofed can be concealed. One is the status line located at the bottom of most browsers, which provides the address of a web site that's in the process of loading. Normally, if a user clicks on a site, the status line reveals the actual site being loaded, regardless of the label on the hyperlink that was clicked. Also, the URL location line at the top of most browsers where sites can be typed in, will display the current site.

Another method to detect spoofing is to look at the actual page code to see if the links are in fact pointing to where they're supposed to. This too can be spoofed using a JavaScript to re-write the target's browser menu, which would point to the authentic code if it were accessed. Disabling JavaScript, Active X, and Java will not provide complete protection.

Secure connections don't help either because the user's browser is accessing the page that it thinks it is. It's just following the link in the spoofed page's code. So, to the browser it is a secure connection. Unfortunately, it's a secure connection to the attacker's server.

The Air Force mentioned that an enemy's internet could be spoofed to conceal one of its weather attacks. "Spoofing options," they noted, "create virtual weather in the enemy's sensory and information systems, making it more likely for them to make decisions producing results of our choosing rather than theirs."

Internet spoofing and the covert intrusion of an enemy's computer system, is done to deceive and cause confusion, which results in errors in enemy decisionmaking. The RAND Corporation revealed that the internet portion of the battlespace will be used to manipulate the enemy.

Other NLW attacks which may be used during CNO include the covert insertion of viruses, logic bombs, and worms which remain hidden. These programs can cause malfunctions and/or report back specific information.[3]

---

3 These attacks span the internet, hardware, and software (operating system and application) levels. They've occurred on multiple computers I've used, including personal ones, as well as public ones in libraries and other establishments. They include crashes, peripherals failing or acting strangely, corrupted documents, missing files, and characters which I did not type appearing in documents. A usual scenario includes me clicking in an area of a document which results in the highlighting of group of words that form a threatening or insulting phrase. There are many, many variations of this, including an entire section of a document becoming highlighted and deleted after I click in the document window. When using local programs, peripherals completely ignore commands. For instance, the mouse cursor moves in the wrong direction, and buttons and menus don't respond when they're clicked. These are typically synchronized with directed-energy attacks, presumably so the DOD can let me know it was them in an attempt to aggravate me. These attacks are persistent. They continue regardless of the hardware or software platforms. Application and operating system reinstallations don't fix them. I fixed computers for most of a 10-year period and these issues follow no computer logic that I'm aware of. CNO and EW are synchronized with each other and activities that occur in the environment. They frequently occur at the exact time that I'm typing or reading a particular phrase, obviously to emphasize the message, which is usually threatening or insulting. Spoofed internet sites are standard procedure. Every single time I go online I'm attacked and blocked. The DOD's regular satanic and pedophilia themes are thoroughly transmitted through this channel. Another theme they like to project includes them attributing themselves to God.

Microwave Hearing

Microwave hearing is a scientific fact. Existing radar units can be modified to transmit a beam of pulsed microwave energy into a person's skull which causes sounds such as ticks, buzzes, hisses, knocks, chirps, and words. The sounds, which originate from within, above, or behind the head, are transmitted to the inner ear via *bone conduction*. There is no external noise. It can be applied at a distance of at least hundreds of meters. Man-portable transmitters allegedly exist.

Despite some of the relatively recent announcements that this is possible, according to other mainstream reports, it has been around in some form since at least the early 1960s. Two notable contributors to the early development of microwave hearing include Drs. Allan Frey and Joseph Sharp.

In his 1962 report, *Human Auditory System Response to Modulated Electromagnetic Energy*, which appeared in the *Journal of Applied Psychology*, Dr. Frey described how microwave hearing was demonstrated using a microwave transmitter that projected sound several hundred feet.

The transmitter used pulse-modulated waves at extremely low average power levels. The transmission was immediate. The system was wireless and receiverless, and the sounds were even heard by the deaf. Then in the mid 1970s, Dr. Sharp helped to develop microwave hearing technology for DARPA by conducting research at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research (WRAIR). In 1973 Dr. Sharp proved that the correct modulation of microwave energy could result in the wireless and receiverless transmission of audible speech.

In 1976 it was reported by the *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner* that the Soviets were also conducting extensive research into microwave hearing that was brought to the attention of the US Defense Intelligence Agency. Words which appeared to be originating within a person's skull, they reported, could be induced by microwaves. The technology was to be used for antipersonnel purposes.

The October 1998 *US Patent 4877027—Hearing System*, mentioned that sound could be induced in the head of an individual using microwaves in the range of about 100 MHz to 10 GHz. The waves consist of frequency modulated bursts lasting from about 500 nanoseconds to 100 microseconds that create a sense of hearing in the individual whose head is targeted. It is effective regardless of a person's hearing ability.

Others patents pertaining to microwave hearing, such as the August 1989, *US Patent 4858612—Hearing Device*, and the July of 2003, *US Patent 6587729—Apparatus for Audibly Communicating Speech Using the Radio Frequency Hearing Effect*, are based on similar scientific principles.

In July of 2008 *New Scientist* announced that Sierra Nevada Corporation planned to build a microwave gun able to project beams of sounds directly into people's heads. The weapon, which is based on the microwave audio effect, will be used by the military. *Wired's* February 2008 story, *Pentagon Report: Nonlethal Weapons Could Target Brain, Mimic Schizophrenia*, described how microwave weapons which create voices in people's heads are not only possible, but have already been demonstrated.

Most researchers from the mid 1960s into the early 1990s have concluded that bone conduction (thermal expansion) is the physical mechanism that allows for microwave hearing. The detection of microwave hearing is the same in humans as it is in other mammals. Bone conduction is just a secondary pathway for sound transmission in humans and most other mammals.

Bone conduction works basically in the following way: Upon hitting the skull and interacting with the soft tissue in the head, a microwave signal in the range of about 2.4 MHz to 10 GHz is down-converted to an acoustic frequency of about 5 kHz.[1]

This acoustic energy launches a thermal acoustic wave which is sent to the inner-ear by conduits of soft tissue that extend from the skull to the bony portion of the inner ear. Once it reaches the inner ear, it activates the cochlear where the regular process of hearing occurs.

---

[1] An abstract from the 2007 *Health Physics, The Radiation Safety Journal* article, *Hearing of Microwave Pulses by Humans and Animals*, written by James C. Lin, says that the frequency range for the microwave transmission can be from hundreds of MHz to tens of GHz. The transmission frequency could be in the range of about 100 MHz to 10 GHz according to the October 1998 *US Patent 4877027—Hearing System*.

Although the increase in tissue temperature which causes the acoustic wave is rapid, it is small because the pulse only lasts milliseconds. Therefore, there are no known harmful biophysical effects. The sound produced by the transmission is immediate. It is noticed from within, behind, or above the head.

According to some researchers, an individual's ability to hear this type of sound depends on them being able to hear above 5 kHz.[2] People with hearing loss above 5 kHz may not perceive these types of sounds as well as those with regular hearing up into the 15 kHz range. Also, because these are low-intensity sounds, a quiet environment is required in order for them to be heard.

Microwave hearing is a well-established phenomenon, the basis for which extends back to at least the early 1960s. According to the US military, some uses for microwave hearing include establishing a private message transfer, and disrupting people who are not aware that the technology exists. NATO and the US Army consider microwave hearing to be a NLW.[3]

Dr. Robert Becker, author of multiple books and a nominee for the Nobel Peach Prize, mentioned that microwave hearing could be used to drive a person insane. "It would be pure terror," agreed Dr. Nick Begich. The use of this technology, says the US Army in its *Bioeffects of Selected Nonlethal Weapons* document, could be "psychologically devastating."

---

2 According to some sources, people with hearing loss above 5 kHz either can't hear these sounds or have difficulty hearing them. See the 2003 *Motorola Florida Research Laboratories* article, *Auditory Response to Pulsed Radiofrequency Energy*, by J.A. Elder and C.K. Chou, as well as the 2001 article *Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment*, by Jurgen Altmann from *Volume 9 of Science and Global Security*. However, Dr. Frey's tests concluded that the deaf could hear them. Also, the October 1998 *US Patent 4877027—Hearing System* mentioned that microwave hearing could be perceived by individuals regardless of their hearing ability.

3 For the most part, the DOD is now transmitting microwave hearing attacks from the second I awake until I go to sleep. These computer-generated attacks consist of basically the same phrases. They are synchronized with thought patterns, other DEW attacks, and environmental stimuli. Periodically, new phrases are used, seemingly to promote recent themes. See the *Human-Computer Intelligence Network* and *My Experience* chapters in the Appendix for more on this.

Silent Subliminals

Subliminal mind-control is considered a NLW, as reported by the US Army War College, the *Naval Law Review*, the US Air Force Institute for National Security Studies, and other sources.

In 2005 *India Daily* mentioned in its, *New Advanced Mind Control Techniques Gives a New Flavor to Modern Warfare* article, that defense scientists all over the planet have been working on this technology to make enemies surrender without a fight by transmitting undetectable signals into their minds.

The Russian government perfected a type of subliminal mind-control technology demonstrated in a series of experiments going back to the 1970s that could be used to suppress riots, control dissidents, and demoralize opposing forces. The technology, referred to as *psycho-correction*, was created by the Department of Psycho-Correction at the Moscow Medical Academy.

It consisted of powerful subliminal messages that could be transmitted by infrasound into the subconscious without interfering with conscious mental functions. Because the messages were transmitted below the human hearing range, these messages could be sent on their own channel. It had effects on unwilling subjects in less than a minute. The Japanese have developed similar devices also operating in the infrasonic range.

In order for subliminals to be successful, they must not be perceived by the conscious mind. In the auditory range of human hearing, the higher the decibel, the louder the sound. This measurement of intensity also applies to the inaudible infrasonic and ultrasonic sound ranges. It means the higher the decibel/amplitude of the subliminal message, the better the results.

This is important because with regular subliminals, both the messages and foreground sound occur on the exact same frequency. Because of this, regular subliminal messages average about 18 decibels because they must be several decibels less than the foreground music in order to be concealed.

However, subliminal technology which uses the inaudible infrasonic range, such as the type which was perfected in Russia, is not subject to this decibel limitation. The increase in decibels allows for more powerful subliminals. For this reason it also has its own conduit (channel) directly into the subconscious mind.

The Psychor Center, which was associated with the Department of Psycho-Correction, mentioned that the software and hardware for a computer-based psycho-correction device could be obtained for about $80,000. In addition to transmitting corrective subliminal programming, the device could allegedly probe the contents of a person's mind.

In the early 1990s the US began studying this technology with the goal of bringing it under bilateral US and Russian government control. Scientists, diplomats, and military officers at the Russian Ministry of Higher Education, Science and Technology Policy provided limited demonstrations to US representatives.

During this time, Dr. Janet Morris of the USGSC was the primary contact between Russian and US officials regarding the transfer of this technology. She visited the Moscow Institute of Psycho-Correlations in 1991, where she was shown subliminal psycho-corrective methods developed at the Moscow Medical Academy. She then lectured senior US intelligence and military officials on this technology.

Then, in October of 1992, *US Patent 5159703 Silent Subliminal Presentation System*, (also called *Silent Sound* and *Clear Channel*), was issued to Dr. Oliver Lowery. It is an inaudible form of communication that occurs just beyond human hearing range (nearing ultrasound), or just below it (nearing infrasound). Because of this, it is similar to the Russian technology.

Its industry names include *BrainStorm, BrainStream,* and *BrainSpeak*. Silent Sound can be sent acoustically or vibrationally into the brain. The programming is received by the ear, undetected by the conscious mind, and immediately decoded by the subconscious to influence thoughts and emotions.

Because Silent Sound is transmitted above or below the threshold of human hearing, its power (amplitude/decibel) is not limited the way regular subliminals are, which must be covered by foreground sound. In addition, this high amplitude suggestion is transmitted on its own channel/frequency, with no other competing sound. For this reason the technology is also referred to as *Clear Channel*.

Silent Sound is not just a different type of subliminal. It is completely silent. No foreground sound is necessary. It can influence thoughts and emotions. And, due to its inaudible nature, it is undetectable under normal conditions. Furthermore, the frequency, which is above or below human hearing, is a direct conduit into the subconscious mind. So, the high powered suggestions can be transmitted directly into the subconscious with no conscious filtering.

These messages can be transmitted in real-time over Public Address (PA) systems or standard radio and TV broadcasts. They can also be recorded and replayed on mechanical, digital, or magnetic media such as tapes, CDs, videocassettes, digital tape recorders, and various types of computer memory.

The Whole Brain Learning Institute (WBLI), creator of products like *BrainStorm, BrainStream*, and *BrainSpeak*, mentions how the use of Silent Sound by the US DOD during the first Gulf War resulted in the surrender of many Iraqi soldiers. "Now you can experience the latest achievement in subliminal technology," they announced, "a method just declassified and, until recently, used only by the US Department of Defense."

Their products use Silent Sound technology in the ultra high audio frequency range (just above human hearing near ultrasound), with a power output of 90 to 100 decibels. As a comparison, a loud radio registers at about 80 decibels. Even the deaf can be influenced by this technology.

Their staff includes behaviorists, lifestyle experts, accelerated learning specialists, as well as noted composers and engineers. Their Silent Sound products include neuro-linguistic programming (NLP) techniques. They specifically mention that their products are based on the work of NLP experts such as Dr. Milton Erickson, John Grinder, and Dr. Richard Bandler.

During the first Gulf War when Saddam Hussein's primary C2 capabilities were destroyed, his troops were forced to listen to regular FM radio stations for their encoded orders. A US PsyOp unit used this opportunity to install a portable FM broadcast transmitter on top of the highest building in the city of Al-Khafji.

There, they transmitted a high-powered 100 MHz signal to overpower the Iraqi station which was transmitting on the exact same frequency. This programming consisted of patriotic and religious music as well as intentionally contradictory military orders. The broadcast also consisted of inaudible negative Silent Sound programming which allegedly devastated the Iraqi soldiers.

"Although completely silent to the human ear," reported the British television network *ITV News* on March 23, 1991, "the negative voice messages ... were clearly perceived by the subconscious minds of the Iraqi soldiers and the silent messages completely demoralized them and instilled a perpetual feeling of fear and hopelessness."

The *Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References* report by the US Air Force Institute for National Security Studies uses the exact Russian term "psycho-correction," which it describes as a NLW technology that can influence people with subliminal messages. Similarly, the *Naval Law Review's* article, *A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons* of 1998, mentions how subliminal mind-control is to be used as a NLW.

Normally, the conscious mind acts as a type of firewall to filter destructive ideas from being acted upon. Because this technology bypasses that mechanism, actions resulting from ideas that did not originate from the target's own mind can occur.

In addition, if used in a destructive manner it can create mental and emotional chaos due to conflicts arising in the person's belief system. This technology is extremely dangerous! "While your conscious mind is engaged in other activities," describes WBLI, "its negative screening filters are not activated," and "your unconscious ... effortlessly receives the full impact."

Dr. Nick Begich cautioned that Silent Sound has potentially serious implications because it bypasses the subconscious, avoiding any conscious filtering, and drops the information directly into the subconscious. "Conflicts in belief systems," he warned, "can lead to significant emotional and psychological problems."

The *Military Review's* December 1980 report, *The New Mental Battlefield* describes this technology as *thought induction techniques*. In the report, Dr. John Alexander explained: "The unique factor is that the recipient will not be aware that thoughts have been implanted from an external source. He or she will believe the thoughts are [their] original." Janet Morris indicated that a portable hand-held device exists that can be used for crowd control, antipersonnel actions, and other special operations.

"As far as it has become possible to probe and correct psychic contents of human beings despite their will and consciousness by instrumental means," announced the Russian Psychor Center, "results having been achieved can get out of control and be used with inhumane purposes."

Informant Networks

Chemical and Biological Weapons

Weather Warfare

Miscellaneous Weapons and Tactics

Use of Citizen Informants
History
Informants are private citizens who unofficially work for a government. They may be full or part-time, paid or volunteer. They are all forbidden to reveal their connection to the government. Government informants are used to instill fear and disrupt activities.

They are also used to infiltrate movements and organizations in order to control them. Those with special skills, or who can place themselves in top positions of organizations to be infiltrated are especially valued. Some organizations are fraught with informants who may even be reporting on each other.

Informants have been used against the Jews and Christians in ancient Rome, non-Catholics during the Inquisition, Catholics in the 1600s in England, and colonists in the 1700s in America by the British Crown.

They have been used against slaves seeking refuge in the 1800s in America, British trade union movements in the 1800s, in Ireland against those struggling for independence, Czarist regimes in Russia, then later in Communist Russia.

Networks of citizen informants are used on the local level to maintain dictatorships. Communist Russia used a massive network of citizen informants to stalk and harass its internal enemies. Run by the Committee for State Security (KGB), this network reached into literally every single area of society. Its purpose was to instill fear and prevent people from speaking freely.

The East German dictatorship, which was based on the Soviet system, also had a colossal network of informants, which encircled the everyday movements of it its domestic enemies. They were referred to as *unofficial collaborators (IMs)* and were under the control of the Ministry for State Security (MfS).

If full and part-time informants are considered, 1 out of 6.5 citizens unofficially worked for the MfS in East Germany. Even children were recruited. Targeted people were group stalked by a rotation of citizens that were part of this vast network. They were followed everywhere. From the moment they left their homes, until they returned, they were stalked.

The MfS also ran its own version of COINTELPRO known as *zersetzung*. The targeted person was placed under surveillance and every single visitor was watched. Zersetzung used psychological warfare to destroy citizens without physically harming them. The targets had their lives and careers ruined.

Networks of citizens have been used in other countries as well. They include: the Czechoslovak State Security (StB) in Czechoslovakia, Ministry of Public Security (MBP) in Poland, and State Protection Authority (AVH) in Hungary.

The International and State Defense Police (PIDE) of Portugal also used a network of citizens (bufos). Targets of these dictatorships were harassed, threatened, confined to mental institutions, tortured, blackmailed, and framed. Their friends and family were co-opted to persecute them.

When the British Crown proposed the Sedition Act of 1789, Edward Livingston warned: "The country will swarm with informers, spies, delators and all the odious reptile tribe that breed in the sunshine of despotic power." He continued, "the intimacies of friendship, or the recesses of domestic retirement, afford no security. The companion whom you must trust, the friend in whom you must confide, the domestic who waits in your chamber, are all tempted to betray your imprudent or unguarded follies..."

Informants in the US
The military began conducting civil affairs in the US as far back as 1917 when it used citizens to neutralize dissidents during WWI. During this time, the Military Intelligence Division (MID) had the cooperation of federal, state, and local government agencies, as well as "private vigilante networks" of patriotic citizens. This network actively surveilled civilians who were considered unpatriotic.

After the war and into the 1920s, military officers working for the Industrial College of the Armed Forces conducted educational seminars on domestic subversion in local communities all across the country. Around this time too, this domestic intelligence network formed relationships with local law enforcement agencies, businesses, retired military personnel, the National Guard, patriotic groups, and veterans organizations, all of which cooperated in the surveillance of civilians.

One of these groups was the American Protective League (APL), created in March of 1917 as an unofficial civilian force of the DOJ. It had 250,000 members, with organizations in every city and town in America that was of considerable size.

The APL assisted the MID, DOJ, Navy, Treasury Department, and other government agencies in conducting investigations on civilians who where thought to be subversive.

Its unpaid members disrupted political protests, threatened union members with induction into the military, spied on violators of food and gasoline regulations, harassed people, burglarized their homes, and vandalized their property. The network attacked those who didn't register for the draft, people who didn't purchase liberty bonds, German immigrants, and others suspected of disloyalty.

Because it functioned silently and secretly, the general public knew little of its activities. Many similar patriotic groups sprung up across the country. One included the Anti-Yellow Dog League, a network of children who sought out disloyal people during dog hunts each day from one of its thousands of nationwide offices.

US Attorney General Thomas Gregory praised the network's activities against America's "resident enemies" in November of 1918, as reported in the *New York Times*. He proclaimed: "The knowledge upon their part that everywhere about them were the eyes and ears of a great organization auxiliary to the government raised a fear in their hearts as to the consequences of hostile action."

After the war the Attorney General mentioned that the network should not be dismantled because dangers still existed requiring its ongoing cooperation. "By the end of the war," says the August 1973 Senate report, *Military Surveillance of Civilian Politics*, "Army intelligence had established a nationwide network of its own informants."

Toward the end of the 1920s this network of citizens working with the military was completely entrenched as a counter-revolutionary force to uphold the established political order. Author Donner says it can be more accurately described as a *political subculture* that developed within our society, and is dedicated to monitoring peace movements and people who are thought to be subversive.

East Germany held the record for the largest informant network in history, until it was announced by various news outlets beginning in 2002 that the US would be surpassing it.[1] *The Boston Globe* reported in May of 2003 that 100 million citizens was the recruitment goal. Similar reports appeared in other media.

---

1 Despite the recent announcements by these official sources, this civil defense network is now entirely integrated into our society at every level. When I began researching this I thought that only a small number of people participated. My research and direct experience, however, has revealed to me that the opposite is true. The amount of people who are participating in battleswarms, and the absolute complicity of the various private sector establishments, indicates that it has been steadily growing since 1917. Although this network has received little attention, and is covered-up by various societal institutions, it is an advanced form of the ones that existed in Communist Russia and East Germany. It includes men, women, and children of all ages. I've noticed that children begin to participate as early as they can walk. Because this network is completely integrated into our society, it also includes people from every profession, including police, doctors, and even homeless people, as well as store clerks, wait staff, vendors, etc. Vehicles such as police, ambulance, and fire trucks are used to stalk people. City and commercial vehicles are also used, as well as off duty school buses, public transportation buses, delivery trucks, local restaurant vehicles, taxis, and regular vehicles driven by civilians.

Swarming

Another major component of this new war is the *swarm*, also called the *tactical swarm* or what RAND refers to as the *battleswarm*. Swarming is an ancient military tactic that has been used in various campaigns.

It has been used in the air, on land, and in the sea. Swarming was used by (and against) Alexander the Great. It was used successfully during the second Greco-Persian War by the Greek Navy in 480 B.C. The Mongols under Genghis Khan used swarming tactics on horseback. Although they had no electronic means of communication at the time, they used a combination of flags, horns, and couriers to accomplish their swarms.

Since then, it's been used by the Zulu tribes, the German U-boats during WWII, the Royal Air Force during the Battle of Britain, the US Army and North Vietnamese Army during the Vietnam War, and many other military engagements.

Swarming occurs throughout the animal kingdom, by bees, ants, flies, mosquitoes, and other insects, as well as wolves, hyenas, and sharks. Viruses and bacteria are also known to swarm. Swarming is used across the entire spectrum of warfare and will play an instrumental role in all future conflicts. It includes various dispersed nodes moving in unison at a fast pace from all directions to form an intense assault on a target.[2]

This rapid movement of nodes upon a target is called a *pulse*. A node can be an aircraft, vehicle, ship, organization, group, or individual. Until the pulse occurs, the dispersed network remains formless, with each node on standby. When the signal is given, each open node in the area rapidly convergences onto the target. After the attack, the nodes disperse and wait for the next set of instructions.

Each node can receive instructions from a commanding faction, or a peer unit which has detected a potential target. Electronic devices connect each node to an intelligence and surveillance system, which transmits nearly instantaneous instructions that allow them to move in unison toward the target without any planning or forethought.

The MITRE and RAND Corporations have studied swarming for the DOD. RAND proclaimed that the swarm will reshape warfare just as the rise of the blitzkrieg, and likened the swarmers to *U-boats on patrol* waiting for signals to attack.

Although swarming has been used for thousands of years, its full potential hasn't been realized until recently with the advent of mobile electronic devices and surveillance technology. Because synchronization and communication are paramount for a successful swarm, RAND has mentioned multiple times that an advanced C4ISR system would be necessary. Only what they described as a *new generation* of information systems could allow it, which, they said, already exists.

---

2   The swarming attacks that this network conducts are brutal. They include crowding, blocking and cutoffs, the transmission of painful audio and visual triggers, and noise. The same dynamics exist when a gang of people surrounds someone and physically assaults them. The only difference is that these attacks leave no visible injuries. They are just as real and violent as any physical attack. When this happens every single place a person goes it is absolute torture. Dr. Stanley Milgram conducted a series of obedience experiments at Yale University in the 1960s to determine how many ordinary people would commit acts of violence against others. The tests consisted of a teacher and a learner scenario. The teacher was told that he or she would be administering a test to a student (learner) and if the student answered a question wrong, they were to shock him. In reality, the learner was an actor, and the real subject of the experiment was the teacher. The true nature of the experiment was to see how much pain an ordinary person would inflict on an innocent victim with a heart condition, under the direction of an authority figure who was portrayed as a doctor. In order for the subject to refuse to shock the victim, they would have to have disobeyed the authority figure, who didn't threaten them with any type of punishment, only sternly told them to continue. Before the experiments Dr. Milgram asked a variety of experts in the behavioral sciences to guess the number of people that would administer the shocks to the highest level. They estimated that no more than one out of a thousand would be that sadistic. 65% of the subjects, however, administered the complete 450 volts to the victims, shocking them over and over again despite their requests to stop. To make sure that it was not strictly an American phenomenon the experiments were repeated in Germany, Italy, South Africa, and Australia with similar results. The level of obedience increased to as high as 90% when the distance between the teacher and student expanded, the authority figure was sterner, and the act was diffused among multiple people. According to Milgram, relatively few had the capacity to resist authority. Although most didn't like inflicting pain on people and protested, they still obeyed. Even when they were totally convinced of the wrongness of their actions, they could not bring themselves to disobey authority. **Continues on Page 158**

The MITRE Corporation has worked on the creation of a battleswarm computer algorithm for the DOD which will optimize, schedule, and engineer the swarm. It uses *biomimetics* (also known as *bionics*) which is a fusion of biological systems and electronics.

They claim the technology will allow them to completely automate the swarm, which will basically be directed by a computer program. "Since each agent has only a local view of the overall activity in the swarm," they explained, "some additional mechanism must be available to coordinate the collective behavior of the swarm."

According to MITRE, algorithms which can be used for military purposes already exist that are capable of generating such automated swarms. The DOD has used them to control swarms of UAVs against mobile targets. However, even more advanced technology is being pursued to direct these swarms, including artificial intelligence.

What MITRE has essentially explained is a computer-generated swarm, where each node is fused to an advanced information system (just as RAND had mentioned would be necessary) exhibiting artificial intelligence, which directs them to the target. Also worth mentioning is that MITRE worked on the GIG for the DOD.

This was one of the most significant psychological studies of the 20th century. It proved that most ordinary people, simply following orders and without any hostility, will participate in an atrocity. Milgram concluded that there was a formula that could be used by dictators to create conditions which would cause the public to participate in such processes, and that in any medium-sized town in America a sufficient number of people could be recruited to run a death camp. See the following publications: *Harper's Magazine, The Perils of Obedience*, December 1973, Stanley Milgram; *Psychology Today Magazine, The Man Who Shocked the World*, March/April 2002, Thomas Blaas; *Yale Alumni Magazine, When Good People Do Evil*, January/February 2007, Philip Zimbardo; *The American Scientist, Milgram's Progress*, July/August 2004, Robert V. Levine. Although we've all learned about this in our history books, it takes on a new meaning when you experience it personally. When it happens, some drastic shifts in your outlook occur. One is the realization that we don't live in a free society. And that in order for something this big and vile to exist it must be a policy of the people who are actually running our society. You then conclude that these people are seriously deranged. Another is that you've been lied to about the morality level that society has reached. Specifically, you discover that there is a flaw in our logic, as demonstrated by the Milgram experiments, that is concealed by mistakes contained in the common worldview, which implies that the lessons learned from those past atrocities have been assimilated into our collective consciousness, making us immune. This becomes more complicated when institutions that influence your perspective attempt to tell you that such things don't exist in this world. This creates a major conflict between the common knowledge that you are relying on to orient yourself, and what your experience tells you it is actually happening. You then conclude that this portion of the common worldview is entirely false, and that these institutions are complicit in a *very big lie*. Furthermore, you understand that all other destructive processes historically associated with such a phenomenon can occur once again at any time.

Chemical and Biological
Calmatives

Calmative agents, (also called chemical peacemakers, incapacitants, and psychotropics), are used on people to render them incapable of continuing their actions. They cause a variety of effects, from hallucinations to unconsciousness and will be used in a very large number of operational scenarios.

Broad categories of calmatives include opiods, antidepressants, skeletal muscle relaxants, antipsychotics, anesthetic agents, sedatives, and hypnotic agents. They work by inhibiting the function of the central nervous system. Depending on the dose and duration, they produce physiological and behavioral changes, ranging from mild sedation to coma or death.

They include drugs which are used to treat anxiety, depression and schizophrenia, including: alpha2-adrenoreceptor agonists, cholecystokinin B receptor antagonists, serotonin 5-HT 1A receptor agonists, serotonin selective reuptake inhibitors (SSRIs), benzodiazepines, anxiolytics, dopamine D3 receptor agonists, opioid receptors and mu agonists, and corticotrophin-releasing factor receptor antagonists, as well as convulsants.

The chemical's impact on the central nervous system produces these effects: trance, euphoria, and depression, as well as sedation, dizziness, headaches, abdominal pains, destruction of the cardiovascular system, coma, and death. Psychological effects may include anxiety and voices or noises in the head. Other types of incapacitants that have been considered include ones that make people sensitive to sunlight or induce nausea and vomiting.

"In the variety of situations in which non-lethal techniques are used," advocates the Applied Research Laboratory at Pennsylvania State University, "there may be less need to be concerned with unattractive side-effects." They then described how one could be specifically designed to include "less than desirable" side-effects like headaches and nausea.

It has been suggested that chemical aphrodisiacs that cause homosexual behavior can be used on enemy troops to lower their morale. On January 14, 2005, *US Newswire* reported in their article, *Pentagon Confirms Report of Planned Gay Conversion Chemical Weapon*, that the US Air Force was interested in developing a gay conversion chemical. According to the report, it was never implemented.

Chemicals, explained, the NRC may be easily dispersed to deliver effects to groups and individuals. And the objective, says the US Army Edgewood Research, Development and Engineering Center is to develop them for immobilizing adversaries in various military and law enforcement scenarios, including local, state and national law enforcement agencies.

Calmatives are essentially drugs too dangerous to get past medical review boards but with a potential weapons role, said the *Asia Times* in the April 2003 report, *Next Up: 'Non-lethal' Chemicals that Kill*. According to the *Times*, they're obviously used under the assumption that civilians are expendable.

In July of 2002 *Time Magazine* acknowledged that the US government's interest in using weaponized forms of antidepressants and opiates appeared to be beyond the bounds of good sense and could lead to "terrifying scenarios" for abuse.

PSU advised that that they should be used in conjunction with electromagnetic waves to enhance their effectiveness. The *New Jersey Bergen County Record* described in December of 2002 that as NLW development continues, chemical agents will soon be available that inflict intense pain, alter bodily functions, and control mood, thought, and consciousness.

The chemicals are available in solid, liquid, powder, or gas form. The gas form is said to be colorless and odorless. The most common methods for the chemicals to enter the body are inhalation or absorption through the skin.

The form, method of delivery, and type of chemical used, determines how fast it takes effect. Inhalation causes the onset of symptoms in about 1 minute, while absorption produces effects in about 3 to 5 minutes. Long-distance weapon platforms include an aerosol dispenser called the Overhead Liquid Dispersal System (OLDS), which can deliver a dose of chemicals 13 meters in diameter up to 175 meters away.

Another proposed platform is a grenade launcher using an 81 millimeter mortar cartridge that can dispense chemicals up to 2.5 kilometers away. The Vortex Gun can also be used as a delivery method. Other possible dispersion methods for CBW include micro-encapsulation, which uses tiny, thin-shelled capsules containing the agent. The shell is designed to burst under certain conditions, such as contact with water, pressure, or at a specific temperature.

The *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook*, by the Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, mentioned that calmatives could easily be delivered into a room by manipulating the ventilation system. Metz and Kievit told of a scenario where calmatives could be placed in the food supply of a troubled population. PSU also advocates covert delivery methods in its report.

Biological Weapons

The US military will be using biological weapons on civilians in this new war. These biological attacks include infecting people with viruses that cause disease and injury.

In its *Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References* report, the USAF Institute for National Security Studies describes Disease Organisms as, "nonfatal diseases targeted toward troops and civilians." Also advocated, has been changing the genetic structure of targeted individuals, families, and ethnic groups.

These tactics are considered nonlethal by the US military. "Modern biotechnology," says the *Georgetown Journal of International Law*, provides "a variety of other capabilities that might be adapted to police or military NLW missions." Biological weapons can be sprayed in the air, or placed in a target's food or water supply.[1]

There are apparently biogenetic (gene specific) weapons, capable of targeting not just specific ethnic groups, but even an individual. When these weapons are designed to target an ethnic group, they're referred to as ethno-weapons. On *PBS's Plague War* series in October of 1998, Dr. Christopher Davis, former Defense Intelligence Staff in the UK, announced, "We also have the possibility of targeting specific ethnic groups of specific genetic subtypes, if you like, of the population."

In the late 1970s Soviet scientists apparently became aware of these types of weapons and are said to have attempted an international ban on them. In 1992, Bo Rybeck, Director of the Swedish National Defense Research Institute, warned, "We will be able to determine the differences between blacks and whites and Orientals and Jews and Swedes and Finns and develop an agent that will kill only a [particular] group."

A January 1999 report entitled *Biotechnology, Weapons and Humanity*, by the British Medical Association warned that biogenetic weapons could be developed for use, not just against an ethnic group, but a family as well.

The Truth and Reconciliation Commission was assembled to investigate state-sponsored chemical and biological attacks that occurred in South Africa from 1960 to 1994. It discovered that military research laboratories in South Africa tried to develop an ethno-weapon in the 1980s, which would only infect black people.

---

1   I'm sure they've poisoned my food and water supply multiple times with some type of agent that made me sick for days. I have reason to think that they also drugged me at least once in a restaurant. Once, when I was sick for days and had narrowed it down to the water supply, I was told by the homeowner (who was also my roommate) that there was some type of bacteria in the well. They let me know that they had arranged it. A variation of this is placing something in either my food or water supply which makes me break out.

The former director of a chemical and biological weapons laboratory, Daan Goosen, told the commission that the Surgeon General described it as the most important project in the country. According to the commission, the project was unsuccessful. The viruses were to be spread in drinks, food, and vaccinations.

In November of 1998, *Wired* and the *Sunday Times* reported that Israel was developing an ethno-weapon to use against Arabs. "The weapon, targeting victims by ethnic origin, is seen as Israel's response to Iraq's threat of chemical and biological attacks," declared the *Times* on November 15.

The development for the virus took place at a chemical and biological research facility called Nes Tziyona. The scientists were trying to engineer deadly micro-organisms that attack only those bearing the distinctive genes, with the intention of using viruses and certain bacteria to alter the DNA inside their host's living cells.

The November 22, 1998 *New York Post* article, *Now Playing: A Blood Libel for the 21ˢᵗ Century*, denounced such stories as hoaxes. Then on December 2, 1998, *Salon News* ran an article called *Debunking the Ethno-Bomb*, where several experts basically stated that such a weapon is currently unattainable.

Bill Richardson, a deputy assistant secretary of defense during the Reagan and Bush administrations described such stories as "nonsense." "That sounds too far-fetched to me," added Dr. Daphne Kamely, a microbiologist who had worked with the National Institutes for Health and the Environmental Protection Agency. "It's theoretically possible," noted Dr. Victor Delvecchio, a scientist at the University of Scranton in Pennsylvania, "but we don't have the database of human genes to do this yet."

However, such a database now exists. The Human Genome Project (HGP) was an international effort to identify and map all of the 20,000 to 25,000 human genes, as well as the 3 billion chemical base pairs that compose human DNA. The project began in 1990 and was headed by the US National Institutes of Health (NIH) and the US Department of Energy (DOE).

Most research was conducted by universities and research centers in the United States, Canada, New Zealand, and the United Kingdom. Other participating countries were Japan, France, Germany, and China. The public was told that it was initiated to understand and cure hereditary diseases. The project was completed in 2003. According to the Department of Energy, all gene information is now stored in a database.[2]

---

2 Over the span of about 5 months, between November 2001 and March 2002, 11 of the world's leading microbiologists died under what the *Globe and Mail* described as "sudden suspicious circumstances." Many were involved in biological weapons research. And some were conducting studies on DNA sequencing. None of the sources listed at the end of this note state that these scientists were involved specifically in the HGP. However, research on DNA sequencing contributed significantly to the completion of the HGP, which, as we now know was an international scientific research projected, intended to determine the sequence of chemical base pairs which compose the human DNA. Some of the cited sources give conflicting information regarding the exact dates for a couple of these deaths, which may differ by several days. But the basic timeline is as follows: On November 12 of 2001, Dr. Benito Que, 52, was found unconscious in a street near his laboratory at the Miami Medical School. He died several weeks later. At first the police suspected a mugging. It was then determined that he died of a heart attack. His family insists that he was in perfect health and was attacked by four men. His research at the university included infectious diseases. He was involved in DNA sequencing projects as well. Four days later, on November 16, 2001, Dr. Don Wiley, 57, a top microbiologist in the US at the Howard Hughes Medical Institute at Harvard University, disappeared. His body was found floating in the Mississippi River on December 20. The Shelby County Medical Examiner announced that his death was the result of an accident. He allegedly lost his balance, fell into the river and drowned. Dr. Wiley was one of the most prominent microbiologists in the world and was intricately involved in research pertaining to DNA sequencing. Five days after Dr. Wiley's death, on November 21, Dr. Vladimir Pasechnik, 64, died of a stroke in the backyard of his home near Wiltshire, England. Dr. Pasechnik was a world-renowned Russian microbiologist who defected to Britain in 1989. As the USSR's top bioweapons scientist, he developed deadly strains of viruses such as anthrax, ebola, Marburg, plague, Q fever, and smallpox while working at the Institute of Ultra Pure Biochemical Preparations. At the UK Department of Public Health, he is said to have been working on DNA sequencing. The next couple of deaths occurred in December of 2001, and they were less than a week apart. The first was Dr. Robert M. Schwartz, 57, found stabbed to death at his home in Loudoun County, Virginia on December 10. The police first speculated that Dr. Schwartz interrupted a burglary in progress. However, there were no signs of forced entry and nothing was missing. His daughter was eventually charged with the murder. Dr. Schwartz was a founding member of the Virginia Biotechnology Association and an expert on DNA sequencing, who worked at the Center for Innovative Technology in Herndon, VA. **Continues on Page 162**

Despite the positive intentions given for projects such as the HGP, the technology will be used for destructive purposes. "HGP and proteomics have greatly enriched bioinformation," announced the *US Army, Military Review*, in their July-August 2005 report, *Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible: Looking Ahead to Military Biotechnology*.

It makes possible, not just attacks against ethnic groups or families, but individuals too. "If we acquire a target's genome and proteome information, including those of ethnic groups or individuals, we could design a vulnerating agent that attacks only key enemies without doing any harm to ordinary people."

"Many other newly developed biotechnologies," proclaimed the *Review*, "lend themselves to military purposes." Some proposed uses include: DNA recombination, gene modification, gene cloning, gene targeting, and tissue engineering. "These biotechnologies will vastly enrich the military's ability to defend and attack," they asserted.

Regarding the militarization of genomics, Jacques Forster vice-president of the International Committee of the Red Cross had this to say on October 6, 2005: "Nearly all major advances, in whatever domain, have been turned to hostile use. … We have to consider what the future of humanity will be if the many beneficial advances in life sciences, biotechnology and pharmacology that we are now witnessing are put to hostile use." "These scenarios," continued Forster, "have either occurred or been identified by countless independent and governmental experts."

Genomics allows for the precision injury of tissue or organs. Different pathogens will allegedly be used to achieve specific military goals, according to the *Review*. "A military attack, therefore, might wound an enemy's genes, proteins, cells, tissues, and organs, causing more damage than conventional weapons could." What the *Review* is suggesting here is changing the physical and/or functional characteristics of an organ.

Using gene manipulation as a biotechnological military weapon, it is possible to attack and injure one or more physiological functions, such as the ability to learn, memorize, perform certain motor activities, or even behave in a certain way.

The Institute for National Security Studies of the USAF defines genetic alteration as: "The act of changing genetic code to create a desired less-than-lethal but longterm disablement effect, perhaps for generations…" The *Review* informs us that these weapons are difficult to detect, very portable, easy to use, and require only simple support systems.

Gene alteration can be accomplished in a delayed manner and triggered by a specific event. The pathogenic genes are placed inside a living body, and attach themselves to the target's DNA. The body acts as an incubator until a specific event, such as the introduction of another material, triggers a timed causation of disease. In this case, says Dr. Davis, the newly added material locks together with the first material and affects the genome.

Then on December 14, Dr. Set Van Nguyen was found dead in his laboratory at the Commonwealth Scientific and Industrial Research Organization in Geelong, Australia. According to the Victoria police, Dr. Nguyen died after entering an area of the laboratory that contained too much nitrogen which caused him to collapse from lack of oxygen. A year earlier, two scientists from this facility were acknowledged in the science journal *Nature* for their work on DNA sequencing. Studies pertaining to infectious viruses were conducted at the facility. In January of 2002, Ivan Glebov and Alexi Brushlinski, members of the Russian Academy of Science, were killed. Glebov died of a bandit attack. Not much information has been released regarding Brushlinski's death, other than him being killed in Moscow. Then in February of 2002 more deaths occurred. A Russian microbiologist named Victor Korshunov, 56, was found dead in his home in Moscow on February 9. Dr. Korshunov died of a massive head injury. He was the top microbiologist at the Russian State Medical University involved in biological weapons research. On February 14, the body of a British microbiologist, Dr. Ian Langford, 40, was found wedged under a chair in his ransacked home near Norwich, England. The coroners were unable to determine the exact cause of death. He was one of Europe's leading experts on the links between human health and environmental risk. On February 28, two weeks after the deaths of Korshunov and Langford, two more prominent microbiologists died in San Fransisco. One was Dr. Tanya Holzmayer, 46 who was shot by a fellow microbiologist named Guyang Huang, 38, who also shot himself afterward.

Because the gene has been altered, the organ or physiological process which has been permanently damaged will be inherited by all future generations. What they have created and will be using on civilians as a NLW is a technology that can devastate an entire bloodline. What's more is that the targeted family would never know they were the subject of a military attack. "Only after obvious wounding occurs," says the *Review*, "will enemies realize they are under attack. In this sense, using military biotechnology weapons is a good tactic."[3]

In its *Threat of Non-Lethal Weapons* article the *Record* proclaimed: "The same technological revolution that is accelerating the development of new medical products is also making it possible for coercive regimes to manipulate human beings by altering their psychological processes, controlling their behavior, interfering with reproduction, or tampering with inheritance—and even to do so without the knowledge of the victims."

These biological weapons are the result of a revolution taking place in biotechnology, which, according to the US Military, is connected with the RMA. "As a result of breakthroughs in the Human Genome and the Human Diversity Projects and the revolution in neuroscience," wrote Dr. Steve Wright of the Omega Foundation, "the way has opened up using blood proteins to attack a particular racial group using selected engineered viruses or toxins."

There are international bans on biological and chemical weapons. Some experts interpret this as a total ban, which includes these types of weapons. However, if the weapons can be defined as *nonlethal* then there appears to be a condition which allows them to be used for domestic purposes, such as peace keeping, riot control, and military operations other than war.

Much time could be spent debating the legality of these weapons. But the bottom line is that they will be used. There has apparently been some concern over the use of both nanotechnology and biotechnology as weapons. In addition, labeling them as *nonlethal* seems to be yet another deceptive tactic to convince the public to accept them.

Multiple researchers have arrived at the conclusion that labeling weapons based on chemistry and biology as *nonlethal* is a deliberate act of deception. In their September 19, 2001 report, *The Destabilizing Danger of 'Non-Lethal' Chemical and Biological Weapons in the War on Terrorism*, the Sunshine Project announced that these weapons must be rejected for the highly destructive chemical and biological weapons that they are.

In March of 2002, a couple more deaths occurred, one right after the other. The first was Dr. David Wynn-Williams, 55, a leading astrobiologist with the British Antarctic Survey, who died on March 24 after being struck by a car while jogging near his home in Cambridge, England. The day after, Dr. Steven Mostow, 63, an expert in bioterrorism, died when the plane he was piloting crashed near Denver, Colorado. In addition to these deaths, a couple more occurred under questionable circumstances in 2003 and 2005. On July 18, 2003, Dr. David Kelly, a biological warfare weapons specialist for the British government, died at 59 after slashing his wrist and swallowing 29 painkillers. As an expert on DNA sequencing, he was also involved in work at the Institute of Biological Research in the Tel Aviv suburb Nes Zions, one of the most secretive facilities in Israel. There have been reports that the institute is involved in DNA sequencing research to create biological weapons which target only specific groups of people. Medical experts and a former coroner mentioned that it was unlikely that he committed suicide. Unfortunately his postmortem report has been classified for 70 years. One of his relatives suggested that he was murdered. He also had links to several other top microbiologists and two biodefense corporations. He knew Drs. Que and Wiley, and was aware of their DNA sequencing research to develop race-specific weapons. He also had been in contact with Hadron Advanced Biosystems, which specializes in medication used to treat biological weapons attacks. Hadron allegedly tried to recruit Dr. Kelly before his death. It is run by Kamovtjan Alibekov, who worked with Dr. Pasechnik as one of Russia's top experts in bioweapons research before defecting to the US in 1992. Hadron specializes in providing technical solutions for the US intelligence community and has received funding for bioweapons research from DARPA. The other company is Regma Biotechnologies, which Kelly helped its founder, Dr. Pasechnik, setup in Britain at the country's biological warfare establishment, Porter Down. Kelly helped to debrief Dr. Pasechnik when he defected to Britain in 1989, bringing with him information about Russia's biological weapons development. Research at Regma is classified as top secret. It is one of the most restricted establishments in Britain. Regma had a contract with the US Navy for the treatment of deadly viruses. On May 19 of 2005 Dr. Robert J. Lull, 64, the former head of the San Francisco Medical Society, and a prominent physician at the San Fransisco General Hospital, was stabbed to death at his home in Diamond Heights. **Continues on Page 164**

Antimaterial

Antimaterial weapons will be used to deteriorate enemy infrastructure such as roads, equipment, structures and facilities, support tools and equipment, supplies, and replacement parts.[4]   Transportation systems including vehicles, planes, and ships will also be targeted.

The destruction of these materials will be brought about using specially designed chemicals known as supercaustics and viscosifiers, in addition to genetically engineered microorganisms. High-energy lasers and high-powered microwaves will be used to accomplish this destruction too.[5]

Viscosifyers

The degradation and eventual destruction of engines can be brought about by placing chemical contaminants called viscosifiers into the gas tank or engine. Two methods that are used to alter a lubricant's properties to sabotage an engine include adding abrasive particles and altering its viscosity. Increasing lubricant viscosity will result in an increase in engine heating, a decrease in efficiency, and an acceleration of engine failure.

In a 1994 paper, *Lubricant and Grease Additives for Immobilizing Machinery*, Sandia National Laboratory proposed creating a computer program to determine the exact time an engine would fail depending on the type of sabotage used. "The goal of this work," they stated, "is to develop methods of poisoning lubricants so that rapid or predictable delayed failure of the lubricated machinery can be produced.

On May 10, 2002, the *Associated Press* reported that the Office of Naval Research was working on ways to poison lubricants in an enemy's machinery, causing breakdowns. This applies to all types of engines, not just vehicles. Proposed delivery systems include foams or sprays.

Viscosifyers can also be placed in fuel tanks to degrade engine performance by altering engine combustion or increasing its viscosity. Additionally, engines can be disabled by filter clogging materials which can be delivered from airborne platforms.

Dr. Lull had formerly been the chief of nuclear medicine at the Letterman Army Medical Center in the Presidio. Prior to these deaths, on October 4, 2001, a Siberian Airlines flight from Tel Aviv, Israel, to Novosibirsk, Siberia, was accidentally shot down over the Black Sea by an errant Ukrainian surface-to-air missile, killing everyone on board. The flight is said to have been carrying five microbiologists on their way to work at one of the scientific laboratories in Novosibirsk. Several weeks later on November 24 of 2001, a Swissair flight from Berlin to Zurich crashed while landing. 24 people were killed including the head of the hematology department at Israel's Ichilov Hospital, and directors of the Tel Aviv Public Health Department. Dr. Pasechnik's death on November 21 occurred 10 days after he met Dr. Wiley in Boston to discuss DNA sequencing. Dr. Wiley, as we've learned, would disappear 5 days before Dr. Pasechnik died, and his body would eventually be found floating in the Mississippi River. Also worth mentioning is that Drs. Wiley, Schwartz, and Que all worked for medical research facilities that received grants from the Howard Hughes Medical Institute (HHMI). According to the independent media source *From the Wilderness*, HHMI has conducted covert biomedical projects for intelligence agencies, and the murder of scientists involved in such research extends back to 1994. Author Stephen Quayle claims that nearly 100 scientists, many of whom were involved in bioweapons research, have died under questionable circumstances since 1994. See the following: *American Free Press, Microbiologists with Link to Race-Based Weapon Turning up Dead*, August 10, 2003, Gordon Thomas; the *Globe and Mail, Scientists' Deaths are Under the Microscope*, May 4, 2002, Alanna Mitchell, Simon Cooper, Carolyn Abraham; *From The Wilderness, A Career in Microbiology Can Be Harmful to Your Health*, February 28, 2002, Michael Davidson, Michael C. Ruppert; *The Memphis Flyer, Does a Rash of Mysterious Deaths Around the World Lead to Memphis?*, March 7, 2002, Rebekah Gleaves; *Daily Mail, UK, It Was Never Suicide*, August 17, 2010, Miles Goslett; *The Times, UK, Mystery Death of Scientist*, February 13, 2002, Michael Horsnell; *San Francisco Chronicle, Doctor Stabbed to Death*, May 20, 2005, Jaxon Van Derbeken, Sabin Russell; *List of Dead Scientists*, www.stevequayle.com.

3   In its, *Research and Development in the Physical, Engineering, and Life Sciences* report of February 8, 2006, DARPA expressed an interest in developing technology that would allow them to remotely and noninvasively control and monitor the biological activity of people at the system, organ, and cellular level. This allows for the precision remote control of a person's bodily functions.

4   They continually destroy personal items, tools, equipment, clothing, etc. Materials made of metal or plastic crumble or fall apart. I've noticed that the destruction of these materials is sometimes remotely controlled and synchronized with other attacks. I've determined that the ongoing automobile trouble that I experienced with multiple vehicles was probably caused by them.

5   According to a Naval Research Laboratory report entitled, *Enhanced Degradation of Military Material*, neither the 1972 Geneva Convention on Biological Warfare nor any other international agreement, restrict the use of these weapons.

Caustics

Supercaustics, also called *supercorrosives*, are powerful acids that quickly eat through polymers (rubber and plastic) and metals. They include acids known as *embrittlements* which weaken metals, and ones which dissolve polymers called *depolymers*.[6] Reportedly, chemicals exist which weaken glass.

Metal embrittlements are liquid chemicals which alter the molecular structure of metal, making it weak and susceptible to structural failure. These agents are usually created for a specific metal or alloy. They can be delivered in an aerosol or liquid form. Depolymisers are liquid chemical compounds that induce the breakdown of chemical bonds in polymers to deteriorate rubber-based materials and plastics.

Microorganisms (microbs) are another type of supercaustic weapon which can degrade or destroy polymers and metals.[7] Microbs are microscopic organisms which consume matter and act as natural decomposers in the environment. Bacteria and fungi are examples.

Microorganisms can also be genetically engineered to eat a specific type of matter. These organisms are to be used as weapons against military targets. Intended uses for supercaustics include: asphalt and cement roads, roofs, vehicles, tires, and the destruction of petroleum products such as oil and lubricants.

There are also airborne materials that can be delivered into the air filter of an engine or the air supply system of a facility, which would shut them down.

But because these substances are designed to destroy general materials such as glass, rubber, plastic, and metal, any object which contains these materials are potential targets. Obviously, this is a wide range of targets, and the NRC says that these weapons will be used in such a manner.

Vehicles

In addition to viscosifiers and supercaustics being used to destroy engines and other parts, moving vehicles can be disabled with directed-energy weapons called *engine killers*. These weapons are also called *motor vehicle electrical arrestors* or *radio frequency vehicle stoppers*. They are high-powered microwaves which can stop the engines of moving vehicles at great distances, silently, and at the speed of light.

The engine remains disabled for as long as the energy is focused on it. These weapons can also fry a vehicle's electrical system. Lasers too will be used to destroy the electrical components of vehicles. According to the NRC, some uses for high-powered lasers include bursting automobile tires and rupturing fuel tanks. They can also crack windshields.

Antitraction

Antitraction agents, also called polymers, low-friction polymers and superlubricants, are chemical or polymer-based gels, liquids, or foams that are spread onto surfaces to make them impassable. They are used to prevent the movement of vehicles, equipment, and people.

The Marines have a polymer-based spray, developed at the Southwest Research Institute in San Antonio that makes asphalt, concrete, grass, and wood as slippery as ice. Some types are reportedly 10 times more slippery than ice and last from 12 to 24 hours. Airborne delivery systems are envisioned for this substance, according to a January 4, 1993 story in the *Wall Street Journal*.

Sandia National Laboratories and the Emulsion Polymers Institute at Lehigh University were working on a millimeter-sized microencapsulated superlubricant in 2002-2003. It has a sticky outer surface that could be placed on walls and other surfaces. The capsules remain intact for several days, until a person, vehicle, or other heavy object moves over them. Then they burst, making the surface ultra-slippery.

---

6   Supercaustics are chemicals which dissolve metals and polymers. Because embrittlements and depolymers are also chemicals, supercaustics appear to be a general term used to describe them both.

7   The Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College's May 1998 report, *Non-lethal Technologies: Implications for Military Strategy*, says that supercaustics are chemical and biological enzymes, which indicates that microbes are in this category.

Research was being conducted to develop methods to rupture the capsules remotely using heat and moisture. Reported target surfaces for these agents include bridges, railroad tracks, grades, ramps, runways, stairs, and equipment. Dirt roads can also be made impassable using soil destablizers. Another type of NLW includes combustible substances that, "burst into flame or explode," when people or vehicles pass over them.

Uses and Delivery Methods

Chemical compounds known as defoliants which have been used during the Vietnam War to destroy plants which were providing concealment to the enemy, are also considered NLW and will be used to destroy a target's crops.

It has also been suggested that other types of biological organisms will be used as NLWs to poison a target's food and water sources. The goal of attacking the enemy in this manner is to slow them down by increasing their financial burden and maintenance requirements.

In their 1994 paper, *Biofouling and Biocorrosion*, the Idaho National Engineering Laboratory (INEL) announced that these weapons will be used for the "harassment of targets." On May 10, 2002, the *Associated Press* mentioned that UAVs could be used as platforms to deliver these weapons. The *Georgetown Journal of International Law* revealed on April 1, 2005 that supercaustic chemicals could be spread surreptitiously onto enemy equipment, in order to perform "mischief."

According to John Alexander, freezedried antimaterial biological weapons can be placed on a target, then either time-delayed to activate years later, or remotely detonated, making the source of the destruction impossible to identify.

In 1998 the Biotechnology Branch of the Radiofrequency Radiation Division of the Armstrong Laboratory at Brooks Air Force Base began developing highly efficient, environmentally safe, and remotely triggered bacteria which could be used to shut down vehicles or facilities in a controlled fashion at a distance using directed-energy. The bacteria could be genetically altered to destroy, according to them, any material.

In addition, markers which can be detected by infrared sensors can be placed in the catalyst so the remote destruction of the material can be remotely monitored. What this discovery amounts to is not only the remote controlled destruction of any material, but battle damage assessment at a distance. "The application of this technology is limitless," they proclaimed. "Catalysts can be engineered to destroy whatever war material is desired."

Malodorants

Malodorants (stink bombs) are non-toxic, environmentally safe chemicals used as NLW for area denial and behavior modification. The use of malodorants goes back to at least WWII when the US National Defense Research Committee (NDRC) provided the resistance in France with stink bombs in 1944 to dissuade German occupiers.

As early as 1966 DARPA began researching this technology, and since then the Edgewood Chemical and Biological Center (ECBC), and Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Ohio have conducted studies. Kansas State University and Monell Chemical Senses Center in Philadelphia have also worked with the DOD researching malodorants.

A variety of delivery methods are available. They can be sprayed, transferred at least 175 meters away using an overhead liquid dispenser, and transmitted at least 50 meters using a vortex gun. The delayed release of malodorants can also be accomplished using microcapsules several micrometers or millimeters in size, which can be designed to burst under certain conditions, such as expose to water, sunlight, air, or abrasive action. *The Boston Globe* hinted that the remote release of them is possible when they stated that ones are being developed which can "dissolve on command."

The odor typically lasts from a few minutes up to several days depending on the concentration. The Israeli government is said to have developed ones that can last up to 5 years. Enzymes can be taken by operators and others who will be exposed which will counteract the effect. Bacterial solutions exist will neutralize the malodorant within 2 to 3 hours.

Some of the more common ones include: bathroom malodor, rotten cheese, vomit, body odor, sewage, burnt hair, rotting corpses, feces, skunk, rotten eggs, sewage, and rotting animals. Combinations can be used. For instance, *stench soup* is a combination of *Who Me?* and *bathroom malodor*.

According to the 1997 US Army Edgewood Research Development and Engineering Center (ERDEC) report, *Odorous Substances*, a large odor atlas is available which includes formulas that can replicate most common odors.[8] "It is now possible to duplicate nearly any odor desired," they mentioned.

The olfactory nerves are responsible for odor perception and recognition. When they pick up a signal it separates into 2 routes in the brain. One goes to the thalamus and neocortex where the signals are translated into conscious awareness.

The other route leads to the limbic system (emotional center), which contains the hippocampus (memory center). So the path an odor travels directly connects with parts of the brain responsible for storing memory and controlling emotions. Therefore, an olfactory response in people immediately becomes a long-term emotionally-charged memory.

Research on odor and memory suggests that odors, rather than pictures, elicit more vivid and emotional memories. People exposed to certain odors during a negative emotional state will retain the vivid memory of the negative experience and avoid the odor which was linked to it.

Because of this, one proposed use for malodorants is behavior modification. "These results," announced Monell Chemical Senses Center, "strongly suggest that odors, particularly noxious ... ones, can serve as powerful agents of behavior modification."

The effects of malodorants span the mental, behavioral, physiological, and emotional realm. Potent ones can impede cognitive performance. Because of the olfactory system's close association with the emotional center of the brain, certain odors can cause immediate emotional responses of fear, panic or disgust. They can influence people to leave an area. The eyes may tear, the stomach may become weak, and the gag reflex may result in choking.

For potent formulas, the usual responses include immediate nausea, followed by gagging, and vomiting. The nausea may last several hours. And its intensity can be increased or decreased depending on the concentration of the malodorant. Mathematical formulas exist which can determine exactly how intense a particular smell has to be to make someone vomit.

Malodorants will basically be used to warn, annoy, disgust, and nauseate.[9] Specific applications include peacekeeping, incapacitating individuals and groups, isolation and control of people, area denial, clearing public areas, forcing people from buildings and other facilities, and dispersing crowds. They'll also be used to deny access to transportation mediums such as vehicles, aircraft, vessels, etc.

The Monell Chemical Senses Center says they can be used to disrupt demonstrations and other types of undesirable behavior. More generally, they'll be used for *attitude adjustment* according to the June 1998 report prepared for the JNLWD by the Science Applications International Corporation entitled, *Situational Control by Olfactory Stimuli*.

Sensory profiles on ethnic and racial groups have been developed. DARPA began studying race specific malodorants as far back as 1966. The genetic difference between these groups determines which odors annoy them the most. The ECBC proposed the development of odors that can be used against any population set on the planet. Suggestions have even been made to create odors to violate the beliefs of specific political and religious groups.

---

8   The US Army Edgewood Research Development and Engineering Center (ERDEC) is now called the Edgewood Chemical and Biological Center (ECBC).

9   The most common type I've noticed is the stench of rotting carcases. During the summer of 2009, for instance, this stench followed me into vehicles and multiple housing structures.

Studies have also been conducted on how odors effect individuals with respect to their personality traits and experience with the odor. The odor atlas allegedly includes odors that have been custom-designed to offend specific populations of the world. Because of these studies, operators are aware of how groups and individuals will respond to certain odors.

Weather Warfare

Introduction

In his 1931 book *The Scientific Outlook*, Lord Bertrand Arthur Russell, winner of the Nobel Prize in Literature in 1950, discussed manipulating the weather. "It may be that God made the world," Russell proclaimed, "that is no reason why we should not make it over."

Charles Galton Darwin, a physicist who worked on the Manhattan Project, who was also the grandson of Charles Darwin, talked about gaining direct control over the climate in his 1952 book, *The Next Million Years*.

Weather modification is now possible. Attempts to modify the weather have been made since at least the late 1940s. In 1947 the US Navy, Army, and Air Force, working with General Electric Corporation, made the first attempt to modify a hurricane under Project Cirrus, by dropping about 80 pounds of dry ice into clouds.

Project Cumulus, carried out by the British Royal Air Force between 1949 and 1952, included cloud seeding experiments over southern England. It was allegedly responsible for the 1952 flood in the Devon village of Lynmouth, which resulted in 34 deaths and the destruction of multiple structures.

In the 1950s the US Forest Service carried out a project called Skyfire in which they experimented with cloud seeding techniques to decrease lightning in order to reduce forest fires. Then, under Project Stormfury from 1962 to 1983, the United States Government tried to disrupt the inner structure of hurricanes in the Atlantic by flying aircraft into them, and seeding them with silver iodide.

Weather modification involves three major categories: suppression of weather patterns, intensification of weather patterns, and in some cases the introduction of completely new weather patterns. The two basic methods to accomplish weather modification include *cloud seeding* and *directed-energy*.

Multiple countries, including the United States, are now modifying the weather. In November of 1997 the *Wall Street Journal* reported that in order to dissipate excess fog, the Malaysian government would be signing an agreement with Russian officials for use of technology which would allow them to create a cyclone.

The state-run Oklahoma Weather Modification Program conducts cloud seeding operations in Oklahoma to enhance the development of rain showers and thunderstorms. In October of 2005, *Business Week* reported that China, Russia, and Mexico are modifying the weather, with China spending about $40 million a year on a weather management program.

Since the early 1960s Weather Modification Incorporated of Fargo North Dakota has offered a professional weather modification service to insurance companies, water resource management groups, and federal and state government research organizations. They specialize in weather modification, cloud seeding, rain enhancement, and fog dispersion.

A Russian company called Elate Intelligent Technologies Incorporated has offered a professional weather modification service using directed-energy since at least 1992. The unit consists of a power supply which provides current to a series of antennas that focus an electrical charge into the air. The unit is connected to a computer and can tailor weather patterns over a distance of about 200 miles.

An Instrument of War

According to US military reports that appeared in 1996, weather modification will be used across the entire spectrum of conflict to achieve domestic and international military objectives. However, weather modification has already been used for military purposes.

During the Vietnam War the US Government used weather as a weapon under Project Popeye, which was an attempt to increase the rainfall over a supply route called the Ho Chi Minh Trail, which extended from North to South Vietnam. The technique used seeding units which were composed of silver iodide developed at the Naval Weapons Center in China Lake California. The project began in 1966, lasted for a half a decade, and was considered a success.

In 1970 Zbigniew Brzezinski, cofounder of the Trilateral Commission, advocated the covert use of weather attacks, such as long periods of drought or storm, to force a nation into compliance.

The United Nations Weather Weapons Treaty of May 1977 warned that scientific and technical developments may open new possibilities with respect to modification of the environment and that the hostile use of these techniques could have effects extremely harmful to human welfare.

The US Air Force mentioned that the UN's weather modification treaty, which prohibits the hostile use of weather modification, is not applicable because their attacks will not be large scale (encompassing several hundred km), long lasting (several months in length), or result in serious injury to human life.

Regarding the deception which will be used to mislead the enemy and create conditions of deniability, the US Air Force said that the enemy's information systems would be spoofed so they'd make wrong decisions. The spoofing would also allow them to disguise their weather attacks, which they said would be indistinguishable from naturally occurring weather. The *Naval Law Review's* 1998 article, *A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons*, stated that weather modification could be used as a NLW.[1]

A 1994 US Air Force JNLWD report also advocated using weather attacks to reduce the comfort levels of the enemy. These weather attacks, according to NLW advocate John Alexander, will play a strategic role in future conflicts. He describes weather warfare as a possible weapon of mass destruction.

The US Navy's 1994 *Nonlethal Warfare Proposal*, acknowledged the successful use of weather modification as an instrument of warfare in Vietnam and described how the creation of floods, blizzards, and droughts could be used to destroy a nation's economy.

The creation of fog is now possible. Synthetic fog made from glycols and glycerin has even been proposed as a nonlethal weapon. Fog has been widely used in the entertainment industry for years. According to the US Air Force, equipment exists which will quickly generate thick fog 100 meters long.

A precision lightning strike with synthetic lightning is also possible. The 2005 book, *Weapons Grade: How Modern Warfare Gave Birth to Our High-Tech World*, mentioned that artificial lightning had been accomplished using lasers. One reportedly had a range of about 200 meters, but could possibly be extended to about 2 miles. The 1997 *Weather Wars: Pentagon Plans Weather as a Weapon* article by the *New York Times* noted that the US Air Force was considering using such lasers for lightning attacks.

The US Air Force itself referenced using controlled lightning strikes to attack its targets. The Tofflers suggested that lasers can even be used to cut holes in the ozone layer above the land of an adversary.

---

1 I've concluded that the DOD has attacked me with multiple thunder storms and probably at least one hurricane since the summer of 2005. PsyOp themes are used to let me know they are attacks. Many have been synchronized with electrical outages. They have demonstrated the precision targeting of trees with lightening strikes, causing them to fall in a specific area. I've noticed that some of these storms exhibit what seems to be unnatural characteristics. For instance the sky lighting up in a perfectly timed sequence, as if controlled by a timer. While on a farm in Maine during the spring of 2009, it rained most days for several weeks resulting in severe crop damage. It was frequently communicated to me that these were attacks.

HAARP

According to this information, weather modification is possible using electromagnetic waves. In the US and other countries, large weapons platforms to accomplish this appear to have been created.[2]

One such weapon is known as the *High Frequency Active Auroral Research Project (HAARP)*. In their book *Angels Don't Play This HAARP: Advances in Tesla Technology*, Jeane Manning and Dr. Nick Begich refer to it as one of the most powerful multi-purpose weapons developed by the US military.

HAARP is a world-class facility located in Gakona Alaska which consists of a megawatt radio transmitter and the most sophisticated technology available.[3] It appeared in a 2009 *History Channel* documentary called *Weather Warfare* and, a *Discovery Channel* program in 2005 entitled, *Owning the Weather* for its alleged weather control capabilities.

It works by heating the ionosphere, which is an active, electrically-charged part of the upper atmosphere, that exists from 40 to 500 miles above the earth, and which acts as a shield against the bombardment of high-energy particles from space.

The primary component of HAARP is a radio transmitter called the Ionosphere Research Instrument (IRI), also called the *phased array*. It consists of 180, 72' tall towers that collectively transmit a narrow beam of energy from 2.8 to 10 MHz.[4] The towers are mounted on thermopiles spaced 80' apart in a 12 x 15 rectangular arrangement. Each one has two crossed antennas (dipoles) at the top, one for the low band (2.8 to 8.3 MHz), the other for the high band (7 to 10 MHz).

The entire IRI is surrounded by a fence and sits on gravel padding on about 40 acres of land. There is a reflector screen about 15' from the ground which helps to redirect energy from the IRI while allowing vehicular access underneath it.

Every dipole has its own transmitter. The transmitters are located underneath the IRI in 30 environmentally-controlled shelters that are 38' long by 8' wide by 10' high. Each contains 12, 10 kW transmitters for a total of 360 transmitters that supply the IRI with 3.6 megawatts of power. The transmitters themselves are powered by 5 large generators that produce 16 megawatts of power.

The energy generated by the IRI is combined into a single focused steerable beam that heats and lifts exact portions of the ionosphere. The beam is capable of making a series of invisible *ionospheric mirrors* which create a conduit for energy transfer over great distances.

It has a variety of diagnostic instruments to monitor its effect on the atmosphere. They include ELF and VLF receivers, a digital HF ionosonde, magnetometers, photometers, a VLF sounder, and VHF riometer. It also has HF receivers, UHF and VHF radars, optical and infrared cameras, and other sensing equipment.

HAARP was created in three phases. The first was the Developmental Prototype (DP), which had 18 antenna elements, organized in three columns by six rows. It used about 360 kW of combined transmitter power. The next was the Filled Developmental Prototype (FDP) that had 48 antenna units arrayed in six columns by eight rows, with 960 kW of transmitter power. The current and presumably final phase, called the Final IRI (FIRI), was completed in March 2007, and consists of the specifications previously mentioned.

The best scientists in ionosphere research were consulted to build HAARP. The facility, including computer systems and controls, was designed and built by British Aerospace Systems (BAES) and Raytheon Corporation, on contracts funded by the Air Force, Navy, and DARPA.

---

2   A similar facility exists in Russia known as the *Sura Ionospheric Heating Facility*, located in Vasilsursk. Alaska has another one near Fairbanks known as the *High Power Auroral Stimulation (HIPAS)*. A facility called the *European Incoherent Scatter Radar (EISCAT)* exists near Tromso in Norway. Other countries which have these "research" facilities include Peru, Ukraine, and Tadzhikistan. See the *HAARP Fact Sheet* at www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/factSheet.html and the *Pravada* article, *USA and Russia Supposedly Develop Secret Meteorological Weapons*, September 30, 2005.

3   Some sources say its located in Gakona, others say it is near Gakona. The *HAARP Fact Sheet* at www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/factSheet.html says it is located near Gakona, while the following sources say it is located in Gakona: *An Overview of the HAARP Program* at www.haarp.alaska.edu, and the November 5, 1998 report, *HAARP: Research and Applications*, by the Air Force Research Laboratory and the Office of Naval Research.

4   *Wired* says these towers are 68 feet tall in its *BAE Systems Completes Facility for Ionospheric Physics Research* report, of June 28, 2007. The *HAARP Fact Sheet*, at www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/factSheet.html, lists them at 72 feet.

It was approved by congress for funding in 1990 by its defense spending bills. Research for HAARP began in 1992 by Advanced Power Technologies Incorporated, (APTI), a subsidiary of the Atlantic Richfield Corporation (ARCO). APTI, along with the HAARP patents, was sold to E Systems Incorporated in 1994. Raytheon then acquired E Systems and now owns the patents. It and BAES were the two biggest participants in its creation.

Other institutions that helped to create it include: the University of Alaska, Boston College, UCLA, Clemson University, Dartmouth College, Cornell University, Johns Hopkins University, University of Maryland, College Park, Penn State University (ARL), University of Massachusetts, MIT, Polytechnic Institute of New York University, Stanford University, and the University of Tulsa. These institutions are contributing to future research efforts.

HAARP is managed by the US Air Force's Research Laboratory (AFRL), the Office of Naval Research (ONR) of the US Navy, DARPA, and the University of Alaska's Geophysical Institute. The management team also consists of scientists from universities, the private sector, and government.

HAARP can produce continuous wave (CW) or pulsed modes of operation. Although the effective-radiated power which the IRI emits is in the range of 2.8 to 10 MHz, it can also produce higher or lower frequencies operating in conversion mode, where the modulated radiation is pointed into the ionosphere, which demodulates it, then returns it in the frequency encoded in the modulation.

In low-frequency conversion mode HAARP has a tunable frequency range of 0.001 Hz to 40 kHz which allows for low-frequency waves such as ELF, ULF, and VLF. In high-frequency conversion mode it is capable of generating infrared and visible light which means frequencies into the terahertz (THz) range.

The ELF waves which it produces can be transmitted over thousands of kilometers covering a significant portion of the earth through a *waveguide*, which is a type of virtual pathway formed by the ground and ionosphere. These waves will pass through basically every non-shielded structure on the planet.

HAARP is also capable of transferring massive amounts of energy to specific points on the planet by creating a virtual conduit consisting of a series of ionospheric mirrors. These mirrors are also called lenses or Artificial Ionospheric Mirrors (AIMs) by the US Air Force.

They're created by focusing energy on an area of the ionosphere to cause a depletion of electrons, which alters the refractive properties of that specific area. The mirrors are shaped to exact dimensions to redirect the energy to a predetermined destination.

According to the US Air Force, AIMs emitted from a ground-based system could allow the precise delivery of electromagnetic radiation at any frequency up to 2 GHz. They would be created to function on a specific frequency, and would allow the transmission of radiation based on that exact frequency through the ionosphere. By creating virtual mirrors in the ionosphere, HAARP is also capable of over-the-horizon communication.

HAARP is basically a multi-purpose tool. It exists to detect underground structures, to search for natural resources, to address national security issues, to communicate with submerged submarines using ELF waves, for surveillance purposes, and to examine new options for *strategic communications*.

The HAARP website describes its purpose this way: "The program's purpose is to provide a research facility to conduct pioneering experiments in ionospheric phenomena … for developing ionospheric enhancement technology for communications and surveillance purposes."

The DOD says that HAARP is used to enhance the performance of C4ISR systems. It will provide communications for submarines, and geophysical prospecting using earth penetrating tomogrophy (EPT) to detect natural resources such as oil, mineral deposits and gas. EPT is also used to detect underground facilities for national security reasons.

The Tesla Death Ray

Dr. Bernard Eastland, the physicist who developed the concepts for HAARP in several patents dating back to the 1980s, was retained by APTI as a consultant. Dr. Eastland revealed that the military was interested in his plans for a weapon which would direct energy into the ionosphere to destroy enemy rockets and disable communications.

The military denies that HAARP is based on Eastland's patents. However, there is considerable triangulation between Eastland's patent/HAARP, the military's capabilities and interests, and Dr. Nikola Tesla's Death Ray. Furthermore, Manning and Dr. Begich provide much evidence that HAARP is based on Eastland's patents, which themselves originate from the work of Dr. Tesla.

Dr. Nikola Tesla, the famous inventor and winner of the 1915 Nobel Physics Prize, is credited with many inventions, including wireless technology and alternating current electricity. Dr. Tesla worked with Wall Street industrialists such J.P. Morgan who withdrew their funding after realizing that he was inventing mechanisms to deliver free unlimited energy.

As a result, Dr. Tesla became blacklisted. Although he was probably the greatest inventor that ever lived, many of the comforts we enjoy today that he created have not been attributed to him because of this.

Dr. Tesla had plans for an aircraft that could rise vertically and use the earth's magnetic fields as a means of propulsion, as well as a watch-sized device, which would allow the instant, clear, wireless transmission of sound to any place on the planet. Another one of his inventions included a small electrical engine capable of moving a vehicle up to 90 miles per hour. After his death in 1943 his belongings were seized by the FBI and declared top secret.

It was reported by the *New York Times* in July of 1934 that Dr. Tesla had plans for a death ray that was capable of destroying a fleet of 10,000 airplanes at a distance of 250 miles from a nation's borders. The beam could cause armies of millions to drop dead immediately. It could operate silently and invisibly, from a great distance, and leave no evidence of its use. "An army of 1,000,000 dead, annihilated in an instant, he [Dr. Tesla] said, would not reveal even under the most powerful microscope just what catastrophe had caused its destruction."

US Patent 4686605 of August 11, 1987, issued to Dr. Eastland, was kept sealed for about a year under a government secrecy order. It describes a ground-based, multi-purpose weapon that uses microwaves to ionize a select portion of the atmosphere.

The patent recommended northern Alaska as the location for the weapon due to its abundance of natural fuel sources. The invention provided the ability to focus unprecedented amounts of power in the earth's atmosphere at strategic locations.

Eastland's weapon can disrupt or even modify satellite communication by using magnetic mirrors to intercept their microwave transmissions. These mirrors can also be used to intercept other types of wireless transmissions for eavesdropping purposes, or to enhance friendly communications.

They can provide total disruption of communications over a very large portion of the earth. According to the patent, all modes of civilian and military communications including land, sea, and air, could be disrupted simultaneously.

Dr. Tesla's invention consisted of large, land-based, stationary power plants affixed with transmitters. A mobile death ray was in the making by him, as reported in the *New York Sun's* July 11, 1934 article, *Death-Ray Machine Described*.

The US Air Force mentioned that a ground-based directed-energy weapon could be used to create a series of AIMs in the ionosphere, which would allow over-the-horizon communications, as well as the disruption or interception (eavesdropping) of enemy communications. Although they don't mention HAARP specifically, clearly, they're talking about a HAARP-type facility.

According to the Air Force, the same technology could be used for weather modification. "The implications of such control," says the Air Force, "are enormous: one would no longer be subject to the vagaries of the natural ionosphere but would instead have direct control of the propagation environment."

Similarly, Eastland's patent describes how mirrors that are charged to certain frequencies can be used as a conduit to transport particles that have certain characteristics to specific locations. The same conduit could be used to increase or decrease existing molecules or groups of them, such as ozone, nitrogen concentrations, etc.

Because of the precision with which this device can allegedly target an area, the atmospheric characteristics of an area can be altered. This means the manipulation of weather patterns. The patent specifically states that weather modification is possible using mirrors to direct energy into the ionosphere.

In 1935 the *New York Herald Tribune* reported that Dr. Tesla had been working on a unit which would transmit energy into the stratosphere to light the sky in order to eliminate the dangers of nocturnal navigation. This seems similar to the Navy/Air Force's 1998 report, which tells us that HAARP is capable of lighting up the skies with megawatt power.

According to Eastland's patent, the guidance systems of missiles and aircraft can be disrupted by lifting large regions of the atmosphere to create drag so they'll encounter friction, or encompassing them with an electromagnetic sheath to disrupt their functioning.

"This would have significant military implications," it explains, "particularly as a barrier to or confusing factor for hostile missiles or airplanes." The Air Force has expressed an interest in doing exactly this too, heating the ionosphere with a HPM to disrupt the functioning of spacecraft.

In July 1934, the *New York Sun* wrote that Dr. Tesla had developed plans for a land-based weapon consisting of multiple power houses that projected a beam of destructive energy which could destroy almost anything. It could also provide a protective dome around an entire country.

"Anything with which the ray came in contact would be destroyed," announced the *Sun*. "Planes would fall, armies would be wiped out and even the smallest country might so insure 'security' against which nothing could avail."

Another characteristic connecting Eastland's weapon to Tesla's Death Ray is illustrated in *US Patent 5038664*, also issued to Eastland. It describes how a protective dome could cover a select surface of the planet. It works in the following way: One beam of circularly polarized electromagnetic radiation in the frequency range of 1800 to 3600 kHz forms the initial dome. A second beam in the range of 20 to 1800 kHz is then aimed at the top of the same region to further ionize the existing plasma. The second beam raises the mirror points of the existing plasma. The combination of these energy beams creates a protective dome of 20 million volts.

According to *E Magazine, Pravda, Wired*, and independent media such as *Global Research*, and other sources which base their claims on available factual information, HAARP is capable of causing droughts, floods, hurricanes, tornadoes, earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, and lighting the skies with immense power.

It is allegedly capable of destroying the electronic systems of aircraft, missiles, and space satellites, as well as disrupting radio, TV, and radar signals. These claims are consistent with the US military's admitted objectives regarding weather warfare.

Professor Chossudovsky of the independent media outlet *Global Research* says that although HAARP is presented to the public as a scientific research institute, its capabilities suggest otherwise. "HAARP is part of the weapons arsenal of the New World Order," he announced. A nation's economy could potentially be disrupted through climatic manipulations. This can all be accomplished, says Professor Chossudovsky, without the target country realizing that an attack had caused the collapse.

Custom tailored weather attacks on a micro level will be used with communications disruption for, "complete dominance of global communications and counterspace control," announced the US Air Force in its *Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025* report of August 1996. This will be accomplished using high-powered microwaves directed into the ionosphere. "Weather-modification offers the warfighter a wide-range of possible options to defeat or coerce an adversary."

Wired announced in January 2008 that an online Russian military journal (www.nuclearno.ru) referred to HAARP as a "geophysical weapon" cloaked as a research facility, capable of triggering earthquakes and destroying the economy of an entire country.

In its *Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment* article of 2001, *Science and Global Security* stated that infrasound, (which is a type of ELF wave that HAARP can produce), can cause localized earthquakes.[5] The Tofflers also wrote about how sophisticated ecological weaponry could use electromagnetic waves to cause earthquakes and volcanic eruptions, in their 1993 book, *War and Antiwar*.

At the University of Georgia on April 28, 1997, former Secretary of Defense William S. Cohen announced: "Others are engaging even in an eco-type of terrorism whereby they can alter the climate, set off earthquakes, [and] volcanoes remotely through the use of electromagnetic waves."

According to Brzezinski, weather warfare and other high-tech weapons would be available to the leaders of some countries to launch covert weather attacks against other nations. He also specifically mentioned the use of "death rays" for conducting what he described as *secret warfare*.

The *Tesla's New Device Like Bolts of Thor* article, which appeared in the December 8, 1915 issue of the *New York Times*, mentioned how Dr. Tesla claimed his death ray was so accurate it could paralyze or kill anyone on the planet.

"It is perfectly practicable," he announced, "to transmit electrical energy without wires and produce destructive effects at a distance." "With transmitters of this kind," explained Dr. Tesla, "we are enabled to project electrical energy in any amount to any distance and apply it for innumerable purposes, both in peace and war."

In addition to HAARP's destructive capabilities that span the physical realm, Manning and Dr. Begich, as well as other sources have noted that the ELF waves which HAARP can produce, include the exact same dominant frequencies on which the human brain functions. As mentioned earlier, these waves have a documented effect of entraining the human brain to induce negative emotions such as anger, fear, disgust, rage, and depression.

Congressman Dennis J. Kucinich of Ohio attempted to ban weapons such as HAARP in October of 2001 by introducing the Space Preservation Act of 2001. This would have prohibited all land-based directed-energy weapons capable of manipulating the ionosphere to change the weather or attack people. Specific references were made to weapons capable of information war, mood management, and mind control.

"An analysis of statements emanating from the US Air Force," commented Professor Chossudovsky, "points to the unthinkable: the covert manipulation of weather patterns, communications and electric power systems as a weapon of global warfare."

Its potential, as revealed in the available military documents, combined with the capabilities outlined in the patents, plus the inventions of Dr. Tesla in the early 1900s, suggests that HAARP has much to do with both Eastland's patents and Dr. Tesla's work on which they're based. This evidence portrays HAARP as the *Tesla Death Ray* disguised as a scientific research facility.

---

5   *Science and Global Security* does not mention HAARP specifically, only that ELF waves can trigger earthquakes.

Miscellaneous Weapons and Tactics
Audible Noise

Audible sound has been used as a weapon in most wars since the beginning of recorded warfare.[1]   It is sometimes referred to as *acoustical warfare*. "Using sound as a non-lethal weapon is historically well documented," proclaimed the *Journal of Electronic Defense* in 1993. "Sound, from one source or another," added the US Army Office of the Surgeon General, in its *Controlled Offensive Behavior* report of 1973, "has been used to elicit behavior changes in man in every war ever recorded."

The Scottish military is said to have used bronze trumpets and bagpipes at the front of their formations when facing Roman soldiers and other adversaries, which allegedly caused some opposing troops to run in terror. During WWII German dive-bombing Stukas were equipped with loud sirens that caused a psychological impact on targeted ground troops, resulting in panic. Various forces throughout history have used trumpet calls prior to infantry charges.

More recently, in December of 1989, loud music was used by the US Marines to force Manuel Noriega from a building in Panama City. The FBI used loud aggravating noises against the Branch Davidians in Waco Texas in April of 1993. The British have used loud sounds for riot control in Northern Ireland. Powerful loud speakers were used against Haitian refugees in 1994 at the US Naval Base in Guantanamo Bay Cuba.

Noise is used as an irritating NLW for area denial, crowd control, to clear facilities, or to persuade a target to stop their activities. The NRC says that "aggravating" noise will be used for behavior modification. The CFR mentioned that an entire town could be rendered uninhabitable using just loud noise and obnoxious smells.

Various methods of producing aggravating noise include powerful loudspeakers, acoustic canons, stun grenades, whistles, musical instruments, sirens, yelling, mechanical devices, and others.[2] Audible noise, occurring between the human hearing ranges of 20 to 20,000 Hz is a very potent weapon that can cause both psychological and biological effects. Noise can be used to modify behavior and trigger negative emotions such as fear and panic.

The repeated use of loud noise as a weapon can result in mental trauma, which the NATO NLW report defines as a *psychological injury*. The biological effects of consistent loud noise include temporary deafness, dizziness, vertigo, nausea, and possibly vomiting. Loud noise is dangerous to the auditory and respiratory systems. Chronic exposure to even low-level noise is considered a health hazard, which can cause high blood pressure as well as other biological problems.

A burst of sudden noise can cause a something called a *startle response*, which NATO says includes involuntary physical reactions such as verbal remarks, the stiffening of the body, flexion of limbs, or a fall to the ground. Sudden noise at about 140 decibels has been known to knock people sideways, away from the exposed ear, similar to the effect of a blunt impact. The *Journal of Electronic Defense* refers to noise as an actual or psychological weapon.

---

1   Audible noise would technically be an acoustic weapon as part of acoustic/sonic warfare (AW).

2   There has been recurrent noise of various types in every place I've lived, which also occurs in areas I frequently visit. It is synchronized with EW. Much of it originates from the activities of the DOD's civil defense network. Some types of noise that commonly occurs around my livingspace include: fire, police, and ambulance sirens; horns; a multitude of tools and appliances; chainsaws and lawnmowers; ongoing construction projects; barking dogs; door slamming; gun shots; low-flying helicopters and propeller planes. There is also a fleet of vehicles with loud exhaust systems that has encircled every place I've lived as well as places I've visited for short periods. It continues during swarm attacks as I move through a neighborhood (battlespace). Noise is often synchronized. As I walk by houses or apartment buildings people who are leaving or arriving slam doors and trunks. Their timing is such that the noise occurs the second I'm closest. A frequent variation of this includes small construction projects that are hidden as I approach them, which emit explosions of noise from various kinds of machinery just as I pass by. The recurrent noise continues in stores and transportation systems with loudspeaker announcements that are blurted out the instant I'm under a speaker. In shopping centers, for instance, during a single visit, multiple clerks will slam items on shelves the second I pass. This continues in restaurants and any public place. Roommates and relatives consistently slam doors and cabinets, as well as silverware and other objects on countertops.

Holograms

Three-dimensional images that look like real objects called holograms are in the DOD's arsenal. Holograms are created using lasers. Scientists at the University of Arizona have been working on advanced holographic technology since at least 1990. Holograms are considered a NLW and are to be used on the civilian population as part of PsyOp.

Holograms can be projected to specific areas. Some of the following uses have been considered: To cloak small or large objects so they are temporarily invisible to the enemy, to confuse and terrify people in the battlespace, to distract the enemy, to create illusions, to project gigantic images of certain gods over enemy territory.

Holograms are also to be projected into rooms occupied by the enemy. The DSB mentioned that sophisticated PsyOp to be used on the civilian population includes the projection of sounds and images to specific points in space. Holograms can be used, says the Air Force, "to scare a target individual to death." The Air Force has also considered using satellites with holographic laser projectors to send these holograms to anyplace on the ground, sky, or air.[3]

Show of Force Operation (SOFO)

A Show of Force Operation (SOFO) is an activity that is used to warn, intimidate, and showcase capabilities to a potential threat. The US Army defines it in this way: "A show of force is an operation designed to demonstrate US resolve, which involves increased visibility of US deployed forces in an attempt to defuse a specific situation, that if allowed to continue, may be detrimental to US interests or national objectives."

The BSSR describes a SOFO as an impressive display of police power and resolve, which is used to convey an overwhelming impression of the power of the state in order to persuade the target of the futility of their activities.

Although SOFO are military in nature, they are used for both military and political objectives. According to the US Army, they are designed to demonstrate a credible and specific threat to an aggressor or potential aggressor. They may occur during times of peace or war. During times of peace SOFO are often conducted during training missions. It has been described as a type of MOOTW that uses the physical presence of a credible force to demonstrate US resolve.

SOFO are conducted for a few primary reasons: to bolster and reassure allies, to deter potential aggressors, and to gain or increase influence. Examples of SOFO include the temporary buildup of forces in a specific area, combinations of training exercises in an area, demonstrations of capabilities, and a projected increase in the level of readiness.

SOFO may be used by the military, police forces, or other non-military groups. According to the US Air Force, the military works with police and other civil authorities to conduct SOFO during training missions. "These operations," explain the US Air Force, "usually involving routine overhead flights, [to] demonstrate our capabilities and intent." "Training missions flown by long-range aircraft," they added, "are one way to demonstrate the responsiveness of airpower."

The US Army too mentioned that aircraft and even ship visits to a specific area during training exercises are used for SOFO.[4] In their 2006, *Homeland Operations* document, the US Air Force described that as part of a national strategy for homeland security, military support to law enforcement is occurring, which includes air patrols over specific locations. These patrols are done during training missions in support to civil authorities in order to deter incidents.

---

3   The holograms that the DOD has transmitted so far include bugs on walls and a space ship that hovered approximately 100 feet above me. These images lasted only a split second.

4   I first began to notice frequent visitations by helicopters and propeller planes while on a farm in Maine during the spring of 2006. This continued throughout the summer and followed me to the next farm, where they continued for several years. Occasionally they would fly so low they would shake the room. These SOFOs have also occurred at places I've visited for short periods.

Isolation

A primary component of this new type of warfare includes the isolation of an adversary physically and psychologically from their support structure, the civilian population, and any international support.

In its 1996 *Concept for Nonlethal Capabilities in Army Operations*, the US Army says that NLW will be used with surveillance to isolate adversaries. The US Army defines the term in this manner: "Isolate: In the context of defeat mechanisms, to deny an enemy or adversary access to capabilities that enable the exercise of coercion, influence, potential advantage, and freedom of action."

Basically any city, state, or country that an adversary moves to they will be denied sanctuary, and attacked with nonlethal weapons and PsyOp. Public diplomacy, public affairs, resource control measures, and other methods are used to accomplish this.

Multinational capabilities, says the US Army in its *Unconventional Warfare* manual, as well as interagency and international partner leaders, are used to "further isolate, and deny sanctuary to the enemy." To achieve this, US law enforcement entities cooperate with each other, international partners, and the DOD to maximize intelligence and legitimacy and to constrain adversary's freedom of movement.

At a military history symposium in 2007, Lieutenant General William B. Caldwell mentioned that the survival of the enemy depends on them finding places to foster ideas of lies and discontent. They depend on the sanctuary and the external resources provided by such havens, says General Caldwell. "[It] therefore, becomes paramount to denying their popular acceptance and use for any sanctuary in the world."

General Caldwell's solution is the same as what has been mentioned in other government reports, which is to isolate adversaries from the population and international community, interfere with their finances, disrupt their internet services, and prevent them from interacting with the media.

Psychological isolation can be accomplished with what the military calls *command and control warfare (C2W)*, also called *information warfare (IW)*. What this essentially amounts to is the placement of an electronic dome around a person to interfere with all forms of communication.

The RAND Corporation calls this *neocortical warfare*, which it defines as: "Warfare that strives to control or shape the behavior of enemy organisms, but without destroying the organisms. It does this by influencing, even to the point of regulating, the consciousness, perceptions and will of the [enemy]."

In the spring 1998 issue of the US Army War College's quarterly journal *Parameters*, Timothy L. Thomas described how electronic isolation can be achieved in an article called, *The Mind Has No Firewall*. His description is identical to RAND's neocortical warfare.

"The human body," say Thomas "much like a computer, contains myriad data processors," including "the chemical-electrical activity of the brain, heart, and peripheral nervous system, the signals sent from the cortex region of the brain to other parts of our body."

According to Thomas, auditory, visual, and other signals could be interrupted and replaced with bogus information, termed "information noise," which creates a dense shield between a person and external reality. The main target of this noise, he mentioned, would be the consciousness of a person or a group of people.

Disruption of Utilities

There have been multiple references in government documentation that the enemy will have their utilities disrupted.[5] This means heat, electric, water, energy, etc. It was suggested by Lord Bertrand Arthur Russell in 1931, and again in 1951, that this tactic could be used against individuals by those who governed states.

---

5   Electrical outages were quite common on both farms that I lived on in Maine. Some lasted for days and others only for a moment. The DOD would usually let me know that they caused these using their themes. The DOD has also connected their C4ISR system to the wiring of the places that I've lived, which has allowed them to synchronize their EW attacks with the lights being dimmed. This has occurred with lights wired into walls and ones connected to outlets. Shocks, stings, and pulses of pain are quickly followed-up by a dimming of the lights, after which, microwave hearing attacks such as "got that?" and "gotcha" occur.

Finances

The blatant use of both bribery and financial sanctions was explained in the US Army's *Unconventional Warfare* report of September 2008, which stated, "many declared or potential adversaries can be persuaded or dissuaded by economic or financial means."[6] The application of economic or financial incentives, they wrote, is among the best ideas in the US arsenal of power.

Destroying people financially has been mentioned in other government reports, such as the Defense Science Board's *Future Strategic Strike Forces* of 2004, and the US Army's *Field Manual Operations*, released in February 2008. "The interagency," explained the Army, "can apply economic and financial incentives and disincentives to interdict adversary financing." The disruption of the enemy's credit system has also been described as an important NLW by the CFR.

Use of Animals

Animals are used for antimaterial, antipersonnel, and surveillance purposes. They can also cause a psychological effect. Genetically altered insects, for example, can be used to destroy specific crops. Chemicals which attract existing indigenous insects can also be used for this purpose.

Chemicals called pheromones, which are released by animals to influence the behavior of other members of the same species, are considered a NLW. These pheromones can be spread in areas or on people and will attract certain insects, rodents, and larger animals, causing them to act aggressively (biting, stinging).[7]

Some of these chemicals can allegedly cause infestation for up to 6 months. "Imagine," suggested John Alexander, "trying to sleep or work in an area that is attracting every ant, cockroach, or spider for miles around."

In addition to causing infestation, animals can be used for surveillance and attack by being trained or remote controlled. The use of animals for surveillance purposes dates back at least to the early 1940s, when Professor B.F. Skinner was given a contract by the DOD to develop methods to train pigeons to guide missiles onto targets.

In 1944 he discovered that pigeons could distinguish man-made objects from natural ones. Teaching can now be done using photographs. It consists of rewarding the birds with food when they peck on the photographs of the intended targets.

The Israelis took an interest in this in the late 1960s when they began to use pigeons to spy on the Arabs. The birds were trained to fly over Arab territory and land on specific objects. They were equipped with small radio receivers, which allowed them to be easily located. The birds were even able to follow moving troops.

The US Navy has used whales, porpoises, and dolphins as weapons to spot enemy ships and harass divers. Some have been fitted with explosives. Dogs have regularly been used by the military and police. They can be trained to respond in certain ways when they encounter objects or people. It has been suggested that they can be outfitted with radio transmitters to reveal their locations.[8]

---

6   Most targeted individuals are unemployed or underemployed.

7   Once while I was holding a *9/11 Truth* sign in Harvard Square, Cambridge, a bee came out of nowhere and stung me. Then, in Copley Square, Boston, while two people stopped to talk to me about the sign, one repeatedly tapped my hand during the conversation. When they left, a single bee quickly landed on the exact area of my hand that was touched. At a farm I lived on for several years in Maine there were lots of insects indoors, usually year-round. At times the place was infested. They included ants, ladybugs, bees, hornets, and others. I have also noticed that hornet nests would frequently show up in doorways and common outdoor areas. Also, sometimes several mice per day would be caught. This allowed for other types of attacks, such as the farm manager placing mouse traps in areas that I typically used when preparing meals, or storing food, which resulted in rodent excrement appearing in those areas. Presumably this was done to block and disgust me.

8   Dogs are used to harass targets. The owners of these animals are frequently inconsiderate, allowing enough distance on the leash for them to disturb you.

Radio waves can also be used for the remote control of animals. The DOD has had an interest in this at least as far back as the mid 1960s. In 1964 Dr. Jose Delgado of Yale University demonstrated the remote control of a charging bull. Dr. Delgado, funded by the DOD, implanted radio-controlled electrodes in a bull's brain, which allowed him to successfully stop the creature from charging using a radio transmitter.

More recently, DARPA contracted the JASON Group and MITRE Corporation to conduct research on the possibilities of using remote controlled robots that resembled animals for surveillance.[9] In 1997 they released their conclusions in a report entitled, *Small Scale Propulsion: Fly on the Wall, Cockroach in the Corner, Rat in the Basement, Bird in the Sky*.

Creating tiny robots in the form of insects or birds is possible, they described, but they would be less capable than living creatures of maneuvering through difficult terrain. On reason for this is that there has been difficulty integrating the sensory and motor systems of these machines.

For instance, if a robot sees an object ahead, it must send the information to the proper actuating systems that will allow it to avoid the obstacle. This also requires that the actuators themselves are advanced enough to allow for such precise movements.

Instead, DARPA suggests using living creatures such as insects, rodents, dogs, birds, horses, and other animals. Living creatures already have natural organic actuators (muscles) and sensors (ears and eyes), which are perfectly coordinated. Implanted with a tiny receiver/microprocessor, these creatures can be directed by a human operator.

The creatures, says DARPA, can be equipped with tiny sensors such as cameras, IR imagers, photometers, magnetic wave detectors, chemical detectors, acoustic detectors, meteorological instruments, and radiation detectors. These sensors would transmit the information back to the operator, who would control the creature remotely, and monitor its activity.

Lethal and nonlethal weapons can also be attached to the animals. Another possibility that DARPA revealed includes using nanotechnology with artificial intelligence for this purpose. In 1997 DARPA mentioned that scientists at Tsuka University successfully implanted a microprocessor in a living cockroach which allowed them to control the creature remotely.

In 2002 it was reported by the *UK Guardian* and *National Geographic News* that scientists at the State University of New York demonstrated the remote control of living rats. Tiny electrodes are implanted in the brains of the rodents which respond to remote electrical signals from a laptop computer up to 500 yards away. The basic system, including electrodes, a microprocessor, and receiver, is very cheap.[10]

The navigation system uses the creatures own neurological system, which learns appropriate responses to signals sent by the computer by activating the pleasure areas of their brains when correct movements are made. The rats can be steered up and down vertical objects, along narrow edges, into crevices, etc.

The control that they were able to establish over the creatures was accurate and instantaneous. Not only is the performance impressive, but the training sessions are quick, and the rodents retain the knowledge for about a half a year when they're not deployed.

The rodents are to be used for rescue missions and military surveillance. "Next time you see a rat scurrying across the room," revealed *National Geographic News*, "beware, it might not be as innocent as it seems. It could be a remotely operated robo-rat working for an intelligence agency." According to the scientists, the same technology could be applied to birds.

---

9   In their book, *War and Anti-War*, Alvin and Heidi Toffler also mentioned the possibility of using remote controlled micro-robots that resembled insects for surveillance.

10   In December of 2008 *Wired* announced that scientists at Lawrence Berkeley National Laboratory created a nanoradio, complete with a tunable band, antenna, and an amplifier. The radio was one ten-thousandths the width of a human hair. It was so small it could be inserted into a single living cell. Not only did it make possible the creation of subcellular remote control devices, but it was reported that the scientists were working on ways to integrate it into living creatures. This allows for the possibility of even the tiniest of creatures being fitted with a remote control device. See *Wired*, *World's First Nanoradio Could Lead to Subcellular Remote-Control Interfaces*, December 5, 2008.

Barriers/Blocking

Barriers have been used by military forces for many years. Their potential use is extensive. They are used to separate adversaries from friendly forces, deny access, prevent escape, block and delay an adversary's movement, and stop vehicles. According to the NRC, they have many other applications where delaying an adversary's action is required.

The standard types of barriers include movable walls, fences, nets and caltrops. But they also include a wide range of other objects which could block or delay an adversary's movement. Precision delivery and rapid deployment are two necessities for barrier usage. The NRC says they are used to cause peaceful changes in behavior in enemy personnel.[11]

The US Army suggests that physical obstacles, combined with noise to create or enhance psychological effects, are classic military tactics that are used to influence the behavior of people. NATO's 2006 *Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies* report mentions that physical obstacles are used to deter, prevent, or discourage from acting, as well as to impose fear and doubt regarding the consequences of the action.

---

[11] In multiple places that I've stayed and visited, entire areas have been cluttered from the floor to the ceiling with common objects that are used as temporary barriers. These objects appear on countertops, tables, sofas, and chairs, so there is no place to sit or to place anything. Doorways in particular are blocked with a variety of objects. Traps are set in cabinets resulting in items falling out when they're opened. These traps extend to other areas that are frequently used. Draws and cabinets are also blocked. Using physical objects as barriers the DOD can restrict your movements and significantly interfere with simple functions such as preparing a meal, showering, or shaving. This tactic also appears to be intended to induce a claustrophobic effect. Blocking occurs out in public during swarms. Every time I go out in public I'm crowded and blocked by citizens. This includes people going in and out of doorways, at street corners, in any public place, vendors making deliveries that burst out of doorways and walk in front of me, etc. They use objects which naturally appear in a public setting as barriers. Some include: vehicles, bikes, carts, baby carriages, pets, and the people themselves. I've noticed that they rarely acknowledge that they're cutting you off, blocking you, or invading your space. Again, their movements are perfectly timed, which clearly indicates to me that they are connected to a robust C4ISR system which is guiding their attacks. Blocking occurs on operational/strategic levels as well. Stores are consistently out of items I plan on buying. I'm usually told either by the store clerks or the customers who swarm me while uttering key phrases that it had been arranged. New brands of items become unavailable in stores after I develop a liking for them. Sometimes only products which promote their themes are available. This also allows them some control over my living area. After an item is in a particular place for a while, it will be moved to another part of the store (basically hidden). I've determined that they are probably also altering the signs on the isles which list products. Print material information, such as maps and schedules which I plan on obtaining in public places is not available. This extends to people at service desks who are unable to answer simple questions. Vendors and restaurants, in person, online, and on the phone, will slow you down, delay you, appear incompetent, and act rude. They will frequently mess up and delay your orders. While on the phone with operators or service representatives, you can expect long hold times and multiple transfers, in addition to poor service. Whenever I must contact some type of service support, usually to fix sabotage that the DOD has arranged, I understand that I will be on the phone or online with them for hours, during which time I will also be attacked with PsyOp.

Volume III Commentary

PsyOp is a major component of this new war. It is a core part of civil-military operations (CMO), which take place in friendly, neutral, or hostile areas, including populated civilian areas where no other military activity is conducted. These are global operations.

The HN provides the military with civilian assistance including materials, services, facilities, administrative support, logistics, and other resources. PsyOp units use civilians as irregular forces. It is combined and synchronized with CNO and EW.

PsyOp is basically the process of conveying messages to a person, group, or government in order to influence their attitudes, emotions, or behavior. This is accomplished using a line of communication known as a *theme*. Themes are made possible by the use of audio, visual, and audiovisual products, which are used to get the attention of the TA and provoke a response.

A type of audiovisual product known as a *PsyAct*, which includes *agents of action* who carry out plays in the presence of the TA, may also be used to convey messages. The types of products which can be used for PsyOp are limitless.

PsyOp units establish contracts with mass media facilities, newspapers, TV and radio stations, printing facilities, and billboard companies to help them create and distribute their products. Deployed PsyOp units themselves are equipped with audiovisual studios, printing facilities, and communications equipment. In addition, van-mounted facilities with broadcasting and print media production capabilities exist. Some production is done by the 4th POG, which has state-of-the-art production studios.

The ultimate goal of PsyOp is to modify the behavior of the TA by destroying their will using a relentless attack consisting of painful triggers. The triggers are contained in products, which themselves are used in themes that are sent to the TA through a variety of channels. The TA is first profiled to determine which products will be used and which distribution channels they will be sent through.

In order to modify the behavior of the TA their decisionmaking cycle must be interfered with, which is accomplished by changing their environment. This is referred to as the *psychological preparation of the environment*, and is accomplished by electronically, psychologically, and physically adding, modifying, or removing information from it.

Every single channel the TA uses for information—including all systems, organizations, and individuals—is interfered with. Relentless PsyOp attacks transmitted through these channels will be unnoticeable to the casual observer. PsyOp personnel are continually changing the battlespace to communicate with different TAs as they approach it.

Early PsyOp research was done by a small private network of think tanks, foundations, and academic institutions, which went into partnership with government agencies and kept most of the results of their studies secret. Some of the institutions that conducted these studies were known to be subversive.

Informants have been used since ancient times to create fear and harass people in order to maintain dictatorships. In some dictatorships they have been used to *gang stalk* targeted individuals, literally surrounding them everyplace they go.

The US military had developed a nationwide citizen informant network beginning in 1917. It worked with government agencies, local law enforcement, and the DOJ. It functioned silently and secretly. Its targets were spied on and harassed.

It has been described as a *covert vigilante network*, as well as a *hidden political subculture* that developed within our society, which is absolutely dedicated to monitoring people who are thought to be subversive. By the early 1900s secret police networks had been established in all continental European countries.

Directed-energy weapons, part of electronic warfare, are used to damage or destroy, people, equipment, and facilities. The basic types include microwaves, lasers, and acoustics. These weapons are silent and traceless.

They cause a variety of effects including tiredness, dizziness, nausea, vomiting, abdominal pains, convulsions, epileptic seizures, temporarily paralysis, vibration of internal organs, cooking of internal organs, cataracts, burning sensations on skin, hyperthermia, headaches, loss of short-term memory, interruption of cognitive processes, cardiac arrest, and cancer.

High-powered microwaves can be used to disrupt or destroy depending on how they are tuned. These silent and traceless weapons can easily pass through most unshielded structures. Lasers, which are silent, traceless weapons, have pinpoint accuracy, an extended reach, and an almost unlimited magazine capacity.

Sonic weapons can be used to transmit negative emotions such as fear, anxiety, panic attacks, disgust, apathy, and sadness. They can also cause biological effects, like pressure in the ears, visual blurring, drowsiness, and imbalance, vibration of internal organs, organ damage, severe intestinal pain, nausea, vomiting, bowel liquification, choking, irregular breathing patterns, burns, and death.

Audible noise in one form or another has been used in wars since recorded history to aggravate and terrorize people. It is considered a NLW to be used for behavior modification. According to some sources, noise and bad smells can be used to clear an entire town.

Computer network operations (CNO) are used to deceive, degrade, and disrupt the enemy's computer systems. They span the hardware, software and network (internet) realms. CNO includes spoofing information and is used in conjunction with PsyOp and EW.

Microwave hearing technology has existed since at least the early 1960s and was researched by the DOD in the mid 1970s. It is considered to be a NLW to be used for private message transmissions and to attack military targets.

In the 1970s the Russian government perfected a powerful silent subliminal technology which could be used to control dissidents by sending messages directly into the subconscious mind without interfering with conscious processes.

The DOD has the technology to project three-dimensional images known as *holograms* and sounds to specific areas. They can be used to temporarily cloak an object and to scare people.

Calmatives include antidepressants and antipsychotics that cause sedation, depression, anxiety, dizziness, headaches, pains, etc, which are to be given to groups and individuals as a NLW. The covert administration of calmatives has been advocated.

Nonlethal biological weapons include viruses that cause medical conditions and create injuries. It has been suggested that the genetic structure of targeted individuals, families, and ethnic groups can be changed to create hereditary medical conditions.

Malodorants, which are to be used for area denial, have effects that span the mental, emotional and physical realms. Research on odors that offend specific racial groups has been conducted, and it has been suggested that ones that violate the beliefs of political and religious groups be used.

Antimaterial weapons known as supercaustics can be used to destroy the enemy's infrastructure, which includes structures, facilities, tools, and equipment. These substances can destroy any glass, rubber, plastic, or metal, which means they have a wide range of possible uses. According to some sources, these substances can be remotely triggered.

Weather attacks, which are to play a major role in the new war, are to be used to reduce the comfort level of the enemy. Attempts to control the weather date back to at least the late 1940s, and weather modification has been used as a weapon by the US military since the mid 1960s.

The US military has stated that custom-tailored, localized weather attacks will be used against its foreign and domestic enemies. The enemy's communications system will be spoofed to conceal these attacks and to cause them to make inaccurate decisions.

Research for the remote control of animals began by the DOD in the mid 1960s. It has been suggested that the remote control of living creatures such as insects, rodents, birds, dogs, horses and other animals could be used for surveillance purposes. The remote control of living insects was demonstrated in 1997. In 2002 the technology was successfully tested on rodents.

A SOFO is used to warn and scare the enemy. It includes the temporary buildup of forces in a particular area, and persistent flights over specific areas, such as those occupied by the enemy.

Synchronization, which is the result of real-time or near-real-time intelligence, includes multiple operations conducted at high tempo in the battlespace, that are done simultaneously or in a particular sequence to shock the enemy. It occurs on the strategic, operational, and tactical levels, and uses all instruments of national power.

The enemy will be physically and psychologically isolated from their support structure and the civilian population in any country, state, and city that they visit. This will be accomplished with advanced surveillance technology, PsyOp, and NLW, which place an electronic dome around them.

Isolation also includes mechanisms to deny people from using their talents and to restrict their freedom of action. Economic methods, including the destruction of the enemy's finances or bribery, will also be used.

Swarming, an ancient military tactic that has been used for thousands of years is an important part of the new war. The MITRE and RAND corporations have studied swarming for the DOD and have concluded that an advanced C4ISR system and computer algorithm would be necessary to direct the swarming nodes. Recent technological advancements allow for such precision swarms. The DOD has used these algorithms for computer-generated swarms already with UAVs.

Barriers have been used by the military and police to deny access, separate adversaries, delay adversary movement, and for behavior modification for many years. They include a wide range of objects which must be precisely and rapidly deployed to be successful.

All of these technologies and tactics, which leave little or no trace of their use, are to be used in combination over an extended period of time to wear-down the enemy. They are only some of the unclassified weapons that are now being used on civilians.

Volume IV

The Coverup

Volume IV Introduction

When I began researching the mental health industry's connection to this issue my intention was to show that schizophrenia was being used to destroy people and provide cover for the system. However, what I discovered about the medical field and schizophrenia in particular, amazed me. I concluded that the information regarding this was worthy of its own book, which is why I decided to devote several chapters to it.

Before explaining how the mental health portion of the system is providing complete cover for this, it will be necessary to have a basic understanding of the disease model of schizophrenia as it is commonly portrayed to the public. After that we'll have a look at Wall Street's extensive control of the medical industry, and the mental health system.

Then we'll see information which indicates that schizophrenia does not exist and we'll discover why it is continually promoted. We'll also explore how the financial elite have launched initiatives to coverup their use of the security forces to attack citizens with PsyOp and directed-energy weapons.

Despite the information you'll soon be presented with, I think it is important to keep in mind that most doctors have positive intentions. However, it is necessary to show both the extent of this control and the practices of the industry because it has been providing cover for this for decades.

Schizophrenia Spectrum Disorders
Introduction

Throughout this chapter when making references to beliefs, research results, and conclusions about schizophrenia, it will be useful to understand that I've written it from a perspective of the explanations found in some of the mainstream literature, which promote the idea of schizophrenia, and which are typically the only information that the public receives.

With a basic understanding of schizophrenia as it is presented to the public, it will later be easier to conceive how this illness is a complete fabrication and is used by governments to conceal the attacks of their security forces against internal enemies.

Schizophrenia is a mixture of signs and symptoms that include a range of cognitive and emotional dysfunctions, which prevent people from thinking clearly, managing emotions, making decisions, and relating to others.

Its chronic, long-lasting symptoms cause a high degree of disability. Most people with schizophrenia experience hallucinations and delusions. Although many experts believe it is a group of disorders, for now a single term is used for lack of a better alternative. Schizophrenia is not a multiple personality disorder, like dissociative identity disorder.

The symptoms, treatment, and course of schizophrenia also pertain to schizoaffective disorder, schizophreniform disorder, delusional disorder, brief psychotic disorder, shared psychotic disorder, psychotic disorder due to a general medical condition, substance-induced psychotic disorder, and psychotic disorder not otherwise specified.

These disorders are called *schizophrenia spectrum disorders*. For this study, the term schizophrenia will be used to describe all of these. Closely associated with schizophrenia is *manic-depressive disorder* (also known as *bipolar disorder*), which is characterized by episodes of mania and depression.

Although it is primarily a mood disorder, while schizophrenia is a thought disorder, both illnesses have basically the same treatment and prognosis. Also, about 50% of those diagnosed with manic-depression experience hallucinations and delusions. So for the purpose of this study it will be considered a schizophrenia spectrum disorder.

Description

Schizophrenia can be found in about 1% of the population of the world. It affects men and women equally. The 1% does not include those diagnosed with other mental disorders such as manic-depression. Schizophrenia runs in families. Those with parents or siblings with the illness have a 10% chance of developing it. If both parents have it, the chance is 20%. And if an identical twin has it, it increases to 50%.

It seems that people born in the winter or early spring are more likely to develop it. According to the World Health Organization, it is one of the ten most debilitating diseases affecting people worldwide.

The life expectancy of schizophrenics is shorter than that of the general population. One reason for this is that about 10% of the people with the illness commit suicide. Between 20% and 40% will make at least one attempt over the course of the illness.

While both groups are at an increased risk, men successfully complete suicide more often than women. Specific risk factors include men under 45 years old with depressive symptoms, unemployment, and recent discharge from the hospital.

Most people with it are not violent while they're receiving treatment. Although, as a group people diagnosed with schizophrenia have a higher incidence of violence than the general population, this is attributed to young men with a past history of violence, who are not complying with their medication and are excessively abusing drugs.

Other than people with a history of violence, people with schizophrenia are not prone to violence. However, people with psychotic symptoms may be at a higher risk for violent behavior if they stop taking their medication. When violence does occur, it's usually directed at a family member or friend, and usually takes place at home.

Schizophrenia can be developed at any age, but about ¾ of those with it developed it between the ages of 16 and 30. Children over the age of 5 can be diagnosed with schizophrenia, although it is uncommon. Women usually have a later onset than men, often between 25 and 35. For men it occurs between 18 and 25. Men rarely develop it after age 35. Although it is rare, it can be develop after age 45, and most of these cases consist of women.

History

Although the name schizophrenia has only been around for about 100 years, descriptions of the illness allegedly go back several thousand years. Mental illness in general has been mentioned since the beginning of recorded history. These records include descriptions of hallucinations and delusions.

However, it is a debatable issue whether schizophrenia with its characteristic symptoms and course existed in ancient times. The exact time that the illness made its appearance in recorded history is also unknown. Ancient descriptions of these symptoms could have been attributed to head trauma, brain infections, stroke, or some other type of underlying organic reason.

The symptoms that characterize schizophrenia did not appear until the early 1800s. Scholars differ in their explanations of why there is a lapse between descriptions in ancient times and the early 1800s. Some think that it was always present, while others believe it was rare until the 1800s, and then suddenly appeared.

A French researcher named Jean Pierre Falret referred to it as *circular madness* in 1851. Then over the next 50 years it was defined in slightly different ways and renamed several times. In 1860 a French psychiatrist named Benedict Augustin Morel called it *demence praecox*. Dr. Ewald Hecker (1843-1909), a German psychiatrist, observed it as *hebephrenia* in 1871.

In 1874 Hecker's teacher, Dr. Karl Ludwig Kahlbaum (1828-1899), described it as two diseases, *catatonia* and *paranoia*. He published two basic descriptions of psychotic symptoms. One was *hebetic paraphrenia* which included hallucinations, delusions, and bizarre behavior that began in childhood and progressed to severe deterioration. The other was *katatonia* (catatonia) which included impaired self will, diminished movement, and dementia. Both Hecker and Kahlbaum believed the illness began in childhood and resulted in an irreversible decline in all mental functions.

Although many different people have contributed to the current understanding of schizophrenia, the two most notable include Emil Kraepelin and Eugen Bleuler. Emil Kraepelin (1856-1926) (pronounced Ey-meel Kre-puh-leen), was a German diagnostician who combined the works of Morel, Hecker, Kahlbaum and others into his own diagnostic system. While recording hundreds of case observations of mental patients, he noticed important similarities.

In 1896 he published the fifth edition of his *Textbook of Psychiatry* which suggested that all symptoms were part of a single disorder. He called it *dementia praecox* (pronounced pree-koks), a Latin term for early onset (praecox) and an eventual deterioration in mental functions (dementia). The symptoms included, among others, delusions and hallucinations.[1]

---

1 There are some differences regarding when the term was officially used. *The Encyclopedia of Schizophrenia and other Psychotic Disorders*, by Richard Noll, PhD, says Kraepelin called it Dementia Praecox in 1893. The book *Schizophrenia: Diseases and People*, by Jane E. Philips and David P. Ketelsen says he referred to it as Dementia Praecox in 1878. *Understanding and Treating Schizophrenia: Contemporary Research, Theory, and Practice*, by Glenn D. Shean, PhD, mentions he named it in 1896 when he published the fifth edition of his *Textbook of Psychiatry*.

Kraepelin was the first to recognize it as a single illness composed of multiple symptoms. The diagnostic system that Kraepelin developed formed the system of classification for mental disorders used in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders IV (DSM-IV)*, and the World Health Organization's *International Classification of Diseases (ICD)*. Modern psychiatry is heavily influenced by his work.

Then in 1911 the term was changed again to *schizophrenia* by a Swiss psychiatrist named Eugen Bleuler (pronounced Bloy-ler) (1857-1939). In an article called *Dementia Praecox or the Group of Schizophrenias* published in 1911, he mentioned that he changed the name because his studies revealed that it did not occur in childhood or progress to the complete deterioration of all mental functions (dementia).[2] The essential feature of the illness included a split (schizo) with perception in reality that occurred in the mind (phren) of patients.

Unlike Kraepelin, he thought it was a group of diseases rather than one. But, he did agree with Kraepelin's description of the primary symptoms. He divided the symptoms into two basic categories that included *fundamental*, which included standard symptoms that he noticed, and *accessory* symptoms. The accessory symptoms included delusions and hallucinations.

Symptoms

In the *DSM-IV* symptoms occur in two broad categories including *positive* and *negative*. The positive symptoms are manifested by an excess or distortion of normal functions. The negative symptoms are a loss of normal functions. These symptoms are further defined by 5 subcategories.

Categories A1 through A4 contain the positive symptoms, including: A1 (delusions), A2 (hallucinations), A3 (disorganized thought/speech), A4 (grossly disorganized behavior, plus catatonic motor behavior). Category A5 contains the negative symptoms which are defined by limitations in the scope and intensity of emotional expression, productivity of thought and speech, and in goal-directed activities.

Besides the *DSM's* method of classification, symptoms can be categorized another way. Other publications include an additional symptom category called *cognitive*, which corresponds to the *DSM's* positive symptom subcategory *disordered thought/speech* (A3).

These publications also incorporate the *DSM's* Social/Occupational Dysfunction (Criterion B) as well as the behavioral disorders (Criterion A4) into their description of negative symptoms. Below I've combined the two methods of categorization, using the positive-negative-cognitive format as the general outline, which is broken down further using the *DSM's* descriptive criteria.

Positive Symptoms

Positive symptoms (also known as psychotic symptoms) are called positive because they are an addition to regular experiences. They include abnormal behaviors, perceptions, or beliefs that reveal a break from reality and are not shared by people without a mental illness. The most common types of psychotic symptoms are hallucinations and delusions.

To date, the term psychotic has not received a definition that has been universally accepted. In the *DSM* it varies depending on which illness it refers to. One narrow meaning of the word includes the presence of delusions and hallucinations with an absence of insight into their pathological nature. So for the course of this study the term will usually refer specifically to delusions and hallucinations.

---

2   *The Encyclopedia of Schizophrenia and other Psychotic Disorders* and *Schizophrenia: Diseases and People* mention that the term was first used by Bleuler in 1908, while the book *Understanding and Treating Schizophrenia* says it was first used in 1911 when he first published his work in the article, *Dementia Praecox or the Group of Schizophrenias*.

Delusions (Criterion A1)

Delusions are a very common symptom of schizophrenia. A variety of definitions have emerged pertaining to this term. Basically they are false personal beliefs that are not subject to reason or contradictory evidence, are not explained by the person's typical cultural concepts, and do not change when the person is presented with contradictory evidence.

The two basic categories of delusions include *bizarre* and *nonbizarre*. Delusions are considered bizarre if they are clearly implausible, not understandable, and do not originate from an ordinary life experience. What constitutes bizarreness may differ across cultures. The delusional content includes a variety of themes. Some of the most common themes include persecutory, referential, and control.

The most common type is the *persecutory delusion*, where the person thinks they're being singled out for harassment by forces or persons. These people believe they're being stalked, conspired against, and spied on, tormented, tricked, drugged, and poisoned. A variation of the persecutory delusion is the *systematized delusion*, where an organized system of delusions is logically explained using a single theme.

Those exhibiting persecutory delusions believe there is a government plot to destroy them or drive them crazy. The typical perpetrators are the FBI and the CIA. These individuals may also believe that their family is co-conspiring against them, and therefore, may accuse them as being in on it. Some are convinced that their neighbors are harassing them.

Referential delusions are also common, where the person believes that their environment has been arranged with people, media, and objects that are intended to convey symbolic messages. These symbolic messages are believed to be conveyed using gestures, overheard comments, or other environmental cues, which are usually threatening in nature.

Those suffering such delusions may also believe that people on TV or the radio are conveying these messages, and those newspapers, books, and song lyrics are also being used as a medium for this type of communication.

Examples of *delusions of control* include people thinking that their thoughts are being read, that thoughts and feelings are being projected into their minds, and that their bodies are being controlled. Some believe that this is being accomplished by an external force, such magnetic waves originating from their neighbors, the CIA, or FBI.

Hallucinations (Criterion A2)

Hallucinations are false sensory perceptions where someone can see, smell, hear, taste, and/or feel something that isn't there. Auditory hallucinations are the most common, comprising about 70% of all hallucinations, with about 25% being visual.

The auditory hallucinations are experienced as familiar or unfamiliar voices that are perceived as distinct from a person's own thoughts. These voices may comment on a person's ongoing activities, carry on a conversation with them, warn them of impending dangers, or issue them orders. Some hear noises such as clicks or other non-word sounds.

Negative Symptoms (Criterion A4 and A5, Criterion B)

Although they are less prominent, much of the morbidity associated with schizophrenia is due to the negative symptoms (also called deficit symptoms), which appear in Criterion A5 of the *DSM-IV*. These symptoms are manifested by a diminishment in critical functions, such as emotions and behaviors.

In addition to the standard negative symptoms outlined in Criterion A5 of the *DSM-IV*, many publications include in this criterion symptoms listed elsewhere in the *DSM-IV* for the same illness. Because all are considered when making an evaluation, this makes no difference in a diagnosis.

It's just a different method of explaining the symptoms. These additions include: Grossly Disordered Behavior (Criterion A4), Catatonic Behavior (Criterion A4), and Social/Occupational Dysfunction (Criterion B).

Standard Negative Symptoms (Criterion A5)

Problems with emotional expression and motivation are manifested by the presence of symptoms such as affective flattening, alogia, anhedonia, and avolition.

Affective flattening (also called blunted affect) is a common characteristic where a person's face appears unresponsive, emotionless, and immobile. In addition to diminished facial expressions, there may be a reduction in body language and their speech may be monotone.

Alogia is a poverty of speech which is considered to be the result of thought reduction. The person's speech may brief and devoid of any content. Anhedonia is a common symptom manifested by a loss of interest or enjoyment in life and activities.

Avolition is lack of motivation to begin or complete tasks, resulting in a person sitting for long periods of time and showing little interest in work or social functions. In some severe cases, schizophrenics can spend an entire day doing nothing at all.

Grossly Disordered Behavior (Criterion A4-1)

Grossly disorganized behavior includes childlike silliness and unpredictable behavior, difficulty with any goal-directed behavior, trouble performing daily living activities such as personal hygiene and preparing meals. The person may appear blatantly messy, may dress in a manner which is not proper for the climate, or exhibit inappropriate sexual behavior. They may also become agitated and begin shouting or swearing for no good reason.

Catatonic Behavior (Criterion A4-2)

Catatonic motor behaviors include a decrease in reactivity to environmental stimuli. This may reach such a point that a person is completely oblivious to their surroundings. They may maintain a rigid posture, a bizarre posture, and may resist efforts to be moved. They may also make unstimulated excessive movements.

Social/Occupational Dysfunction (Criterion B)

Schizophrenia also involves a dysfunction in areas of life such as personal relations, work, education, and self-care. Frequently, the educational process is disrupted and the person is unable to hold a job for a long period of time. Social withdrawal is common. Most people with schizophrenia have little social contact, and have an inability to make or keep friends. About 70% of them don't marry.

Cognitive Symptoms, Disordered Thought/Speech (Criterion A3)

According to the *DSM-IV*, disorganized thinking/speech (also called thought disorder) is the single most important component of schizophrenia. Cognitive symptoms include deficits in thinking abilities, such as decision-making, paying attention, and remembering. An example includes absorbing information, interpreting it, and making decisions about it.

Because it's difficult to arrive at an objective definition of thought disorder, and because speech is an indication of a person's thoughts, disorganized speech is a method used to gauge thought disorder in the *DSM*. There are several ways to determine if this symptom exists.

A person may jump from one topic to the next (derailment), may provide answers which are unrelated to the questions that are asked (tangentiality), and sometimes their speech will be so disorganized that it's incomprehensible.

Included in this category is a symptom called *anosognosia* which prevents people from understanding that they're suffering from a mental disorder. It is believed that this lack of insight is a manifestation of the illness rather than denial. This symptom does not improve with medication. Cognitive and negative symptoms may be so similar that they're difficult to differentiate.

Other/Mood

In addition to the positive, negative, and cognitive symptoms, some schizophrenics experience mood disorders such as depression and anxiety resulting in mood swings similar to bipolar disorder.

When mood instability is the primary feature of the illness, it's called *schizoaffective disorder*, which means that a combination of schizophrenia and a mood disorder are present. Some believe schizoaffective disorder is just a subtype of schizophrenia, while others think it's a separate disorder.

Schizophrenia is expressed differently in men and women. Women tend to express more affective symptoms such as delusions, and hallucinations, while men express more negative symptoms such as flat affect, avolition, and social withdrawal. The basic symptoms are the same in children.

Causes and Studies

Schizophrenia is not caused by a lesion in the nervous system or any biochemical disturbances in the body. Its etiology is unknown. There is no medical exam that can diagnose it. Scientists have given many theories to explain the cause of schizophrenia.

The most widely accepted is the *dopamine theory*, which is based on the idea that it is caused by an imbalance of chemicals in the brain. Specifically, it suggests that there is an imbalance in dopamine neurotransmitters, but this has not yet been confirmed.

The imbalance is thought to be caused by genes, viruses, or problems at birth which impact brain development. It has also been suggested that neurons which formed inappropriate connections during fetal development remain dormant until later in life, when natural changes in the brain influence the underlying faulty connections, which produce the characteristic symptoms. Regions of the human genome are being studied to identify genes that place someone at risk for developing schizophrenia.

Diagnosis

While it was easier to describe the symptoms using the positive-negative-cognitive format as the primary structure, for diagnostic purposes we'll use the standard *DSM-IV* format. No single symptom can constitute a diagnosis of schizophrenia. In order to diagnose someone with schizophrenia a variety of conditions and symptoms must be met which are detailed in Criteria A through F.

They include the Criterion A symptoms such as delusions (A1), hallucinations (A2), disorganized speech/thought (A3), disorganized behavior (A4), catatonic behavior (A4), and negative symptoms (A5). They also include symptoms pertaining to social and occupational dysfunction (Criterion B), as well as a minimum duration (Criterion C).

Furthermore, other underlying causes must be considered as described in the mood disorder exclusion (Criterion D), substance/general medical condition exclusion (Criterion E), and developmental disorder exclusion (Criterion F).

We've already examined the symptoms associated with Criterion A. They include delusions (A1), hallucinations (A2), disorganized speech/thought (A3), disorganized behavior (A4), catatonic behavior (A4), and negative symptoms (A5). At least two of these symptoms must be present for a minimum of one month in order for Criterion A to be met.

Criterion C requires that some signs of the illness described in Criterion A or B must persist for a continuous period of at least 6 months. And that during the 6 month period at least 1 month must include at least two symptoms from Criterion A.

This means that if any two symptoms from Criterion A persist for 6 months then Criterions A, B, and C are met. Therefore, Criterion B, which includes social and occupational dysfunction, is not necessary to make a diagnosis of schizophrenia.

Also, if delusions are judged bizarre, or voices are commenting on a person's thought pattern or behavior, or if two or more voices are conversing, then only that single symptom is necessary to meet Criterion A. Even if these symptoms subside within a month in response to treatment, then Criterion A will still have been met if the clinician believes they would have persisted absent the medication.

Criterion D is met if the illness is not better accounted for by schizoaffective disorder or mood disorder with psychotic features (bipolar disorder). Other than that, Criterion E and F are just exclusions for drugs or biological disorders that can cause the symptoms.

If the disorder is not attributed to an illegal drug or medication, or an underlying medical condition with a biological origin, then Criterion E is met. If a developmental disorder such as autism is not found, then Criterion F is met.

Other exclusions that do not belong to a specific criterion, but which clinicians should make include cultural differences which may influence beliefs and behavior. For instance, in some cultures sorcery and witchcraft are normal and are not part of a delusional belief system. Likewise, auditory and visual hallucinations may be part of a normal religious experience in some cultures.

Delusions that occur while falling asleep or waking up should not be considered when making a diagnosis. Occasionally hearing one's name called or humming noises are in the range of normal experiences.

Linguistic differences may account for disorganized speech. In addition, when assessing flat effect, cultural variations resulting in different ways of emotional expression, eye contact, body language, etc. should be considered. Because of these complications, some clinicians have had a tendency to overdiagnose schizophrenia in some racial groups.

Medical disorders with a biological origin can produce symptoms that are consistent with schizophrenia. Therefore, medical exams are done to rule out these possibilities. Some conditions which can cause these symptoms include: brain tumors, AIDS, encephalitis, epilepsy, multiple sclerosis, Alzheimer's disease, metabolic disorders, thyroid problems, head injury, drugs and alcohol, and nutritional deficiencies.

There is no physical or laboratory test that can diagnose schizophrenia. Instead, a clinician makes the diagnosis based on symptoms. However, these tests are done to rule out the other possible causes as well as for research purposes. They include blood and urine tests, as well as an examination of the fluid surrounding the brain and spinal cord (cerebrospinal fluid). In addition, an MRI, EEG, X-ray, or CT may be done.

The most accurate way to detect schizophrenia is a mental status exam, which is usually performed by a trained clinician during an interview. Clinicians who are qualified to make a diagnosis include all psychiatrists, many psychologists, and some psychiatric social workers and nurses.

The diagnosis is made by asking questions. Some questions pertain to personal background information such as family, friends, living situation, school, work, interests. Others are about the current symptoms and how they've changed over the course of the illness, any previous mental or physical disorders, and any family history of mental illness.

The clinician identifies specific symptoms and how long they've been present, as well as functional problems in other areas of daily life. They factor in appearance (dress, cleanliness), alertness, and body language including facial expression and tone of voice.

Because a person who is experiencing psychotic symptoms may have difficulty answering questions, his or her friends and relatives may be present during the interview to help the clinician obtain information. They may be particularly helpful in identifying areas of dysfunction (Criterion B), which are the first symptoms they are likely to notice.

The clinician evaluates the person by matching their symptoms to each criterion in a diagnostic system. A diagnostic system is a set of guidelines containing criteria which is used to make a medical diagnosis. Examples of this include the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders IV (DSM-IV)*, *International Classification of Diseases (ICD), Research Diagnostic Criterion (RDC)*, and *Flexible Diagnostic System (FDS)*.

The two most widely used systems in the world include the *DSM*, which is used in the US, and the *ICD*, which is used in most of the rest of the world. The diagnostic criteria are quite similar in both systems.

When making a diagnosis of schizophrenia, subtypes are used for a more accurate description of an individual's condition. They include: paranoid (295.30), disorganized (295.10), catatonic (295.20), undifferentiated (295.90), and residual (295.60). The most common is paranoid.

The diagnosis of a subtype is based on the most recent evaluation of the patient and may change over time. All subtypes include symptoms of hallucinations and delusions. In addition, schizophrenia can further be broken down into more precise descriptions called *specifiers* after a period of one year.

Course, Prognosis, Process

The progression of the illness can vary considerably among individuals. But there are several distinct phases including the prodromal phase, the acute (also called active) phase, and the residual phase.

The prodromal phase includes less intense symptoms such as depression, lack of enjoyment in daily activities, and social withdrawal. Early signs also include cognitive problems such as not being able to focus, forgetting things more easily, neglecting personal hygiene, and not making logical connections. The change in behavior which these symptoms produce is often the first sign that friends and family notice.

The onset of psychotic symptoms is called the acute (active) phase which includes hallucinations, delusions, and disordered thinking. It is during this phase that a person suffers a psychotic break and is hospitalized, where they're evaluated and given treatment (medication). This phase may develop over a period of months or years. Some may experience this phase only once in their lifetime.

The residual phase includes a stabilization of the individual due to a reduction of acute symptoms, which is usually the result of medication. The patient is then released from the hospital or program and must be monitored for the rest of their life.

Residual symptoms include lack of energy, social withdrawal which may last years, or for some, disappear quickly. The residual phase can often last years until interrupted by a relapse into the acute phase. However, with regular medication, relapse can be kept to a minimum.

After the hospital discharge the patient receives intensive outpatient treatment. They attend group therapy sessions to help them resume their lives. They are assigned psychiatrists and nurses to help them with problems regarding their medication.

They may also have a therapist and case manager. Case Managers help schizophrenics find places to live, get benefits, etc. Because there is no cure for schizophrenia, patients must continue to see a psychiatrist or therapist indefinitely. The course of the illness for people who attend psychosocial rehabilitation programs while continuing with their medication is better, according to some research results.

Women have a better prognosis than men as evident by the number of rehospitalizations, lengths of hospital stays, relapse rates, responses to medication, and social functioning. However, even with medication, most people have it chronically or episodically throughout their entire lives.

Treatment

Medication

Medication is said to be the best treatment for schizophrenia. According to some sources most people with the illness show substantial improvement when treated with these drugs. Some are not helped much by the medications, and a few don't seem to need them.

The drugs used to treat schizophrenia are called *antipsychotics*, (also called *neuroleptics*). They help to relive the hallucinations and delusions, and to some extent, cognitive problems. Medication is also associated with a reduction in the number of relapses which result in hospitalization. According to some studies, 70% of those diagnosed with the illness that refuse medication will have a relapse, compared with only 30% of those who take their medication.

Medication does not completely eliminate psychotic symptoms. Instead it reduces them. About 20% to 40% of those who take medication continue to have hallucinations and delusions, but the symptoms are notably reduced.

Scientists think that antipsychotics are effective in correcting an imbalance in the dopamine neurotransmitters, which send nerve impulses across synapses. Some theories suggest that schizophrenics have too much dopamine in the mesolimbic area of the brain, which is involved in imagery, perception, and emotion, and too little in the prefrontal cortex, which is responsible for attention and processing information. Antipsychotics are thought to work by correcting this alleged imbalance.

The most common way of taking antipsychotics is in pill or liquid form, usually between one and three times a day. Some antipsychotics can be taken in fast-acting injections, which are usually used in situations where an individual needs to calm down. Others are available in long-lasting injections which only need to be given every 2-4 weeks. Even if the symptoms are reduced, it is suggested that medication should be continued to prevent a relapse into the acute phase.

The two basic types of antipsychotics include *typical* (also called *conventional* or *first generation*), which are older medications, and *atypical* (also called *novel* or *second generation*), which are relatively new. To describe these kinds of medications, first the generic name will be given, followed by the brand name in parentheses.

Typical antipsychotics were introduced in the 1950s, and all were similar in their ability to relieve the positive symptoms of the illness. They include: chlorpromazine (Thorazine), fluphenazine (Prolixin), haloperidol (Haldol), thiothixene (Navane), trifluoperazine (Stelazine), perphenazine (Trilafon), loxapine (Loxitane), mesoridazine (Serentil), molindone (Moban), and thioridazine (Mellaril). Haloperidol, perphenazine, and fluphenazine can be administered by injection.

All antipsychotics have side effects which differ depending on the type of drug and dosage. Some can be corrected by lowering the dosage, switching to another medication, or adding a medication. Side effects of typical antipsychotics include a type of restless motion called *akathisia*, symptoms resembling Parkinson's disease, stiffness, dry mouth, drowsiness, sedation, blurred vision, and constipation.

Of particular concern is a permanent disorder called *tardive dyskinesia (TD)* which occurs in about 15 to 20 percent of patients, and is characterized by involuntary movements of the lips, tongue, and sometimes the arms and legs.

Atypical antipsychotics appeared in the early 1990s. All had similar results reducing the positive symptoms of the illness, and were thought to be more effective at reducing some of the negative ones. They include: aripiprazole, (Abilify), clozapine (Clozaril, Fazaclo), olanzapine (Zyprexa, Xydis, Symbyax), quetiapine (Seroquel), risperidone (Risperdal, M-tabs, Consta), and ziprasidone (Geodon).

Atypical antipsychotics cause fewer side effects such as TD, motor side effects (extrapyramidal), restlessness (akathisia), and spontaneous expressiveness (akinesia). All cause metabolic problems that result in weight gain, and increase a person's chances of developing diabetes, although they may vary in their risk for these conditions. Clozapine, which appears to be more effective than other atypicals, has a possible severe side effect that includes the loss of white blood cells, a condition called *agranulocytosis*.

In addition to taking medications for psychotic symptoms, schizophrenics may also need to take medication for depression, anxiety, and mood instability. For instance, mood stabilizers may be prescribed, such carbamazepine (tegretol) which is an antiseizure medication. The side effects of it include motor coordination problems, upset stomach, blurred vision, and drowsiness. Valproic acid (depakote) is another mood stabilizer, which has similar side effects. It is common for someone diagnosed with schizophrenia to be taking as many as 5 to 10 medications each day.

Although it is not usually used anymore to treat schizophrenia, electroconvulsive therapy (ECT) may also be used to induce a mild electric shock to a person's brain, thereby creating a controlled seizure. This is thought to allow the brain circuits to reset themselves, resulting in a calmer attitude.

There is a variety of reasons why a schizophrenic may not comply with treatment. Most are unable to understand that they're ill, and therefore, don't believe medication is necessary. Some discontinue their medication because of its side effects or they don't believe it's working, or have such disorganized thinking that they can't remember to take it. Also, family and friends of those suffering from the illness may inappropriately persuade them to stop.

Family members and doctors can work together to construct a schedule with various reminders that will influence the ill person to take their medication. Family members can help the individual make their medication intake part of their daily routine by placing the medication in areas around the house as a reminder for the ill person to take them. In addition, some antipsychotics are available in long-lasting injections which eliminate this problem. More long-lasting injections are currently being developed.

Relatives of those diagnosed with schizophrenia may need to take an even more active role in persuading a family member to take their medication. In some cases, medication can be given to an individual against their will, or they may be required to take their medication as a condition of living in the community.

Therapy

A variety of therapeutic approaches are available. Some of these may be offered in private mental health agencies, local hospitals, private psychiatrists or therapists. In addition, state-funded community mental health centers (CMHC) are available all across the US to provide therapy for individuals, families, and groups.

The types of programs offered may vary, but some include individual psychotherapy (also called talk therapy), which involves the individual and a mental health specialist such as a psychiatrist, psychologist, social worker, or nurse. With this type of therapy, patients begin to understand their problems by sorting out the real from the unreal.

Another is behavior therapy, which focuses on changing unwanted behavior by developing new behavior patterns and removing maladaptive ones. Cognitive therapy is often used with behavior therapy, and includes correcting inaccurate patterns of thinking, by helping individuals test the validity of some of their beliefs. There is also group therapy that includes a group of people with similar mental disorders that works on issues with the guidance of a therapist.

Family education (psychoeducation) is also useful because schizophrenics are usually released from the hospital in the care of their family. So, it is very important that family members learn about this illness in order to assist the individual. With this type of therapy, families are educated on a variety of skills that will allow for a more effective outcome for the patient. Some of this education includes strategies to improve adherence to medication.

However, psychotherapy is usually reserved for those exhibiting less severe symptoms. Medication is the primary treatment. Therefore, before therapy begins, people are often given medication to reduce their delusions and hallucinations.

Peer groups exist (also called advocacy groups) which offer volunteer programs to help the mentally ill gain work experience, as well as support, and social opportunities. One of these is the National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), which provides education, advocacy, and support for individual patients, families, and professionals interested in learning about this illness. Although they may not be led by professional therapists, they offer therapy in the form of mutual support, and serve other functions such as patient advocacy.

Involuntary Commitment (Assisted Treatment)

In a situation where someone who is thought to be mentally ill is exhibiting what are considered to be psychotic symptoms, such as delusions or hallucinations, they can be involuntarily committed. This can be done by family members, guardians, police, licensed physicians, or in most states any common person.

An involuntary commitment process can be initiated by contacting the police, the local mobile crisis team (also called the crisis team, and psychiatric crisis unit), accompanying them to the emergency room, or filing a petition.

Some common signs which constitute a forced commitment include: refusal to take medication; verbally or physically abusive; suicidal ideas; harms self; homeless, which may result in harm to self; refusal to speak with anyone; delusions of grandeur; delusions of persecution; dangerously disorganized; deteriorating health.

Most hospitals have mobile crisis teams which are partnered with the local police. The teams consist of mental health professionals such as master's level psychologists, social workers, or nurses, who can evaluate a person's mental health at certain locations.

If the team judges that hospitalization is warranted, they'll ask the suspected mentally ill person to accompany them to the hospital. If the person refuses, they immediately initiate a legal process for involuntary commitment, which may result in the individual's eventual commitment. In addition, the police can usually force a person to undergo a psychiatric evaluation.

Commitments can be long or short-term. The initial commitment is a 3-7 day stay at the nearest psychiatric facility, where a doctor performs an evaluation and diagnosis. During this time, a legal proceeding may occur which could result in a long term commitment of about 2 or 3 weeks.

A person may then be released from the hospital under a court order known as an *outpatient commitment* which requires them to comply with treatment. Another compliance method called a *conditional release* gives the hospital the authority to judge whether a person is adequately complying with treatment (medication). In either case, if the person is thought to be noncompliant, they may be involuntarily placed back into the hospital.

If a person is diagnosed with schizophrenia and refuses treatment, they can be force medicated at any time. There are other methods which can ensure compliance with medication. They include: assertive case management, representative payee, guardianship, and benevolent coercion.

With *assertive case management*, teams of mental health professionals called *case managers* actively seek out those resisting treatment at their homes (or anywhere else in the community), and ensure compliance. An example of this type of team is the Program of Assertive Community Treatment (PACT).

An arrangement called *representative payee* allows for a psychiatric clinic, case manager, or family member to receive the SSI and VA disability checks of an individual, which are then given to the person only if they're compliant. Some PACT teams can be designated as payees.

With a *guardianship* a court appoints someone else to permanently make all treatment decisions for the mentally ill person. If the ill person has been arrested, an option called *benevolent coercion* can be used which allows them the option of either serving jail time or complying with medical treatment. In housing facilities that are reserved for those with psychiatric disorders, treatment can be enforced by threatening to remove the person if they fail to comply with medication.

Control of the Medical Industry
Manipulation of Washington

In order to understand how an entire medical system consisting of a multitude of seemingly independent organizations has been providing complete cover for this war against citizens, and is used to attack them, it will be instructive to show that upon closer observation we find that these organizations function as a single complex, which is tightly controlled from the top by the pharmaceutical industry.

Pharmaceutical companies basically run Washington through their agent lobbyists, many of which are former federal employees. These lobbyists work for corporations to promote their issues in the House, Senate, the FDA, the Department of Health and Human Services (which includes the National Institutes of Health), and executive branch offices.

Between 1998 and 2004 the pharmaceutical industry spent more money lobbying Congress than any other industry. The industry now has two lobbyists for each member of Congress and is said to be able to thwart attempts to regulate its practices. In addition to each member of congress being influenced by lobbyists, some have received hundreds of thousands of dollars from drug corporations in the form of campaign contributions.

The industry's influence in Washington can be traced back at least to the first Bush administration. George H. W. Bush was on the board of directors for Eli Lilly after leaving the CIA, and before running for vice-president in 1980. As Vice President, he began weakening the FDA's approval process for all drugs.

Dan Quayle's campaign to become senator of Indiana was heavily funded by Eli Lilly. Then, as Vice President, Quayle recruited former Eli Lilly employees on his staff. In 1988 the Bush-Quayle administration allowed Eli Lilly to restructure the FDA's approval process to suit their needs.

"Washington is the axis of the industry's power," proclaimed Melody Petersen, a former health reporter for the *New York Times*. Drug corporations have a tremendous influence on the practices of federal agencies such as the National Institutes of Health (NIH), and the Food and Drug Administration (FDA).

National Institutes of Health

The National Institutes of Health (NIH) consist of about 27 federal research centers and institutes, (including the National Institute of Mental Health), that are known for their scientific research on behalf of the public. Officially founded in 1938, it was the federal government's first research institute for combating epidemic diseases.

The NIH is partially funded by drug corporations. In addition, many of the NIH's senior doctors have significant ties to drug corporations. These officials have made hundreds of thousands of dollars consulting for the industry while serving at the NIH, as reported on December 7, 2003 in the *Los Angeles Times*.

Records obtained by the *Times* document hundreds of consulting payments to top ranking NIH officials. To cover the story, the *Times* obtained federal records such as Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) requests from the FDA, filings with the Securities and Exchange Commission, lawsuits, as well as information available on drug company web sites, and many interviews.

Dr. Stephen Katz, Director of the NIH's National Institute of Arthritis and Musculoskeletal and Skin Diseases, collected at least $470,000 from the industry in the last decade. Beginning in 1997 up to about 2003, the director of the NIH's Clinical Center, Dr. John I. Gallin received at least $450,000 in fees and stock options. The NIH's top diabetes researcher in 1997, Dr. Richard C. Eastman, received funds from the industry while advocating a product that was later linked to liver failure.

Dr. Ronald N. Germain, the deputy director of a major laboratory at the National Institute of Allergy and Infectious Diseases, was paid at least $1.4 million over an 11-year period beginning in the early 1990s. Over a 10 year period, Dr. Jeffrey Schlom, director of the National Cancer Institute's Laboratory of Tumor Immunology and Biology, was paid over $300,000 by the industry.

Jeffrey M. Trent received up to $160,000 in consulting fees from the industry between 1993 and 1996 while serving as the scientific director of the National Human Genome Research Institute. The director of in-house research at the National Institute of Allergy and Infectious Diseases, Dr. Thomas J. Kindt, accepted about $63,000 in consulting fees.

Dr. P. Trey Sunderland, an expert on Alzheimer's disease, received more than $500,000 between 1998 and 2004 from the industry for dozens of speaking tours all over the world. These and other NIH connections to drug corporations were approved by the deputy director of the NIH, Dr. Ruth L. Kirschstein, who commented, "I think NIH scientists, NIH directors and all the staff are highly ethical people with enormous integrity."

Most information regarding corporate payments to NIH doctors are not publicly available. NIH policy now allows about 94% of its senior employees to keep their consulting income confidential.

National Institute of Mental Health

A component of the NIH, the National Institute of Mental Health (NIMH) is a federally funded agency which deals with issues relating to mental illness in America. It sponsors a variety of "awareness raising" campaigns which are funded in part by drug corporations. An example of this would be Eli Lilly's multimillion dollar "Depression Awareness" campaign to promote Prozac.

Dr. Peter R. Breggin, author of the book, *Brain-Disabling Treatments in Psychiatry, Drugs, Electroshock, and the Psychopharmaceutical Complex*, says that while he was a full-time consultant to the NIMH from 1966 to 1968 it sought ways to improve the nation's mental health through social, educational, economic, and psychological methods. However, it underwent a transformation in the 1970s when organized psychiatry and drug corporations established control over it.

The NIMH conducts highly expensive clinical studies on behalf of these corporations to promote their products. In addition, it publishes a massive amount of literature pertaining to mental illness, much of which benefits drug corporations and organized psychiatry.

"Both the FDA and NIMH," commented Dr. Breggin, "Are now agents of the psychopharmaceutical complex. They do virtually everything in their power to promote biologically oriented psychiatry and the products of the psychopharmaceutical industry."

Food and Drug Administration

The Food and Drug Administration (FDA) which is responsible for the drug approval process and determines whether or not a drug should be withdrawn, also has financial ties to the industry. The FDA does not perform its own independent studies during the drug approval process because it lacks the funding to do so. The FDA relies on data furnished by drug corporations while evaluating their products.

The FDA relies almost entirely on information that has been gathered, organized, and interpreted by drug corporations. Dr. Breggin elaborated, "All of the studies involved in the FDA approval process are designed completely by the drug companies and conducted by physicians hired and paid for by them."

In addition to relying almost entirely on information provided by drug companies, the FDA will solicit funds from them to expedite the approval process. The division of the FDA that approves new drugs receives more than half of its funding from drug corporations. And between 1993 and 2001 it received about $825 million from the industry.

Front Groups

Description
Front groups have the appearance of serving patients and the general public by providing information and advocacy, but have in fact been created or infiltrated by drug corporations, and are used as a facade to boost their sales. They include professional societies and independent organizations such as patient advocacy groups.

Drug corporations not only sponsor these organizations, they usually have strong financial ties to the academic physicians that provide the groups' educational material. Under the guise of educating the public, these groups produce books, web sites, and other initiatives to promote prescription drugs.

Professional Societies
Many medical professional groups have financial ties to drug corporations which have a direct influence on their publications. Some have guidelines on the amount and types of gifts they can accept, but there are many other ways that physicians can be bribed. And some appear to be violating their own rules.

A few of the societies under the industry's influence or control include: the American Thoracic Society (ATS), the Society for Critical Care Medicine (SCCM), the Endocrine Society, the American Psychiatric Association (APA), the American College of Physicians (ACP), the American Heart Association (AHA), the American Medical Association (AMA), and others.

These societies hold annual conferences where awards funded by and named after drug corporations are given to its members, such as the Eli Lilly and Company Research Award of the American Society of Microbiology, The American Psychiatric Institute for Research and Education (APIRE)/GlaxoSmithKline Award, etc. In addition, they form panels of experts consisting of their members who produce clinical practice guidelines (CPG), which other physicians use daily as diagnostic tools.

The American Psychiatric Association (APA), representing most of the psychiatrists in the US, is said to be completely dependent on funds from drug corporations. Its national conferences are also funded by millions of dollars from the industry. Drug corporations also support the APA's efforts to lobby congress for favorable legislation.

Operating through these professional organizations, drug corporations initiate projects to portray their prescription drugs in a favorable manner. They may offer *ghostwritten* articles to physicians, select speakers for meetings, and provide authors of CPGs who assist the corporations in their marketing objectives.

In addition to the societies themselves receiving funds from corporations, the committees or panels that these professional societies create to produce CPGs, typically include individual physicians with financial connections to the industry. These professional organizations may receive unrestricted grants from drug corporations.

In his book *On the Take: How America's Complicity with Big Business Can Endanger Your Health*, Dr. Jerome P. Kassirer describes these professional societies as marketing agents for drug companies. He explained: "From the many complex arrangements, it is apparent that physicians and medical professional organizations with close financial ties to industry are intricately involved in developing clinical practice guidelines and a variety of new industry-sponsored pamphlets, books, web sites, registries, and quality initiatives."

Patient Advocacy Groups and Nonprofit Organizations
At least two-thirds of consumer advocacy groups (also called *patient advocacy groups*) are funded by drug corporations. They include the National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Children and Adults with Attention-Deficit/Hyperactivity Disorder (CHADD), and others. These groups hold national meetings where drug advocates interact with patients.

These corporate-funded groups produce books, web sites, pamphlets, and other material to promote the use of prescription drugs to alleviate supposed mental disorders. They suppress altering views and promote the belief that there is a tremendous underdiagnosis of mental disorders. In addition, they provide a network of suffering patients to perform patient testimonials for PR firms hired by drug corporations during their "awareness raising" campaigns.

CHADD receives about $700,000 from the industry annually. Some groups are more heavily funded, although it unknown exactly how much most of them receive because they don't disclose their sources.

NAMI is the largest patient advocacy group in the US for people with mental disorders. NAMI works with drug corporations to lobby congress to create legislation that benefits the industry. From 1996 to 1999 it received $11.7 million from 18 drug corporations, including GSK, Wyeth, and Eli Lilly. From 2006 to 2008 NAMI received almost $23 million from the industry.

In addition to being financed heavily by the industry, NAMI's executive director, Michael Fitzpatrick, has frequently met with sales representatives from corporations such as AstraZeneca, who provided direct advice about how to advocate forcefully for issues that affect industry profits, as reported in the *New York Times* in October of 2009.

US Senator Charles Grassley, who began a congressional investigation in 2008 into drug company influence on the medical community, had this to say about these groups: "I have come to understand that money from the pharmaceutical industry shapes the practices of nonprofit organizations which purport to be independent in their viewpoints and actions."

The American Medical Association (AMA) is a nonprofit organization that receives funding from the industry. The free distribution of its journals, including the *Archives of General Psychiatry*, and the *Archives of Internal Medicine*, is made possible by drug company advertising.

Before 1951 it was a truly independent organization with its own laboratory which it used to determine the effectiveness and safety of drugs. Drug corporations were not allowed to advertise in its journal, the *Journal of the American Medical Association*, unless their products were worthy of the AMA seal.

Then in 1950 it received about $2.5 million from the industry from advertisements in its journals. A decade later it received about $10 million. Gradually it removed its critical stance toward the industry, stopped publishing its books on useful drugs, and abandoned its seal of approval.

One of the nation's leading nonprofit mental health associations, Mental Health America (MHA), formerly the National Mental Health Association (NMHA), also receives money from the industry. In 1993 Eli Lilly contributed about $3 million to MHA, which resulted in promotional campaigns in the form of TV commercials by the MHA pleading with potential patients to see their doctors if they thought they were depressed.

MHA has since received millions in financing from drug corporations. In 2008 alone the organization received over $1 million from the industry, with $500,000 from Pfizer and $600,000 from Eli Lilly. Dr. Nada Stotland, current board member of the MHA and 2008 president of the APA, is currently on the speakers bureau for both Pfizer and GSK.

The Industry's Influence of Doctors
Recruitment

The majority of the industry's marketing is directed at recruiting physicians. The reason is that each doctor may write millions of dollars worth of prescriptions during their careers. Plus, the physicians interact directly with patients and usually have their trust. Drug corporations even rank some physicians according to their lifetime prescribing potential.

The recruitment of physicians begins in academic medical centers and hospitals where they are identified by pharmaceutical salespeople called *detailers*. The detailers frequently visit these facilities to aggressively promote drug products while providing meals and gifts to students.

According to the *New England Journal of Medicine*, medical students receive a substantial amount of meals and other favors from drug corporations. The students are often invited to what the *Journal* describes as quasi-social events, where they hear industry-sponsored lectures. All of this is done with the approval of the teaching facility.

Apparently the industry capitalizes on the susceptibility of students who are usually tired, and who need encouragement, kindness, and free food. "Drug company representatives appreciate these vulnerabilities and needs, and step in to help," observed Dr. Kassirer.

Dr. Kassirer witnessed a typical one of these put out by Pfizer, where two well-dressed detailers in their late 20s provided a buffet for a teaching conference. One was stationed at the beginning of the line, the other at the end. As the students arrived, each was engaged by the detailers in small-talk such as "How are you?" "How are you doing?" etc., then they would be given information regarding a new drug.

In their book, *Selling Sickness: How the World's Biggest Pharmaceutical Companies are Turning us All Into Patients*, authors Ray Moynihan and Alan Cassels, describe the recruitment process this way: "The entanglement starts with free pizzas for the hard-working hospital residents and interns, and from then on it never stops."

They continued: "As US physicians graduate from the hospital wards out into their own practices, there to greet them daily is an eighty-thousand-strong army of drug company representatives [detailers] ... always ready with a smile, some warm doughnuts, and a dose of friendly advice about the newest drugs and the latest diseases."

After graduation, physicians are usually in debt from educational loans, which make them particularly vulnerable to the financial rewards provided by drug corporations. In addition, they often see their senior role models lavishing themselves with these gifts. So, they begin by accepting meals and gifts, then, reportedly, some even demand industry donations as their careers advance.

There is a silent progression, illustrated Dr. Kassirer, from the innocence of accepting gifts and food to a later bland and unquestioning acceptance of pharmaceutical money by physicians as their careers advance. "With no restrictions," proclaimed Petersen, "nearly 95 percent of American physicians now line their pockets with corporate lucre."

Practicing Physicians

Those not recruited during med school may later be aggressively targeted by detailers who visit practicing doctors at their offices and can be seen all over hospitals and academic medical centers ... always providing gifts. They frequently deliver meals for conferences at these establishments. And in some cases, physicians in private practice as well as heads of departments at hospitals will directly solicit drug corporations for meals.

Some gifts have included: TVs, VCRs, theater tickets, dinners at local restaurants, PDAs, concerts, tickets to sporting events, gift certificates, all-expense paid trips to resorts with honorariums of up to $2,000, meals delivered to their offices, etc. According to Dr. Kassirer, it is incredibly simple to recruit physicians because the deals they're offered by drug corporations are impressive.

There is now at least one detailer for every six physicians. Each one has an expense account that allows them to provide doctors with gifts, meals, and cash payments. Petersen cites a manual she was able to read by Tap Pharmaceuticals, which mentioned that detailers should expect hospitals and private practice doctors to ask them for cash. The detailers would deliver the money on the condition that the doctors would write more prescriptions.

Some of these gifts are offered under the guise of "educational" expeditions. The industry has arranged it so that hundreds of supposedly independent doctors can be flown to a resort, informed about a company's new drug, and paid for attending.

Pfizer has done this. And physicians have received up to $1,000 for attending one-day workshops by Merck. Those who are willing to give talks about the products receive additional money. The attendees of the expeditions may then be added to the company's paid stable of speakers.

Some receive phone calls from representatives of drug corporations asking them to listen to "educational" programs over the phone, for which they may receive $100. In addition, free dinners sponsored by corporations are also offered, which include educational seminars about new drugs.

Some drug corporations even pay physicians or pharmacies to allow them to view their patient's files. Private practice doctors may receive up to $4,000 for enrolling individual patients in drug trials. They reportedly make tens of thousands of dollars a year from this, in addition to their regular salary. Furthermore, they may be used as expert witnesses in lawsuits against drug corporations.

In the area of psychiatric drug testing, organizations make as much as $40,000 for each patient that they successfully convince to complete a drug trial. The Office of Clinical Trials at Columbia University, for instance, receives about $10 million per year from drug corporations for enrolling patients to test new medications.

"University psychiatry departments, private research clinics and some individual doctors live on this money," declared Dr. Loren R. Mosher in his article, *Are Psychiatrists Betraying Their Patients?*, which appeared in the September/October 1999 issue of *Psychology Today*.

Most physicians with ties to the drug corporations swear they could not be influenced by a financial conflict of interest. According to the *New England Journal of Medicine*, many physicians become outraged when it's implied that their financial ties to these corporations affect their work. They insist that, they cannot be bought, that no matter what the blandishments, they can remain objective.

However, says Dr. Kassirer, "this posture ignores what we know about human nature and the powerful influence of money." Studies show that physicians are influenced by the industry's gifts. The drug corporations are certainly convinced of this, which is why most of their marketing money is spent not on the public, but on the doctors—the agents whom the public interact with.

To prove his point, Dr. Kassirer cites the *rule of reciprocation* described by Professor Robert Cialdini, Regents Professor of Psychology and Marketing at Arizona State University. The rule states that we tend to give back to others what they've provided for us.

Professor Cialdini discovered that reciprocation is a very powerful motivator after studying the persuasive tactics of salespeople, fund-raisers, advertisers, and PR firms. Providing favors and gifts are important tactics used to obligate people to return favors.

In fact, reciprocation is the first rule in Professor Cialdini's *weapons of influence* for getting others to do your bidding. This has worked even when the exchanges are unequal. For instance, a small gift has been given, which influences the receiver to repay a larger amount to the giver. An effective way to place someone in debt, according to this rule, is by delivering persistent uninvited favors over a period of time. According to Petersen, almost all American doctors accept these gifts.

In an August 2008 interview on *National Public Radio*, Professor Cialdini portrayed his arsenal of influence like this: "For the last 50 years, what's developed is a solid science of persuasion." He described it as a scientifically grounded set of rules that, if used, increase the likelihood that people will respond favorably. "It's all in the science of knowing how the rule for reciprocation works in our society," he explained.

Further Education

Most states require physicians to take about 50 hours of instructions each year as part of their continuing education. These may occur at resorts which doctors are flown to, workshops, annual conferences, over the phone, or dinners where speeches are given. In many cases the doctors receive pay for attending.

Almost half of the refresher courses themselves are funded by drug corporations and take place at their various venues. Furthermore, many medical and psychiatric textbooks, which are used as the educational material, are written by consultants with strong ties to drug corporations.

The pharmaceutical industry has become increasingly interested in funding continuing medical education, according to *The Boston Globe*. For instance, the Massachusetts General Hospital psychiatry department raised about $6.5 million from Cephalon, Janssen, GSK, and Wyeth for its 2005 continuing education program which provided lectures to doctors nationwide.

The lectures were to be offered at hospitals, medical schools, and educational companies, as well as teleconferences, and webcasts. Many of the psychiatrists who teach the courses are consultants for, or receive research funding from, drug corporations.

As much as they prescribe these drugs, most doctors know little about them, says Dr. Breggin. And the information they receive pertaining to them is often provided in the form of advertisements funded by the industry.

Dr. Jerry Avorn and his colleagues at Harvard Medical School found that when a group of doctors where asked about the properties of certain prescription drugs, their answers resembled information in drug advertisements rather than scientific literature. Only very few become experts on prescription drugs, but these people are typically not an unbiased source of information because they're almost always heavily connected to the industry.

Moynihan and Cassels advised, "Many of our doctors, no matter how committed and hardworking, are still prescribing under the influence of marketing campaigns designed to sell us sickness." "You can trust your doctors," agreed Dr. Breggin, "only to the degree that you can trust the drug companies who provide them with most of their drug information."

Conferences

There are more than 300,000 scientific conferences and events sponsored by the industry each year. Many of them are hosted by the various professional societies which are partially or mostly funded by drug corporations.

During these meetings, "educational" material, including speaking sessions and literature, is given to the attendees. At least 60% (and in some cases 100%) of this material is based on research funded by drug corporations. In addition to the presentation material being produced mostly by the industry, almost all of the doctors who deliver the speeches at these conferences are consultants to at least one drug corporation.

For instance, at the 2005 APA conference in Atlanta Georgia, the list of psychiatrists scheduled to speak who disclosed that they were receiving payments from the industry, numbered in the hundreds. Some speakers were consulting for as many as 25 different corporations.

At some of these meetings, clusters of doctors wondering through the halls are reportedly met by pharmaceutical sales representatives who greet them with gifts and smiles. The halls themselves are filled with expensive artistic creations consisting of lights, sound, food, and electronic gizmos that announce the successes of the companies' drugs. The doctors themselves sometimes become walking advertisements for drug corporations, with corporate logos looped around their necks.

Attendees receive free items at display booths if they express even a minimum of interest. Some allegedly crowd and push their way through to the booths in order to get the gifts. All gifts are marked with corporate or brand logos.

Some doctors carry multiple bags which they stuff with loot, including: notepads, coffee mugs, tiny fans, rubber models of various organs, plastic trinkets of all sorts, candy, samples of drugs, baseball caps, mouse pads, small flashlights, luggage tags, etc.

"People outside of medicine would be dazzled to watch some physicians interact with industry representatives at medical meetings," observed Dr. Kassirer. At one meeting he attended, a pharmaceutical company was giving away an item the size of a book in an unmarked box. He witnessed physicians grabbing them in frenzy even though they had no idea what was inside. At another meeting he watched them repeatedly reach over and behind sales representatives to snag T-shirts when they couldn't be handed out fast enough.

Peterson recognized the same behavior at a meeting she attended, where she witnessed physicians wandering through halls, stopping at each booth to pick up a few items and stuffing them into large shopping bags, which were filled with trinkets. In addition to these gifts, there's always plenty of free food.

At some booths doctors can simply walk up and grab an item. However, the bigger gifts require that a questionnaire be filled out which allows the sponsoring corporation to obtain some of the doctor's private information. The questionnaires themselves are advertisements in disguise.

And if a doctor doesn't know the answer to a question, a helpful sales representative is always there to provide the correct answer (promotional plugin). After they have given their private information to a company, he or she is vigorously targeted for various promotions.

Journalist Ray Moynihan and policy researcher Alan Cassels attended the 2004 annual conference of the APA in New York City. They mentioned that the exhibit hall contained many booths run by sales representatives offering free gifts to psychiatrists. "Hundreds of doctors," they explained, "are lining up at the stalls like eager kids at a carnival, filling out forms and entering their names into competitions in the hope of winning tiny trinkets."

At this conference, companies paid about $2,000 for each 10x10 foot booth inside the colossal exhibit hall. They also sponsored 50 scientific sessions throughout the conference which lasted a week. Although the APA won't confirm how much it charges the industry for these sessions, it's reportedly tens of thousands of dollars each.

Some of the speaking sessions occur during meal times. On one day, at breakfast psychiatrists were educated about bipolar disorder at the Marriott Marquis Hotel, sponsored by Eli Lilly. GSK funded a lecture at the Grand Hyatt at lunchtime so they could learn about maternal depression. Then Pfizer provided a lecture on generalized anxiety disorder during a dinner at the Grand Ballroom of the Roosevelt.

The Industry's Control of Research
Thought Leaders

The senior physicians who significantly influence their peers are called *thought leaders* in the industry. Some of them are identified by detailers and then trained by the industry. Thought leaders are used by drug corporations to perform a variety of functions: They conduct the research, write the CPGs, and publish articles in medical journals.

They also "educate" their colleagues at conferences. First, they're given small speaking assignments, and if they're successful they may end up earning thousands of dollars making presentations to their peers at events such as the APA's yearly conference. Some Madison Avenue PR Firms have divisions that specialize in organizing these industry meetings. In addition, they train the industry's leaders on how to speak. They create professional slide presentations and write literature. Frequently, they even write the speeches which the doctors deliver.

Thought leaders are a critical part of the industry. In addition to creating articles which appear in medical journals, these physician consultants may be recruited into a drug company's advisory board or committee where they enter into patent and royalty agreements. Many of them hold positions at prestigious academic institutions while serving as consultants to the industry.

These leaders may be on the advisory boards and speaking panels of multiple drug corporations. Their lectures occur at hospitals, hotels, restaurants, medical meetings, and conferences. And their performance is tracked by measuring the prescribing habits of their peers that have been "educated." According to Dr. Kassirer, such industry leaders have been heavily corrupted by greed due to an enormous infusion of cash.

Research/Schools

Up to three-quarters of the scientific research on prescription drugs is funded by the industry. Some of this occurs at academic institutions, which the industry has close ties with. The researchers who submit these articles are often physicians consulting with the drug companies whose products they are studying. These doctors gain prestige and an honorarium for their work.

These researchers receive not just grants for their articles but also a host of other financial arrangements, revealed the *New England Journal of Medicine,* which noted that many of them allow themselves "to be plied with expensive gifts and trips to luxurious settings."

Some medical schools receive research equipment, materials, funds, and sponsored trips to medical meetings from drug corporations. The amount that drug corporations spend at these schools is said to be enormous. The industry reportedly has lots of control over the research conducted at these schools. And the research priorities are typically geared toward boosting drug company sales.

The results of these studies are distributed at over 300,000 conferences and events which are sponsored by the industry each year, as well as some of the world's best medical journals. The *Los Angeles Times* remarked, "Conflicts of interest among university medical researchers have received wide attention in recent years."

In their May 2005 article, *Medical Journals are an Extension of the Marketing Arm of Pharmaceutical Companies, PloS Medicine* mentioned that these articles frequently appear in major journals such as *Annals of Internal Medicine*, *JAMA*, *Lancet*, and *New England Journal of Medicine*.

In March 2004, Dr. Richard Horton, editor of the *Lancet* commented, "Journals have devolved into information laundering operations for the pharmaceutical industry."

Dr. Kassirer notes a study conducted in 1998 at the University of Toronto by Dr. Henry Stelfox and his colleagues who examined 70 articles regarding blood pressure medication. They contacted only the authors who had written favorably about certain prescription drugs to find that 96% of them had solid financial connections to drug corporations.

Even the peer review process, which medical publications must go through in order to maintain a high level of accuracy, has been systematically dismantled by the pharmaceutical industry, which it has accomplished by hiring the reviewers.

Ghostwriting

However, the situation appears to be more complex. In 2003 the *UK Guardian* revealed that ghostwriters in the pay of drug companies are now writing nearly half of the research articles that appear in some medical journals in order to promote prescription drugs. The articles are then affixed with an influential doctor's name.

In addition to producing written material which is submitted to journals, they allegedly create speech material for physicians to deliver at professional conferences. "They, and the involvement of the pharmaceutical firms, are rarely revealed," mentioned the *Guardian*.

The ghostwriters are medical writing experts employed by medical writing agencies, which specialize in producing "magical strategies" with the power to persuade. The articles, clinical trial reports, medicine reviews, and medical textbooks that they create consist of some scientific content, but are primarily intended to boost the sales of their clients' drugs.

"The new controversy," announced the *New York Times* in October of 1994, "focuses on the role of public relations firms and ghostwriters." Most readers of medical journals, cautioned the *Times*, would be unaware that the articles had originated from authors paid by corporations.

Although there are reportedly dozens of medical writing agencies, some include: IntraMed, Axis Healthcare Communications, Excerpta Medica, Edelman Medical Communications, and Complete Healthcare Communications.

These agencies may charge up to $20,000 for a single article. The doctors themselves have been paid as much as $2,500 per article to serve as "author." Some of the evidence linking the industry to the medical writing agencies includes internal documents that surfaced during lawsuits against companies such as Wyeth, Pfizer, and GlaxoSmithKline.

Other evidence comes from the ghostwriters themselves. Linda Logdberg, who had ghostwritten articles for over a decade, called it "marketing masquerading as science." The *Guardian* interviewed former ghostwriters who confirmed that drug corporations pay the agencies to write articles favoring specific drugs, and then find a respected doctor to sign their name to it. They also exert much effort to conceal the fact that they're ghostwriting papers on behalf of corporations.

When Dr. David Healy of the University of Wales was researching negative effects of antidepressants he was contacted by a drug manufacturer with an offer for assistance. They emailed him a ghostwritten favorable review of another drug which was to be presented at an upcoming conference. After he declined, he noticed that the exact same article had appeared in a psychiatric journal under another doctor's name.

Dr. Troyen Brennan of the Harvard School of Public Health was offered $2,500 by Edelman Medical Communications to sign his name to an editorial that they wrote. Not only did he refuse, he described his experience in a September 1994 edition of the *New England Journal of Medicine* in an article called *Buying Editorials*.

In its September of 2009 article, *Ghostwriting is Called Rife in Medical Journals*, the *New York Times* reported that a significant number of articles that appeared in some of the world's top medical journals in 2008 were written by ghostwriters financed by drug companies.

According to the *Times* and other sources, these ghostwritten articles are routinely circulated in the world's best medical journals, including: *New England Journal of Medicine, Journal of the American Medical Association, Lancet, PloS Medicine, Annals of Internal Medicine, British Medical Journal*, and *Nature Medicine*.

Diagnostic Manuals

Professional societies are intricately involved in the creation of clinical practice guidelines (CPGs) as well as books, pamphlets, registries, websites, and other initiatives. They form panels of experts to create and update CPGs which are used by physicians all over the world to diagnose disorders.

The senior experts on these panels are also usually on the payroll of drug corporations. So, both the society and the individual members of the panels that write these guidelines are funded by the industry.

JAMA conducted a study of about 190 authors of CPGs between 1991 and 1999. In February of 2002 they published their results in a report entitled, *Relationships Between Authors of Clinical Practice Guidelines and the Pharmaceutical Industry*, where they revealed that 87% were in regular contact with an average of 10 different drug corporations.

They also discovered that 58% of them had financial ties to these corporations. "Increasing contact has been reported between physicians and the pharmaceutical industry," they disclosed. "These interactions may be particularly relevant since CPGs are designed to influence the practice of a large number of physicians."

A diagnostic tool called *Prime-MD* contains a 26-item checklist that allows any physician to diagnose a variety of mental disorders in as little as 8 minutes. Pfizer not only completely funded the diagnostic tool, it paid for the training of thousands of doctors in its use at multiple symposiums.

A questionnaire created by Pfizer and distributed by the health insurer Wellmark consisted of 9 questions which Wellmark required their physicians in Iowa to ask their patients visiting for such simple matters as an annual checkup.

They were told to give the quiz to patients that appeared to be tired, had many worries, didn't get enough sleep, or had problems at work or home. The questionnaire allowed for the quick diagnosis of depression, which required treatment with antidepressants. It was intended for implementation across the country.

The *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (DSM)* put out by the APA is heavily funded by the industry. It is the most common source used for detecting mental disorders. For both the 1994 and 2000 editions, all of the panel experts who contributed to the diagnostic section pertaining to *schizophrenia spectrum disorders* were connected to drug corporations.

In addition to influencing the creation of CPGs, drug corporations have much control over the content of most psychiatric journals because the publishers rely on funds generated from drug company advertising.

"Ultimately, even medical and psychiatric textbooks are written by drug advocates," observed Drs. Breggin and Cohen, in their book *Your Dugs May Be Your Problem: How and Why to Stop Taking Psychiatric Drugs*. "In conclusion," added *JAMA*, "there appears to be a high degree of interaction between authors of clinical practice guidelines and the pharmaceutical industry."

Illness Creation

According to multiple researchers, drug companies have expanded their target-set to include the healthy in order to increase their profits. To do this, illnesses must be created. This practice is well-known among industry insiders. It's called *medicalization*, *disease-mongering*, and *condition branding* by those in the industry. It uses a PRS formula adjusted for medical purposes to maximize corporate profit. Like the standard PRS formula, its basic tactics includes generating fear regarding existing medical conditions as well as the creation of new ones.

The famous Madison Avenue marketing guru Vince Parry has frequently worked with the industry to create new illnesses, and explained the process in his 2003 article, *The Art of Branding a Condition*, which appeared in an industry magazine called *Medical Marketing and Media*.

Parry described it this way: "The idea behind 'condition branding' is relatively simple: If you can define a particular condition and its associated symptoms in the minds of physicians and patients, you can also predicate the best treatment for that condition."

Notice that Parry has suggested that an actual medical condition need not exist; it is only that one needs to be manufactured in the minds of physicians and their patients. According to Parry, the explosion of mental disorders in each new edition of the *DSM* is due to successful condition branding.

Condition branding, says Parry, uses a basic "problem/solution structure." His particular method includes several tactics, two of which are notable. The first is what he describes as elevating the importance of an existing condition. The other is the development of a completely new condition.

As an example of the first tactic, Parry cites a marketing initiative by GlaxoSmithKline in the late 1980s. In order to boost the sales of their drug Zantac, GSK decided to target those experiencing heartburn. To do this, they elevated the medical importance of the condition by portraying it as a "disorder" with an underlying physiological cause. GSK also linked it to actual serious medical disorders, while they launched several educational and awareness raising campaigns. The result was a 65% increase in their sale of Zantac.

Parry then gives an example of how a new medical condition was created by Warner-Lambert in the 1920s in order to boost the sale of Listerine. Warner-Lambert knew that the idea of unpleasant breath wouldn't motivate many people to purchase their product. So, they created an illness called *halitosis* and linked it to a variety of social misfortunes from divorce to lack of career advancement.

"Warner-Lambert found its answer," commented Parry, "by creating awareness and anxiety around a serious-sounding medical condition." Warner-Lambert increased its profit from $100,000 per year to about $4 million over a six year period because of its awareness raising campaign.

A frequent excuse used for launching these campaigns by drug corporations and their PR firms is that millions are *suffering in silence*. Anyone who questions their motives is said to be questioning the patient's suffering.

In her book, *Disease-Mongers: How Doctors, Drug Companies, and Insurers Are Making You Feel Sick*, Lynn Payer describes the practice of taking a normal function and implying that there's something wrong with it as a fear-mongering tactic. This is done by the pharmaceutical industry for life's common experiences or situations such as insomnia, anxiety, menopause, emotional isolation, job frustration, angry or hostile feelings, obesity, and even shortness.

Although there are many, many examples of this, Petersen cites a couple more cases where condition branding has been used, including how panic disorder was relatively unknown until Upjohn began marketing Xanax in the 1970s.

And how, in 2000, women began to learn that they were suffering from premenstrual dysphoric (PMDD) after Eli Lilly repackaged their antidepressant Prozac in a different capsule, renamed it Sarafem, and marketed it to treat PMDD.

GSK, the manufacturer of the antidepressant Paxil, turned what was considered a rare psychiatric condition into a major epidemic called *social anxiety disorder*. According to GSK, this affected one out of eight Americans at one time.

To do this, GSK used a Madison Avenue PR firm called Cohn & Wolfe which created the appearance of a grassroots movement to raise awareness about this neglected disorder.[1] Cohn and Wolfe's aggressive media outreach included press kits, video releases, and a network of spokespeople. They also used a variety of people from patient advocacy groups to perform patient testimonials.

Awareness raising campaigns benefit greatly from the use of medical experts, so Cohn and Wolfe used University of California psychiatrist Dr. Murray Stein, who assisted in the corporate-funded trials. Dr. Stein has allegedly worked for at least 15 other drug corporations as a consultant. GSK's awareness raising campaign made Paxil the world's top-selling antidepressant at $3 billion a year.

---

1   An interesting name, *Cohn & Wolfe*. Or is it *conning wolf*?

An Expanded Target Set

Moynihan and Cassels mention a 2003 *Reuters Business Insight* report entitled, *Healthcare: The Lifestyle Drugs Outlook to 2008*, which was directed at drug company executives. The report advocated the creation of "new disease markets" to increase prescription drug sales by billions. This would be accomplished by making people think that natural processes were medical conditions to be treated by prescription drugs.

"We now have clinical names and treatment guidelines for unhappiness, loneliness, and shyness, as if it were no longer okay to feel the emotions that make a life," explained Petersen. "The ups and downs of life have become mental disorders," wrote Moynihan and Cassels, "common complaints are transformed into frightening conditions, and more and more ordinary people are turned into patients." In addition to targeting healthy adults, the industry has expanded its scope to include healthy children.

According to Petersen's sources, by 2004 about 10% of all ten-year old boys were on Ritalin. A report which she mentions by Medco Health Solutions revealed that within a period of a few years a 369% increase occurred in the spending of psychiatric medication on children not yet old enough for kindergarten.

"The National Institute of Mental Health (NIHM) and pharmaceutical companies have been placing increasing emphasis on marketing psychiatric drugs to children," warned Breggin and Cohen.[2] They then cite the results of an international survey done by the APA on a grant from Bristol-Meyers Squibb Company. The report, presented at the 1998 annual meeting of the APA in Toronto Canada, suggested "aggressive treatment in childhood and adolescence."

However, rather than focusing on parents who might consider medicating their children, drug corporations are now promoting them directly to kids. Data collection initiatives using animated TV commercials during airings of *Sesame Street* have been used. Others have appeared in *Sesame Street Magazine*, and with website questionnaires.

Their promotional campaigns include propaganda delivered through storybooks, coloring books, video games, and websites with games and animated stories. Disney-like characters with drug labels on their costumes have been created.

Toys bearing the labels of drugs are being used. They include superhero dolls, stuffed animals, and hand puppets. All of this merchandise is clearly marked with drug brand names so children will relate to them as toddlers and begin asking their parents for them by their brand names as they get older.

Toy needles have even been designed so that they can practice injecting themselves. Drug promotional campaigns using live animals at children's parties have been launched. Pfizer has paid the *Children's Television Workshop* to show its muppets going to the doctors, etc, etc.

As part a massive public relations initiative, which includes research studies, publications, and speeches, the industry is now using its thought leaders to rigorously promote powerful prescription drugs for children. Chief of the Program in Pediatric Psychopharmacology at Massachusetts General Hospital, world renowned Harvard psychiatrist Dr. Joseph Biederman, is one of the most influential researchers in child psychiatry.

Between 1994 and 2003 he and his colleagues conducted studies financed by drug corporations which suggested there was a major underdiagnosis of bipolar disorder in children that could be treated with powerful antipsychotic drugs originally developed to treat adult schizophrenia.

---

2   Children are increasingly being prescribed stimulants for fake mental illnesses such as ADHD. The solution for this disorder includes giving them brain-damaging drugs such as Ritalin. When stimulants fail they're given more powerful adult antipsychotics which cause a literal chemical lobotomy. See, *Our Daily Meds: How the Pharmaceutical Companies Transformed Themselves into Slick Marketing Machines and Hooked the Nation on Prescription Drugs*, by Melody Petersen. Also see, *Medication Madness: A Psychiatrist Exposes the Dangers of Mood-Altering Medications* by Dr. Peter R. Breggin. However, other than greed, there appears to be another factor which is motivating the financial elite to target healthy children. As I describe in the book, *Invisible Eugenics: How the Medical System and Public Schools are Killing Your Children*, there is a pattern emerging regarding the profiles of the children being singled out and medicated. Many of them are highly intelligent, middle class males with leadership traits.

In June of 2008 the *New York Times* reported that Dr. Biederman and his colleagues had been promoting the aggressive diagnosis and drug treatment of childhood bipolar disorder, which is a mood disorder that was once confined mostly to adults. Dr. Biederman's studies are responsible for a 40-fold increase in the diagnosis of pediatric bipolar disorder. "As a result, pediatric bipolar diagnoses and antipsychotic drug use in children have soared," revealed the *Times*. Dr. Biederman received at least $1.5 million in consulting fees from 15 different pharmaceutical companies between 2000 and 2007.

Professor of Psychiatry and Human Behavior at Brown University, and chairman of the psychiatry department at the Alpert Medical School, Dr. Martin Keller, released a study in 2001 entitled *Study 329*, in which he suggested that GSK's antidepressant Paxil should be given to children. In his article, for which he made huge sums of money, Dr. Keller allegedly suppressed important information linking the drug to suicidal tendencies.

Dr. Keller made about $840,000 in 1999 alone from drug corporations such as Pfizer, Bristol-Myers Squibb, Wyeth-Ayerst, and Eli Lilly while serving as chief of the psychiatry department at Brown University. He has promoted the use of prescription drugs in a variety of medical journals such as *Biological Psychiatry*, for which he's made at least $93,000.

Co-author of *Study 329*, Dr. Karen Wagner is a professor at University of Texas Medical Branch at Galveston. She has worked on NIH-funded studies on the use of GSK's Paxil to treat teenage depression, and has received about $150,000 from GSK. She has also conducted dozens of corporate-sponsored studies favoring the use of antidepressants for children.

In March of 2009, *The Boston Globe* reported that a complaint filed by federal prosecutors in the US District Court in Boston revealed that Dr. Jeffrey Bostic, the Director of School Psychiatry at Massachusetts General Hospital, heavily marketed antidepressants for children on behalf of a corporation called Forest Laboratories in New York.

Between 2000 and 2006 Dr. Bostic gave 350 presentations on the pediatric use of Celexa and Lexapro in 28 states while he made over $750,000. Forest Laboratories even paid Dr. Bostic to visit physicians in their offices in order to ease their concerns about prescribing these powerful drugs to children.

Head of the Department of Psychiatry, at the University of Minnesota Medical School, Minneapolis, Dr. Charles Schulz has had financial connections to AstraZeneca, Eli Lilly, Abbott Laboratories, and Janssen. He has conducted seminars funded by AstraZeneca to promote the use of their antipsychotic drug Seroquel on children.

In May of 2007 the *New York Times* announced that increasing payments to doctors have coincided with the growing use in children of a relatively new class of drugs known as atypical antipsychotics. These drugs include Seroquel, Zyprexa, Abilify, Risperdal, and Geodon. "Drug makers," they said, "underwrite decision makers at every level of care. They pay doctors who prescribe and recommend drugs, teach about the underlying diseases, perform studies and write guidelines."

The sudden explosion of pediatric bipolar diagnosis, said the *Times*, has caused a boost in sales of these new prescription drugs. The impetus for this explosion was another research study done by a child psychiatrist at the University of Cincinnati, Dr. Melissa DelBello, with funding from AstraZeneca.

Dr. DelBello led a research team that tracked the behavior of 30 adolescents diagnosed with bipolar disorder for a month and a half. In 2002 she published the results which concluded that AstraZeneca's drug Seroquel performed well.

Her report was reviewed favorably by a panel of prominent experts in 2005, resulting in guidelines being published in *The Journal of the American Academy of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry*. Three of the four panel experts that reviewed Dr. DelBello's report served as consultants to drug corporations. One was Dr. Robert A. Kowatch, a psychiatrist at Cincinnati Children's Hospital. Both Dr. DelBello and Dr. Kowatch have been hired as spokespeople for AstraZeneca.

The scenario unfolding, according to these sources, is that the industry will continue to aggressively target the entire population until most people are convinced that they need at least one pill a day for the rest of their lives. "Because as Wall Street knows well," remarked Moynihan and Cassels, "there's a lot of money to be made telling healthy people they're sick."

The pharmaceutical industry is, and has been for years, the most profitable industry in the US. In 2006 it was a $643 billion dollar industry, globally. $289 billion of this total originated from prescription drug sales in the US. This was an increase from the $200 billion it spent in 2005, which was a significant increase from $40 billion spent in 1990, which rose from $12 billion in 1980.

"A basic goal of the pharmaceutical marketers," Petersen explained, "was to create an enthusiasm among the public for lifelong medication use." Drs. Breggin and Cohen observed: "Few if any people realize that they are being subjected to one of the most successful public relations campaigns in history." The entire population is now being *literally attacked* by a high-powered selling campaign for psychiatric drugs, conducted by this complex through its various fronts. They are targeting everyone!

The industry will obviously continue using PRS, which Parry says, has been brought to new levels of sophistication recently. "Today," says Parry, "the seeds must be sown in a complex landscape of audiences involving pharmaceutical companies, external thought leaders, support groups and consumers; and the effort must be coordinated with multiple communications agencies in the fields of branding, advertising, education and public relations."

Summary

The control which drug corporations have over the medical field is extensive. Drug corporations are able to conduct the research, write the reports of the research, and control the peer review process of articles that appear in the world's best medical journals. They write the clinical practice guidelines which doctors use for diagnosis.

And they not only expand the symptoms of existing illnesses, they create new ones which appear in the clinical practice guidelines that they write. They control much of the educational process that most physicians will undergo, with literature, as well as by influencing the medical schools and universities themselves with funding.

Drug corporations influence or outright control professional societies and advocacy groups such as the APA, AMA, MHA, CHADD, and NAMI, as well as federal entities such as the US Congress, FDA and NIH. Their influence extends to insurance providers and medical centers.

Dr. Breggin refers to these groups collectively as the *psychopharmaceutical complex*. In most cases its control reaches down to the level of the individual physician, which includes the medical leaders of governmental institutions and professional societies who have been compromised by greed. The corruption is not simply rampant, it is highly organized from the top, at which sits the pharmaceutical industry.

Another Look at Schizophrenia
Its Controversial Discovery

The idea that schizophrenia spectrum disorders are based on an underlying biological cause that has yet to be discovered is known as the *disease model*, also called the *medical model*. As we now know, the discovery of schizophrenia and the estimate that it is a biological brain disorder, can be traced to Kraepelin and Bleuler. In this section the terms *dementia praecox* and *schizophrenia* will be used interchangeably.

When Kraepelin and Bleuler were developing their disease model they were unaware that probably a large number of their patients had an organic brain disease called *encephalitis lethargica* (sleeping sickness). Multiple epidemics of encephalitis occurred in Europe, one happened between 1916 and 1927.

Encephalitis was identified by an Austrian neurologist named Constantin von Economo in Vienna in 1916. This was a few years after Kraepelin and Bleuler had completed their major writings. Although there were more cases in America and Europe, the epidemic occurred throughout the world. The last outbreak was reported in 1926 and it is said to have disappeared by 1930. Although the exact viral agent was never identified by von Economo, he was able to transmit the virus to monkeys, thereby verifying its biological nature.

The symptoms of the disease included: lethargy, rousable stupor, a multitude of cognitive and behavior problems, dyskinesia, tremor, chorea, dystonia, athetosis, and Parkinsonism. The disease was often chronic with no period of recovery. Encephalitis is now relatively rare.

Kraepelin, Bleuler, and von Economo noticed the following in their patients: an odd gait, lethargy, drooling, uncontrollable urination, weight fluctuations, tremors, skin discoloration, an inability to complete willed acts, restricted movements, and an eventual deterioration into dementia.

Not only is there a significant overlap between the descriptions of Kraepelin's, Bleuler's and von Economo's patients, but both Kraepelin and Bleuler noticed signs of infection. In other words, their patients had an organic brain disease. Kraepelin gave detailed descriptions of severe brain damage which he microscopically observed many times during postmortems.

Considerable confusion followed von Economo's discovery which caused clinicians to doubt their diagnostic practices regarding schizophrenia. Before von Economo's discovery of encephalitis, those with the illness that visited hospitals would have been diagnosed with dementia praecox. It was even referred to as *epidemic schizophrenia*. Because Kraepelin and von Economo described their patient's symptoms similarly, doctors began to wonder how they could distinguish the two.

In his 1931 publication *Encephalitis Lethargica: Its Sequelae and Treatment*, von Economo acknowledged the confusion. Despite the similarities, the European medical community was convinced that they were two separate disorders.

"Thus the social construction of schizophrenia as a form of disease was facilitated by erroneously sorting into a single class two types of persons," explained Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin, Professor of Psychology at the University of California, Santa Cruz. They included those suffering from encephalitis that had been mistakenly diagnosed with schizophrenia, and those exhibiting what others considered to be unwarranted behavior.

The original symptoms of schizophrenia included: lethargy, skin discoloration, an odd gait, drooling, uncontrollable urination, weight fluctuations, tremors, an inability to complete willed acts, and restricted movements. The condition often resulted in an eventual deterioration into dementia. The delusions and hallucinations were only secondary symptoms.

Because it appears that schizophrenia spectrum disorders were discovered by mistaking them for encephalitis lethargica, one would conclude that a decline in encephalitis would also reveal a decline in schizophrenia.

This is exactly what happened. Once encephalitis declined in the late 1920s, so did the schizophrenics who exhibited the original symptoms recorded by Kraepelin and Bleuler. The original signs and symptoms associated with Kraepelin's dementia praecox or Bleuler's schizophrenia are almost never seen in modern schizophrenia.

"The kind of deteriorated cases seen by Emil Kraepelin and Eugen Bleuler are rarely seen today," proclaimed Mary Boyle, senior lecturer in psychology at North East London Polytechnic, London. Because encephalitis is now rare, the physical symptoms were gradually removed from the diagnostic manuals over the course of about 80 years.

What remained were the mental symptoms, specifically, hallucinations and delusions, which have only a "superficial resemblance" to the original symptoms reported by Kraepelin and Bleuler. Schizophrenia is now a thought disorder, with no organic origin.

What appears to have happened, according to these researchers, is that as encephalitis became rarer, the diagnosis of schizophrenia diminished. Then, the original characteristic symptoms of schizophrenia, which, again, was actually an organic brain disorder, were removed from the diagnostic manuals. The secondary symptoms which remained were the hallucinations and delusions. These now form the positive symptoms in the modern version of schizophrenia.

This significant issue is not discussed openly by mainstream medical researchers. If what these researchers are suggesting did in fact occur, and if Kraepelin and Bleuler form the basis for the medical model of schizophrenia spectrum disorders, and if the *DSM* and other diagnostic manuals are based mostly on their discoveries, why hasn't the medical community, and psychiatry in particular, addressed this critical issue?

"No detailed explanation has been offered," commented Boyle. According to these authors, organized psychiatry refuses to investigate the controversial discovery of schizophrenia because it is too important to the industry's survival. Some researchers have commented that this constitutes medical fraud.

Studies Show it Doesn't Exist

In addition to the confusion surrounding the discovery of schizophrenia, there are several misconceptions regarding the proof of its existence. They include the following:

- Brain scans show that schizophrenia is an actual brain disease that can be detected.
- Schizophrenics have an excess of a type of neurotransmitter called *dopamine*.
- Tests have been done on identical twins which prove conclusively that schizophrenia is genetic.
- A gene for schizophrenia has been found.

So, let's have a closer look at this proof.

The current hypothesis for the cause of schizophrenia is that there is an excess of a neurotransmitter known as *dopamine*. According to the dopamine theory, either the presynaptic neurons are releasing too much dopamine, or the postsynaptic neurons have too many receptors.

Standard neuroleptics work by binding a kind of dopamine receptor called the *D2 receptor*. At a regular dose, neuroleptics bind (occupy) from 70 to 90 percent of these receptors, thereby shutting down higher brain functions. Metabolite tests provide an indirect way of measuring the amount of dopamine in an area of the brain. One, conducted in 1974 by Malcolm Bowers at Yale University found that the levels of dopamine metabolites in unmedicated schizophrenics were normal.

He published his findings in the 1974 issue of *Archives of General Psychiatry*, declaring that the results "do not furnish neurochemical evidence for an overarousal in these patients emanating from midbrain dopamine system."

Then, in 1975 Robert Post at the NIMH, reported in the *Archives of General Psychiatry*, in an article entitled, *Cerebrospinal Fluid Amine Metabolites in Acute Schizophrenia*, that no evidence of elevated dopamine levels had been found in 20 unmedicated patients diagnosed with schizophrenia, compared to healthy controls.

Because the researchers could not determine that schizophrenics had an abnormal amount of dopamine, they decided to try to prove that the postsynaptic neurons had too many receptors. In 1978, studies conducted at the University of Toronto revealed that the brains of schizophrenics had about 50% more dopamine receptors than healthy controls.

However, all of these patients had been on neuroleptics, which, as the researchers even suggested, possibly caused the abnormality. Future studies conducted on animals revealed that this was in fact the case. The tests that showed an excessive amount of dopamine neurotransmitters were done on patients that had been receiving neuroleptics. The increase has been attributed to a normal brain adapting to the medication.

Drs. Peter R. Breggin, MD, and David Cohen, PhD, described the dopamine theory as "pure guesswork" from organized psychiatry. In a 1982 issue of *Schizophrenia Bulletin*, in an article named *The Dopamine Hypothesis*, UCLA neuroscientist John Haracz concluded: "Direct support [for the dopamine hypothesis] is either uncompelling or has not been widely replicated."

The 1974 study by Bowers at Yale University revealed that after people had been medicated, a significant increase in dopamine levels occurred. This was evidence of a normal brain's reaction of creating more dopamine after its signals had been artificially blocked by medication. Other studies soon reported similar findings.

An article published by German researchers entitled, *H-Siperone Binding Sites in Post-Mortem Brains from Schizophrenic Patients*, that appeared in the 1989 issue of *Journal of Neuronal Transmission* declared, "From our data ... we conclude that changes in [receptor density] values in schizophrenics are entirely iatrogenic [drug induced]."

No increase in dopamine levels has been found in unmedicated schizophrenics. The cases where an increase in dopamine activity exists in those diagnosed with schizophrenia, are always ones that consist of patients that have been given neuroleptics. The medication causes the imbalance.

No chemical imbalance has been found in the brains of those diagnosed with thought or mood disorders such as schizophrenia, bipolar disorder, anxiety, depressive disorders, etc. Instead, neuroleptics *cause* biochemical imbalances in normal brains.

The medications literally cause severe brain impairment. "In fact," elaborated Breggin and Cohen, "most of what we know about the various neurotransmitters has been gathered by studying how psychiatric drugs disrupt or spoil their functioning."

Mental and emotional experiences such as anxiety, depression, and psychosis originate from thought processes within the mind that are influenced by environmental conditions, personal history, and decisions. There is little or no chance that shutting down portions of the brain will beneficially alter mental and emotional experiences such as these.

Years of research into the dopamine theory of schizophrenia, agreed researcher Robert Whitaker in his book, *Mad in America: Bad Science, Bad Medicine, and the Enduring Mistreatment of the Mentally Ill*, has found that the drugs not only profoundly hinder dopamine function, they also cause a pathological increase in dopamine receptors in the brain, the very abnormality believed to cause schizophrenia in the first place.

It may seem ironic that neuroleptics, which are intended to correct chemical imbalances, are actually causing them. The evidence, however, indicates that this is the case. "The only known biochemical imbalances in the brains of patients routinely seen by psychiatrists," Drs. Breggin and Cohen advise, "are brought about by the psychiatrists themselves through the prescription of mind-altering drugs."

Although psychiatrists such as E. Fuller Torrey have made claims that CT and MRI scans prove conclusively that the brain structures of schizophrenics are abnormal, the scans were conducted after the patients had been given neuroleptics, which caused the abnormalities. An MRI or CT scan cannot detect a mental disorder such as schizophrenia, manic-depression, or related mood or thought disorders. The belief that these disorders can be visualized with a brain scan is false.

The claim that genetic studies have found incontrovertible evidence that schizophrenia is hereditary is doubtful. The supporting literature is from three main studies. One is the concordance for schizophrenia in identical twins. Another consists of normal children that were separated and raised apart from their schizophrenic mothers. The last includes schizophrenic children that were raised apart from their normal biological parents.

The statistical and methodological practices regarding these studies have been widely criticized, as reported by Boyle. Most of the identical twin studies were done during an epidemic of encephalitis. Also, the researchers who conducted these twin studies made frequent references to symptoms associated with encephalitis such as cyanosis, dramatic weight fluctuations, greasy skin, profuse sweating, chronic constipation, convulsions, difficulty swallowing, tics, and facial twitches.

Prominent US psychiatrist Dr. Franz Kallmann conducted much of this early gene research on schizophrenia, which is used by the industry to promote the disease model. Dr. Kallmann was a confirmed eugenicist. Kraepelin and Bleuler are said to have been involved in the eugenics movement as well.

From 1929 to 1935 Dr. Kallmann worked at the Wilhelm Kaiser Institute (renamed the Max Planck Institute after WWII), founded by Emil Kraepelin, which was a major research center for the Nazi eugenics program. Its creation was made possible by substantial funding from the Rockefeller Foundation.

Dr. Kallmann demanded more sterilization practices than even the Nazis were willing to implement. He advocated the sterilization of every single member of any family thought to be flawed with schizophrenia, or showing any signs of eccentricity.

While in the US, Dr. Kallman became the head of psychiatric research at the New York State Psychiatric Institute and a professor of psychiatry at Columbia University. He was a prominent figure who conducted gene studies in an attempt to prove that schizophrenia was hereditary. His 1938 paper, *The Genetics of Schizophrenia*, is used as evidence by disease model proponents that schizophrenia is hereditary.

It was even included in the *American Handbook of Psychiatry* of 1959. He later conducted studies on twins in the US, which the industry also uses as proof that schizophrenia exists and is hereditary. He was a eugenics society fellow in the US from 1955 to 1957, and was a founding member of the American Society of Human Genetics in 1948.

The Danish adoption study is probably the most cited experiment regarding higher percentage rates of schizophrenia in relatives of schizophrenics. In reality, says Dr. Bruce E. Levine, author of *Commonsense Rebellion: Debunking Psychiatry, Confronting Society*, no increase has been found in close relatives of schizophrenics, such as parents and full siblings.

Only one was found on a half-sibling on the father's side which was allegedly the result of a large family. Of the relatives of 34 adoptees diagnosed with schizophrenia, only 1 out of 150 had been diagnosed with complete schizophrenia. According to Dr. Levine, the studies reported in 1938 by Franz Kallman on identical twins raised together have not been replicated. And recent studies of this kind, which revealed only modest connections, are unreliable because inconsistent statistics were used.

Also, as reported by Boyle, the patients used in some of these earlier studies appear to have been suffering from encephalitis. The idea that schizophrenia has occurred at the same rate in primitive and civilized cultures is false. No gene for schizophrenia has ever been found.

Hereditary factors for schizophrenia, supported by credible scientists, have been widely publicized. Current medical textbooks cite these studies as truth. However, the fact that these studies have been extensively critiqued is not commonly known.

Professor Sarbin wondered why research to determine if the illness is hereditary is being conducted when the actual existence of the illness itself has not been scientifically confirmed. In fact, the *BBC* reported in October of 2006, under the headline, *Schizophrenia Term Use Invalid*, that the term *schizophrenia* should be abolished.

Although some people do hear voices and have periods of paranoia, psychiatric drugs should not be given as treatment to cure these experiences, they revealed. "We do not doubt there are people who have distressing experiences such as hearing voices," proclaimed Dr. Richard Bentall of the University of Manchester, "but the concept of schizophrenia is scientifically meaningless."

In his book *Schizophrenia Revealed: From Neurons to Social Interactions*, a proponent of the disease model, Dr. Michael Green, confessed: "No existing blood test, urine test or biopsy can make a definitive diagnosis of schizophrenia, and it is unlikely that any such test will be available in the near future." Even the *DSM* admits, "No laboratory findings have been identified that are diagnostic of Schizophrenia."

Professor Sarbin, along with another University of California psychology professor named James C. Mancuso, used primarily sources from the *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology (JASP)* and its successor the *Journal of Abnormal Psychology (JAP)*, between 1959 and 1978, to author their book *Schizophrenia: Medical Diagnosis or Moral Verdict*. In addition, they read the results of studies of 364 patients, which also occurred in these two publications during that time period.

Of the biological origin of schizophrenia, they had this to say: "Our scrutiny of the conclusions of the many reports on studies connecting biology and schizophrenia leads to the observation that ... biologically grounded hypotheses have added little to the explanation of human conduct which ... earns a person the diagnosis of schizophrenia."

Regarding the widely publicized idea that schizophrenia spectrum disorders exist, Dr. Loren R. Mosher, Clinical Professor of Psychiatry at the University of California's School of Medicine in San Diego said: "A critical review of the scientific evidence available reveals no clear indication of hereditary factors, and also reveals no specific biochemical abnormalities and with no associated causal neurologic lesion(s)."

"In summary," agreed Dr. Levine, "there is no cross-cultural, epidemiological, genetic, biochemical, or brain-structure proof for the existence of schizophrenia as a physical disease." This extends to ADHD, depression, bipolar disorder, oppositional defiant disorder, anxiety, and any other mental illness.

In its *Does Schizophrenia Really Exist?* report of October 2006, the School of Nursing, Midwifery and Social Work at the University of Manchester, UK announced that after a meeting in London experts from the university concluded that schizophrenia should be abolished as a psychiatric illness.

They included Professor Richard Bentall of the School of Psychological Sciences, Paul Hammersley of the School of Nursing, Professor Marius Romme of the Hearing Voices Movement, and others who met to discuss the controversial matter and issue a proclamation for a dropping of the term.

Likewise, *Medical News Today* mentioned in September of 2006, that psychiatric diagnoses such as schizophrenia are based on false assumptions of mental illness that originated in the 1800s, (obviously referring to Kraepelin and Bleuler).

According to these experts, schizophrenia doesn't exist as an actual disease and is a scientifically worthless label. The disease model is no longer credible. It was created during a period of confusion, where the diagnostic instruments at the time were unable to differentiate a disorder with a biological origin, from conduct that was considered by some to be inappropriate. It became a convenient method to attach moral judgments to a medical disorder.

Even literature that promotes the existence of schizophrenia admits that head trauma and brain infections cause bizarre behavior. In fact, as we've seen, tests are done to rule these out. The ancient descriptions of people acting strangely are easily attributed to actual brain diseases with a biological origin.

Sarbin and Mancuso tell us that proponents of the disease model are completely aware that there is no biological origin for the illness. In other words, they know it's a fraud. Using credible scientists, however, the industry continues to search for a cause, which leads clinicians and the public to think that schizophrenia exists.

One reason for this, says author and lecturer Dr. Ron M. Leifer, is that the disease model is critical to psychiatry's existence. He explained: "The personal, professional, and economic interests of psychiatrists are promoted by the medical model. No medical model, no medical psychiatry."

Deceptive Initiatives by the Industry

It is no coincidence that most people are convinced that schizophrenia is an actual disease. The industry generates an enormous amount of propaganda to convince healthy people to overcome their skepticism about taking psychiatric medications that destroy their minds and bodies. Much of this propaganda is done through "awareness raising" campaigns and "educational" efforts.

The public receives its information from drug corporations, organized psychiatry, private foundations, patient advocacy groups, mainstream media, organized medicine, and federal agencies such as the FDA, and the NIMH. These are typically the first entities that people will encounter when looking for reliable information on schizophrenia and its treatment.

Unfortunately, due to the perceived credibility of these organizations, they may also be the only sources of information that people consider. After all, the FDA and NIMH are there for your benefit, right? Patient advocacy groups are there to educate and help you, right?

As we've seen, upon closer observation we find that these groups are basically part of a single complex. And controlling the activities from the top is the pharmaceutical industry, functioning through these front groups to deceive healthy people into thinking that they have a biological illness, and therefore, require ongoing medication.

The "genetic predisposition to schizophrenia is built into the DNA" of every one of our cells, according to the book, *Schizophrenia: Diseases and People*, by Jane E. Philips and David P. Ketelsen. This is a false claim. It has never been proven.

Another book entitled, *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia*, describes schizophrenia as "a biological illness," requiring ongoing medication. "Even when the symptoms are gone," they advise, "the medication continues to work to prevent the chemical imbalance in your brain from returning." As a matter of fact there is no chemical imbalance. You've seen the evidence. It is not a biological illness. So, why are they advising ongoing medication?

The Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA) portrays schizophrenia as a "chronic, severe, and disabling brain disease," leading one to think that it is an actual disease with a biological origin. In a February 2007 report, the National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI) stated that neuroleptics decrease the symptoms of schizophrenia by "helping to correct an imbalance in the chemicals" in the brain.

The "only" chemical imbalances that have been reported in people diagnosed with schizophrenia are the ones caused by the neuroleptics. Are they not aware of this? Why are they suggesting continuous medication for a chemical imbalance that doesn't exist?

Dr. Levine described another tactic used by the industry that includes comparing a so-called mental disorder to an actual biological illness. This, he says, is false and misleading because psychiatric disorders meet none of these criteria. They have no biological signature, no known biological origin, and are not rationally treated with medication.

An example of this is the August 2008 report, *Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery* put out by NAMI, where schizophrenia is linked to biological illnesses such as heart disease, cancer, and diabetes. Once again, we're told by NAMI that schizophrenia is a long-term illness that requires continuing treatment (medication).

A book heavily promoted by NAMI, entitled *Me, Myself, and Them*, had this to say about the "biological" origin and treatment of schizophrenia: "Schizophrenia is a biologically based brain disease, and as such, it calls for a biologically based treatment—in other words, medication."

Organized Psychiatry

Drug corporations, which run the medical industry as well as the mental health system, make millions promoting fake illnesses and keeping people sick. Thought leaders are paid by drug corporations to conduct research, write guidelines, and give lectures at a variety of venues to promote prescription drugs.

As we've seen, these psychiatrists typically consult for multiple corporations simultaneously while serving in influential positions, and have connections to professional societies, and patient advocacy groups. Here are a few more examples.

Dr. Charles Nemeroff, Professor and Chairman of Psychiatry and Behavioral Sciences, Emory University School of Medicine in Atlanta, received about $2.8 million from various drug corporations between 2000 and 2007. He is a former editor of the scientific journal *Neuropsychopharmacology*. He has consulted for 21 corporations simultaneously.

In 1991 Dr. Nemeroff became an expert witness for Eli Lilly during a lawsuit in which he denied that their drug Prozac causes suicides. He is known for being a charismatic speaker and has authored about 850 research reports.

Dr. Alan Schatzberg at one time owned $4.8 million in equity in the drug corporation Corcept Therapeutics while serving as an investigator in an NIH-funded study on one of Corcept's drugs mifepristone. He is a co-founder of Corcept and has initiated a patent process for mifepristone to treat depression. He is currently the president of the APA.

The industry gave at least $1 million to Dr. Thomas Spencer between 2000 and 2007. He is currently the Director of the Pediatric Psychopharmacology Unit at Massachusetts General Hospital, and Associate Professor of Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School.

Dr. Timothy Wilens, Associate Professor of Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School, received a minimum of $1.6 million from drug corporations between 2000 and 2007. Dr. Steven Sharfstein is a former Board of Directors of the American Psychiatric Foundation (APF), a creation of the APA. He is a former president of the APA and currently has connections to Eli Lilly, Merck, and Janssen.

Dr. Augustus John Rush, former psychiatrist and vice-chairman of the Department of Clinical Sciences at the University of Texas Southwestern Medical Center, made about $30,000 from the industry between 2000 and 2007. He has worked for as many as 20 drug corporations. Between 2003 and 2005 Dr. Rush received a grant from the NIH to conduct training programs pertaining to medical ethics. He is currently employed at Duke University's medical school in Singapore.

Dr. Frederick K. Goodwin is a research professor of psychiatry at George Washington University. From 1981 to 1988 he was the director of the National Institute of Mental Health (NIMH). Between 2000 and 2007, Dr. Goodwin received $1.2 million from GSK while lecturing physicians on the benefits of prescription drugs over *National Public Radio*.

He has also been paid hundreds of thousands of dollars by nine drug corporations to give promotional lectures on their products. He is the recipient of the Hofheimer Prize from the American Psychiatric Association (APA), as well as the Distinguished Service Award from NAMI.

Interestingly, the current president of NAMI, Anand Pandya, is a ranking member of the APA. NAMI's medical director, Dr. Ken Duckworth, was honored with the Patient Advocacy Award of the APA at its 2010 Annual Meeting in New Orleans. Dr. Duckworth is also an assistant professor at Harvard University Medical School. He formerly served as the medical director for the Department of Mental Health in Massachusetts.

Two people who have direct experience with organized psychiatry include Drs. Breggin and Cohen. Dr. Breggin, a full-time psychiatrist since 1968 has written multiple books exposing the dangers of Ritalin. He is the founder of the Center for the Study of Psychiatry and Psychology, and is the chief editor of the journal, *Ethical Human Sciences*.

Dr. Cohen, Professor of social work at the University of Montreal, serves as an international consultant to consumer groups on the adverse effects of psychiatric drugs. He has authored dozens of scientific articles, and has provided testimony in court proceedings on the destructive effects of psychiatric drugs. Both have been active in multiple professional fields and have had the opportunity to catalog the various personality types which they've encountered. They describe organized psychiatry this way:

Psychiatrists as a group are much more controlling, authoritarian, and emotionally distant than other nonmedical mental health professionals … It attracts doctors who feel more comfortable writing prescriptions than relating to people.

These tendencies, in turn, are reinforced by their training in clinics and mental hospitals, where they are taught to exert power and authority over patients and other professionals and where they learn to lock up people against their will, to administer electroshock, to write orders for solitary confinement and restraint, to control every aspect of the patients' daily routine, to prescribe toxic drugs while denying their devastating adverse effects, and to generally maintain an authoritarian and distant relationship with their patients.

As a result, psychiatrists tend to seek power not only in the hospital ward and in the office but in administration and politics as well. They frequently become powerful leaders in the health field. In politics, they are extraordinarily effective.

The mental health lobby funded by drug companies and led by organized psychiatry, is one of the most powerful in the nation's history. Biological psychiatrists, who comprise the majority of today's psychiatrists, tend to react in a very suppressive manner to those who oppose them, including dissidents in their field.

They ostracize their critics and have been know to drive them from their positions in schools or other institutions. … Organized psychiatry—with its natural tendencies toward accumulation of power and its funding from drug companies—now dominates the field of mental health.

Many hold precariously onto whatever positions they can get on journals and in clinics, professional schools, and national organizations. It is not exaggeration to say that they live in fear.

Dr. Mosher was the director of Soteria Associates, and Clinical Professor of Psychiatry at the School of Medicine, University of California at San Diego, California. In the late 1970s he conducted a controversial study, known as the Soteria House, which included newly diagnosed schizophrenics living with a trained staff for about a month and a half where they received only a type of talk therapy that included no medication.

The study worked better than expected, the patients recovered and went on to lead healthier lives. Although the successful results of the study were published in psychiatric journals, the project lost funding, and much controversy occurred.

As a result, Dr. Mosher became the target of retaliation. While working as chief at the Center for Studies of Schizophrenia at the NIMH he was placed under investigation and excluded from certain prestigious academic events. By 1980 he was removed from his position.

About a decade later, after finding employment at the public mental health system in Montgomery County Maryland, the Maryland Psychiatric Society asked a state pharmacy committee to review his credentials in order to ensure that his patients were receiving proper treatment. Allegedly, he wasn't prescribing the proper quantity of medication.

In addition to this, a patient advocacy group sent over 250 letters to his employer complaining of his practices. He eventually resigned from the APA, complaining that the organization had formed an alliance with drug corporations resulting substantial fraud.

The Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders

The American Psychiatric Association (APA), which is outright controlled by drug corporations, is used by the industry as the primary promoter of these mental illnesses. It is the leader in organized psychiatry and represents most of the psychiatrists in the US.

In 2006 drug corporations funded about 30% of the APA's total financing. About half of this originated from drug advertisements in psychiatric journals and exhibits at the APA's annual meeting. The APA's annual conference is funded by millions of dollars from drug corporations. During these conferences, members of the APA are paid by the industry to give lectures that promote prescription drugs.

The APA publishes the field's major journals and its famous *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (DSM)*. The current edition is the *DSM-IV*. The *DSM* is the most used sourcebook in the mental health system. It is used to assist patients involved in custody battles, school psychologists to determine referrals for medication, the judicial system, prisons, welfare agencies, and the military. It is also used to determine billions of dollars of Medicaid and Social Security funding.

According to multiple researchers, the bigger the supposed prevalence of mental illness, the easier it is for drug corporations to launch massive campaigns to promote their products. They make their largest profits selling medication to healthy people, and this is accomplished by making them and their doctors think that they need them. In order to do this, they must define as large a portion of the population as possible as suffering from a mental illness. This is accomplished by steadily increasing the symptoms which define a mental illness.

Most of the experts who write the drug related sections of the *DSM* have strong financial ties to the industry. This manual is basically a product of drug corporations. A 2006 article called, *Financial Ties Between DSM-IV Panel Members and the Pharmaceutical Industry*, by Dr. Lisa Cosgrove at Tufts University revealed that more than half of the *DSM* panel members for the 1994 edition had financial ties to drug corporations. But most revealing was the fact that 100% of the panel members for the section on schizophrenia and mood disorders were connected to drug corporations.

Dr. David Kupfer was a member of the *DSM-IV* Task Force. He has consulted for Eli Lilly, Johnson and Johnson, Solvay/Wyeth, Servier, Forest Pharmaceuticals, Pfizer, Hoffman La Roche, Lundbeck, and Novartis. As Chair of the *DSM-V* Task Force, Dr. Kupfer is helping to create the new edition which is due out in May 2012. Dr. Kupfer's wife, Dr. Ellen Frank, is a former *DSM-IV* Task Force member and has received research funding from Eli Lilly and Pfizer.

DSM-IV Task Force member and former APA trustee, Dr. Dilip V. Jeste now consults for Bristol-Myers Squibb, Eli Lilly, Janssen, Solvay/Wyeth, and Otsuka.

Former *DSM-IV* Task Force member, Dr. David Shaffer has consulted for Pfizer and GSK. He is currently Professor of Child Psychiatry at Columbia University and Director of the Division of Child Psychiatry at New York State Psychiatric Institute. Dr. Shaffer has served as an expert witness for both Hoffman la Roche and Wyeth in court.

According to another study done by Dr. Cosgrove and Dr. Harold J. Bursztajn, 70% of the panel members of the *DSM-V* are connected to drug corporations. This is a 14% increase from the previous edition. "Pharmaceutical companies," they explained, "have a vested interest in the structure and content of [the] *DSM*, and in how the symptomatology is revised." Even small changes in symptom criteria, they say, have a significant impact on the prescribing habits of doctors.

When it was first released in 1952 the *DSM* had 60 diagnoses. The last major edition, the *DSM-IV* released in 1994, has over 300 disorders with about 400 separate diagnoses. "Not only has each revision of the *DSM* had increases in the number of defined mental illnesses," says Dr. Levine, "institutional mental health studies show rising percentages of anxiety and mood disorders."

In the mid 1980s social phobia affected about 2% of the population. By 1998 it rose to about 13%. According to Moynihan and Cassels, this is because the list of symptoms that define this illness in the *DSM* keeps steadily expanding. These authors have detected similar patterns of expansion with other mental illnesses.

In the 1970s panic disorder fell under the category of anxiety neurosis in the *DSM-II*. After it was branded a distinct condition in the *DSM-III* released in 1980, its incidence grew 1,000-fold. The branding of this illness originally led to an increase in the sale of the prescription drug Xanax. But since then, newer antidepressants have been created to foster expanding ideas about panic.

Bipolar disorder entered the *DSM* in 1980. Before that it was manic-depressive disorder. Since that change, new variations have emerged, such as bipolar disorder II, bipolar disorders not otherwise specified (NOS), and cyclothymia.

Dr. David Healy of North Wales Department of Psychological Medicine, Cardiff University, describes the growth of this disorder as "astounding" and says that it is a result of the expanded definition. In addition to the expanded definition of bipolar disorder, new initiatives were launched to promote awareness about the illness. Some included the creation of journals such as *Bipolar Disorders*, and *Journal of Bipolar Disorders*, as well as a multitude of societies, annual conferences, patient web sites, etc. "Many heavily funded by pharmaceutical companies," notes Dr. Healy.

"Watching the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (DSM)* balloon in size over the decades to its current phonebook dimensions," explains the Madison Avenue marketing executive Vince Parry, "would have us believe that the world is a more unstable place today than ever." However, he says, this is not the case. "In reality, the increasing number of identified emotional conditions has resulted ... through direct funding by pharmaceutical companies."

Neuroleptics are Toxic

The neuroleptics used to treat these fake mental illnesses have been known to cause a major disruption of frontal lobe activity, resulting in a significant reduction in intellectual functioning, and a shortened lifespan. They include: Chlorazine, Thorazine, Haldol, Risperdal, Zyprexa, Abilify, Seroquel, and others.

Some neuroleptics belong to a class called the *phenothiazines*, which include: Compazine, Mellaril, Prolixin, Serentil, Trilofon, and Vesprin. Phenothiazines were used by the US Department of Agriculture in the 1930s to kill swine parasites. Although they are still used in veterinary medicine to control violent animals, most veterinarians won't use them for long periods because they are too dangerous.

By the 1980s the results of the long-term effects of neuroleptics began to surface. They made people chronically ill, prone to violence and criminal behavior, and caused social withdrawal. They also caused permanent brain damage and early death.

Many of the traits that people associate with schizophrenia, such as the odd walk, vacant facial expression, sleepiness, lack of initiative, etc., are caused almost entirely by the drug-induced dopamine deficiency.

Dr. Breggin has researched many tragic case studies regarding the use of psychiatric drugs. Most of the time, he's been able to obtain police reports, medical records, and interview surviving patients. He's also been able to visit crime scenes, obtain coroner reports, and autopsy findings to formulate his conclusions.

He's testified at medical hearings and has written legal reports of his findings. He's authored multiple books on the effects of psychiatric drugs. And his research is based on documented scientific literature, most of which is confirmed by the FDA.

Dr. Breggin says that psychiatric drugs cause: confusion, depression, anxiety, poor memory, impaired concentration, mania, artificial euphoria, irritability, emotional blunting, reduced creativity, and depersonalization (feeling disconnected from others), and visual and auditory hallucinations. They also cause neurological problems like headaches, muscle spasms, abnormal dreams, insomnia, and lack of coordination, fatigue, general weakness, and seizures.

Psychiatric drugs cause apathy, lack of initiative to begin or complete tasks, difficulty making decisions, and have been known to "utterly crush the will." The anti-depressants have been known to cause suicide and mania. "Psychiatric drugs, one and all, always cause brain dysfunction," says Dr. Breggin, "that's how they work."

Antidepressants cause suicide. There is no convincing evidence that they reduce suicide. Although for years, drug corporations have had their paid researchers try to prove that these drugs prevent suicide, "no compelling evidence has been forthcoming." In fact, the opposite has been proven. They literally cause suicidal behavior.

When patients complain that their symptoms become worse after taking neuroleptics, their doctors may tell them that the medication is just revealing the underlying symptoms, and may actually increase their dosage. The medical and psychiatric textbooks which advise on medication are written mostly by consultants for drug corporations, who typically ignore the dangerous effects of these drugs. Therefore, doctors can only be believed as much as the drug corporations who provide them with most of their literature.

But in addition to being literally toxic to the human body, neuroleptics shut down higher brain functions. A part of the brain called the *prefrontal lobes*, which is located in the cerebral cortex, is responsible for the highest brain functions, including empathy, independence, judgment, willpower, spiritual yearnings, creativity, and self-awareness.

However, in order for this most-developed portion of our brain to function, it requires the neurotransmitter dopamine, which allows it to send information across gaps between neurons. Dopamine is manufactured in an area of the midbrain (mesencephalon) called the *ventral tegmentum*, more specifically in the *substantia nigra*.

The dopamine created in this area of the midbrain is sent to the frontal lobes by a conduit known as the *mesocortical pathway*, which is one of the four major dopaminergic pathways in the brain. This pathway basically connects the midbrain to the frontal lobes.

In a lobotomy, the frontal lobes are cut off from the rest of the brain by severing the nerve fibers that act as a conduit which they use to receive dopamine. By inhibiting the transmission of dopamine, Dr. Levine says, neuroleptics cause a chemical lobotomy which produces a "zombifying" effect. In both instances, adds author Whitaker, whether it be a chemical or physical lobotomy, the integration of frontal lobe function with other parts of the brain is disrupted.

Neuroleptics facilitate a chemical removal of the human spark plugs. "Once that mechanism of action is understood," declared Whitaker, "it becomes clear why neuroleptics produce symptoms similar to Parkinson's disease and also why the drugs provide a type of chemical lobotomy."

Organized psychiatry, drug corporations, patient advocacy groups, and federal "health" agencies, consider the shutting down of these higher brain functions an improvement. Ongoing, life-long treatment, they tell us, is necessary to correct the "chemical imbalance" that is causing the "brain disease."

Drs. Breggin and Cohen similarly proclaimed, "It is no exaggeration to call this effect a chemical lobotomy." This "zombie effect" they said, should not be viewed as therapy, but as chemical restraint.

The Rockefeller Foundation has had a significant influence on the use of the lobotomy. In the early 1920s when the foundation transformed organized psychiatry by financing it with about $16 million over a period of two decades, it funded the creation of research labs and new departments at medical schools.

One recipient, Dr. John Fulton of Yale University, was one of the initial promoters of the lobotomy. Another was Dr. Edward Strecker at the University of Pennsylvania, who employed these techniques in crowded mental hospitals where many lobotomies were given. Washington University in St. Louis Missouri had also received funds, and hired Dr. Carlyle Jacobsen to help their neurosurgeons advance their surgical techniques for lobotomy.

Summary

Organized psychiatry is vastly corrupted. It is obviously more concerned with power and profit than mental health. In addition to the APA as an organization being heavily funded and outright controlled by drug corporations, its panel members that update the *DSM* are individually connected to drug corporations as consultants.

The symptoms in the *DSM* which define mental illnesses have steadily increased over the years. Profit and control appear to be likely reasons. Schizophrenia and related disorders have no biological origin. These illnesses do not exist according to science.

The industry, disguised by its many fronts, releases an onslaught of propaganda to the public to convince them that toxic medication is safe and effective. However, neuroleptics destroy normal brains. They also shut down the higher brain functions, producing a chemical lobotomy.

Political Considerations

Schizophrenia Serves a Purpose

Despite the fact that the disease model of schizophrenia has repeatedly failed scientific testing, it is still promoted by the industry's front groups. It is sustained because it serves the influential forces that shape our society's ideological commitments.

Dr. Leifer says that labeling some thoughts and actions symptoms of an illness is a covert form of social control, which allows for violations of human rights to be masked as medical treatment. He traces the beginning of this mechanism back to major political changes in Europe and America, such as the American Revolution, which resulted in a change from tyranny to democracy.

Prior to our transition to a society that guaranteed individual liberty, a person judged to be acting against those who ran the state could simply be imprisoned by officers of the king. Under the rule of law, however, a person cannot be deprived of his freedom until he has been convicted of a crime. Therefore, because the rule of law limited the power of the state, illnesses such as schizophrenia were invented in order to control certain types of behavior.

The disease model appeared in the 1800s within the context of the asylum movement when insanity was medicalized. It was developed by doctors and supported by those who thought that what they considered to be bizarre behavior was the result of a disease.

It was during this time that medical practitioners introduced many new types of mental disorders. In response to dealing with behaviors that some believed to be unwanted, medical practitioners formulated many new diagnoses, one of which was dementia praecox, and eventually schizophrenia.

The creation of the asylum (which was later renamed mental hospital) allowed for people to be regarded as objects. New laws and judicial acts legalized the medical practices which occurred in these institutions. On the advice of physicians, the courts almost always gave unlimited powers to doctors who worked in these asylums in order to protect society.

Labeling someone mentally ill allowed for doctors to be given legal power over certain people to do, basically, anything. In addition to the legal power, there was, and remains, an implied *silent premise* that doctors are morally superior to those they're "treating" for a mental illness. "The mental hospital filled a number of societal needs," remarked Professor Sarbin, "the most salient of which was social control—the maintenance of order."

Over the last 150 years or so the treatment practices have changed, but they have included: locked wards and physical restraints, bloodletting, forced vomiting, electroshock, lobotomy, and others. Each treatment had a particular theory for its justification. The current theory, the dopamine hypothesis, justifies the use of neuroleptics, which cause literal destruction to the brain.

Because a society could not be considered free if it regulated free speech and behavior, the disease model of schizophrenia was used to disguise and justify covert forms of social control. Without claiming that schizophrenia spectrum disorders are medical illnesses, those who run the state would not be able to have innocent people forcibly separated from society.

A Covert Method of Social Control

Besides the rule of law, our society has unwritten social rules that have been created and sustained by some very wealthy and influential people. When individuals violate these social rules, they are identified, separated, and reformed.

The medical model of schizophrenia is upheld because it provides a concealed method of destroying people who others believe are not acting in accordance with their assigned roles. As explained by professors Sarbin and Mancuso, the idea of roles in our society can be illustrated by envisioning our status occurring within a vertical social spectrum. Each role places us at certain points on the spectrum. Often, the amount of respect we receive corresponds to on our location on the spectrum.

At the bottom of the spectrum is the bare minimum of roles, which grants all adult members of our society the status of *person*. This lowest role is granted in exchange for conforming to social norms, including communication rules, modesty codes, control of aggression, procedures, rules governing property, etc.

In addition to being given the bare minimum of rights after having conformed to social norms, and therefore, achieving the status of *person*, some people acquire other roles. Accompanying these roles include various awards, titles, and certificates of achievement. These roles place them higher on the social spectrum and offer implicit increases in respect and/or power.

There are those in our society who have achieved a higher status/role on the social spectrum, and who value these social norms. When these people perceive that an individual has either disrespected them, or is not in their proper "place" on the social spectrum, a norm has been violated.

A vast powerful bureaucratic network that legitimizes the idea of schizophrenia exists to identify, separate, and regulate certain individuals. It exists at all levels of the political structure. The network includes institutions such as legislative bodies, the courts, law enforcement, governmental institutions, and the medical field, which subscribe to very subtle (often unrecognized) ideologies.

According to Sarbin and Mancuso, this bureaucracy provides behavior regulation services for the entrenched members of our society. When a person does not accept a role that society has assigned to them, and its corresponding location on the social spectrum, the network is mobilized to "fix" the situation.

One method of fixing these violations, they suggest, is to declare someone a *nonperson*. However, because the term *nonperson* is not part of any diagnostic system, and because we allegedly live in a free society under the rule of law, labels such as *schizophrenia* are used. Like all other status labels on the social spectrum, this label has implicit meanings. Particularly, it means that someone is not worthy of respect; that they are below human.

The policy of identifying and segregating certain members of society serves sociopolitical purposes rather than medical ones, they suggest. These sociopolitical purposes are better served if the criteria which defines the mental illness is kept vague, leaving the interpretation open to the evaluating clinician.

The individual that has been identified is then separated and placed in an environment for behavior modification. The environment provides little opportunity for the individual to confirm their status as a person. It places the individual at a constant risk for failure and degradation. Conditions in the environment are deliberately created to accomplish this. All of this is done under the guise of providing medical treatment.

When people seek psychological help, they're usually having trouble with irrational thoughts and feelings. They think that their mental and emotional state is out of their control. Obtaining an official diagnosis makes them feel better. They may even demand a diagnosis, frequently being satisfied that their condition has a name, and not wanting any further treatment.

Although for some, being diagnosed with a mental disorder confirms that their feelings of helplessness are justified, at the same time they are taught that it is beyond their control. They're told that ongoing medication is the primary treatment. The diagnosis is often immediately followed by medication, which the person may take indefinitely.

Depression, guilt, anxiety, shame, anger, and other negative emotions are normal states, which may last hours or even days. These emotions are natural reactions to dealing with our lives and our interaction with society. A normal but often uncomfortable part of our growth is learning how to control our mental and emotional processes.

However, a majority of those that have been diagnosed with schizophrenia did not seek out a doctor for relief of pain. Instead, they exhibited nonconforming behavior which led their employers, police, neighbors, or family members to arrange for them to be evaluated.

In his book, *The Reign of Error: Psychiatry, Authority, and Law*, Dr. Lee Coleman explains that most of the people who are forced into mental hospitals and medicated appear as voluntary patients to the outside world. The people who resist hospitalization are usually coerced into signing a voluntary admission paper on the basis that a formal involuntary commitment process will begin if they don't.

So, thinking that they'll be treated more leniently, they comply. Dr. Coleman portrays this method as a concealed involuntary commitment process. Because of this, he suggests the quantity of forced commitments is vast.

During the hospitalization a psychiatric dossier is formed on the person, which, according to Dr. Coleman, is filled with distortions and exaggerations. As ridiculous as it seems, family and friends are often the source of this falsified information.[1] Once the record is formed, it automatically becomes fact, following the person around for life, and reducing them to second-class citizenship.

Even with the use of diagnostic manuals, clinicians have much say over which beliefs may be considered delusional. These variations can be observed between different countries, different time periods, and even different doctors within the same country during the same time period.[2]

These researchers conclude that political attitudes have a profound influence on psychiatric diagnoses. Typically, if an individual complains about problems with society, they have a greater risk of being considered psychologically disturbed. They also suggest that the doctors and staff of these hospitals where people are "treated" are unwitting believers of an ideology, and have undergone a type of indoctrination. The patient is considered "cured" when their beliefs become consistent with that of the hospital doctors and staff, who, through indoctrination are basically the most institutionally submissive members of society.

"To deny that involuntary hospitalization is a form of covert social control," Dr. Leifer stated, "seems absurd and dishonest, approaching fraud. Most psychiatrists are aware, and will admit in private, that involuntary hospitalization is a form of social control. But they deny it in public, insisting it is necessary for the medical treatment of mentally ill people."

---

1   In Russia, the KGB would often not forcefully commit people into mental hospitals itself; instead, it would use its gigantic informant network to conceal its practices. Friends and family members of those targeted by the Russian government were often the first to alert the authorities.

2   In 1973 a Stanford University psychology professor named David Rosenhan conducted a study where he and seven other normal people visited twelve different mental hospitals and complained of hearing vague voices. The auditory hallucinations were the only false symptoms they gave. Otherwise, they behaved calmly and described their situations with friends and family as they were. In every case but one they were diagnosed with schizophrenia. While in the hospital they stopped complaining of symptoms but no hospital staff noticed them as "normal." Instead they were given neuroleptics in pill form and treated like nonpersons. After this, Rosenhan conducted another experiment where he told a prestigious teaching hospital that at some point during a three-month period he and his colleagues would attempt to gain entry into a psychiatric unit. During that period, the teaching hospital claimed that out of the 193 psychiatric patients that it received, 41 were Rosenhan's imposters. But, in fact, no pseudopatient had tried to gain admittance. Rosenhan's findings were published in an article called, *On Being Sane in Insane Places* that appeared in a 1973 issue of *Science*. See the book *Mad in America: Bad Science, Bad Medicine, and the Enduring Mistreatment of the Mentally Ill*, by Robert Whitaker.

233

After they are released from the hospital, they may still be coerced into receiving "voluntary" treatment indefinitely. Although many stop taking their medication due to their natural revulsion to such toxins, a guardian can force them to comply on behalf of a doctor, with the threat of another hospitalization.

Because there is no scientific measurement to determine the existence of schizophrenia, there are often major inconsistencies among these clinicians regarding what constitutes a diagnosis. This particularly appears to be the case regarding delusions and hallucinations.

Of all the behaviors that are considered symptoms of schizophrenia, delusions and hallucinations are the most characteristic. *The Encyclopedia of Schizophrenia and Other Psychotic Disorders* says a delusion is, "a false personal belief based on incorrect inference about external reality," which is "firmly maintained despite the consensually accepted beliefs of most others."

Other publications on schizophrenia define it in similar ways. So, basically, a delusion is a belief that is not shared by others. More specifically, it is just a belief. Whether or not a particular belief is judged as delusional has nothing to do with "truth."

The judgment is based on the ideology and training of the evaluating clinician, who, in most cases, is not concerned with any relative information that might support the beliefs of the individual in question. In fact, they are trained to ignore a person's evidence of their beliefs. An evaluation of the literature put out by the industry confirms this.

The industry calls the seemingly rational presentation of multiple delusions that form a coherent theme, a *systematized delusion*, or an *organized system of delusions*. The word *hallucination* belongs to behavioral terms that include daydreaming, fantasy, fiction, invention, fabrications, creative imaginings, and religious and mystical experiences.

Examples of these include voices of conscience, romantic fantasies, dreams of glory, communication with religious figures, imaginary interactions with celebrities, imaginary childhood companions, etc. The imaginings experienced by normal people are from the same range of topics as those admitted by diagnosed schizophrenics.

In addition to being part of a class of normal behaviors, hallucinations belong to a negative class of behaviors, which gives the term a psychotic meaning. The decision as to whether or not a normal activity such as a hallucination is psychotic is made by a person with greater social power than the one experiencing the hallucination.

Professor Sarbin explained that his skepticism of the disease model began about 50 years ago when he encountered hospitalized patients who were diagnosed with schizophrenia, including those who thought they were being attacked with electromagnetic weapons.

He says that because the types of behavior he noticed were the result of each person's individual history and experiences, it was difficult for him to conclude that they were suffering from a mental disorder. He became interested in the judgmental process which clinicians used to determine if someone was hallucinating, and began researching hallucinations over the next several years.

What he discovered was that the conduct upon which the attribution of a hallucination is made is no more than an individual making a comment on their imaginings to another person. And that, no matter how wild an imagination is, if it's not reported through words or deeds, then it is not considered a hallucination.

Since the beginning of the 20th century, says Professor Sarbin, psychologists have accepted the idea that hallucinations are normal. Religious hallucinations are common. In some cultures these experiences result not in a person's forced incarceration, but in the assignment of an honorific social status.

Other researchers have arrived at similar conclusions, that delusions and hallucinations are distortions of normal functions. "The conclusion to my efforts to understand hallucination and delusion," reported Professor Sarbin, "was that the process of constructing imaginings and beliefs was the same for so-called schizophrenics and so-called normals."

Hallucinations, or, more socially acceptable terms such as daydreaming, visions, fantasies, creative imagination, etc., are normal experiences. The evidence suggests that schizophrenia, which as we've learned doesn't exist, is used by an influential ruling class primarily to identify and reform non-conforming people.

"There is, thus," Dr. Leifer added, "a public mandate for a covert form of social control which supplements rule of law. Medical-coercive psychiatry, in alliance with the state, performs this function disguised as medical diagnosis and treatment." One of the best examples of how an entire system can be complicit in identifying and destroying people under the guise of providing medical treatment is what occurred in Communist Russia.

Punitive Psychiatry in Communist Russia

In Communist Russia mental hospitals were often used to isolate people who were potential dangers to the established order from the rest of society. The hospitals were called *psikhushkas*. Although they appeared to be independent facilities run by the Ministry of Health, they were in fact run by the security forces. In these institutions "mental reorientation" was done under the guise of medical care.

Punitive psychiatry had been used in Russia as far back as 1918, but it wasn't until the mid 1950s that it had become a major instrument of repression. During this time, dissenting psychiatrists in Russia were removed from important posts as a type of filtering process. The entire industry of psychiatry was transformed to conform to the Pavlovian doctrine.

In the late 1960s people who had been forced into these hospitals began to smuggle out notes describing how they were being tortured with neuroleptics by doctors working for the KGB. At first their testimonies were not believed. But in the early 1970s descriptions of their experiences began to appear in the US, which eventually led to an investigation into the matter.

It was discovered that psychiatrists were being used by the state in a battle against nonconformists. It allowed the Russian government to avoid regular legal procedures by processing certain people through the mental health system.

This allowed those who ran the country to deprive people of their rights, subject them to rigid rules, and drug them against their will. It was a form of imprisonment disguised as medical treatment. The Moscow Serbsky Institute for Social and Forensic Psychiatry expanded the definition of schizophrenia to include a new variation of the illness known as *sluggish schizophrenia* (vyalotekushchaya).

A person with this illness may appear to be normal most of the time. However, one manifestation of the sickness was an inflexibility of convictions, and reformist delusions that were evidence of paranoid development. Before they began to vigorously target nonconformists, the Russian government first used psychiatry to expand the definition of schizophrenia.

This was accomplished by Dr. Andrei Snezhnevsky, director of the Institute of Psychiatry of the Academy of Medical Sciences (AMS), and his colleagues. The major psychiatric center in the USSR, the Serbsky Institute, was complicit as well.

There were three basic forms of schizophrenia: continuous, shift-like, and periodic. Each form had several subtypes. For the purpose of this chapter we're only concerned with the *continuous*, which was used for punitive purposes.

Its course included the progressive deterioration of the individual with no remission. No actual symptoms may be observable; the person may appear perfectly normal. It begins with secondary symptoms such as withdrawal, apathy, and diminished interests. Then, positive symptoms, such as delusions and hallucinations develop.

Subtypes of this form include rapid (also called malignant), moderate, and mild (also called sluggish). The specific kind of schizophrenia used against nonconformists is the continuous form with a sluggish subtype. It's commonly referred to as *sluggish schizophrenia*.

Its developmental pattern is basically this: an overvalued idea is constructed which eventually becomes a delusional idea. The delusional idea becomes a delusional system (theme). The theme is followed by a *systematized delusional state* or what is referred to in the US as a *systematized delusion*, also called an *organized system of delusions*. The systematized delusion will often appear outwardly convincing and not absurd.

The expanded definition described it as mostly a social disorder. So a person suffering from sluggish schizophrenia could appear normal most of the time and maintain functionality in all other life areas.

Delusional symptoms associated with the disorder that have caused people to be forced into mental hospitals, as revealed in their records, include:

- Having reformist delusions.
- Nervous exhaustion brought on by anti-government activities.
- An acute sense of justice.
- Struggling for truth and justice.
- Fighting for democracy.
- Paranoid delusions of reforming society.
- An obsession with asserting trampled rights.
- Verbal aggression.
- Having a suspicious personality.
- An over-estimation of one's own personality.
- Inflexibility of convictions.
- Exaggerated attention to detail in public writings.
- Lack of sense of reality.
- Poor adaptation to the social environment.

People in Russia that have been forced into mental hospitals have reported the following: A bogus criminal investigation is used by the state to attack them. They are watched constantly, which has been described as uninterrupted surveillance or continuous surveillance. This means 24/7 non-stop observation.

They are stalked by a network of plain clothed citizens "round-the-clock." They are harassed out of employment. Some have false criminal charges brought against them. Their phones are tapped, their correspondence is interfered with. The security forces are said to use "special means" to accomplish this. Their friends and family are also placed under surveillance and stalked.

The person's family often initiates the commitment process and can't be relied on to help them. An explanation for this is a forced commitment through proxy. The KGB would often not directly have people forcefully committed; instead they'd use their network of informants to accomplish this in order to conceal their involvement.

There were two types of hospitals in Communist Russia. Ordinary psychiatry hospitals (OPH), which were less strict, were run by the Ministry of Health (MOH). Special psychiatric hospitals (SPH) where used to contain the socially dangerous.

The SPHs were run by the KGB as well as a secret police network called the Ministry of Internal Affairs (MVD), which existed to maintain public order. The MVD also ran the police, concentration camps, and prisons.

The chief doctor in an SPH was always an officer in the MVD, usually ranking from a lieutenant to major. Most regular doctors were also officers. The nurses and nurse assistants were MVD too, with the nurses being sergeants. The orderlies were usually recruited from a network of convicted criminals.

Each SPH had a number of doctors whose primary duty was "continuous surveillance" of patients. An example of an SPH is the Serbsky Institute, the main psychiatric center in Russia, where the treatments that people were given included neuroleptics and electric shocks. In some cases these drugs were given without correctives that reduce side-effects, basically as torture.

The Defense Intelligence Agency report of 1972, *Controlled Offensive Behavior—USSR*, mentioned that the environment was arranged so as to lower moral, destroy self-confidence and self-reliance, instill fatigue and anxiety, and create confusion. All this was done for the purpose of obtaining "total submission."

The noted Russian dissident Leonid I. Plyushch likewise mentioned that the environment, the treatment, and the regulations were arranged to "crush his will." In August of 2007 *The Times* commented that the object was to "break you and make you insane."

In addition to nonconformists, there were convicted criminals who would fake mental illness in order to avoid the concentration camps. However, when they experienced life inside the hospitals almost all of them admitted what they had done in order to be returned to the camps.

The *Abuse of Psychiatry* report of the Hearing before the Subcommittee on Human Rights and International Organizations in September of 1983, described that these mental hospitals contained a multitude of resources which were used to degrade people. "It uses those vast resources," noted the committee, "not simply to wound, to humiliate, or to force confessions, but to intrude into the most hidden recesses of the whole human personality."

Most former patients report that they were forced to admit that they were mentally ill. They were also told to renounce their religious or political beliefs. These forced acknowledgements were referred to as *recantation*. The recantation could have been either written or verbal.

A person's refusal to acknowledge that they were sick was considered a symptom of the illness, which required continuing treatment. Even after a person gave up their beliefs, they were kept until complete "recovery" was achieved, which meant that the patients who admitted that they were ill found themselves to be healthy again. Some of these "reformed" people were used for propaganda purposes during radio or TV broadcasts.

In February 1976 *Time Magazine* illustrated the experience of Soviet Scientist Leonid I. Plyushch, who was forced into an SPH in 1973. He said that the horrors he witnessed were less frightening to him than the repeated attempts by doctors to force him to admit that he was mentally ill.

After being released from the hospital, people have reported being placed under constant surveillance, and stalked everywhere, all the time. Their family and friends have also been placed under strict surveillance and stalked. The person is usually placed under the guardianship of their relatives. Their every action is watched closely by the Psychoneurological Center (PNC) which works with the KGB and they are threatened with another forced hospitalization if they do not conform.

The typical profile of those selected for hospitalization included people who wouldn't tolerate injustice, dishonesty, or cruelty as much as the average person. They were human rights activists, nationalists, scholars, writers, artists, scientists, and religious believers. Psychiatrists who exposed the system were blacklisted or forced into a mental hospital themselves. Basically anybody that was able to see the state in its true form was a potential target.

Some of these people complained to their politicians or institutes of justice about wrongdoings. Others filed legal complaints alleging corruption involving local politicians, police, the courts, and judges. They may have criticized the practices of local medical institutions or military bases.

In addition to it being used by the state, it was a type of service available to anyone with political connections, money, or who could provide favors to a psychiatrist. Businessmen and politicians could use it to have people they didn't like forcefully committed.

Business partners or relatives could seize a person's property after having them declared insane. Jealous coworkers would use it to remove competitors. Neighbors would use it to either take someone's apartment, or to simply have them removed if they didn't like their activities.

The entire legal procedure was run by the state with a predetermined outcome. The KGB would identify people through its network. They would place people under surveillance and either arrest or use an informant to alert the authorities that someone was mentally ill. The evaluation was carried out in a hospital, clinic, court, prison, home, workplace, or the scene of an incident.

In court, the doctors added the appearance of legitimacy to the procedure. They provided a bogus diagnosis at the direction of the KGB. The courts, which were also controlled, would then uphold the doctors' findings.

The judges and jury members, as well as the defense and prosecution attorneys, were all just "pawns at political trials." The entire legal procedure was a facade. The state, mental health system, police, KGB, and the entire justice system were interconnected, and functioned in unison to have perfectly healthy people forcefully medicated.

This included the top medical experts that belonged to professional societies and the country's mental health department, such as the Institute of Psychiatry of the Academy of Medical Sciences (AMS). It also included the Ministry of Health, which was responsible for public health, and the Serbsky Institute for Social and Forensic Psychiatry.

Most regular doctors understood that what they were doing was immoral. They cooperated out fear or career ambitions. Ideological factors played an important role too. The idea was that the government was correct, and anyone who questioned it must have been mentally ill and poorly adapted to his environment. The doctors were institutionally submissive. There were very few who refused to cooperate.

Because the psychiatrist was employed by an organization with a variety of institutions that subscribed to an ideology, and his livelihood depended on the organization's survival, he would usually serve the organization rather than the individual patient.

There was a leading group of prominent psychiatrists who cooperated with the KGB out of greed rather than intimidation. Similar to the *thought leaders* now used by the industry, these senior experts were used to influence their colleagues. They were said to be consciously unethical. They betrayed their medical duties in exchange for higher salaries and a better position in society. They were also granted the satisfaction of ambitions, power, and having special privileges. Does what you've read in this chapter so far seem familiar?

Some included Professor Andrei Snezhnevsky, director of the Institute of Psychiatry of the Academy of Medical Sciences (AMS); Dr. Georgy Morozov, director of the Serbsky Research Institute for Forensic Psychiatry; and Professor Ruben Nadzharov, deputy-director of the Institute of Psychiatry.

Others were Professor Daniil Lunts; head of the Serbsky's special diagnostic section; Dr. Zoya Serebryakova, chief psychiatrist in the Ministry of Health; Dr. Boris Petrovsky of the Ministry of Health; and Dr. Marat Vartanyan of the Institute of Psychiatry and former associate secretary of the World Psychiatric Association.

Some of the most useful information our society has regarding what occurred in Communist Russia comes from people who have had direct experience with it, such as the renowned Russian dissident Vladimir Bukovsky.[1]

A few of these individuals kept notes on their experience. For the first decade or so, their reports that were smuggled out were not believed. They were also denied by the institutions that were involved. Petro Grigorenko kept records of his ordeal, including being imprisoned for 5 years in psychiatric hospitals. He was a Soviet Army commander, and later a human rights activist and writer.

---

1   Vladimir Bukovsky said that the European Union functions basically the same as the former Soviet Union. He specifically referred to it as a "monster" that must be stopped before it becomes a complete totalitarian state. Bukovsky was allowed to view confidential documents which revealed a plan to turn Europe into a single socialist organization. Because of his experience as a political prisoner, in 1992 Mr. Bukovsky was invited by the Russian government to serve as an expert witness at a trial conducted to determine if the former Soviet Communist Party had been a criminal organization. To prepare for his testimony, he was given access to confidential documents which only few have seen due to their classified nature. Some included KGB reports to the Soviet government. The documents, says Bukovksy, revealed a plan to turn Europe into a single socialist organization by eliminating sovereign nations. He said that despite the appearance of support that some countries have given to the EU, many were coerced and blackmailed into joining. They include Ireland, Denmark, Switzerland, and others that had repeatedly rejected the treaty. He was able to view information pertaining to members of the Trilateral Commission who visited Russia in January of 1989 for a meeting with President Mikhail Gorbachev. They included David Rockefeller, former Japanese Prime Minister Yasuhiro Nakasone, former president of France Valery Giscard d'Estaing, and US Secretary of State Henry Kissinger. At that time Gorbachev was told that Russia was to be more dependent on global financial institutions such as the IMF and World Bank. He was also told that within 15 years Europe was to be a single federal state. There was also to be to a merging of the Soviet Union into Western Europe. Bukovsky referred to it as an open conspiracy in the making. The structure of the EU is based on Communist Russia, says Bukovsky, who warns of an international KGB. The EU commission, which he describes as a heavily corrupted bureaucracy that runs the country with no actual accountability to the people, resembles the politburo. See the *Brussels Journal* report *Former Soviet Dissident Warns for EU Dictatorship*, February 27, 2006, by Paul Belien.

Victor Nekipelov kept notes during his 2 month stay in a mental hospital, which formed the manuscript for his 1980 book, *Institute of Fools: A Dissident's Memoir of his Detention in the Most Notorious Soviet Psychiatric Institution*.

It is now a matter of fact that medical punishment in Russia was led by the top experts in the field of psychiatry, including the people and organizations that the public relied on to help them. There were very few psychiatrists who refused to cooperate.

One was Dr. Semyon Gluzman, who would later author a manual along with the famous Russian dissident, Vladimir Bukovsky, on what to expect when being attacked by the system. Another was Dr. Anatoly Koryagin, a man who served as the primary psychiatrist to the Commission to Investigate the Use of Psychiatry for Political Purposes, an independent initiative formed in 1977 to document the use of psychiatry to destroy nonconformists.

Dr. Koryagin was arrested in 1981 and eventually sent to a mental hospital where he was tortured with neuroleptics. His son was so severely persecuted he had to drop out of school. In 1982 Amnesty International published the transcripts for his trial, where he announced:

My investigation and trial do not constitute an act of justice, but a means of suppressing me for my views. I know that the sentence will be harsh. I do not ask anything of this court. Regardless of the sentence imposed on me, I state that I will never accept the situation which exists in our country, where mentally healthy people are imprisoned in psychiatric hospitals for trying to think independently. I know that long years of physical imprisonment, humiliation and mockery await me.

Dr. Semyon Gluzman and Vladimir Bukovsky mentioned in their publication, *A Manual on Psychiatry for Dissidents* that they recognized two classes of mental disorders: one with a biological origin based on "concrete scientific discoveries," which they described as true mental illnesses, and the other with no basis in science that was used for social control.

Most psychiatrists were civilians. Like all citizens, it was easier for them to conclude that someone was mentally ill than to entertain the possibility that they were right. Because if the statements made by the individuals about Soviet society were correct, and their actions were courageous, then in not acknowledging the existence of the problem, one would be a coward. Therefore, it was comforting to the citizens and the doctors themselves when a diagnosis of schizophrenia was made.

Punitive psychiatry was a mechanism built into the system, which existed to maintain the social-political order. Because it was necessary that people thought they were free and the government was limited by the rule of law, psychiatry was used to circumvent the normal judicial procedures.

The use of punitive psychiatry against nonconformists continues in Russia. According to some publications, not only did it never stop, it has increased since it became public. Although it is not as widespread as it is in the Soviet Union, it has also occurred in South Africa, Romania, Bulgaria, Czechoslovakia, East Germany, Poland, and Hungary.

Of particular interest is China, which has a system of covert social control similar to Russia's. The mental hospitals in China, called the *ankang* (peace and health), are run by the police, and have been used increasingly in a war against dissent since the early 1980s.

According to the *International Herald Tribune*, it allows the Chinese government to neutralize certain people without channeling them through the legal system. Similar to the Russian system, it is done under the guise of providing medical treatment. And the profile of those targeted appears to be similar. The activity is said to be increasing.

Coverup Initiatives
Control of Psychological Sciences

In the previous chapter we saw examples of how multiple seemingly legitimate organizations within a country can function in unison to destroy an individual under the guise of providing medical treatment, and how the top medical minds are complicit in providing cover for the system.

Whenever a society falls under the rule of psychopaths, the social sciences, particularly the behavioral sciences such as psychiatry and psychology, are tightly controlled. If such a system allowed these sciences to flourish in a normal way, then within about a decade the leaders in these areas of study would diagnose the state of affairs and begin to develop methods to counter it.

Therefore, an exceptionally malicious international system of control is formed. Genuine scientific work which might expose the system is monitored. Specialists in these areas are intimidated and restrained. They are the targets of well-organized harassment campaigns and may be killed without a trace. The entire operation is done so as to not cause suspicion in countries governed primarily by normal people.

We've seen in previous chapters that such a system of control over the psychological sciences has been established. Drug corporations write the CPGs, continually expand the definitions of mental illnesses, and create new ones. They influence the education that most physicians will receive by funding the medical schools and universities, and hiring consultants to write psychiatric textbooks.

Wall Street also influences or controls professional societies, patient advocacy groups, and federal entities such as the APA, AMA, MHA, CHADD, NAMI, US Congress, FDA, and NIH. Their control extends down to insurance providers, medical centers, and in many cases individual doctors.

Using their well-paid thought leaders, they are targeting the entire population for prescription medication use. These leading psychiatrists conduct the research, write the reports that appear in the world's top medical journals, and "educate" their peers at a variety of conferences to promote psychiatric drugs to treat fictional illnesses.

Despite their implied moral superiority, the awards and titles that they hold which our society values, and their guise of professionalism, the actual behavior demonstrated by these industry leaders suggests that they are tremendously corrupted. When the pathological factor is considered, their almost unbelievable greed begins to make sense.

In a society run by psychopaths, every single mental health center and psychiatric hospital, as well as the attitudes of all individuals working in these areas, are affected by the pathocracy. Hidden battles occur in these institutions between those who have decided to serve the system and others who are being harassed while trying to deliver beneficial information to the public.

In any country that such a system exists there are those who are aware of its true identity and vigorously act against it. Usually, the more intelligent a person is the more difficulty they will have concealing themselves and accepting the pathocracy.

Because psychopaths consider a normal person's ideas and actions abnormal, a government run by them will consider dissidents mentally ill. When a society is run from the top by psychopaths, the resources of the system are commonly used to drive perfectly healthy people insane. Scientifically and morally degenerate psychiatrists are used to accomplish this.

In such a system mediocre and privileged people become psychiatrists who serve the pathocracy. Even mental health specialists with the best of intentions are working with knowledge that has been deliberately degraded in order to conceal the true nature of the system. What follows are examples of a coverup.

The Industry's Literature

Dr. Xavier Amador is a professor at Columbia University, Teachers College. He was previously on NAMI's Board of Directors, and was the Director of Psychology at the New York State Psychiatric Institute. His book, *I Am Not Sick, I Don't Need Help*, which was co-authored with Anna-Lisa Johanson, includes a method developed by him to convince people to take their psychiatric drugs. The book is heavily promoted by NAMI.

The *Learn, Empathize, Agree, Partnership (LEAP)* protocol outlined in this book is basically a method to trick people into medication compliance. The listening skills they suggest are based on the assumption that the person is delusional. The idea that a person could be telling the truth is not entertained.

For instance, in the *Listen* component, they describe: "Listen for beliefs about the self and the illness. Understanding how your loved one sees herself, and her beliefs about whether or not she is ill, is the key to unlocking her isolation and to building an alliance. ... You want to learn about what she thinks about taking psychiatric medicine."

To build this alliance they suggest lying to the individual. "In order to learn about someone's delusions, and their experience of being in [a] hospital and on medications, you sometimes had to let them have the mistaken impression that you believe in their delusions."

In the *Empathize* phase of the protocol, the appearance of empathy is used as a manipulative tactic to open the person up to suggestion, so that the ultimate goal of getting them to take their medication can be achieved.

Dr. Amador's LEAP protocol, with fake empathy and the appearance of accommodation, is essentially a type of mind manipulation to deceive people into taking their medication. All of the steps lead to this single goal. No possibility that they're not sick or that they're telling the truth is observed.

The book, *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia*, explains that when talking to a relative diagnosed with schizophrenia, you should avoid trying to convince them that their delusions are unreal. The logic behind this is that, despite presenting the individual with tremendous evidence against their delusions, their convictions will become stronger.

They then mention that instead of focusing on the possibility that what they're saying is true, you should shift the conversation toward how they "feel." This way you avoid strengthening their delusional beliefs. "If your relative is willing to talk about these feelings the discussion can turn to strategies for dealing with them and the delusional beliefs associated with them."

So, rather than focusing on evidence that supports their beliefs, which would allow the possibility that the beliefs are true to enter the conversation, the technique here is to focus on the feelings generated by the "delusions," which of course can be addressed with medication. The book refers to this manipulative technique as *empathetic listening*. It appears to be variation of Dr. Amador's LEAP protocol, which it referenced.

The website *schizophrenia.com*, run by independent researchers, including psychiatrists, advocates a slightly less manipulative technique, in its *How to Manage 5 Common Symptoms of Schizophrenia* article. It suggests empathizing with the person so they think they're understood.

By temporarily agreeing with certain aspects of the person's system of delusions, a partnership can be formed, they suggest. After fake empathy has been established, then, we're told, substituting more rational explanations for the sick person's "highly personalized paranoid one," can be done. They tell us that only then can the sick person learn about all the benefits of medication.

The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia suggests frequent daily reminders in order to get the person to comply with medication. Some include placing the pills next to items that the individual commonly uses, placing notes around the house, attaching the pills to personal hygiene items, etc.

A common feature of the disorder, says the *Guide*, is the sick person's inability to understand that they're ill. This lack of insight often results in a refusal to take medication. It's not your relative's fault, they say, it is part of the "sickness."

We're then told that that if you don't force your relative to take the medication, the inevitable consequences will be aggressive, violent, or bizarre behavior. Their solution is to have the person involuntarily committed.

A book by Dr. E. Fuller Torrey, *Surviving Schizophrenia: A Manual for Families, Patients, and Providers*, refers to the act of having someone forcefully medicated as "assisted treatment," and says that it may be necessary due to a person's lack of awareness that they're ill. However, this is usually not necessary according to Dr. Torrey, because the mere threat of it will make most people compliant. Dr. Torrey is a former consultant to NAMI and the NIMH.

The *Schizophrenia Handbook*, put out by Bristol-Myers Squibb Company, tells us that when people do not comply with treatment because they don't believe they're ill, friends and family must act to ensure that medication is taken according to the doctor's instructions.

Talk therapy has limited value for those who are "out of touch with reality," according to the Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA). It is particularly ineffective for those exhibiting hallucinations or delusions. Medication, they tell us, is the primary treatment for these individuals.

In its August 2008 article, *Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery*, NAMI explains that a person's refusal to take medication because they don't think they're sick is a thought deficit, which presents challenges for people working with the sick person (getting them to take medication).

Similarly, *schizophrenia.com* tells us that the reason people are unable to understand that they're sick is because the part of the brain that is "damaged by schizophrenia" is responsible for self-analysis. "You are frequently asking the sick brain to diagnose itself," they suggest. Because of this, involuntary treatment is an option.

If the patient refuses, Dr. Amador and Mrs. Johanson advise that doctors acting under "benevolent paternal ethic" can force them against their will to be medicated. "Like a parent who knows best for her child," we're comfortingly assured, "the physician can take control."

Dr. Amador and Mrs. Johanson, likewise agree that the person's inability to understand that they're ill is part of the "brain disorder" which does not improve with medication. A normal person's natural revulsion to these toxins seems to be part of the sickness. "Sooner or later," they explain, "when they recognize that what you did was out of love, they will likely be grateful."

As Dr. Lobaczewski informs us, when a society is run by psychopaths the resources of the system are commonly used to drive perfectly healthy people insane. An examination of the industry's publications reveals stories that include people being placed under 24/7 surveillance, harassed by their neighbors, stalked, mobbed, and losing their jobs.

This culminates in a psychotic break (nervous breakdown), where their relatives usually have them committed and attack their credibility during hospitalization. These publications contain accounts of people initially refusing to believe that they were sick, then being placed in a hospital, medicated, and finally *seeing the light*. While hospitalized, their beliefs are destroyed. Their wills are crushed.

After they're "cured," they're released and treated like children by their relatives who constantly hound them to take their medication (i.e. remind them of how "sick" they are).

One important part of the "healing" process is to get such delusional individuals to accept that they have a devastating brain disease, and that their delusions of being placed under surveillance, stalked, and hit with directed-energy weapons, are completely false. The statements below illustrate this:

- "When you first get out of the hospital you are going to be a little child again. There are new rules. Your parents are very worried about you. They will ask you twice a day if you are going to take your medicine."
- "But in time I gave in, cooperated, and took my medication..."
- "Once I cooperated with the rules, took my medication, and followed their routine, I was permitted more and more privileges."
- "They worry about me. My mother is always telling me to take my medication."
- "I learned a lot about my illness, and I started taking my medicine regularly. I got better."
- "The most important thing I did to get myself healing was to take the medication."
- "After a couple of months I stopped taking my medication, and I got sick a gain. I started to think people were following me."
- "Up until I got treatment, I thought there were a hundred people watching me 24/7."

Despite claims to the contrary, convincing people that they have a brain disease is not about healing, but a clever maneuver to get a healthy, skeptical mind to identify itself with a sickness. More accurately, it is a method of taking a healthy mind and making it sick. This identification results in a surrendering of free-will, which is usually accompanied by feelings of guilt and worthlessness.

It is a method of mentally crippling someone. The "treatment" they receive is a type of punishment. The medication that they're forced to take, in addition to literally destroying their brains, is itself an emotional attack to beat them into submission. Statements below made by people diagnosed with bipolar disorder and schizophrenia reveal this:

- "They kept reminding me of my illness which did not help me when I was discharged form the hospital. I would have preferred my family not to even mention the illness to me."
- "You hope that things will get better ... but having to take the pills confirms, 'Yes, you have a mental illness.' This can be difficult. Taking the pills is a reminder every day that 'Yes, I am a sick person.'"
- "It's not easy to remember to take the medication. It can make you feel like a patient. Ashamed. But the effects ... can keep you out of the hospital."
- "Taking medication reminds me I am ill. Sometimes it bothers me because I don't feel like I am really sick."
- "I hate the feeling that pills give me. Medication makes me tired, sleepy. Makes me feel I don't want to do anything."
- "[When I take medication] I feel like I am on a leash."
- "All of a sudden they tell me I have an illness called schizophrenia. It made me feel ashamed of myself, like I couldn't do anything right like a normal person."

There are several definitions of the term delusion. The book, *Me, Myself, and Them: A firsthand Account of One Young Person's Experience with Schizophrenia*, by Kurt Snyder, describes them as: "false personal beliefs that have no basis in reality and remain unchanged even when the person is presented with strong evidence to the contrary." The most common type is the *persecutory*, where people think they're being spied on, stalked, and harassed.

In his book, Mr. Snyder claims that prior to taking his medication he had delusions that the FBI and CIA were after him and that he was being stalked by hundreds of people wherever he went. To write his book, Mr. Snyder had the assistance of Dr. Raquel E. Gur, a psychiatrist at the Neurology and Radiology department, University of Pennsylvania. His book is enthusiastically promoted by NAMI.

"The nature of delusion," *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia* tells us, "is that people cling to them in spite of overwhelming evidence against them." Thoughts that people are stalking you or trying to harm you are unfounded and paranoid, reports Bristol-Myers Squibb Company. Such a mechanism does not exist according to their *Schizophrenia Handbook*. But they tell us that medication can help to relieve these delusional symptoms.

Similarly, the Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), portrays the idea that a group people would conspire to harass an individual as, "false and irrational." Medication will help such delusions, they assure us.

The site *schizophrenia.com*, likewise informs us that those who think that there is a government plot to harass them in public are suffering from a misinterpretation of events.[1] They advise us, that rather than trying to reason with the individual regarding the plausibility of such delusions, talk to their doctor to arrange for an increase in their medication.

Some schizophrenics have described an over-sensitivity to noises such as people coughing, car horns, screeching tires, engines, machinery, etc, which they claim are intended to disrupt them. They even have delusions that aircraft are being used to harass them.

When such delusional people experience explosions of noise from their neighbors, they see it as a deliberate attempt to disrupt them. But entertaining the possibility that the noises may be deliberate attacks is not advised by the researchers at *schizophrenia.com*. "The beliefs," they tell us, "are held only by the person himself and by no one else."

Books such as *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia*, *Schizophrenia Revealed*, *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia*, and others, contain stories of people whose delusional systems include thinking that they've been placed under 24/7 surveillance, stalked, attacked with directed-energy weapons, and that their neighbors and family have been recruited by a federal agency to spy on them and drive them insane.

Many have delusions that government agencies are monitoring them, controlling their movements, and projecting emotions and auditory hallucinations into their heads. The base for these electronic attacks is often their neighbors' homes, which are allegedly used by the FBI and CIA. "Often it is the FBI or the CIA that is the suspected perpetrator of the scheme," proclaimed Dr. Torrey. Absolute nonsense, we're assured.

"Looking back," mentioned a man diagnosed with manic-depression, "the strangest part was not the omnipresent government agents, [or] the agonizing radiation weapons... What frightens me most is that my manic depression gave me an immovable certainly that it was the world around me that was convulsing."

---

1 John Forbes Nash was an American mathematician who received the Nobel Memorial Prize in Economic Sciences in 1994. Due to the Hollywood film, *A Beautiful Mind*, which won four Academy Awards, Mr. Nash is famously known as the genius-schizophrenic who began to suffer delusions in the late 1950s. Despite some scenes in the film, he never experienced visual hallucinations, but did hear critical voices starting in the early 1960s. While serving on the faculty of MIT in 1959, Mr. Nash began to have paranoid delusions that an organization was conspiring against him. He believed that a group of people on campus wearing red ties was stalking him. In the spring of 1959 Mr. Nash was forcefully committed in the McLean Hospital, where he was diagnosed with paranoid schizophrenia. After spending over a month at McLean he resigned from MIT, moved to Europe seeking political asylum, and attempted to renounce his US citizenship. Mr. Nash believed that this group followed him to France and Germany where they continued to spy on and stalk him. He was eventually arrested by the French police and deported back to America at the request of the US government. Later he was involuntarily committed to various mental hospitals in New Jersey, where he received neuroleptics and shock therapy against his will. Each time he attempted to legally argue his for release. He eventually renounced his delusional beliefs.

Below are more examples of delusional beliefs suffered by people who have been *treated* with medication:

- "I thought the CIA was trying to use some kind of psychological warfare techniques on me."
- "It's hard for me to believe now, but I really thought the FBI was after me."
- "It took me over a year to admit to myself that I wasn't being followed by people working at the facility, or the CIA, or the FBI. Those delusions just seemed more plausible to me."
- "I felt as if there were a plot [of] ... evil out to get me. ... I felt like the government might have been in on it."
- "I thought there were helicopters flying over my house..."
- "I started to think I was under surveillance 24 hours a day by some unseen group of people."
- "I thought people were after me, people wanted to kill me."
- "I started to believe that there were many agents following me ... perhaps 50 or 100 of them. I thought, Why would there be so many people following me?" ... I was trying to rationalize why there would be hundreds of agents following me. I couldn't."
- "I felt like people were looking at me strangely and saying things about me."
- "I believed that I was being followed by the FBI. My phones were being tapped, video cameras were set up in my house, and I couldn't even trust my friends or my family."
- "I thought my house was bugged. I thought those people knew what I was wearing and what I was doing. ... I thought they put a camera in my house. ... I thought there was this FBI agent, one of the neighbors."
- "I thought that my neighbors were watching me..."
- "I was having some problems with my next-door neighbors. They were making accusations, fighting with my father, and taking parts off my car."
- "I was going through some problems with the people in my neighborhood. ... I thought some people didn't like me."

Most suffer from *delusions of reference*, thinking that objects or events in their immediate environment have been arranged to send them messages which are usually negative or threatening, sometimes satanic.

Mr. Nash had a quite interesting career. It began during his undergraduate studies at the Carnegie Institute of Technology (now part of Carnegie Mellon University) in 1945. After only three years, he obtained his master's degree from CMU in 1948. Then, in the same year he immediately entered the doctoral program at Princeton, which he completed in June of 1950. After receiving his doctorate, he served at Princeton as an instructor for about a year, during which time he also consulted for the RAND Corporation. Then in 1951 he moved to teach at MIT, where he stayed until he resigned in 1959 after being forcefully committed for his delusions. See: *New York Times, The Lost Years of a Nobel Laureate, November 13, 1994, Sylvia Nasar; The Biography of John Forbes Nash, Jr., www.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Forbes_Nash, Jr.; The Biography of John F. Nash Jr., www.freeinfosociety.com; The Autobiography of John F. Nash Jr., The Nobel Foundation, www.nobelprize.org; The Essential John Nash (Introduction), Harold W. Kuhn and Sylvia Nasar*. The primary organizations that Mr. Nash came in contact with, Carnegie, Princeton, RAND, and MIT, as we've learned, formed the center of a small private network which conducted PsyOp research for the DOD beginning in the late 1940s. Princeton, for instance, participated in the Interservice Committee on Human Resources, created by the DOD in 1947, to recommend and approve projects in the social sciences. Its classified project, Panel on Human Relations and Morale, which oversaw most of the psychological warfare studies, was run by Carnegie and advised by RAND. The Center for International Studies (CENIS) at MIT was a major US government contractor for PsyOp research beginning in the early 1950s. It was essentially run by the CIA using funds from the Ford Foundation which were distributed by the RAND Corporation. It was probably no coincidence that Mr. Nash moved from one organization in this network to another. Also noteworthy is the fact that college campuses had been infiltrated in the 1950s by the military, CIA, and FBI which had developed an informant network that collectively included: professors, deans, registrars, students, postal workers, landlords, maintenance, people, etc. See the books, *Science of Coercion: Communication Research and Psychological Warfare*, by Christopher Simpson, and *The Age of Surveillance: The Aims and Methods of America's Political Intelligence System*, by Frank J. Donner. Also see the chapter, *A Brief History of PsyOp* in the Appendix.

They believe these messages are symbolically conveyed with objects, letters, and numbers, as well as staged discussions that occur in public by groups of people, and during telephone conversations which contain information about their personal lives. TV, radio, and print media may also be used to convey these messages.

According to Dr. Torrey, the internet has been associated with an increasing number of delusions by schizophrenics in recent years, who believe that the CIA or the FBI is the culprit. Some reported PC and internet delusions include frequent crashes, cursors moving on their own, the appearance of letters in documents, and frequent broken internet links. While he was having his delusional experience, Mr. Snyder was convinced that the FBI had established remote control of his PC, but later concluded that he had a virus.

Other common delusions experienced by schizophrenics include thinking that their minds can be read; that they're important, or capable of extraordinary things; that their friends, family, and hospital staff are poising or drugging their food.[2] "Obsessive religious beliefs" can be symptoms of a delusional system also, according to Bristol-Myers Squibb Company.

Auditory hallucinations are quite common among diagnosed schizophrenics. They typically include clicking noises, as well as voices that provide a running commentary on activities, carry on conversations with the individual, issue them orders, warn them of impending dangers, and relentlessly mock them.

The hallucinations are usually consistent with the person's delusional beliefs. For instance, thinking that they are part of a government harassment campaign and are the result of some electronic transmission.

We are advised by *schizophrenia.com* that considering the possibility that hallucinations can in fact be broadcasted is not valuable. Below are some descriptions of hallucinations from people diagnosed with schizophrenia spectrum disorders:

- "I was consistently making wrong turns on my way to my house. I started to believe the CIA was somehow controlling my thoughts with subliminal and inaudible messages piped into my truck..."
- "I began to hear clicking noises. They weren't coming from the real world, but they didn't seem to be in my imagination either."
- "The frequency and duration of the voices increased, and so did the volume. They started following me wherever I went."
- "I was hearing voices saying they were going to kill my father, rape me, kill me."
- "I was hearing voices. ... cursing me out, saying they were coming to kill me. ... They were so audible."
- "I saw men on the wall ... [with] guns pointing in my direction."
- "I was hearing voices. There were like voices coming from the vent in my room."

The delusions continue inside mental hospitals, where some schizophrenics have arrived at the following false conclusions: that the mental hospital was really a detention center for the government; that doctors, staff, and patients were harassing them; that various media including songs, print, photos, as well as overheard conversations are used to convey hostile messages; that hospital staff were poisoning their food.

One girl, who has since been convinced that she is indeed suffering from a mental disorder, describes her personal experience inside a mental hospital. It should be pointed out that she believes she is sick and has attributed her interpretation of the events that occurred to be the result of delusions.

---

2   Not only has the Applied Research Laboratory at Pennsylvania State University advocated the use of psychiatric drugs (calmatives) on agitated people without providing correctives to reduce uncomfortable side effects, it has even suggested that the pharmaceutical industry design ones that cause headaches and nausea. According to the PSU, such calmatives could be covertly given to an individual along with other types of therapy such electromagnetic waves. See Pennsylvania State University's Applied Research Laboratory report, *The Advantages and Limitations of Calmatives for Use as a Non-Lethal Technique,* of October 3, 2000.

The hallway outside her room was used for what she described as a fake scene of actors who were deliberately placed there to torment her. The actors included some patients, social workers, doctors, and staff who would frequently talk about her and participate in other charades.

One patient had a tape player which repeatedly played the song *Zombie* by the Cranberries. The hallway also contained a glass cabinet with Polaroid pictures that included the faces of people that she knew. She described the entire scene as a prop, a fraud, and a charade used to torment her. There was a phone just outside her room which was often used by doctors and staff to blurt out information regarding her personal life.

She felt as though the treatment was really an attack on her individuality, and referred to her room as a foxhole, which she remained in most of the time to avoid these painful experiences. However, the doctors, staff, and patients who were participating wanted her out of the room so they could torment her. When she didn't leave, they would enter her room to check her vitals, which she concluded was used as an excuse to attack her. She referred to her entire stay as a nightmare.

In all likelihood, some of these mental hospitals are run by the security forces. This is similar to what is happening in Russia, China, and other countries. The difference is that the physical attacks have been replaced with PsyOp which leaves no visible marks. It appears that the financial elite have learned from their experience with the system that they built in Communist Russia and made some adjustments.

The Latest Disorder

Psychiatric experts have identified a new form of delusional thinking known as *Truman Show Delusion*, also called *Truman Show Syndrome*. Those affected by the disorder believe that they are being monitored and broadcasted to others in the population.

The idea for the disorder originates from the 1998 film, *The Truman Show*, where the main character, Truman Burbank, begins to realize that he is being filmed everywhere he goes by tiny cameras, and that his friends and family are following a script in a type of deranged reality TV show for the entertainment of others.

The illness was first discovered in 2002 by psychiatrists Ian and Joel Gold. In 2002 Dr. Joel Gold, a psychiatrist at Bellevue Hospital Center in New York, began noticing that some of his patients believed they were being unwillingly filmed for a reality TV program. Several of his patients even mentioned the film, *The Truman Show*. He and his brother Dr. Ian Gold, a psychiatrist at McGill University in Montreal, began presenting their findings at medical schools in 2006.

Truman Show Delusion is a combination of paranoia and delusions of grandiosity and reference. This basically means that people believe that their environments are being prepared to symbolically communicate with them. Although for years mental health specialists have encountered people suffering from delusions that their friends and relatives were complicit in persecution, this is different because it involves society in general.

The new delusion encompasses a patient's entire life, where they think that surveillance equipment has been hidden in their homes and that they are under constant, intense surveillance by an army of people wherever they go, including workplaces and hospitals.

Those suffering from the delusion think that these environments, which have been rigged with covert surveillance equipment, have been prepared specifically for them. They describe the people in these settings as *actors* following *scripts*. These actors include their friends, relatives, coworkers, and doctors.

Since presenting their findings to medical conventions in 2006, the Gold brothers have received international publicity. Beginning in 2008 the illness started to receive lots of attention. Psychiatrists in the US and Britain are reporting that a growing number of their patients are suffering from this delusion.

The new illness is considered a culture-bound delusion. The *New York Times* reported that because the *DSM-IV* has an exemption which says that a belief is not delusional if it is widely accepted by other members of a person's culture or subculture, that mental health specialists have suggested that it is too vague. Or, in other words the exception needs to be reduced. More specifically, it means that the scope of people who meet the criteria needs to be widened.

WebMD informs us that although the Truman Show Delusion may not be incorporated into the APA's *DSM* anytime soon, the reports of these psychiatrists must be considered by mental health professionals. Dr. Joel Gold announced: "This is a serious mental illness... If you think the entire world is fraudulent, that is incredibly distressing." The Gold brothers are working on a scholarly paper for the new illness.

It has been declared, as illustrated in the *Surveillance Technology and Methods* chapter of Volume II, that the surveillance of interagency targets will be aggressive and constant. Multiple government think tanks have announced that targeted individuals will frequently be made aware that they're under surveillance so that their behavior can be changed.

We also understand at this point that in order for the interagency to modify the behavior of the target, their environment must also be changed, and that this is done by *psychologically preparing* the target's environment with as many products as possible.

As we learned in the *Schizophrenia* chapter, referential delusions are false beliefs that people, media, and objects in a person's environment have been staged in order to convey symbolic messages that are often threatening. We're told that some environmental stimuli which people falsely believe are being used to transmit these messages are newspapers, books, song lyrics, TV, and radio broadcasts.

As described in the *Psychological Operations* chapter of Volume III, products which the military has used to establish communication with its targets include: newspapers, magazines, leaflets, posters, pamphlets, and books, as well as music, radio broadcasts, and telephone conversations.

There have been multiple proclamations that targets of the interagency will have their radio and TV signals spoofed. It has even been revealed that digital morphing will be used. It has been stated that "all" conduits through which information reaches the TA will be interfered with. This includes every system, organization, and individual.

We also learned that the interagency recruits *agents of action* (actors) who follow a script when communicating themes to a TA during a type of live performance known as a *PsyAct*. Furthermore, references in military documentation suggest that the process of theme presentation during these performances is consistent with play or movie production. This is particularly evident by the use of words such as: *theater, actors, performance, script, sets, cast, audience*, etc.

These delusions of reference appear to parallel the military's PsyOp attacks against its targets almost perfectly. It seems that schizophrenia in general, and the latest mental illness in particular, are attempts by the establishment to conceal their use of the military to attack their enemies.

It is probably also used to provide the psychopaths in the security forces, and the influential people in our society who they serve, with a type of sick entertainment. When someone says that they believe they are being surveilled for the entertainment of others, they may be dismissed as delusional due to false beliefs within the common worldview.

These beliefs may take the form of statements such as: *People would never do that. That would be sick and immature, and therefore unlikely. People aren't that deranged. They'd never be able to cover it up. That type of technology/weaponry doesn't exist. It would be a waste of resources.*

We now understand that the technology to control and attack people remotely does exist. We know that these people do exist. Here's what we've learned about them: They frequently partake in activities that normal people would consider wasteful, foolish, and immature.[3] They require considerable excitement and entertainment to keep from becoming bored. They like to attack people and play games with them because it gives them a thrill. They feel sadistic pleasure mocking and controlling people, who they see as objects.

They are also fully aware that most people in our society cannot conceive that they would ever do these things. Add to this, their ownership of the mass media outlets, control of professional societies, patient advocacy groups, and an army of experts, all of which they can use at anytime to discredit those who expose them. They have covered this up just as they have all of their other crimes against humanity.

Attempts to Discredit Efforts to Expose Them

Over the last several years clinicians have been increasingly receiving information from their patients which confirm their claims of being gang stalked and hit with directed-energy weapons, as reported in the *Journal of Mental Health*, the *New York Times*, and *Psychology Today*, in 2007, 2008, and 2009, respectively.

In the past, people who complained of such attacks to their family, police, or doctors were usually medicated. However, some have recently discovered the existence of an online community of people who share their experiences. It consists of a growing number of sites which have stories of people being attacked with directed-energy weapons and stalked by large gangs of people who presumably work for the government.

The *Times* mentioned that although patient advocacy group sites are considered to be helpful, other sites which reinforce delusional beliefs are impeding treatment (medication). This support community has grown to the point that it is interfering with traditional treatment due to the *DSM's* exclusion clause which prevents people from being diagnosed with schizophrenia if they are a member of a culture or subculture which shares the belief.

Therefore, such sites have drawn the attention of mental health professionals recently who have raised concerns over their content, which they say have little quality control because they are not run by experts.

Dr. Vaughan Bell, a visiting research fellow in the Department of Psychological Medicine and Psychiatry at the Institute of Psychiatry, King's College London, and editorial board member of *PLoS One* and *The Psychologist*, began researching mind control sites in 2004.

He evaluated the content of 10 websites that covered this subject, some of which included accounts of people being attacked with directed-energy weapons. Several independent psychiatrists were used to determine if the content was written by delusional people, and whether or not there was evidence of the development of a social organization (culture/community) which would meet the *DSM's* exclusion clause.

Dr. Bell and his colleagues reported the results of their study in the February 2006 edition of *Psychopathology*, where they stated that the information on most of these sites was written by people suffering from delusions. They also announced that there was evidence of a community of targeted people.

Some sites contained scientific material to back up their claims, and were involved in efforts to lobby their elected officials to stop the use of this technology on citizens.

---

3   The civilian population is participating in PsyActs. The interagency is also directing my friends and family to perform these acts every time I'm around them. Most of the performances are done to insult me and portray me as an incompetent fool. In many cases, it is obvious by their body language that they are forced to act in ways that they find repulsive. I've determined that rather than being used to accomplish any military objective, these acts are performed primarily for the entertainment of those who have me under surveillance, and probably some influential members of our society. These performances would be a foolish waste of resources to any rational person. However, they have worth to the psychopaths. Each day I witness the state's resources expended for purposes that are absolutely silly. Perhaps due to its seemingly paradoxical nature, a difficult concept to consider is that it is possible for these adults to exist on a low developmental/emotional level, yet still have entirely operational cognitive faculties. Based on their consistent behavior, my observation of the psychological profile of those who would arrange such events leads me to conclude that the *actual mind* behind these performances is that of a deranged child between the ages of 8 and 12.

He described this organization as a disabled group that has used the internet to create a dynamic community to support similarly-affected people within the confines of a limited worldview, which is based on delusional thinking. He said that it is an example of a culture that is independent of the support (control) of the state.

It is also beyond the influence of what he explained as *user groups*, presumably referring to patient advocacy groups. He elaborated: "In particular it demonstrates that the internet may enable complex support mechanisms without reference to a view of reality held by the authorities..."

The members of this community insist that they are subjects of thought-control weapons. They continually gather evidence which supports their beliefs. These sites have postings of people who are convinced that mental health professionals are providing cover for the gang stalking and directed-energy attacks against citizens.

In July of 2009, *Psychology Today* informed us that this online community exhibits a dangerous form of groupthink which is preventing patients from receiving the treatment (medication) that they need.

The fact that people can form a community based on these irrational beliefs will present future challenges for the *DSM* diagnostic criteria, according to Dr. Bell, who suggests that it should be revised to accommodate this new trend.

If this trend continues most clinicians are going to remain ignorant which will produce more problems in the consulting room. So for now, he says that clinicians should be aware of the magnitude of information available on the internet which can justify almost any conspiracy theory.

An earlier report released by Dr. Bell and his colleagues in May of 2005, describes a type of theme where the affected person believes that the internet is used as a medium to display information about them by a conspiratorial group. He also mentioned that because technology is available which could rationalize some internet delusions, clinicians should instead focus on more unlikely signs of the conspiracy theory, such as the belief that a sinister organization exists which is persecuting people.

What has obviously happened is this: The financial elite have become aware that entities have formed which are beyond the control of their professional societies and patient advocacy groups, and which are beginning to interfere with their profit and power. If their past behavior is any indication of what they'll do, we can expect the following:

- Massive international awareness raising campaigns regarding Truman Show Delusion, internet delusion, and delusional communities.
- Proclamations by professional societies denouncing these communities.
- Attacks against those exposing this by patient advocacy groups.
- The creation of web sites and books which educate people to avoid such sites because of their lack of professional research and delusional content.
- Publications appearing in the industry's best medical journals, educating doctors on these new conditions.
- Worldwide conferences and educational ventures conducted by thought leaders educating their peers on these new circumstances.
- Updates to CPGs to include Truman Show Disorder and internet delusions, as well as a revision of the exclusion clause which informs clinicians that a belief is not a delusion if it is shared by others in the person's culture.
- More articles from the establishment's media outlets that include the testimonials of multiple experts who portray people and organizations exposing this as delusional.

Volume IV Commentary

If sciences such psychology and psychiatry were to develop normally as a dictatorship was being established, within about a decade leaders in these fields would detect it and begin to stop it. Therefore, areas of the social sciences such as psychology and psychiatry must be controlled. All individuals working in these fields, as well as every single mental health center and psychiatric hospital, are affected by the pathocracy.

We've seen considerable evidence which suggests that this has occurred. Some of this includes the financial elite's use of the social sciences to install a global government as revealed by the Reece Committee in the 1950s, their funding of organized psychiatry starting in the 1920s, their privatized studies on PsyOp beginning in the 1930s, and the evidence given in this volume which shows Wall Street's control over the medical industry.

The industry heavily targets physicians for recruitment using a variety of bribery methods from the time they enter medical school throughout their practicing careers. Almost all physicians eventually accept these bribes.

Nearly half of the refresher courses which doctors are required to take are funded by drug corporations. Furthermore, the educational material used during these courses is typically written by consultants with connections to the pharmaceutical industry. Most of the information that doctors receive in general pertaining to medication, however, is not from scientific literature, but in the form of advertisements funded by the industry.

Up to three-quarters of the scientific research on prescription drugs is done by physicians consulting for the very drug corporations whose products they are evaluating. These physicians receive funds and prestige for their services.

In some cases, up to half of these publications are not written by the individuals whose names appear in the articles, but by writing firms on the payroll of drug corporations. Drug corporations have also systematically destroyed the peer review process for these publications by hiring the reviewers.

According to literature promoted by the industry, which most of the public accepts as legitimate, schizophrenia is a thought disorder characterized by a variety of signs and symptoms, including hallucinations and delusions, which said schizophrenia, prevents people from thinking clearly.

Schizophrenia has no biological origin. No medical exam, including physical and laboratory tests, can diagnose it. Medical exams are, however, done to rule out the possibility of a biological illness. Instead, schizophrenia is diagnosed by clinicians who ask questions and match symptoms to criteria outlined in a diagnostic manual.

Delusions are basically personal beliefs that are considered to be unreasonable and false. The most common type is the persecutory, where a person believes they have been singled out for persecution, stalked, spied on, tormented, and conspired against. Such individuals believe that there is a government plot to drive them insane, and may believe that their neighbors and family have been co-opted to accomplish this.

Delusions of reference are also quite common, where the individual thinks that their environment has been arranged with people, media, and objects to convey hidden messages intended to be interpreted only by them. These messages are usually threatening in nature. Those suffering such delusions think that the TV, radio, overheard conversations, newspapers, books, song lyrics, and other media are used to convey these messages.

Schizophrenics also frequently suffer from delusions of control, which includes beliefs that their minds can be read, that they are being attacked with electromagnetic waves, and that thoughts and emotions are being transmitted into their minds. Some claim these attacks originate from their neighbors' homes, which they think are being used by the FBI or CIA.

The most common hallucination suffered by schizophrenics is the auditory kind, where the person experiences voices that are distinct from their own thoughts. These voices are usually derogatory— relentlessly mocking them. The voices may also comment on their ongoing activities and carry on conversations with them.

The current hypothesis for the cause of schizophrenia is that there is an excess of dopamine activity. Medications known as neuroleptics are considered by some to be the best treatment for schizophrenia. However, no chemical imbalance has been found in the brains of unmedicated people diagnosed with schizophrenia spectrum disorders. Instead, neuroleptics *cause* the increases in dopamine levels which are the natural result of a normal brain's reaction to its receptors being shut down (binded). Neuroleptics cause biochemical imbalances.

The situation pertaining to schizophrenia's discovery was confusing. It seems that it was mistaken for encephalitis lethargica which is a biological disease. The modern version is nothing like the original. The original symptoms were gradually removed from the manuals and schizophrenia is now a thought disorder with no organic origin. Organized psychiatry has still not addressed this important issue. Researchers who have studied this conclude that the reason is it is too important to the industry's survival, and allows for considerable profit.

It also serves as a method of social control. It has been observed by these researchers that the promotion by the industry of schizophrenia as an actual medical condition constitutes major medical fraud. There is no credible epidemiological, cross-cultural, genetic, biochemical, or other organic proof for the existence of schizophrenia. This extends to other mental disorders such as manic depression, anxiety, ADHD, etc.

According to multiple experts, the term schizophrenia should be abolished as a medical disorder. Schizophrenia's controversial discovery is based on false conclusions that occurred during a period of considerable confusion. The ancient and current descriptions of people acting weird are easily attributed to brain lesions caused by disease or injury.

These professionals also suggest that leading proponents of the disease model are completely aware that schizophrenia is medical fraud but still promoted it due to a vested interest.

The reason most people are convinced the schizophrenia exists as an actual disease is because the pharmaceutical complex, functioning through all of its fronts, promotes it through an onslaught of propaganda. An examination of these groups reveals them as the pharmaceutical complex in disguise.

The thought leaders that run these corporate front groups are paid to write the CPGs, conduct the research, and give lectures at prestigious venues to convince their colleagues of the benefits of medication for nonexistent illnesses.

Thought leaders in the area of psychiatry usually consult for multiple corporations simultaneously while serving in influential positions. They also have connections to government agencies, professional societies, and patient advocacy groups.

In addition to allowing the industry to maximize its profits, schizophrenia spectrum disorders allow the leaders of nations which proclaim democratic principles to circumvent the legal system and destroy people who they believe are not acting in accord with their assigned roles.

A vast bureaucratic network, which exists at all levels of the political structure, provides *behavior regulation services* for the entrenched members of our society. Individuals are identified, separated, and placed in an environment for behavior modification. The entire process is done under the guise of providing medical treatment.

The delusions and hallucinations, which are characteristic of these fabricated mental disorders, appear to almost exactly match the methods and technology used by the multinational force against civilians. This is probably no coincidence. More than likely this material has been released by the financial elite to provide cover for their use of the security forces to attack citizens.

For instance, the delusions of reference are consistent with the military's practice of altering the environment of the TA with products to promote a theme using all possible channels of communication. The delusions of control, including the transmission of emotions and thoughts, mind-reading, and the physical manipulation of the body, are within the DOD's surveillance and directed-energy weapons capabilities.

The swarms (gang stalking) performed by the civil defense network, the inclusion of friends and relatives of targeted individuals in investigations conducted by the security forces, and other activities that informants have done since ancient times, account for the delusions of persecution. The auditory hallucinations are accomplished with microwave hearing attacks, the technology for which has existed since the early 1960s.

The neuroleptics that are used to treat the mental disorders that do not exist cause disruption of frontal lobe activity, which results in a massive reduction in intellectual functioning, as well as a shortened lifespan. They have been known to utterly crush the will. These toxins produce an actual chemical lobotomy.

Wall Street's targeting of the entire population with destructive medication to treat fake mental illnesses is probably one of the biggest deceptions in our lifetime. It is a major medical fraud and probably a crime against humanity. Millions, including physicians, consumers, and the general public, are being deceived.

In addition to profit and neutralizing individuals, the targeting of the population appears to serve another purpose. As observed in Volume I, it becomes a biological necessity for the psychopaths who rule a society to psychologically and biologically kill as many normal people as possible.

While this has typically taken the form of concentration camps, wars, and persecution in the past, the targeting of perfectly healthy people with medication that literally destroys their bodies, appears to be a massive and cleverly disguised attack against the population in general.

Conclusion

Rather than thinking of psychopaths as mentally ill, it may be more accurate to consider them a separate subspecies of the human race. They know they are protected by the naivety of the common worldview. Their pursuit of power is hyperactive. It is no exaggeration to say that, while the normal people are busy pursuing their activities, these characters literally sit around thinking of ways to deceive the populace into giving them control.

Because they are primarily focused on placing themselves in positions of influence, they have a tendency occupy these positions more so than normal people. Their vigorous pursuit of power, combined with their natural abilities to conceal themselves and lie with no inhibitions, allow them to achieve such positions. These characters have been continually responsible for a pattern of historical atrocities.

They spend a considerable amount of time constructing a mask on a personal level. On a macro level, a group of them will construct a similar facade using an ideology. If such people have the financing, they can overthrow constituted governments, typically without a majority of the people being aware of it. They place people similar to themselves in positions of influence. And as part of their mask, they install semi-normal people in positions which have high public exposure.

They eventually establish control over the entire governing structure of a country, including its military and police, as well as the psychological sciences, and institutions which can be used to influence society, such as NGOs, academia, and the media.

They conceal their true objective using an ideology which includes a plan for a better world. Some elements of their plan may seem reasonable or even desirable. In addition, however, an enemy is created which is portrayed as an obstacle to the better world.

The utopia is only possible when the enemy is removed. A portion of the population is recruited to assist in accomplishing this. Also, a privileged class of people is created within the government to serve the pathocracy and is rewarded for its obedience.

Organizations run by psychopaths usually profess only humanitarian intents. A pathocracy will have the appearance of normalcy. Evidence suggests that the US government has been entirely overthrown by a network of groups exhibiting psychopathic traits that have disguised themselves using humanitarian fronts.

They are facilitating a revolution which will result in them having control of the entire planet. Using the multinational force, they are waging a worldwide war against civilians to accomplish this.

We're informed that a group of people is standing in the way of this global utopia. Various labels have been assigned to them. They are resisters, clinging to old ideologies which have no place in the new world. They are obstacles to our evolution, we're told. Many of them are using information as a weapon to change people's worldviews. Some of them are promoting conspiracy theories.

The new enemy will be denied sanctuary, tracked everywhere with intrusive surveillance, and attacked with PsyOp and NLW relentlessly. Most of these weapons and tactics, which are used in combination, leave little or no trace of their use.

Directed-energy weapons, including microwaves, lasers, and acoustic frequencies, will be used on the enemy. Depending on the frequency and power level, these weapons can cause a wide variety of effects spanning the mental, emotional, and physical realms. CNO are used to attack the enemy's computers. This includes efforts to disrupt and degrade hardware and software, as well as spoofing attacks.

People can be traumatized with microwave hearing technology. Powerful silent subliminals can setup mental conflicts and can be used to influence people's emotions, thoughts, and behavior. Holograms can be transmitted to specific points in space to scare people.

PsyOp attacks are transmitted through every possible channel of communication that the TA uses. The TA's environment is psychologically prepared with products which have triggers that they've been sensitized to.

Calmatives that are to be covertly administered to the enemy can cause anxiety and dizziness, headaches, sedation, and also depression. Biological weapons, including viruses that create injuries or medical conditions, are also to be used. It has been suggested that biological weapons can be tailored to affect a specific race or bloodline.

Malodorants and insect infestation are used to cause revulsion. Supercaustics, some of which can be remotely triggered, can destroy any material made of plastic, glass, rubber, or metal. Frequent overhead flights and other displays of force are used during SOFO.

Custom-tailored weather attacks are to be used on a micro-level against the enemy. And, yes, even remote controlled insects and rodents are in the DOD's arsenal. Physical and psychological isolation of the enemy from their support structure is standard procedure in the new war. Using PsyOp, advanced surveillance technology, and NLWs, the enemy will be denied sanctuary any place they visit.

Official sources have mentioned multiple times that this surveillance will be intrusive and constant. A variety of technology exists which can accomplish this, such as devices for seeing through walls, mind-reading, and tiny sensors which can detect anything a human being can as well as a multitude of other environmental stimuli.

These and other surveillance technologies can be connected to an advanced C4ISR system, such as the GIG, which allows for the real-time synchronization of tactics from the tactical to strategic levels. GIG nodes are equipped with cognitive radios or other devices that allow them to form tactical mobile networks known as MANETS. The technology exists for computer-generated battlewarms, where nodes are directed by an algorithm.

In all likelihood, these algorithms, which have already been used by the DOD for battleswarms, are a feature of the GIG. Therefore, the entire process, including node dispatch, guiding nodes to the target, and even the type of behavior exhibited by each node in the presence of the target, is probably computer-generated.

In order to maintain a dictatorship it is absolutely critical that control is established on the neighborhood level. In the US this network has existed since 1917 and has been used to harass and spy on people that have been labeled subversive. It is now entirely fused into our society, just as it was in East Germany and Communist Russia.

Wall Street runs the medical industry and the mental health system in particular. This includes some of the major patient advocacy groups, professional societies, government agencies, and most individual physicians. The mental illnesses in the diagnostic manuals keep expanding. Profit and control are primary motives. The attacks by the multinational force against the financial elite's enemies considerably parallel the signs and symptoms in the diagnostic manuals produced by the industry.

Methods of executing large numbers of normal people are instituted when psychopaths rule a society. Although this has usually meant death camps and wars, evidence suggests that an additional method, which appears to be linked to a global eugenics program, includes targeting the entire population with toxic medication.

It is no exaggeration to say that the Anglo-American Establishment is using the military to reach down into your neighborhoods, single people out, and silently torture them, while using the mental health system, congress, media, and NGOs to conceal their attacks.

As we've learned, individual psychopaths believe it is necessary for their personal survival to degrade people. On a larger scale, we also understand at this point, that when they run a society they consider it a necessity to annihilate large portions of normal people.

Considering these factors, along with the rest of the traits that compose the profile of a typical psychopath, it would be realistic to consider that the security forces are also being used by the wealthy elites who rule our society to attack people for no reason that would be obvious using the common worldview.

It would be the ultimate dream for any average psychopath to be able to use the resources of the state to place people under surveillance, torture them from a safe distance with weapons that leave no evidence of their use, and sit back and have a good laugh while they watch them suffer in real-time. It would be even better if they controlled the very institutions which proclaimed to exist to expose such activities.

Although it is uncomfortable to consider the possibility that influential members of our society are using these resources to provide themselves with a sick form of entertainment, it would be consistent with their psychopathic profile.

The idea that they have methodically blocked off all possible escape routes for the citizens that they are torturing, and have established control over the institutions that would expose them, is frightening. However, this appears to be the case.

Their widespread, systematic, consistent vile activities, which have spanned multiple realms over the course of decades and have been committed against the human race in general, would be considered a *crime against humanity* in any civilization run by decent people.

Appendix

Human-Computer Intelligence Network
Introduction

In this chapter I'll be providing a theory of an automated *human-computer intelligence network* based on my interpretation of my experience and the available literature. The existence of this system, with all of its features, has not been admitted.

Because I am currently not aware of all of the technical details regarding this system, some parts of my explanation will be speculation. Because of the potential for control that such a system offers, however, rather than waiting to discover more evidence which would supports my claim that it exists, I think it is important to provide a preliminary report of my observations.

I experience this system every day in my living area, and each time I go out in public or interact with people being handled by it. It is fully functional, automated, and entirely wireless. The technology which forms its foundation has been documented. This was covered in the *Mind-Reading* section of Volume II, the *Directed-Energy Weapons* chapters of volume III, and will be expanded upon here.

Description

As part of its surveillance and electronic warfare capabilities, the DOD has a C4ISR system that contains a mind-reading computer with artificial intelligence, which is able to remotely infer the mental and emotional states of its targets.

It is also the cognitive center of a human-computer intelligence network which establishes wireless links to human brains and transmits attack instructions to people during computer-generated swarms. Furthermore, it is connected to a directed-energy weapons platform and a multitude of electronic devices, which serve as outputs for stimuli intended to influence the target.

The basic system consists of surveillance (intelligence obtained by sensors), processing (computation done using AI), and output (stimuli sent to the individual and their environment). Real-time intelligence is obtained through a sensor network connected to a computer with *artificial intelligence (AI)*. The computer compares the information to a set of instructions which contain rules on how to interpret the new information in relation to an individual's profile, which is also stored in the system and is constantly updated.

The computer generates a response, and then selects an output channel to transmit the response/stimuli. It is able to determine the best output channel through constant surveillance of the TI. For instance, it understands whether the person is interacting with one of its nodes (such as another person), working on a computer, listening to a broadcast, etc.

Once the computer has determined the most efficient method to communicate with the TI, it transmits the stimuli through a human channel or into the environment. As complicated as it sounds, in theory it is a simple observation, processing, and feedback loop, the output of which is sent through a variety of channels. This system appears to be connected to the Global Information Grid (GIG), which we covered in Volume II.

The synchronization of stimuli based on real-time information obtained from persistent surveillance, can be explained by a basic closed-loop Augmented Cognition (AugCog) system which has been developed by the DOD's scientific research agency.

Augmented Cognition

Augmented Cognition (AugCog) is the result of several revolutions in science and technology that began at the end of the 20th century. They include the cognitive revolution, biomedical revolution, and computer revolution. All of these coincided with a multibillion dollar investment by the US Government in the 1990s to better understand the human brain, known as the *Decade of the Brain*.

AugCog is a type of *human-computer interface (HCI)* that uses a mind-reading computer to engage a person in decision making. It uses a network of sensors to monitor the environment as well as the physiological and neurological data of a person in real-time.

It then makes changes to the system or environment to enhance their performance. AugCog closes an electronic feedback loop around a person. The person whom the system is closed around is referred to as an *operator* or *user*.

The book *Foundations of Augmented Cognitio*n explains AugCog in the following way: "The goal of Augmented Cognition research is to create revolutionary human-computer interactions that capitalize on recent advances in the fields of neuroscience, cognitive science, and computer science."

It continues: "Augmented Cognition can be distinguished from its predecessors by the focus on the real-time cognitive [state] of the user, as assessed through modern neuroscientific tools. At its core, Augmented Cognition system is a 'closed-loop' in which the cognitive state of the operator is detected in real-time with resulting compensatory adaptation in the computational system, as appropriate."

Because it reads minds and bodies, the system is first calibrated to a specific person's brain. Then, to obtain information, it employs a network of sensors to monitor a user's neurophysiological (brain and body) condition. The environment may also be monitored.

It then uses adaptive strategies called *mitigation* to alter the computer system and environment based on a user's constantly changing state. It also interacts with the user while making these changes. All of this occurs in real-time. The system is custom configured to accommodate an individual's unique experience-set.

AugCog development has included people in backgrounds such as psychology, neurobiology, neuroscience, cognitive neuroscience, mathematics, computer science, and human-computer interface. Organizations that have contributed to AugCog research include the National Science Foundation (NSF), National Research Council (NRC), and the National Institutes of Health (NIH).

Other contributors include Boeing, DaimlerChrysler, Lockheed Martin, Honeywell, QinetiQ, BMH Associates, the Space and Naval Warfare Systems Center in San Diego, Sandia National Laboratories, Notre Dame University, and the Pacific Science and Engineering Group.

The Department of Defense has studied AugCog through a scientific research group known as the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), which worked with the organizations previously mentioned. DARPA has also worked with military groups such as the US Army's Natick Soldier Center (NSC) in Natick Massachusetts, the Office of Naval Research (ONR), Air Force Research Laboratory (AFRL), and the Disruptive Technologies Office (DTO).

The uses for AugCog which are mentioned in military and scientific publications are positive. The benefits can be shared among other fields such as cognitive science, neuroscience, computer science, and the medical industry.

AugCog will allegedly be used to help save lives in combat, assist commanders and medics in understanding the neurophysiological state of soldiers in remote locations, allow commanders to understand the minds of traumatized soldiers, monitor soldier stress level, and improve the performance of pilots.

There are two basic AugCog systems, *open-loop* and *closed-loop*. An open-loop system transfers the data from the user to someone else for decisionmaking regarding mitigation techniques. This may be a commander or a medic. When the flow of information takes place strictly between a person and computer, it's referred to as a closed-loop system.

The main components of these systems include the environment, adaptive system interface (ASI), sensor network, and a computer system that integrates them. The environment can be an operational environment which has real signals or a virtual environment.

The automated sensor network monitors a user's neurophysiological state and external environment. Data obtained from multiple sensors, including those connected to a combination of neuroimaging devices, provides a more accurate reading of user brain states and processes.

Portable wireless systems which exist use neurophysiological sensing equipment such as fNIR, EEG, and EKG. These systems are equipped with non-invasive body-mounted sensors that have been adapted to mobile users. DARPA is working on wireless, non-contact neurophysiological sensor technology.

Eye tracking is another AugCog input method. A variety of eye movements are often consistent with cognitive states. It's possible to determine what a person is viewing within ½ inch of their pupil position. Therefore, remote eye tracking sensors using electroculogram (EOG) offer an indirect method to provide some understanding of a person's brain state and processes.

In addition to the movement of the eyes, these sensors can detect pupilometry (pupil dilation), eyelid movement, and eye blinks, which offer further estimates of a user's brain state. Neuroimaging devices such as EEG, ERP, EROS, and NIRS can be used to infer a user's brain state including specific thoughts, thought patterns, motion, decisionmaking, activities such as reading or writing, and emotional states.

Small portable mind reading devices which use tiny cameras, such as the Emotional Social Intelligence Prosthetic (ESP), offer an indirect method of detecting emotional states, including happiness, sadness, anger, fear, surprise, and disgust.

Other sensors that provide an indirect estimate of a user's neurophysiological state include ones that monitor galvanic skin responses (GSR), which are emotional responses to stimuli used for polygraphs, heartrate (EKG), pulse oximetry (oxygen level in the brain), body temperature, posture, and respiratory patterns. Sensors that monitor the external environment such as ambient temperature, rainfall, wind, and solar radiation can provide information on a user's immediate surroundings.

The next part of the system is the *adaptive system interface (ASI)*, which includes adaptive automation (also called mitigation), to change the external environment and system interface based on the user's ongoing neurophysiological condition. The ASI may be a single audio or visual channel or a combination of sensory channels called a *multimodal array*.

A modality is a sensing channel that a person uses to obtain information about the environment. They include auditory, visual, haptic (touch), gustation (taste), olfaction (smell), thermoception (heat or cold sensation), nociception (pain perception), and equilibrioception (balance perception).

AugCog determines which channel is being used, then sends stimuli through a different channel which is open. AugCog adjusts the information presented based on a user's cognitive, physical, and emotional state, as well as environmental conditions.

Sensory channels are monitored to determine which is being used least. They include visual, hearing, and haptic (sense of touch); cognitive tasks such as verbal and spatial working memory, reading and writing; and physical movement such as speech and motor movement. Then, whichever channel is open is used as a medium for mitigation transfer.

A *mitigation strategy* is a series of corrective techniques transmitted through an open human channel. Mitigation actively engages the user in a decision-making process during interactions which present stimuli to the user. AugCog is not only able to read a person's thought process, it can assist them during the process (in real-time) by presenting them with corrective stimuli.[1]

To accomplish this, the system determines a user's neurophysiological state using a variety of sensors. These sensors provide feedback on cognitive states, emotional states, and physiological states, as well as environmental conditions.

As previously demonstrated, sensors can detect brain states associated with decisions, reading, writing, and attention. They can detect emotional states, and physical movement. Perceptions of touch and sound can be detected.

Even specific thoughts can be inferred with some degree of accuracy.[2] The data from multiple sensors can be combined so that the system may better determine a user's neurophysiological state. This is mind and body reading.

---

1   The book, *Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide*, by Dylan D. Schmorrow and Kay M. Stanney, says that the computer can detect user errors before they are even aware that they've been made, although it doesn't elaborate on what this involves.

This reading is then compared to a set of conditions within the system, which include neurophysiological signals that have been selected to trigger the transfer of corrective stimuli. The signals which trigger the stimuli are custom-designed for each person's specific profile.

The system then determines which sensor channel is available for the transfer of stimuli and makes the transfer. The stimuli may be audio, visual, or other tactical cues. Stimuli may also be transmitted into the environment.[3]

As the techniques are applied, their effect on the user's neurophysiological state is evaluated by the system, which may transmit further stimuli if necessary. This process of detection and transmission is perpetual. And it occurs in real-time. It closes an electronic feedback loop around a user. AugCog can be integrated into intelligence systems.

According to the material that I have been able to locate, this technology is not yet entirely wireless. To detect some signals, it requires unintrusive sensors to be placed near the scalp. Other than that, the basic mind and body reading device which directs its results into a program with custom-tailored responses can be explained with this technology.

Automated Electronic Attacks

The idea of linking a directed-energy system to a computer is not new. The basis for this system goes back to April of 1976 when a device which monitored and altered brainwave activity was mentioned in *US Patent 3951134, Apparatus and Method for Remotely Monitoring and Altering Brain Waves*.

Although it was obtrusive, it was able to remotely read a person's emotional state and thought patterns, display the information on a computer for analysis, and then instantly send a particular frequency back to the brain to effect a change in electrical activity.

In February of 1995 a similar system was described in *US Patent 5392788*, which decoded brain signals using a computer that synchronized them with stimuli sent back to the person. The device was able to read brain activity (mind-read), compare the activity to a set of information, and then send a signal back to the brain to induce the desired perception or emotion.

Further evidence for the existence of this system was revealed in April of 1996 in *US Patent 5507291, Method and an Associated Apparatus for Remotely Determining Information as to Person's Emotional State*.

What has obviously happened is this: AugCog or a similar mechanism is part of the intelligence cycle of a C4ISR system connected to a directed-energy weapons platform. Rather than being used to enhance a person's performance, its mitigation strategies include punishment in the form of painful stimuli.

This explains how the electronic attacks can be synchronized with the TI's activities and thought patterns. And particularly, it helps us to understand how the DOD has arranged for its microwave hearing attacks to continually comment on the thoughts and activities of its targets.

Although official documentation suggests that non-invasive sensors must be placed near the scalp to obtain these readings, obviously AugCog's sensor technology is more advanced than what has been publicly announced.

The DARPA scientists who built AugCog surely must have been aware of how easily it could be used for such purposes. Quite possibly, this was the real reason AugCog was created. As far as surveillance systems being linked to directed-energy weapons, this has already occurred. The GIG, for instance, is such a system, among other things.

---

2   Research is being conducted to determine what an operator's functional state will be in the future. See *Wired, Pentagon's Mind-Reading Computers Replicate*, March 19, 2008, and *Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide*. The book *Augmented Cognition* mentions that it can currently predict an operator's future performance, but doesn't provide details.

3   Although books such as, *Foundations of Augmented Cognition*, by Dylan D. Schmorrow and Leah M. Reeves, and *Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide*, mention that the environment can be changed, they provide little information on exactly how.

In 2003 the NRC announced that surveillance systems connected to directed-energy weapons would identify, track, and attack targets, then provide real-time assessment of the attacks to achieve what they described as a "closed-loop tailoring" of the desired effect.

Wired reported in December of 2007 that Raytheon was developing an automated area protection system, which used ADT to provide industrial security or home protection. It would use sensors to track intruders and attack them with energy projectors hidden behind walls and on ceilings.

Metz and Kievit mentioned that part of this RMA includes the development of an automated remote surveillance system that synchronizes the attacks of precision stand-off weapons. "What is emerging," cautioned the Omega Research Foundation in 1998, "is a chilling picture of ongoing innovation in the science and technology of social and political control, including: semi-intelligent zone-denial systems using neural networks which can identify and potentially punish unsanctioned behaviour."

In 1977 the BSSR predicted that such a system would be used by repressive regimes to conceal their attacks against dissidents. Although the BSSR's description of it included implanted electrodes, the basic mechanism was the same. Brain signals would be transmitted to a computer, which would be programmed to respond to particular electrical patterns.

The computer would then generate signals based on those patterns which would be sent back to the person. They mentioned, for instance, that patterns associated with aggressive behavior would result in punishment by transmitting unpleasant sensations, and that the system would be adjusted to attack people wherever they went.

Combinations of Stimuli

The directed-energy weapons platform is only one stimuli output for this system. Thought patterns and behavior are also synchronized with environmental stimuli, such as computer network operations (CNO), human nodes interacting with the TI, the dimming of lights in a TI's living area, and spoofed radio/TV signals.

For instance, shocks are sent to the TI, sonic projectiles hit walls and ceilings, and microwave hearing attacks occur all within a few seconds. While they occur, CNO facilitates an attack on the operating system, or creates spoofed sites to comment on the attacks in real-time if the TI is online. Or, as a variation to the follow-up of the directed-energy attacks, a spoofed radio broadcast will comment on the attacks just after they occur, which is synchronized with the lights being dimmed.

Individual Human Nodes

This C4ISR system instructs individual human nodes interacting with the TI in real-time. The activities that the nodes are directed to carry out continually change in response to the TI's behavior, which is immediately recognized by the system during persistent surveillance.

Using the same closed-loop AugCog observation, processing, and feedback cycle, the system transmits instructions to a node interacting with the TI, rather than the TI. The node is told to make a comment or perform an act, which is tailored to be immediately understood by the TI.

This means that basically each comment made by an individual connected to this system can be a concealed attack by the DOD against its targets. The entire process occurs ultra-fast. I've noticed that it is so quick that it can occur within the natural pauses that exist during a normal conversation. It happens during the entire conversation.

Swarms and Themes

The precision of the synchronization that characterizes these swarms, which I have repeatedly witnessed, causes me to conclude that they are definitely computer-generated. The system is guiding these nodes with individualized instructions, while simultaneously monitoring the TI's reaction and instantaneously updating the nodes with attack instructions based on the new information.

While driving or on foot, a TI's reaction to a product is instantly interpreted by the system which fuses the intelligence with profile-specific information that contains, among other things, any recent themes to be emphasized.

This C4ISR system understands the location of the TI, where the nodes are, what product each node has, how every node will distribute its product, and the location of other products in the battlespace. It is capable of determining which node contains the next-best product that most accurately reflects the TI's reaction and/or contributes to the theme based on the new circumstances.

The order which the products are distributed, and the speed at which they are used to contribute to new circumstances that unfold, suggests that the system is not only aware of the location of all nodes, but the characteristics of each one.

It understands what product each node is capable of distributing. For a person, this includes: age, gender, race, and other physical or mental characteristics, which themselves can be used as a product. It also includes the type of clothing and any objects that these individuals may be carrying, which are used as products to convey messages.

For vehicles, it includes characteristics such as the type, color, the existence of any bumper stickers, license plates, lettering, or other visible products inside or outside of the vehicle that are used to promote the theme. It is also aware of what order each product needs to be distributed (shown to the TI), because in order for some themes to be successful, products must be distributed in a particular sequence.

So, while the system is performing ongoing surveillance on the TI, it is instantly able to process the intelligence and use it to instruct nodes during swarms. Because AugCog is part of the intelligence cycle, this means the TI's thoughts and emotions can be included in the attack instructions that nodes frequently receive.

Furthermore, because the system knows the location of every node at every moment, as well as the location of the TI, any new intelligence, including information regarding thoughts and emotions, can be sent to specific nodes in the area of the TI which, can be instructed to perform a PsyAct.

Node Identification

If this system is guiding nodes during swarms, then each node must be distinguishable to it. So, there are some important questions regarding what unobtrusive technology the DOD is using to tag each one.[4]

Although the DOD expressed an interest in using a revolutionary technology to communicate with people using the microwave hearing effect, as described in the footnotes of *The New War* chapter in Volume II, still, the actual technology being used to distinguish each person as an individual node is not revealed.

---

4   Some other important questions include the following: What are the locations of the devices which emit the transmissions that guide the nodes? Are they space-based? Do the signals originate from the same weapons platforms that are used to attack people? What is the DOD using to tag its targets? It appears that targets and informants are connected to the same system and receive auditory stimuli. Possibly, the same tagging method that is used to distinguish each node for auditory transmissions is used to track TIs. Also, how long have people been connected to this system? How long have these computer-generated swarms been occurring?

For vehicles, ships, and planes the cognitive radio can accomplish this. However, for people this is more complex. Although an operator can probably manually aim a device equipped with tracking sensors to direct a microwave beam into a person's head to instruct them, for a large number of nodes this would be inefficient.

Most likely, the C4ISR system itself is guiding these people. In order to direct these auditory transmissions the system's sensors must be able to lock-on to the human brain with some type of tag. And in order to properly generate swarms, the computer must be able to distinguish each node to properly guide it. It must understand where each node is, where the target is, and the geography of the land.

So each person must have a feature which distinguishes them from all other nodes that the system can identify and incorporate into its swarm algorithm. Although there are probably a variety of possibilities, here are a couple.

One possibility is that the swarmers carry some type of device which gives them a unique identity and allows the system to track and direct them. The device itself may be tiny so as to be easily concealed, or, it might resemble an everyday electronic object, maybe even a phone. In the *Weather Warfare* chapter of Volume III we discovered that in the early 1900s Dr. Nikola Tesla said it was possible for a watch-sized device to instantaneously and clearly transmit sound to any place on the planet.

According to the Department of Defense's June 2007 report, *Global Information Grid Architectural Vision*, communications technology used in the GIG will include a tiny hands-free computer that is embedded in clothing, and which is presumably undetectable to the casual observer.

Not much information is given regarding how a person receives information from the device. However, the description infers that it requires no interaction. How the device transmits the signals it receives into a person's auditory pathway is unknown.

Metz and Kievit mentioned that a small device known as the *individual position locater device (IPLD)* could eventually be placed under the skin of some citizens to covertly communicate with them during evacuation procedures.

There are several possibilities regarding how these or similar concealed devices transmit instructions to the node. One is that the device somehow wirelessly redirects the transmission to the person's cranium where the microwave hearing effect can be produced.

Or, each person uses the device for a type of natural login procedure, where they establish a connection to the GIG by placing it near their cranium, so that laser sensors from satellites can quickly and non-invasively link to their brain. Then the device is placed in clothing or not needed at all once the connection is established. They are then instructed wirelessly the entire time they're activated.

The device could also act as both a receiver and speaker which emit a regularly audible sound. This would mean that it is placed in or near their ears, or hidden in clothing. However, with this method, unless the device was placed directly in the ear there is the possibility that the instructions can be heard by others. Also, if it were placed in the ear, then it would be visible, even if it were small, unless it was very tiny.

Because of the visual and audible concealment problems associated with this last method, it is unlikely. I have noticed no such communication devices in the ears of these swarmers. And never have I overheard instructions emanating from a device hidden in their clothing.

The second possibility is that technology exists which allows the DOD to detect a feature in a person's brain which distinguishes it from all other brains. This could be described as a type of *brainprint*, where each person's brain is somehow (probably remotely) calibrated to the system. Once calibration takes place, the node is distinguishable from all other human nodes. It can be identified, located, alerted, and guided in real-time by the system.

The DOD mentioned a method of linking people to the GIG using *human computer interaction (HCI)*, which it describes as a highly advanced system consisting of sensory channels and cognitive capabilities that are fused with communications systems, which allow people to interact with the GIG in a natural way.

Little details are given pertaining to how this HCI connection works. Judging from the description, however, it is probably a covert method for the DOD to send instructions to human nodes connected to the GIG, after a quick and simple login procedure.

As far as node alert, one possibility is that the system sends out a signal to a general area to locate a particular node. Once it is located, a type of natural login occurs, where it becomes activated. The human node may or may not have a choice in this process.

Or, they receive an alert by cell phone or other electronic means letting them know they need to connect at a particular time. After they're alerted, they establish a quick connection to the GIG. In addition, some people are probably on a connection schedule, where they understand what days and time's they'll be alerted, as part of the global civil defense network. Then, for a period of time, they are instructed by the system to perform their activities.

Regardless of how they have accomplished it, they're using a covert communications system which can distinguish each individual human node and send it personalized instructions allowing for swarms that are perfectly synchronized.

Electronic Recruitment

Although official documentation states that a major portion of the civilian population will be recruited as surrogate forces, this does not necessarily mean their collaboration is voluntary. The non-verbal communication exhibited by some of these people leads me to conclude that a portion of them are definitely stalking and harassing people against their will.

Secrecy is of utmost importance when using informants. These unofficial collaborators are never allowed to reveal their connection to the state. What better way to achieve this than to have no visible contact with them?

It is likely that some people are being selected, terrorized, trained, and guided entirely by electronic methods. They are somehow identified by one of the mechanisms built into our society, whether in the workplace, schools, or other environments, and are then placed under surveillance and connected to this system.

The ones who recognize what's happening and try to resist soon realize that the societal institutions which exist to protect them from such things offer no help. Furthermore, social norms and fears of being labeled mentally-ill, which are the result of propaganda generated by the financial elite's institutions, prevent them from coming forward.

Some end up committing suicide. Others are antagonized to the point where they become infuriated and act violently, which lands them in prison or a mental hospital. Some are given a choice to submit, after which they are directed to persecute others that are being attacked.

Spoofed Signals

I've frequently noticed that TV and radio programs, as well as pre-recorded talk shows on portable MP3 players, comment on my ongoing activities in real-time and reference recent themes, which continues throughout the entire broadcasts, including commercial advertisements.

For instance, if I move left then the word *left* is mentioned, if I open up a cabinet the word *open* or a similar one is sent, if I'm about to walk up a flight of stairs then words such as *up* and related words are transmitted. Turning on light switches may result in words such as *on, light, bright, dark*, etc. If I accidentally bump a limb against an object, then words such as *hospital, injury*, and similar words are sent.

These comments are consistently synchronized with any basic limb movements, as well as the mere decision to make a movement. Also, if I'm looking at an object, then it or a variation of it is referenced. This appears to be another AugCog stimuli output.

These are pacing techniques used in hypnosis. It seems to be an advanced way communicating with the enemy by pacing them through cycles of observation, as explained by the RAND Corporation in the *Psychological Operations* chapter of Volume III.

Exactly how they're merging these key phrases into programs that supposedly originate from mass media outlets which reach thousands of people is open to interpretation. But here are some possibilities. One is that these phrases are actually woven into an otherwise authentic program by the actual hosts, guests, and advertisers, who are connected to the intelligence cycle, and periodically receive instructions from the DOD.

Aside from the sophisticated surveillance technology used to transmit and perfectly synchronize the phrases with the TA's activities, the military uses this method according to its documentation. If a multitude of TAs exist in an area, communicating with each by embedding phrases into a broadcast, while synchronizing them perfectly with the TA's movements, would be inefficient. However, using these announcers to speak certain phrases that are designed to be recognized by the TA would be simple enough.

These TV and radio programs may also be custom-spoofed for each TA using a type of advanced digital morphing technology that is linked to the C4ISR system. With this method there are also a couple of possibilities. One is that the program is partially spoofed, with fragments of it seamlessly morphed in real-time with key phrases pertaining to the TA's activities, resulting from ongoing surveillance.

For both live and pre-recorded broadcasts, this method may result in a slight delay as the actual broadcast/file is routed through the system, fused with sensor results, morphed, and then outputted as a spoofed signal to whatever electronic device is being used.

Another possibility is that the entire TV or radio program is spoofed in real-time with morphing technology, which creates an entirely fake audio or audiovisual news broadcast, that, in addition to delivering real news, comments on the TA's activity as a result of persistent surveillance.

Obviously, any spoofing method of this kind which is connected to the intelligence cycle and transmits messages into people's homes requires a highly sophisticated production facility, such as one used by the 4th POG. Although not much detailed information has been given on the military's use of digital morphing, as we've discovered it has been announced that it will be used for PsyOp.

In their 1994 US Army War College article, Metz and Kievit provided a hypothetical scenario, where an electronic barrier was placed around an entire country by secretly redirecting all of its communications through a national security filter at Forte Meade. In this scenario they also revealed how morphing technology could be used to produce computer-generated spoofed broadcasts to deceive insurgents.

Because the target is electronically isolated, under constant surveillance, and every single channel of communication that they rely on for accurate information is interfered with, their efforts to confirm that these signals are spoofed by checking a source may be futile.

Furthermore, because PsyOp units establish contracts with local media outlets in the AO, if a TA attempted to verify the contents of a broadcast, for instance, by visiting the facility, the media outlet itself would provide cover for the operation.

However, determining exactly how the DOD is accomplishing this is mostly irrelevant. Once again, it has been declared that PsyOp is being used on citizens, and that those under surveillance will be made aware that they are being watched. I refer to these programs as *PsyOp Radio* and *PsyOp TV*.

The internet spoofing that I've noticed appears to use the same observation and feedback mechanism. While technically there must be more to it than this, basically the system generates key words pertaining to an event and sends them to a spoofing program which inserts them into pages requested by the TI, seconds after the event occurs.

Summary

Simplified, this system is an automated, wireless surveillance and feedback loop consisting of a network of sensors, nodes, and directed-energy weapons, which is controlled by artificial intelligence (AI). It is an automated, covert, efficient way of handling informants, guiding swarms, and attacking targets.

In the past, when regimes used informants to enforce their rule, technological limitations allowed targeted people more options when dealing with attacks. It also gave them more time to recover in between attacks. For instance, there were delays between the instance that a situation changed, decisionmaking, and the transmission of new instructions to the informant. Depending on the technology available during that time-period, these delays may have been days, minutes, or seconds.

This is no longer the case. The entire process, from surveillance, to decisionmaking, to transmission, is automated. Informants are now connected to this system and guided the entire time that they're in the presence of the TI. The attacks are not limited by the mental capacity of the informant. Furthermore, the connection mechanism is robust, it works indoors and outdoors, there appears to be little disconnect.

Just as any progressing technology is continually applied to existing systems, so too, recent advancements in human-computer interface has revolutionized the practice of handling informant networks. The DOD has the technology to hijack a conversation. The destructive potential for such technology is limitless. It can be used to misguide and attack individuals or groups in a traceless manner which seems completely natural.

Functioning as a weapon, this automated system closes an electronic feedback loop around a targeted individual, attacking them relentlessly night and day with painful stimuli based on their ongoing activities, transmitted through a variety of channels.

Electronic Tyranny
Introduction

When people consider how directed-energy weapons will be used on them, most probably think of an area denial scenario, where they're at a protest and the police/military bring out a visible vehicle-mounted or man-portable weapon. They also probably think that once they leave the site, they'll never be attacked again. But that is only one use for this technology. There are a few considerations regarding this, including the following:

- These systems can be entirely automated. A human operator is not necessary.
- There have been multiple announcements that these weapons will be used in secrecy so as to maintain plausible deniability. Ideally the target will not know they are under attack.
- Adding to secrecy is concealability. For instance, it has also been revealed that these weapons can be hidden in suit cases or disguised as radios.
- Duration is one more consideration. Remember, these are protracted wars. The enemy will be attacked relentlessly everyplace they go over a long period of time.

Furthermore, the DOD would not limit itself to using only man-portable or vehicle-mounted platforms against a confirmed enemy. All that the Anglo-American Establishment needed to do was to get the public to accept that high-powered microwaves and lasers are nonlethal. Now, as far as specific uses or the locations of platforms, the potential is limitless.

Based on the declaration that these weapons will be used in secrecy against an enemy that lives among the civilian population, we must consider the very real possibility that autonomous stationary systems have been installed in some cities.[1]

A multi-level, overlapping approach has probably been adopted, consisting of space-based, stationary land-based, mobile, vehicle-mounted, and man-portable weapons. Smaller stationary systems can be installed in the cities themselves, supported by mobile and man-portable systems.

Larger units with strike capabilities of tens of miles can be placed in restricted areas outside of cities. Finally, space-based weapons can provide global coverage. Officially, space-based high-powered directed-energy weapons do not yet exist. These weapons can be linked through computers and sensors to the same C4ISR system previously mentioned, essentially making them a single weapon. A more detailed hypothetical example follows.

Populated Areas

With a distance of at least 1 km, the ADS is said to have many possible domestic uses. The Silent Guardian, which is a fraction of the size of the original ADS, has an automated tracking and targeting feature that can simultaneously and continuously attack multiple targets, in a 360 degree radius, with a distance of at least 250 meters.

A distance of 250 meters may not seem like much, but if many of these small systems were placed inside public transportation systems, or other public places, they could provide primary or backup coverage for larger systems.

There are at least a couple of potential laser systems that could be used in urban settings. One is the High Energy Liquid Laser Area Defense System (HELLADS), which is a mobile, pulsed, solid-state laser that is small enough to be mounted to a vehicle or a range of other platforms.

---

1   The documentation for the weapons mentioned in this chapter that are known to exist, as well as the proclamations that they will be secretly used on citizens during protracted wars in populated areas, has been presented in Volumes II and III.

The Laser Area Defense System (LADS) is another highly mobile solid-state laser, capable of the fast, continuous, simultaneous engagement of multiple targets in a 360 degree zone at extended ranges. The LADs was originally intended to shoot down missiles.

Using the available specifications of the systems that are known to exist, we can conclude that these weapons are connected to a computer with a network of sensors that is capable of automated, rapid, continuous targeting of multiple targets simultaneously. They have a 360 degree strike zone, with a range of miles in some cases, and are capable of instantaneous damage assessment and rapid retargeting.

If a network of these smaller ADS and solid-state laser platforms were placed strategically throughout a city, they could provide intersecting coverage. Wired into the electrical grid, they would have an unlimited magazine capacity.

These systems could be placed on the tops of buildings disguised as generators, HVAC equipment, etc. Or, multiple units could be placed in the buildings themselves in a manner which would allow coverage of the entire structure. Also, because microwaves pass through most unshielded structures easily, a weapon concealed inside a building could target people outside of it.

Vehicle-mounted and man portable weapons with autotracking features could be used to attack TIs during swarms. But this is probably not the preferred method of the security forces to continually attack a TI. It is simply more efficient to accomplish these attacks using automated systems that are configured to cover certain areas. However, using them for this purpose could serve as a backup.

Another consideration is that a single platform can support multiple weapons. For instance, the Full Spectrum Effects Platform (FSEP) is a sensor-quipped, autonomous, vehicle-mounted, compound directed-energy weapon, consisting of the ADS, a low-powered laser, and the LRAD. Based on this principle, a similar weapon could include the ADS, a high-powered laser, microwave hearing technology, and an infrasonic generator which shoots acoustic projectiles and transmits negative emotions.

Or, another possibility is a single weapon with a tunable wavelength, such as the Free Electron Laser (FEL), which is a solid-state pulsed laser that can shoot a beam of energy at any microwave or laser frequency, thereby acting as a high-powered microwave and laser.

There would be little grassroots opposition to the installation of these automated platforms in most cities because their setup and use would be secret. Obviously, some of the leaders in certain areas would need to know. In most cases bribery would suffice. If that didn't work the establishment could use all of its other methods of persuasion.

Furthermore, there will probably never be a public declaration that these weapons have been permanently mounted in populated areas, because they have already inferred that this would happen by announcing that our cities are battlezones, and that the weapons will be used on an enemy lives among us.

Perimeter Installations

To provide overlapping coverage, larger stationary, land-based weapons with even greater reaches can be placed just outside of populated areas on hilltops or towers in restricted zones. These platforms can be disguised as generators or communications systems.

As we've seen, the military has been able to successfully conceal a death ray sitting on 40 acres of land in Alaska as a research facility. Some possibilities for this layer include a compact, portable, high-powered chemical laser known as SkyGuard, which was originally designed to protect civilian areas from missile attacks. It provides a 360 degree dome of protection, with a reach of about 7 miles.

The Vigilant Eagle, a fixed-position, ground-based, high-powered microwave weapon with a distributed sensor network, has a 360 degree coverage area with a beam distance of about 60 miles. It was originally intended to be used in airfields to destroy missiles. This is only some of the unclassified technology. The classified technology is no doubt decades ahead of what has been publicly announced.

Space-Based

SBL research has been underway since at least the early 1980s. The purpose of these space-based directed-energy weapons is to be able to rapidly attack any target in space or on the planet at any time. We are led to believe that these weapons are not yet operational.

The US Air Force mentioned that space-based high-powered microwaves attached to LEOs were under development and would be functional by the year 2025. The *Associated Press* reported in May of 2001 that the US Air Force planned to have high-powered lasers affixed to satellites by 2010, through its Space-Based Laser Integrated Flight Experiment (SBL-IFX) program.

They also expressed an interest in a global area strike system (GLASS), which includes a ground-based high-powered laser that shoots a beam of energy at space-based mirrors attached to satellites, which redirect it for the precision attack of any target on the planet. By 1991 the Air Force had already demonstrated that a laser from the ground could be reflected off a mirror attached to a LEO and sent to a target on the surface of the earth.

My research and experience leads me to conclude that these space-based weapons are entirely functional. The public, however, is only informed on technology that is decades old, and misinformed on the status of initiatives. In June of 2005 the *Ottawa Citizen* reported that the Canadian Military warned that the public was being misled regarding the scope and progress of the SBL program.

These space-based and land-based weapons are probably linked to the same C4ISR system, essentially making them a single weapon with a distributed platform. A global, remote and proximate, multimodal sensor network tracks and targets the TI.

Summary

Because official sources have confirmed that our cities are warzones, if the beams of these weapons existed within the realm of visible light, we would probably quickly conclude that many citizens are under vicious attack. Individuals involved in any type of movement to expose this global revolution must consider the likelihood that this technology will be used against them.

Anyone who was not aware of the technology would probably never realize that they were under attack. Remember, their goal is neo-feudalism. What better way for tyrants to rule an empire than to have weapons that allow them to murder people in complete secrecy?

My Experience

Introduction

I first began to notice that I was under attack in late 2004 and early 2005. However, this has probably been going on since my early teenage years. This is a brief summary of my experience.[1]

Gang Stalked

I am stalked in just about every single store, business, or restaurant that I visit, as well as hospitals, clinics, dentists, public transportation systems, etc. I'm surrounded by the rudest people in public who appear to have never learned basic manners. In addition to swarming me and uttering the DOD's PsyOp themes, they have assaulted me.

In Stores

Brands of items are no longer available in stores after I develop a liking for them. Also, after an item is in a particular area, it will be moved to another part of the store. Locating it is usually difficult. I've determined that they are probably also altering the signs on the isles to delay me.

In addition to removing certain brands from the shelves, they replace them with products to promote their themes. This seems to be intended to not only cause frustration, but to control your living environment if you purchase the product. Similarly, if they're aware of a new but common item on my shopping list, which they always are, I understand that I probably won't be able to find that product in any of the stores that I typically visit.

The quality of products I that purchase in some cases has also been reduced. Once, during about an 8-month period, most bags of a particular brand of peanuts were inedible. This occurred with ones that I purchased myself at a shopping center as well as ones sent by a relative.

Products, signs, and banners consisting of symbolic messages that the DOD has already established as solid communication signals will be placed in an area to promote a threat or insult. Loudspeaker announcements blurt out the second I'm closest to the speaker. This serves as both a noise attack to startle me and a PsyOp attack because the announcement contributes to the theme. Even the background music is used to promote the theme.

The entire environment is psychologically prepared. While I'm being attacked visually and audibly with products, I'm crowded by clerks and civilians who show no manners as they invade my personal space. Clerks slam a variety of merchandise on the shelves when I'm near them.

The checkout counter area is entirely prepared with products to promote the theme, including any signs on the counters or the walls, as well as brands of items. This also includes the products being purchased by the person in front of me, who will often blurt out any keywords pertaining to the theme during a PsyAct with the clerk.

As I approach the doorway while leaving or arriving, almost always there is a person or group of people arriving or leaving at the exact same time, who not only invade my personal space, but appear to demand that I move for them. Once again, I'm swarmed by the rudest people who seem to be devoid of simple manners.

While walking through the parking lots I'm cut off or rushed by vehicles. As I continue through, a sequence of door and trunk slamming erupts from parked cars which surround the path that I take. I've noticed that the noise attacks that occur in lots are supplemented with clerks slamming carts into holding areas, sirens, and low flying propeller planes.

---

1   For more on these attacks see www.thehiddenevil.com and www.newworldwar.org.

Electronic Isolation

All of my friends and relatives that I am in regular contact with are being handled by the DOD with sophisticated surveillance technology. This includes forms of communication such as letters, telephone, and person-to-person conversations.

Every conversation with friends and relatives is hijacked by the DOD's C4ISR system, which instructs them to comment on my thoughts and the directed-energy weapons attacks that occurred moments earlier. Their statements frequently contain painful phrases.

Friends and family also participate in what appears to be computer-generated PsyActs every time I'm around them. Similar to the battleswarms, I've concluded that these acts are run by a computer program, which simultaneously instructs multiple relatives and friends to participate in a single display.

A majority of these acts are what most people would consider to be silly. They are typically insulting. Many appear to be intended to portray me as an incompetent fool. They are often followed up with DEW attacks, such as a V2K transmission of "you earned it."

While it could be said that, like standard military PsyActs, these are used to convey a theme to influence me in order to achieve a legitimate military objective, after studying the behavior of the groups which control the military, I have concluded that the primary purpose of these acts is to provide them with entertainment. By controlling almost every statement made by my family and friends, the DOD's has also electronically isolated me.

Micro-Managing Life Events

The DOD has created an electronic barrier around me, where all communication is interfered with and used to attack me. By spoofing my information, altering my environment, and hijacking my conversations, they are restricting the number of opportunities available to me.

This is allowing them a considerable amount of control over my life situation. My own observations based on their behavior so far, leads me to conclude that they're planning the long-term micro-management of my life situation, including the appearance of certain people into my life, as well as where I'll be able to work and live. This also includes the legal, relationship, financial, and health problems they'll be creating.

As part of this micro-management, what can be described as a type of operational or strategic synchronization is arranged by the DOD to sabotage my life situation. This includes timing events between family, friends, acquaintances, vendors, the delivery of my mail, etc., to coincide at the same point to promote PsyOp themes. Similar to the PsyActs, this synchronization appears to be done primarily for their entertainment. It allows them to feel powerful.

The fabrication of crisis after crisis in multiple areas appears to be intended to overwhelm me and cause a psychotic break (nervous breakdown), seemingly for their amusement. They have repeatedly communicated to me that they'll be slowing killing me in ways that I'll never be able to prove.

Spoofing and Information Denial

I've noticed that the DOD is removing and tampering with small landmarks such as street signs and house numbers. Streets that I've noted as landmarks repeatedly are missing signs. And as I'm scanning the side of a road for street numbers to determine how close I am to a destination, the numbers on the buildings and houses in the area will not be visible.

They have also removed information pamphlets from places such as libraries and public transportation centers. Local computer data and print media such as books and pamphlets are also being tampered with to convey themes. I've noticed this with old and new books borrowed from the library as well as purchased ones.

TV, radio, and MP3 talk shows consistently pace me in real-time by commenting on my movements and objects in my field of vision. This occurs so frequently that it cannot be a coincidence. The exact same pacing occurs when I'm in the presence of a person connected to their system.

They have demonstrated the ability to remotely influence computer-driven devices such as ATMs, electronic ticket dispensers, gas pumps, subway gates, etc. These devices repeatedly delay my transaction, don't respond to commands, act strangely, and block me.

They are able to control the graphics and text on ATM displays to promote PsyOp themes, as well as the digital displays on computers, phones, ovens, MP3 players, electronic billboards, and thermometers, which typically have variations of 666 and 33. This happens so often it's predictable. The prices at checkout counters are equally predictable, with variations of 666 and 33 occurring often. All of these devices appear to be connected to the GIG.

Poisoning

The DOD contaminates my food with ingredients that they know I'm allergic to which cause breakouts. Prior to this, they'll often let me know that they've done this using their themes. Accompanying this, is the poisoning theme, where they have my family and friends continually offer me foods which I've repeatedly told them I'm allergic to. These foods are typically placed right next to food I'll be eating. To contribute to this theme, pictures and various symbolic objects which represent these foods appear in the surroundings. Staged conversations pertaining to them also occur.

Blocking

Because of the financial sabotage that the DOD has arranged, I'm forced to live with friends or relatives who are handled by them, which allows them to control my living environment. The duties that these people are directed to perform includes the psychological preparation of the living area with products.

As an example of the extent of control they seek to establish over the environment, products given to me by relatives such as books, food, personal hygiene items, and even bags with certain symbols, are used to contribute to themes.

In addition to contributing to theme attacks, these products are used to physically block me. The behaviorists working with the DOD have studied all of my daily routines and have reverse-engineered methods to block and sabotage them on multiple levels.

From showering, to putting on shoes, to preparing meals, to opening cabinets, my activities are physically and/or strategically blocked. The physical blocking is so precise, that any small space that I use in kitchens or bathrooms to place the items necessary for me to perform an activity, is blocked with objects that contribute to whatever theme they're promoting at the time.

Part of this physical blocking includes traps that are frequently set which results in some type of negative occurrence, such as a falling object. A variation of this includes the placement of materials intended to disgust me (e.g., dirt, hairs, foods that I'm allergic to, etc.), in areas or on items that I use.

Strategically they block my daily activities by hiding or removing items from the environment, and disabling utilities and appliances. For instance, while washing dishes, drains are clogged, sponges and towels are not available, and there is no room to place the dishes.

While preparing a meal, the stove is broken, pans are filthy, little counter space is available to prepare the meal, hairs and dirt appear in specific areas that I use, simple ingredients such as salt or pepper are not available.

In multiple places, they have broken the coffee makers, removed all forms of coffee from the environment except flavors that I'm allergic to (chocolate), placed hairs and dirt in coffee cups, hid filters, etc. This multi-level approach to blocking results in a mental and physical obstacle course that must be done each time I prepare a simple meal. Something that may take only a few minutes may take an hour or more.

Microwave Hearing Attacks

These attacks are computer-generated. In my experience, most of them consist of the same voice, which transmits a rotation of single words and short phrases taken from a small collection of expressions. These phrases are consistently spoken with the exact same rhythm and tempo.

The emitter which sends these attacks is apparently connected to the C4ISR system. The collection which contains these phrases is periodically updated. Specific phrases within the collection are synchronized with the TI's thought patterns and activities, other directed-energy weapons, and PsyOp. Here are some personal examples of microwave hearing attacks and their associated thought patterns and activities:

- These are typically sent after the triggering of a physical trap, the realization that they have blocked me on some level or have carried out a stunt, or after some other directed-energy attack, such as the transmission of a sexually degrading picture: *see; gotcha; you earned it; thank you; told ya; rack 'em up! (get ready to play again); you're welcome; loves it*.
- These are more followup attacks that are usually sent after some other type of DEW attack: *got that?; you're learning; thank you*.
- These are transmitted when I have either been ignoring the attacks and have had no dialog with the system, or several minutes have gone by during which the system did not send microwave hearing attacks. They also occur as soon as I begin to think of scenarios which I often think of, but have not recently: *pick up the phone; listen to me; I missed you; did you miss me?; talk to me*.
- More phrases that are sent after several minutes has gone by when there has been no interaction with the system: *get ready; here I come; incoming; phone call*.
- These are often sent as a precursor to other types of attacks after the system has not been interacting with me for several minutes: *let's play; wanna play? play with me*.
- Generally, these are used as I move about during the day, and as I'm involved in an activity to expose them: *I'm watching; I'm warning you*.
- When I avoid a trap or don't perform some activity that I had originally planned on doing, these occur: *bullshit!; liar!*
- When I decide to temporarily put off some type of a task, this is sent: *fix it (do it now)*.
- Threats used generally throughout the day include: *we'll kill you; give it up; watch it; you'll see*.
- Emotions of anger or aggravation associated with thoughts of being attacked have resulted in the transmission of these phrases: *let go of me; get off of me; don't fight it*.
- These may be sent after I have successfully completed a task, and after I have avoided a trap. They are also associated with brain patterns of defiance or assurance: *cute; lucky you; confident; look at you*.
- When I'm planning or actually involved in activities to expose them I'll be attacked with these transmissions: *we'll see, oh yeah?; that a boy; bring it on; shutup!*

I've noticed that these and other phrases are transmitted in the same voice, with the same characteristics, and during the same activities, over and over again.

Directed-Energy

I receive frequent shocks and stings to various body parts, instances of nausea, and equilibrium disruption. The two types of attacks to my eyes which occur include the heating of both eyeballs and something which feels like a pin being stuck in my eye.

Others include involuntary muscle stimulation and involuntary limb movement. On a number of occasions they have been able to remotely open up my hand resulting in whatever fragile object that I was holding to fall and break.

They have also demonstrated the ability to induce an urge to urinate. I've noticed that this stops almost instantly if I move quickly, and then resumes moments later. It also stops and starts at various locations if I move around the house.

They are able to instantly heat metal objects and water pipes. For instance, if I turn on the cold water it's scalding hot. This has happened at times, when, in theory, it shouldn't. For instance, if nobody is home, and I haven't used the hot water at that faucet, it shouldn't be scalding hot. A variation of this occurs when I grab a pan by the handle that has not been heated for 15 minutes and it's still hot.

The targeting system on their directed-energy weapons is so precise they are able to make a single tooth pulse in pain. They are also able to make you thirsty. These attacks occur indoors and out in public. They are synchronized with microwave hearing attacks and environmental stimuli.

Sabotage

The military has sabotaged my personal equipment, tools, clothes, and other items. Presumably, they've been using embrittlements for metal, wood, and rubber to accomplish this. My cloths and personal gear are frequently ruined. They place holes or rips in clothing fabric, put tiny sharp objects in socks to make them unusable, etc.

When I worked on a farm in Maine, tools and equipment would continually break. Plastic buckets and cups would crumble as I picked them up. A half a dozen tape measures were destroyed in the summer of 2009 alone.

Sometimes a series of destructive acts would occur in a short period of time during the same project. For instance, a tape measure would break, then a pencil, then an electric saw would be inoperable, then a clamp would fall apart. The destruction of some of these tools appears to have been remotely triggered.

In addition to this, tools and equipment would be hidden, physical traps would be set, and information critical to the completion of a project would be withheld They repeatedly reverse-engineered the failure of projects using a combination of these methods. As with the other attacks, I get the impression that this offers them a form of entertainment.

This sabotage continues. Not only is it obviously done to bring my finances down, but it is synchronized with PsyOp themes. Basically, I understand that any new item that I purchase will be destroyed by them in some way. Something that would normally last several years may last a year, a few months, or less.

Chemicals

I also think that soil destabilizers were used on the farm in Maine to make vehicular passage difficult or impossible. I'm also fairly certain that superlubricants were used on cement, wooden stairs, and pathways to inhibit the traction of vehicles and to make me fall. Although this usually occurred when the surface was wet, whenever it happened I noticed that one small area would be as slippery as ice. Throughout the spring and summer of 2009, the stench of dead animals followed me into vehicles and multiple building structures.

Setting Traps

In addition to setting traps indoors, while working on the farm in Maine I concluded that the DOD was setting outdoor traps. For instance, while in the woods collecting buckets for maple sugaring, gathering rustic furniture material, or clearing the area, I noticed that twigs and saplings that were partially stuck in the ground or a rock would frequently snap up and hit me in the leg or arm depending on my position.

These have not resulted in any major injury, but are more of an aggravation. After they occurred, there was typically a V2K transmission of, "I told ya," or "gotcha."

I've noticed on multiple occasions that prior to the incident I would be drained of energy. After wondering why this was the case, I concluded that they used high-powered microwaves to make me weaker and more susceptible to the attack.

This not only lowered my awareness of my surroundings, which would normally have helped me to avoid such an event, but it diminished my ability to react to the event when it occurred. It seems that Silent Sound has also been used to guide me into some of these traps.

Weather Attacks

I have reason to believe that the DOD has been attacking me with weather warfare since 2005. They have demonstrated what seems to be the ability to selectively target trees with lightning strikes, and even to control the direction of their fall. They have used their themes to let me know that they are attacking me in this manner.

Emotional Attacks

In all likelihood, the DOD has been attacking me with either ELF waves, Silent Sound, or both. This technology is being used for emotional attacks, specifically to transmit fear, irritability, and sadness. This has probably been going on for years, perhaps since my early 20s, although I never recognized it as such.

Injuries

The DOD has demonstrated the ability to create injuries, similar to ones that a person would experience after a physical trauma. Sometimes multiple areas will be attacked at once. For instance, my back, thumb, and foot may all be aching for several days at the same time. Individually, these attacks are not incapacitating. And none of them leave any visible injury. They appear to be done to interfere with the routines that I do for mental and physical maintenance.

Disabling Colon

On April 4, 2009 I held up a *9/11 Truth* sign in Boston. Two days later I had abdominal pains, and about 10 days later my colon stopped working. Multiple medical facilities refused me treatment while appearing to accommodate me.

For months I was able to successfully remove the waste with an enema. Then that stopped working. I am now able to remove most of the enema waste by applying pressure to my abdomen in a particular sequence. The nausea occurs much less frequently and I am more comfortable, in this regard. Although my colon is usually bloated with gas most of the time, I can often remove some of it with combinations of pressure and placing myself upside down.

Computer Network Operations

While writing this book I received frequent attacks on the application, operating system, and network (internet) levels, which were synchronized with directed-energy attacks and environmental stimuli. Most of the hardware attacks have so far consisted of failing keyboards and mice on multiple computers. My current system is a new laptop, which consistently fails to respond to my keyboard and mouse input.

After reloading the operating system multiple times, tech support determined that it was probably a hardware issue. However, the manufacturer could not replicate the issue when I sent the laptop to them for repair. In general, the navigation systems of the operating systems that I have used repeatedly fail. They accomplish this by interfering with the scroll bars and menu systems. My cursor movements and selections, as well as keyboard input, frequently results in incorrect effects.

They realize that by intermittently disabling certain functions, that I will eventually not use them because they cannot be relied upon. In this manner they have been able to block certain functions. When I develop a workaround they typically interfere with that as well.

A common attack includes the text on the screen exhibiting a type of melting effect where it becomes unreadable. This has occurred on multiple computers, at different places, running different operating systems, and in multiple applications. Shortcuts appear on the desktop that I've repeatedly deleted. Files which I have copied to certain places are missing. They have also disabled parts of the keyboard.

Services which I have repeatedly stopped are started and synchronized to attack me. For instance, as I'm writing or reading a specific line of text on the internet or a local application, a popup message will occur for a service that has been stopped conveying information about the exact subject. This is often synchronized with shocks and stings, V2K transmissions of "thank you," and the dimming of the lights in the room.

One attack that occurs on the application level is the frequent misplacement of the cursor. When I move it into an area of a document, it often ends up in a completely different area, or results in the highlighting of certain text which is used to convey a threat or insult.

Menu systems in applications disappear and don't respond to input. Applications frequently crash. I've noticed that even the spell check is used to emphasize specific words to convey insults and threats. These application-level attacks are typically synchronized with shocks, stings, or V2K transmissions such as, "got that?" "gotcha" or "see, you're learning."

Every single time I go online I'm attacked. Spoofed search engine results contain meta-tag descriptions pertaining to any ongoing themes, including an event that occurred moments earlier. The sites that I visit usually contain phrases that contribute to whatever PsyOp theme the DOD is promoting at that time, as well as threats and insults. In addition to their pedophilia and satanic themes, the DOD also brags about the circumstances which allow them to control the online environment by frequently attributing themselves to God.

I've determined that they are probably also blocking certain sites and delaying me from finding information. Research that would normally take me only a few minutes, may take an hour. As I'm trying to locate certain information, they let me know that they're blocking me using their themes, presumably in an attempt to aggravate me.

The speed at which keywords pertaining to a recent event appear on these spoofed sites to promote themes is ultra-fast. For instance, I've been on the phone with people handled by the DOD who reference a theme, and at the same time phrases will appear on search engine results which also contribute to it. These are synchronized with DEW attacks.

These attacks span the internet, hardware, and software (operating system and application) levels. Operating system and application reinstallations do not fix these issues. They've occurred on multiple computers that I've used, including ones that have been my personal property as well as PCs in public libraries and other establishments.

They frequently sabotaged the manuscript for this book in real-time as I was working on it by undoing recent edits or placing characters into areas that I was editing. Presumably to aggravate me, they let me know they were doing this by shocking me or transmitting microwave hearing attacks each time I noticed the sabotage. They also corrupted the file.

They eventually began hitting my forearms with some type of directed-energy each time I sat at the computer, which has caused them to be slightly numb, and has resulted in a reduction in typing speed. At times while writing this book I found myself literally battling for control of the operating system while ignoring the directed-energy attacks in order to type a simple paragraph.

Other Devices Connected to the GIG

I've noticed that the devices below are linked to the surveillance cycle and are probably part of the GIG. The DOD has demonstrated the remote control of the following devices, which are regularly used as channels to display masonic and satanic themes:

- Cell phone signals are cut off the instance a particular phrase is used, obviously to emphasize it. The phone's menu system is interfered with as I interact with it. The clock on the display and for the lengths of calls is also altered.
- Advertisements on ATM displays are used as part of themes. They are able to alter the transaction time on receipts as well as the amount in the account itself.
- The text information on the digital displays of gas pumps is altered, including totals, and the amount of gasoline that was dispensed.
- The digital displays of radios, TVs, cable boxes, and appliances are controlled. The DOD has also demonstrated the ability to remotely control appliances such as ovens. A variation of this is their ability to synchronize the activation of the cooling systems of refrigerators with my movements.
- MP3 players do not properly respond to input. Their menu system is tampered with as I interact with them, resulting in the appearance of an item on the display, such as a song, which conveys a message. To convey threats and insults, a phrase from a song is played when the devices is powered on, which is not the song that was active when it was powered it off.
- Digital clocks on computers are interfered with.
- Electronic billboards which display times and temperatures consistently display variation of 666 and 33.

Tampering with clocks also allows them to interfere with my schedule. Other types of electronics that I've noticed are tampered with include the electronic gates in subway systems and electronic ticket dispensers. I'm fairly certain that they have somehow wired traffic lights into this system. Although controlling the speed and direction of its vehicular nodes allows the DOD a considerable amount of control over the distribution of their products, another variable is the speed of the TA, which they would not leave to chance.

While there are other methods of accomplishing this, such as temporarily blocking them with nodes, or, perhaps even factoring the cycles of the traffic lights which a TA will encounter into the system that directs their nodes, a more precise and easier method is to connect the lights themselves to the C4ISR system.

Knowing exactly where their products are and being able to stop the TA at a particular place in order to distribute them, also allows them a more efficient use of a smaller number of nodes, which may contain products that must be distributed in a particular sequence.

I've noticed that this is used to draw my attention to products that I probably would have otherwise not noticed, such as license plates or bumper stickers. Large trucks with logos or short text messages on their sides act as moving billboards to convey symbolic messages pertaining to an ongoing theme, as they make turns on the opposite side of the intersection or travel across the intersecting road.

This tactic can also be used to delay the TA as the environment of their destination is being psychologically prepared. Controlling traffic lights allows the DOD optimum control over the timing of their attacks. It allows them to manage the battlespcace more efficiently. They would not allow the potential that such a critical factor offers to be unused.

Nongovernmental Organizations

Nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) are also known as grassroots organizations, transnational social movement organizations, private voluntary organizations, self-help organizations, independent sector, volunteer sector, civic society, and nonstate actors. Amnesty International, the largest human rights organization in the world, is an example of an NGO. Others include the World Social Forum, Oxfam, World Vision, and Doctors without Borders.

NGOs address issues pertaining to the environment, religion, emergency aid, or humanitarian affairs. They are involved in education, technical projects, public policy, relief activities, and developmental programs. Their capability, equipment, resources, and expertise can vary from one to another.

Some have decades of global experience in developmental and humanitarian relief procedures. Others are small organizations which are dedicated to a particular emergency or disaster. They are viewed by some as beneficial entities which provide services that the for-profit private sector and governments do not.

There is a variety of ways in which NGOs can be classified, including public, private, religious, etc. But the two basic types are *advocacy* and *operational*. An advocacy NGO exists to defend or promote a specific cause. They promote these causes by working with the press, lobbying, and other activities. An operational NGO exists mostly for developmental projects. They mobilize public support and contributions for projects and often have strong links in the community.

The term NGO has no legal status. Most are created as trusts, foundations, nonprofit, or other entities. The term NGO originally meant that the organization was created and run by people without the participation or representation of any government. It was first used in 1945 with the establishment of the United Nations.

NGOs were created as a solution to the imperialistic measures of international organizations and the resulting turbulence caused by globalization. However, some contend that NGOs are used by these wealthy elites to replace true grassroots movements.

Large NGOs have budgets in the many millions or even billions of dollars. Some sources of funding include: membership dues, sale of goods and services, grants from international institutions, grants from governments, and private donations. Although the governments of the countries which an NGO is registered in may require some oversight, the funding sources may not be publicly available.

Despite the term "non-governmental," many of the larger NGOs are in fact state and corporate funded. Some are managed with a professional staff, and exist to further the political or social goals of their funders. They are able to maintain their nongovernmental status by not employing members of a government.

NGOs are accepted as legitimate groups in the international community. They significantly influence both national and international policy. Their political influence extends down to the local level. Many international NGOs consult with the UN relevant to their area of expertise, and serve a critical role in upholding UN treaties.

A related group is an intergovernmental organization (IGO), which is formed by an agreement between two or more governments on a regional or global basis. They reportedly exist for stabilization and humanitarian efforts. The UN is considered to be an IGO. These groups may be created for general or specialized purposes. NATO and the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe are specialized security organizations. The World Food Program is also a specialized IGO. The African Union and the Organization of American States are general IGOs. IGOs work closely with NGOs and interagency partners.

A Brief History of PsyOp

Much of the social science research which led to the creation of modern PsyOp was carried out from the 1930s to the 1950s at academic institutions such as Columbia, Princeton, MIT, Harvard, Yale, and others. It was sponsored by private foundations such as Menninger, Rockefeller, Russell Sage, and Ford, as well as the Carnegie Corporation, which worked with think tanks such as the RAND Corporation and Council on Foreign Relations. The US military and CIA went into partnership with these groups to conduct these studies.

It was not until WWI that the US institutionalized PsyOp in its current form. President Wilson was a major contributor to its early development. In 1917, he appointed George Creel to lead an elite Committee of Public Information composed of US Secretaries of War, Navy, and State to conduct research pertaining to PsyOp.

After WWI US PsyOp projects continued in academia, particularly in the expanding field of communications. An early contributor to this research was a political scientist and communications expert named Harold Lasswell.

Lasswell authored the 1926 publication, *Propaganda Technique in the World War*, where he described propaganda programs used by the enemy by providing case studies in persuasive communication, audience psychology, and the manipulation of symbols. He believed that communication of this kind could be used by a specialized class of wealthy elites to promote their version of social order.

In 1941 Lasswell wrote an article in the *American Journal of Sociology* entitled, *The Garrison State*, where he explained how a type of scientific dictatorship could be created which would be ruled by political-military elite, who would use symbols to control public opinion.

Another early contributor, Walter Lippmann, based his writings, *Public Opinion* of 1922 and *The Phantom Public* of 1925, on his experience in a US propaganda unit with American Expeditionary Forces during WWI. Lippmann also believed that communication could be used by a ruling class to impose its will on others. He wrote multiple books and articles describing how a specialized class of experts, specialists, and bureaucrats would use manipulation to rule society. He was a founding member of the Council on Foreign Relations.

More research on PsyOp was spurred by WWII, during which time a network of social scientists and communications experts sprung up that played a central role in PsyOp development into the 1950s. During the late 1930s the Rockefeller Foundation contributed much to this research. The foundation's administrators thought that mass media could be used as a powerful manipulative force in modern society. Over the course of about two years, the foundation sponsored Harold Lasswell to conduct research on how to engineer mass consent using "manipulation and deceit."

Shortly after WWII and into the 1950s PsyOp research was funded by the Office of Naval Research (ONR), Air Force, Army, and CIA, which contracted with major institutions such as the Bureau of Applied Social Research (BASR) at Columbia, the Institute for International Social Research (IISS) at Princeton, the Center for International Studies (CENIS) at MIT, the Institute for Social Research at the University of Michigan, the National Opinion Research Center, and the RAND Corporation. These studies pertained to techniques of persuasion, opinion measurement, interrogation, political and military mobilization, ideology dissemination, etc.

This small informal network that was created during WWII consisted of government agencies partnering with private foundations, think tanks, and academic institutions. It favored certain federal contractors to conduct social science research. One example of this is the Interservice Committee on Human Resources, which was created in 1947 by the DOD to coordinate all military spending on communication studies, social psychology, sociology, and the social sciences.

The DOD and a group of influential academic individuals used the committee as a confidential focal point for government and academic networking. Its 1949 chairman was Donald Marquis of the University of Michigan, also the president of the American Psychological Association. One committee member was William C. Menninger of the Menninger Foundation, a major defense contractor.

Others were Carroll Shartle of Ohio State University and future chief of the Psychology and Social Science Division of the Office of the Secretary of Defense, as well as Samuel Stouffer of Harvard. Contributors to the committee included Henry Brosin of the University of Chicago, Frederick Stephan of Princeton, Walter Hunter of Brown, and the future chief of the Bureau of Social Science Research (BSSR) Raymond Bowers.

Although the committee didn't allocate funds, it was responsible for the overall social science portion of the military budget. It recommended and approved major research projects. The committee had four divisions. Of particular interest is the Panel on Human Relations and Morale which oversaw most of the psychological warfare research for the military.

The panel was composed of military and academic specialists that conducted studies on PsyOp. It was chaired by Charles Dollard, president of Carnegie Corporation. One of its members was Hans Speier, trustee of the RAND Corporation.

Advisors to the panel included members of the Bureau of Applied Social Research (BASR) at Columbia University, such as Harry Alpter (also of Yale) and Kingsley Davis (director of BASR), as well as John Gardener of the Carnegie Corporation, Harold Lasswell of Yale, and Elmo Wilson of a major US government contractor called International Research Associates. The committee's budget, papers, and meeting material were classified.

During the 1940s/WWII period there were several other main centers of PsyOp and related activities in the US. They included the Research Branch of the Office of War Information (OWI), the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), and the Psychological Warfare Division of the US Army (PWD). Through these and other organizations, prominent social scientists participated in research projects during the war.

Some notables include Leonard Doob of Yale, Wilbur Schramm of the University of Illinois, Alexander Leighton of Cornell, Hans Speier and Nathan Leites (both of the RAND Corporation), Edward Barrett of Columbia, Clyde Kluckhohn of Harvard, and Devereux Josephs of Harvard and Carnegie Corporation. Some of these individuals served in two or more groups at the same time.

Wilbur Schramm, for instance, was a social scientist at the University of Illinois and Stanford. He was a central figure among social scientists in the US regarding communication research between 1948 and 1970. His writings on propaganda, such as *The Process and Effects of Mass Communication*, have been used as training manuals for US government propaganda programs. During WWII Schramm worked at the OWI. Some of his important work done in the 1950s concerning PsyOp was conducted in connection with the CIA and military, and therefore, remains classified.

Devereux Josephs of Harvard University was president of Carnegie Corporation from 1945 to 1948, just prior to it running the Panel on Human Relations and Morale under the Interservice Committee on Human Resources, created by the DOD in 1947. He was also a member of the Council on Foreign Relations during this time.

The Office of War Information (OWI) was a main US center for PsyOp and related studies during WWII that functioned from 1942 to 1945. It released domestic news stories and radio broadcasts to promote patriotism. Its members included editors of *Time, Look, Fortune, Holiday, Coronet, Parade, Saturday Review*, and the *Denver Post*, as well as publishing houses such as Viking Press and Harper Brothers, in addition to large advertising firms. The OWI was dismantled by congress after it was discovered that the propaganda it disseminated contributed to Roosevelt's 1944 reelection.

The Psychological Warfare Division of the US Army (PWD) was another major center for PsyOp studies during WWII. In 1951 it published, *Bullets or Words*, describing how PsyOp was successfully used as a weapon in WWII and the Korean Conflict. They stated that the "new psychological weapons" that had been developed based on "sound scientific principles" should be used in every future military action.

From the 1940s into the 1960s the RAND Corporation conducted a variety of social science research, which included its participation in the Panel on Human Relations and Morale. Beginning in 1951 Chitra M. Smith at the Bureau of Social Science Research (BSSR) prepared for RAND a series of papers entitled, *International Propaganda and Psychological Warfare*. RAND was commissioned by DARPA in the early 1960s to develop methods to break the underground resistance in Vietnam.

The Bureau of Applied Social Research (BASR) at Columbia University helped to research government-sponsored psychological warfare projects shortly after WWII and into the 1950s. This included providing advisors to the Panel on Human Relations and Morale such as Harry Alpter (also of Yale) and its director, Kingsley Davis.

During the 1950s the Rockefeller and Russell Sage foundations contributed heavily to social science research, some of which occurred at the Institute for International Social Research (IISR) run by Hadley Cantril at Princeton University. The Rockefeller Foundation was used during this time as a front to conceal at least $1 million in CIA research conducted at the IISR. Nelson Rockefeller was an advocate of PsyOp and served as an advisor to Eisenhower on the subject from 1954 to 1955.

Cantril was the primary author of the 1940 book, *The Invasion from Mars*, which was based on a 1938 radio broadcast which convinced many people that an alien invasion had taken place. This was reported in the *New York Times* on October 30, 1938 where it observed that thousands of people across the US were deceived into thinking that aliens were taking over the planet. The broadcast caused a nation-wide panic. It has been suggested that it was a psychological test done on the public. According to the 1999 documentary, *Masters of the Universe: The Secret Birth of the Federal Reserve*, the Rockefeller Foundation funded the broadcast in order to study the resulting panic.

Leonard Cottrell, an enthusiastic promoter of PsyOp, is another example of an individual serving in multiple organizations spanning the private and federal realm. From 1951 to 1967 he was the chief social psychologist at the Russell Sage Foundation, while serving as the chairman of the Defense Department's advisory group on psychological and unconventional warfare from 1952 to 1953. He was a member of the scientific advisory panel of the US Air Force from 1954 to 1958, as well as the US Army scientific advisory panel from 1956 to 1958. He directed the Social Science Research Council (SSRC).

The Center for International Studies (CENIS) at MIT was contracted by the US government for PsyOp research beginning in the early 1950s. It was funded by the Ford Foundation. The funds were distributed under the guidance of Hans Speier of the RAND Corporation. Harold Lasswell and other social scientists participated in research at this center.

The foundation's archives describe that it was distributing funds for CIA PsyOp projects. These projects were made at the request of the Ford Foundation's director, John McCloy, who is known for his WWII PsyOp work. McCloy had used the foundation as a front for CIA PsyOp research projects. CENIS generated a significant amount of articles pertaining to PsyOp which appeared in a variety of academic journals into the late 1950s. It was one of the most important centers for such studies at that time.

McCloy is yet one more example of an individual with interlocking memberships in organizations that conducted early PsyOp research. He was a prominent Wall Street lawyer with strong connections to the Wall Street elite. During WWII he was the Assistant Secretary of War. From about 1953 to 1960 he was the chairman of Chase Manhattan, during which time he worked closely with David Rockefeller, and had a close association with the Rockefeller family in general.

McCloy was chairman of the Ford Foundation from 1958 to 1965, as well as a trustee of the Rockefeller Foundation from 1946 to 1949, then again, from 1953 to 1958. From 1954 to 1970 he was chairman of the Council on Foreign Relations.

A close friend of McCloy was William Donovan, another Wall Street lawyer closely connected to the establishment. He is most known for his work as an intelligence officer and for directing the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), the predecessor of the CIA. He is considered the originator of today's CIA. Donovan wanted PsyOp to become an actual branch of the military, similar to the Army or Navy.

As the director of the OSS, Donovan believed that an understanding of Nazi psychological warfare was a vital source of ideas which would eventually be implemented in America. He thought the "engineering of consent" could be used during peacetime and open warfare. He convinced FDR to establish a civilian intelligence agency to conduct covert psychological warfare both at home and abroad.

The Office of Policy Coordination (OPC) was created in 1948 by the National Security Council. In 1952 it merged into the CIA, and its budget, personnel, and existence was a state secret. Although it was part of the CIA, it was overseen by George F. Kennan of the state department, who was also a member of the Council on Foreign Relations. By 1952 it had over five thousand people in 47 offices in the US and around the world. Although its budget was never officially acknowledged, it is said to have been in the millions in 1950 alone, most of which was spent of psychological warfare.

The Center for Research in Social Systems (CRESS) was founded as the Special Operations Research Office (SORO) in 1956 as part of the American University in Washington, D.C. It later became the US Federal Contract Research Center, which was responsible for social science research in areas of counterinsurgency, psychological warfare, and civil action.

Research on PsyOp continued into the 1960s and 1970s with conferences sponsored by the DOD for the design of a new type of warfare that would eventually be known as *low-intensity conflict (LIC)*. The UK was involved in some of these. In 1964 DARPA released a document pertaining to these studies entitled, *Research in the Behavioral and Social Sciences Relevant to Counterinsurgency and Special Warfare*.

Summary

A group of men functioning through a private network of foundations, think tanks, and academic institutions went into partnership with the military and intelligence agencies to conduct early PsyOp research. They kept most of their results classified.

Regarding this, Christopher Simpson, author of *Science of Coercion: Communication Research and Psychological Warfare*, explained: "A very substantial fraction of the funding for academic US research into social psychology and into many aspects of mass communication … was directly controlled or strongly influenced by a small group of men who had enthusiastically supported elite psychological operations as an instrument of foreign and domestic policy."

He continued: "They exercised power through a series of interlocking committees and commissions that linked the world of mainstream academia with that of the US military and intelligence communities. Their networks were for the most part closed to outsiders; their records and decision-making processes were often classified."

When the Reece Committee investigated parts of this network in the early 1950s, including Carnegie, Rockefeller, Ford, the CFR, RAND, and the SSRC, it discovered that its members were using their organizations to conduct social science research that would allow them to create a global government.

Small-Scale Wars

This new war-form goes by several different names, including: effects-based operations (EBO), network centric warfare, military operations other than war, peace operations, low-intensity conflict, irregular warfare, unconventional warfare, asymmetric warfare, civil-military operations, and fourth generation warfare. These terms share most of the following characteristics:

- They are international, protracted, political wars that are fought among the people.
- They are an interagency joint effort between the military, federal law enforcement, and local and state law enforcement, which is referred to globally as the multinational force (MNF), as well as nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) and intergovernmental organizations (IGOs).
- They use the civilian population and private sector of the host nation (HN) during civil-military operations (CMO) to attack a state's internal enemies.
- They must be perceived as legitimate by the host nation's civilian population in order to gain their cooperation.
- They rely on PsyOp, isolation, and nonlethal weapons, typically for the destruction of the enemy's will.
- They use synchronization of tactics and strategies.

Effects-Based Operations

Effects-based operations (EBO) are US military concepts that began after the 1991 Gulf War, to combat new irregular threats during 4GW and MOOTW. They use PsyOp, and NLW and tactics to defeat an enemy's will.

The RAND Corporation defines EBO as: "Operations conceived and planned in a systems framework that considers the full range of direct, indirect, and cascading effects—effects that may, with different degrees of probability, be achieved by the application of military, diplomatic, psychological, and economic instruments."

The Department of Defense's definition is as follows: "Coordinated sets of actions directed at shaping the behavior of friends, neutrals, and foes in peace, crisis, and war. … The term actions … can subsume not only military actions, but also political, economic, or other actions by a government, as well as those of non-governmental and international agencies…"

They further define effect in the following way: "An effect is a result or impact created by the application of military or other power ... that may be either kinetic or non-kinetic, and may equally be either physical or psychological/cognitive in nature."

These operations are used against asymmetric political enemies not engaged in physical combat. The attrition-based approach is used for the slow physical and psychological destruction of the enemy. The goal is to break the will of the enemy, according to the DOD.[1]

Network-Centric Warfare

Netwar is basically a linking of people, weapons platforms, sensors, and decision aids into a network that operates a single unit. It is an interagency, international, full-spectrum operation that is used against asymmetric enemies.

---

1   The EBO sources I've been able to observe make no specific reference to isolation or synchronization. Because it is used with netwar, it is global, it takes place among the civilian population, and uses civilians as forces.

The US Department of Defense defines it as: "an information superiority-enabled concept of operations that generates increased combat power by networking sensors, decision makers, and shooters to achieve shared awareness, increased speed of command, higher tempo of operations, greater lethality, increased survivability, and a degree of self-synchronization."

It uses a network-based approach to warfare, where dispersed nodes, (people, vehicles, aircraft, etc.), are linked to each other through a complex C4ISR system. The nodes may be irregular forces. The system uses a high-speed form of communication that allows for shared battlespace awareness, as well as the rapid synchronization of forces during an attack.

Also connected to the C4ISR, is advanced surveillance technology that is used for information gathering, deception, and interference of enemy communications. This includes a combination of distributed networked sensors which detect actionable information. These sensors may be remote and/or proximate (close-in) to targets.

Netwar also employs PsyOp and NLW. The surveillance technology, PsyOp and NLW are used to destroy the enemy's will. This can be accomplished using a type of EBO/PsyOp that RAND calls neocortical warfare, which is used to shape the behavior of the enemy by regulating his perceptions.

Another major component of netwar is the swarm, also called the tactical swarm or the battleswarm. This is an ancient military tactic based on the behavior of certain animals, such as insects and wolves. It includes the various dispersed nodes in an area of operation congregating upon a target from all directions to form an attack. The rapid movement of nodes upon the target is called a pulse. After the pulse, the nodes disperse and wait for the next set of instructions.

The military forces involved in netwar under the NATO Networked Enabled Capability (NNEC), include: Canada, France, Germany, Italy, the Netherlands, Norway, Spain, the United Kingdom, the United States, Belgium, Denmark, Australia, New Zealand, and Turkey. Assisting these forces are PVOs, NGOs, the civilian populations, and the private sector. This war-form will be used increasingly as the state-to-state form of conflict is phased out.[2]

Military Operations Other Than War

Military operations other than war (MOOTW), also called operations other than war (OOTW), are conducted globally, including the US. MOOTW was developed in the US for use in a wide range of operations. Its principles include: objective, unity of effort, security, restraint, perseverance, and legitimacy. It is used to:

- combat terrorism, both antiterrorism (defensive measures) and counterterrorism (offensive measures)
- prevent narcotics trafficking
- deter war
- resolve conflict
- promote peace (peace operations)
- support civil authorities during a domestic crisis
- diffuse potential aggressors
- protect national interests
- support the United Nations

The nation where MOOTW takes place is referred to as the *host nation (HN)*. Political objectives are considered at strategic, operational and tactical levels. Heavy emphasis is placed on political considerations which restrict its ROE.

---

2   The netwar sources that I've been able to observe make no specific reference to isolation, protracted struggle, or perceived legitimacy.

Because of this, the operations must appear righteous and moral to the civilian population, which it uses as irregular forces. The appearance of legitimacy must also be projected to the international community. Therefore, legitimacy is one of its core principles. "In MOOTW," revealed the Joint Chiefs of Staffs in their, *Military Operations Other than War* report, "legitimacy is a condition based on the perception by a specific audience of the legality, morality, or rightness of a set of actions." If the operation is "perceived" as legitimate, they explained there will be a strong tendency to support it.

The joint interagency and international operation is used to identify, isolate, and neutralize threats that exist among the civilian population. These agencies rely heavily on the indigenous population and private sector as irregular forces during civil-military operations (CMO). In the United States this includes the DOJ, FEMA, and other agencies. In their *Nonlethality and American Land Power* article, put out by the Strategic Studies Institute, Douglas C. Lovelace, Jr., and Steven Metz explained that MOOTW is used to quickly and efficiently identify, isolate, and neutralize threats that exist among civilians.

Some of these activities are conducted from a C4ISR center called a civil-military operations center (CMOC). Information on military targets is shared with all of these agencies as part of the unity of effort principle. The C2 faction uses the term "information gathering" rather than "intelligence" to describe this process. Presumably this is due to the political implications inherent when working with private and public groups during investigations on potential domestic threats.

A MOOTW campaign is planned the same way a major theater war (MTW) is planned. One goal is to achieve the objective as quickly as possible. To accomplish behavior modification, it employs combinations of NLW and tactics as well as PsyOp. Lethal tactics may also be used.

Some activities include threats and show of force operations (SOFO). SOFO is used to demonstrate US resolve by displaying increased visibility of forces to an enemy who is demonstrating behavior detrimental to US interests. These displays include persistent aircraft flights over a specific area, ship visits, or other activities.

All of these forces are used to compel compliance in an adversary to maintain peace and order. The US and its allies are using MOOTW increasingly for peace operations.[3] The term MOOTW is being phased out and irregular warfare (IW) is considered by some to be the current proper term. Many MOOTW operations originate from the United Nations.

Peace Operations

Peace operations (PO), also called *peacekeeping operations* by the United Nations, are international, interagency missions to contain conflict, maintain the peace, and form a legitimate government. PO can originate from the US, UN, another IGO, or a coalition of nations. Most are run by the Department of Peacekeeping Operations (DPKO) of the UN. The UN uses PO to help countries create conditions for lasting peace. The US Army *Peace Operations* manual lists them as a type of MOOTW. Each PO has specific goals, but all share the common one, which is to alleviate human suffering and create conditions for peace.

PO are defined in the Joint Publication entitled, *Peace Operations*, in the following manner: "PO are crisis response and limited contingency operations, and normally include international efforts and military missions to contain conflict, redress the peace, and shape the environment to support reconciliation and rebuilding and to facilitate the transition to legitimate governance." The United Nations describes them as a "unique and dynamic instrument … developed by the organizations as a way to help countries torn by conflict create the conditions for lasting peace."

---

3   Although the MOOTW sources I've been able to locate make no specific reference to the destruction of the enemy's will, MOOTW is used to compel compliance. In addition, the US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center's August 2006 *Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare* article, says that MOOTW is the same as IW. So MOOTW has all of the shared characteristics.

PO have been used since 1948 for stabilization and ceasefire operations, and originally consisted of lightly armed troops that would monitor and report activity after peace agreements. The UN charter does not contain the term *peace operations* but it is said to exist between Chapter VI, which is mediation, and Chapter VII, which includes comprehensive force. The UN Security Council authorizes these operations.

The UN Charter gives the UN Security Council the authority and responsibility to maintain international peace and security. Because of this, the international community usually relies on the UN to implement these activities.

These interagency, international operations consist of military, civilians, local police, government agencies, legal experts, humanitarian workers, NGOs, and other components of the "International Movement," according to the UN. These groups function in unity and are in extensive communication during the operations. They include civil-military operations (CMO) that are the coordination, integration, and synchronization of the civilian population and the military to promote the peace.

To help coordinate their activities, they may create a CMOC as well as committees, and action groups. All instruments of national power can be used to achieve their objectives. This includes PsyOp and NLW.

Financial assistance for these operations originates from the World Bank, International Monetary Fund (IMF), and various NGOs. PO must be perceived as legitimate by the American public, HN population, and international community in order to be successful.

Over the years, UN peacekeeping has expanded its operations to include complex multidimensional enterprises which promote sustainable peace. In addition, although PO was originally intended to deal with conflicts between nations, it is now increasingly used to resolve a country's internal conflicts and civil wars.

Forces may be deployed to monitor human rights, make security reforms, prevent the outbreak or spread of conflict, stabilize situations after a ceasefire, implement disarmaments and peace agreements, and help countries establish a stable government based on democratic principles.

The UN has a direct impact on the political process during these operations. The UN continues to expand and evolve its PO for the purpose of maintaining "international peace and security." According to the US Army, while maintaining the peace, other adversaries may surface which require attention. They include "virtually any person, element, or hostile group … opposed to the operation." In addition to regular military force, NLW and PsyOp are used to neutralize these enemies.

PO includes three basic areas: The first is support to diplomacy, which includes peace making (PM), peace building (PB), and conflict prevention (also called preventive diplomacy). The next two are peacekeeping (PK), and peace enforcement (PE).

All PO require perceived legitimacy in order to be successful. According to the US Army, none of these operations are done in secrecy, and the public is made aware of the activities. PK uses the least amount of force, PM the most, and PE is about midway. Support to diplomacy includes activities that take place in peace or conflict situations. They are done to prevent conflict. They include peacemaking, peace building and conflict prevention.

Peace building (PB) are post-conflict, civil-military, diplomatic actions that rebuild civil infrastructures and institutions to form a legitimate government. PB seeks to help the state effectively carry out its functions. It may include the building of physical structures such as schools and medical facilities. PB involves a number of efforts to reduce the risk of conflict and facilitate peace and development.

It is a complex, long-term process that creates conditions for lasting peace. It begins while PE or PK are taking place, and continues for years. It works by targeting the underlying causes of violence in a comprehensive manner. The military may support PB by providing PK or other activities to facilitate the post-conflict political process.

PM is a diplomatic process designed to establish a ceasefire. It includes mediation, negotiation, inquiry, arbitration, judicial settlement, and other peaceful means to end disputes. It may use military force to bring conflicting entities to negotiations.

PM includes meetings with leaders of nations at war. Military activities to support PM include security assistance, peacetime deployments, or other activities that influence the disputing parties by demonstrating US resolve in the operation. Although the military is involved in these activities, it is not leading them.

Conflict prevention, also called preventative diplomacy, includes diplomatic and other actions taken before a predictable crisis to prevent or limit violence, deter aggression, and reach agreements. Its methods are military activities such as early warning, surveillance, security reform, preventative deployment actions, SOFO, sanctions, and embargoes.

Peacekeeping (PK) are military or paramilitary operations that occur with the consent of all major conflicting parties, and are designed to monitor and facilitate an existing ceasefire to reach a long-term political settlement.

PK occurs after a truce or ceasefire has been implemented and all major conflicting parties have agreed to the operation. The UN defines peacekeeping as: "A technique designed to preserve the peace, however fragile, where fighting has been halted, and to assist in implementing agreements achieved by the peacemakers."

Most PK operations originate from the UN. Peacekeepers monitor peace processes in post-conflict areas and help ex-combatants implement the peace agreements that they signed. Its components are confidence building, power sharing, electoral support, strengthening the rule of law, and economic and social development. Peacekeepers can include soldiers, local police, and civilian personnel working in unison.

The UN Security Council may also authorize regional organizations such as NATO, the Economic Community of West African States, or a coalition of countries to participate in peacekeeping activities.

In some cases, the peacekeepers remain members of their original armed force and may exhibit no feature which indicates that they are under the UN's control. Force during PK is usually limited to self-defense. If the conflicting parties withdraw their consent, the PK forces may be withdrawn and PE forces may be used.

Peace enforcement (PE) is the practice of ensuring peace in an area or region. It involves the use or threat of use of force to compel compliance with resolutions and sanctions designed to maintain peace and order. It's part of a three component operation which exists between peacekeeping and peacemaking, and is considered to be the midpoint regarding the use of force.

PE is defined by the UN as: "The application, with the authorization of the Security Council, of a range of coercive measures, including the use of military force. Such actions are authorized to restore international peace and security in situations where the Security Council has determined the existence of a threat to the peace, breach of the peace or act of aggression."

The US Army describes it as, "the application of military force or the threat of its use, normally pursuant to international authorization, to compel compliance with generally accepted resolutions or sanctions."

It is an approach used to maintain an existing ceasefire or truce. And according to the UN's definition, it seems that it can also be used more generally to address other threats to international peace. The purpose of PE is to restore peace and order so that PB can succeed.

It may include combat actions such as the enforcement of sanctions and exclusion zones, protection of personnel conducting foreign humanitarian assistance (FHA), restoration of order, and the forcible separation of belligerents.

PE is authorized by the UN Security Council to apply a range of coercive measures, including military force to restore international peace and security in situations where the council has determined that a threat to peace or a breach of an existing ceasefire exists.

The council can use regional organizations and agencies under its authority for PE operations, such as NATO, the Economic Community of West African States, or a coalition of countries. PE also relies on the working relationship with the local civilian population.[4]

Low-Intensity Conflict

Low-intensity conflict (LIC) is a political-military confrontation that takes place between states or groups below what is considered to be conventional warfare. LIC is a protracted struggle of competing principles and ideologies, and often occurs during revolutions and counterrevolutions.

Its methods of attack include combinations of PsyOp and directed-energy weapons. The term LIC is being phased out and irregular warfare (IW) is considered by some to be the current proper term. Low-intensity conflict (LIC) is similar to unconventional warfare (UW).[5]

Irregular Warfare

Irregular warfare (IW) consists of violent, low visibility, clandestine struggles between a country and its internal enemies. The Air Force Doctrine Document, *Irregular Warfare* defines it as: "a violent struggle among state and non-state actors for legitimacy and influence over the relevant populations."

IW favors indirect approaches, though it may employ the full range of military and other capabilities to seek asymmetric approaches in order to erode an adversary's power, influence, and will. Some of these clandestine conflicts originate from the United Nations. The nation where they take place is called the host nation (HN).

These are global, inter-agency, political struggles that take place among the civilian population, where the rulers of a HN use its civilian population as irregular forces against internal enemies. These conflicts may last years or decades, and reach down to the lowest tactical level.

"IW is about winning a war of ideas and perception," says the US Marine Corps in its *Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare* article. "Its battles are fought amongst the people and its outcomes are determined by the perceptions and support of the people." "Ultimately," adds the US Army, "IW is a political struggle with violent and nonviolent components ... for control or influence over and the support of a relevant population."

IW is used across the full spectrum of warfare. Its uses include but are not limited to: foreign internal defense, counterterrorism, terrorism, unconventional warfare, and stability and security operations. One of IW's primary uses is for counterinsurgency (COIN), which attempts to "maintain the current system against an internal threat," according to the US Air Force.

Low visibility, covert operations are used to destroy forces threatening the security of the population. The foundation of IW is for the political influence of the HN's civilian population. Therefore, it is essential that the conflict is perceived as legitimate in the eyes of the population.

---

4   Although there are no specific references to political war, isolation, or the destruction of the enemy's will in the PO sources that I've been able to locate, the Department of the Army's *Peace Operations* manual of December 30, 1994, says that PO is the same as MOOTW, which means it is a political war which uses isolation as a tactic. Furthermore, because MOOTW is the same as IW which includes the destruction of the enemy's will, according to the August 2006 *Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare article*, by the US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, this characteristic is present. So PO has all of the shared characteristics.

5   The August 2006 *Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare* article, by the US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, says that the following are alike: low-intensity conflict (LIC), irregular warfare (IW), military operations other than war (MOOTW), unconventional warfare (UW), and asymmetric warfare (AW). Therefore, by association, LIC has all of the shared characteristics.

Although IW is a violent struggle, this doesn't necessarily include weapons or the use of physical force. And although it will use full military capabilities, it favors indirect approaches such as subversion, coercion, attrition, and exhaustion to erode an adversary's will. This is achieved by, "undermining an enemy's popular support and compelling him to quit, collapse, or sink into irrelevance," explained the US Marine Corps. To help accomplish this, the military uses the civilian population and US government agencies.

Potential enemies are those who use the internet and IO campaigns to undermine the legitimacy of a government for cultural, political, economic, or religious motives. The enemies are state and nonstate actors, as well as those labeled political, religious, or ethnic extremists. Others are irregular adversaries who use local grievances to portray the US as the source of local and global problems.

According to the Department of Defense's *Irregular Warfare* document, if you are trying to influence the population in a manner which does not support the interests of the US or its allies, you are an adversary. Presumably, this is because the appearance of legitimacy is a necessity for this type of conflict. IW, says the US Army, requires that the government is perceived to be legitimate in the eyes of the population.

These global operations are composed of the police, military, intelligence agencies, and civilian security forces of the HN, as well as the private sector, which includes stores, businesses, and restaurants. It also includes NGOs and PVOs.

It uses a C4ISR, with an "all source" fusion process, including space-based surveillance and satellite communication (SATCOM), which allows forces to communicate and move quickly. According to the US Air Force, success depends on building relationships and partnerships at the local level. To recruit a HN's indigenous population, social scientists and anthropologist are used.

The MNF has established intelligence networks consisting of civilian security forces in HNs all over the planet. This has been called a *civilian defense network, informant network, civilian security network*, and a variety of other names.

In their *Irregular Warfare* document, the Department of Defense revealed, "the intelligence community will establish persistent, long-duration intelligence networks that focus on the populations, governments, traditional political authorities, and security forces at the national and sub-national levels in all priority countries."

These operations are being used increasingly to defend US interests around the planet. They will be waged in any country, even without its approval, including denied, ungoverned, or under-governed areas, which provide a potential sanctuary for nonstate actors, according to the Department of Defense.

"Waging protracted IW depends on building global capability and capacity," described the US Army, and added, "Combined IW will require the joint force to establish a long-term sustained presence in numerous countries."

IW is also used to conceal US involvement in a conflict. This means that while the military and law enforcement agencies of the HN are directing these civilian security forces to destroy internal political threats, they can maintain plausible deniability.

Specific attrition-based tactics which are used to erode the will of the enemy include: diplomatic, military, and law enforcement actions, economic/financial, informational, political and civic actions (civil-military operations), methods to discredit, PsyOp, NLW, and physical and psychological isolation.

Threats and intimidation are also used against an adversary and their supporters. The attrition-based approach uses these tactics in combination by a rotation of forces which apply pressure and ensure continuity of effort.

Terrorism will be used by the MNF force if necessary. Terrorism is an act of violence against a civilian population to achieve a political objective. This means a HN government, including the US, will carry out large-scale acts of violence against its own population to achieve political objectives.[6]

Unconventional Warfare

The US Army's *Unconventional Warfare* manual defines unconventional warfare (UW) as: "Operations conducted by, with, or through irregular forces in support of a resistance movement, an insurgency, or conventional military operations."

It further describes: "UW must be conducted by, with, or through surrogates; and such surrogates must be irregular forces." These irregular forces include a significant portion of the HN's civilian population, which is arranged against internal adversaries.

UW includes a wide spectrum of military operations of a protracted nature, including but not limited to, guerrilla warfare, subversion, sabotage, intelligence activities, unconventional assisted recovery, evasion and escape, and stability operations. These operations may take place in diplomatically sensitive areas. They may be low-visibility, covert, and clandestine in nature.

These are interagency, international operations using the police, military, civilian population, and NGOs of a HN. The US Army refers to this force as the interagency. Compartmentalization is often used in this structure for security reasons, and only certain personnel are aware of all activities during the planning and execution stages.

The interagency uses multiple interrelated intelligence operations. Information gathered on an adversary includes: dispositions, strategies, tactics, intents, objectives, strengths, weaknesses, values, capabilities, and critical vulnerabilities.

This information is derived from many sources, and is shared across the interagency with autonomous synchronization tools. The continuous nature of this process allows for profile-specific attacks. The US Army explained it this way: "The intelligence process is comprised of a wide variety of interrelated intelligence operations. … Evaluation of intelligence operations, activities, and products is continuous."

"Based on these evaluations and the resulting feedback," it continued, "remedial actions should be initiated, as required, to improve the performance of intelligence operations and the overall functioning of the intelligence process."

Although these are military operations, the military itself does not participate in this warfare on the tactical level. Instead it uses a HN's civilian population as surrogate (stand-in) forces, and directs them from behind the scenes. The US Army says that in order to accomplish the recruitment of a HN's population, the culture, taboos, beliefs, customs, history, goals, ethnic composition, and expectations of the civilian population must be studied and exploited. It refers to these unarmed civilian forces as the *mass base,* the *general population,* and *society at large.*

This includes not only a large portion of the civilian population, but the private sector such as stores, businesses, and restaurants. What they've basically described is the recruitment of all significant components of a society. Additionally, the US Army is obviously not talking about arming a major portion of a HN, but using them to carry out acts which support the cause.

As we've learned, PsyOp is a type of communication (often violent), transmitted using themes which contain a series of products designed to get the attention of the TA. Civilians are playing an active role in PsyOp. Because a large portion of the population is to be recruited, this means that a considerable number of people can be used as *actors* to conduct PsyActs at the direction of the DOD. "The primary value of the mass base to UW operations," says the US Army, is a matter of "marshalling population groups to act in specific ways that support the overall UW campaign."

---

6   Although the IW sources provided make no specific reference to the use of the private sector, because it uses CMO the private sector is included. Also the August 2006 *Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare* article by the US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, says that it is similar to MOOTW and LIC. So it has all of the shared characteristics.

However, due to the compartmentalization inherent in this type of warfare, the individuals and groups within the mass base may be unaware of the meaning of the acts which they are asked to carry out. "These groups may be witting or unwitting of the UW nature of the operations or activities in which they are utilized."

One example of this compartmentalization was revealed in an Air Force Doctrine document entitled, *Military Operations Other Than War*, released on October 5, 1996, where they explained that routine flights over the location of a military target are used to establish physical presence and demonstrate resolve during show of force operations (SOFO). They also mentioned that the pilots of these planes would be told that they were conducting training missions, indicating that they would not be aware of the SOFO which they were engaged in.

The interagency force will seek out law-abiding adversaries in all countries that may be harboring them. This includes ungoverned and undergoverned areas in both friendly and belligerent states. In order to do this, it must appear to be legitimate. "Without recognized legitimacy," explained the US Army, "military operations do not receive the support of the indigenous population, the U.S. population, or the international community." They continued, "US law enforcement entities must cooperate with each other, international partners, and the DOD to maximize intelligence and legitimacy."

Therefore, anyone attempting to raise awareness regarding an issue that is detrimental to US interests may be labeled an adversary. "In both the foreign and domestic arenas … UW planners should continuously monitor adversary attempts to deliberately mislead foreign and domestic audiences."

A combination of offensive and defensive cooperative activities and coercive actions are used against adversaries and their supporters. They include NLW and PsyOp. All instruments of US national power is used against "elusive opponents" and their supporters. Also, financial incentives (bribes) will be given to interagency allies for their cooperation in a campaign against an adversary.[7]

Asymmetric Warfare

The *Defining Asymmetric Warfare* report of September 2006, which appeared in the *Land Warfare Papers*, defines asymmetric warfare (AW) in the following way: "Asymmetric approaches are attempts to circumvent or undermine U.S. strengths while exploiting U.S. weaknesses using methods that differ significantly from the United States' expected method of operations."

AW is an interagency, international operation, which takes place among the civilian population. It includes the military, federal agencies, local law enforcement, and NGOs, who form an alliance with a HN's civilian population.

The US Army refers to this as *population-centric war* because the people are used as surrogate forces. AW relies heavily on the civilian population which is recruited by the military planners who exploit their values and beliefs. Potential enemies include terrorists, insurgents, nonstate actors, "disruptive threats," and those conducting information operations (IO). "An insurgent's greatest asset is an idea," announced the US Army.

They then explained how information outlets, including the internet, are used by the enemy to spread lies. "The enemy wages information warfare by issuing propaganda, creating lies and developing conspiracies," they warned. On April 09, 2002, in their *Information Operations and Asymmetric Warfare* article, the US Army War College described that in an asymmetric environment current and future threats must be identified. One solution to these threats is electronic warfare.

---

7   Although the UW sources provided make no specific reference to the use of the private sector, because it uses CMO the private sector is included. So it has all of the shared characteristics.

The attrition-based approach focuses on the erosion of the enemies will, with an emphasis on PsyOp. It uses NLW tactics and technologies at all levels of warfare (strategic, operational, tactical), and across the full spectrum of military operations. The NLW and PsyOp attacks against such enemies will be to shock or confuse them, limit their freedom, and erode their will. Methods to wear them down financially are also used.[8]

Civil-Military Operations

The *Peace Operations* publication by the Joint Chiefs, describes civil-military operations (CMO) in this manner: "Those military operations conducted by civil affairs forces that enhance the relationship between military forces and civil authorities in localities where military forces are present; require coordination with other interagency organizations, intergovernmental organizations, nongovernmental organizations, indigenous population and institutions, and the private sector."

The purpose of CMO is to consolidate the efforts of the military and civilian population to achieve military objectives. On the strategic level one of its goals is global development and stability. Tactical level challenges include promoting the legitimacy of the cause among the civilian population.

It is used across the full spectrum of warfare and takes place in friendly, neutral, or hostile areas. Potential uses include: ethnic, religious, cultural, and socioeconomic differences, as well as COIN, security assistance, stability operations, peace operations, and other uses.

CMO are interagency and global in nature. In the US it is used as part of homeland security. CMO consist of a combined effort between a HN's government agencies, NGOs, and civilian population, who join forces to address the HN's domestic threats. Domestically, this force has been called the *interagency*; internationally it's called the *multinational force (MNF)*.

The HN provides civil and military assistance to the force in the form of materials, facilities, services, administrative support, and civil logistic resources. A specially trained group of military personnel within a civil affairs (CA) unit interacts with the public during CMO. The unit participates in planning at the operational and tactical levels.

Liaison officers establish close, continuous, and physical communications between private sector organizations, NGOs, the interagency/MNF. This is accomplished using commercial telecommunications networks, military communications systems, satellites and radars. Ideas are shared and activities are directed using these systems.

CMO is coordinated with the United Nations. A relationship is established between a representative of the HN and the UN Department of Peacekeeping Operations (UNDPKO). The representative is complicit in matters relevant to the UN and its activities, including the support of *Action with Respect to Threats to the Peace*, *Breaches of the Peace*, and *Acts of Aggression*, which are listed in chapter VII of the UN charter.

A CMOC is established in the civilian sector for exchanging ideas. It may be a physical meeting place or virtual one through online networks. Daily meetings are attended by representatives of the military, NGOs, the private sector, and local officials. Discussions at these meetings may include any ongoing campaigns against domestic threats in the area of operation. NATO refers to this as a *civil-military cooperation center (CIMIC)*.

The interagency uses military and nonmilitary instruments of power, including a HN's civilian population to address its domestic threats. "At the strategic, operational and tactical levels and across the full range of military operations," explained the Joint Publication, "civil-military operations (CMO) are a primary military instrument to synchronize military and nonmilitary instruments of national power, particularly in support of … operations dealing with asymmetrical and irregular threats."

---

8   Because AW uses the attrition-based approach it can be considered a protracted struggle. There are no specific references in the AW documentation that I've been able to observe regarding, synchronization, isolation, perceived legitimacy, or political war. However, according to the US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center article, *Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare*, of August 2006, it is the same as IW and MOOTW. Therefore, it has all of the shared characteristics.

In addition to using the civilian population and private sector, the military will temporarily take over the functions of the local government to address these threats. This takeover has been described as the "comprehensive use" of intergovernmental, regional, national, local governmental, nongovernmental, and private sector organizations.

These takeovers may be performed in the absence of any other military activity. In other words, this can be done during times of peace, and may not necessarily include a visible military presence. The operations may be performed by designated civil affairs units, military forces, or a combination.

After dealing with irregular threats, the military hands control of the organization back over to its civilian managers. The military takeover of operations, which are normally the responsibility of civilian authorities and organizations, says the NATO *Civil-Military Co-operation* document, is conducted for as short a period as possible.

During the occupation, the tactics used against irregular threats may include civic actions (use of civilian forces) and/or PsyOp, which is a "vital" part of CMO. CMO in general seeks to remove the influence that an adversary has on a population.[9]

Fourth Generation Warfare (4GW)

Fourth generation warfare (4GW) is a type of political war which includes civilians and the military. The term was first described in a 1989 *Marine Corps Gazette* article called, *The Changing Face of War: Into the Fourth Generation*. The article was written by Lieutenant Colonel Gary I. Wilson (USMCR), William S. Lind, Colonel Keith Nightengale (USA), Captain John F. Schmitt (USMC), and Colonel Joseph W. Sutton (USA).

The theory suggests that states no longer have the exclusive right to conduct conflict. Nonstate actors (including individuals and groups) will be increasingly at war with states. 4GW includes protracted struggles fought among the civilian population using military, economic, social, and political instruments of power. 4GW occurs globally. According to 4GW proponents, warfare has evolved through four generations since 1648.

The first generation began in 1648 with the Treaty of Westphalia which ended the 30 Years War. It lasted until about 1860, and peaked during the Napoleonic Wars in the early 1800s. It grew out of the invention of gunpowder, as well as Europe's political, social, and economic developments due to the emergence from feudalism.

It consisted of mass armies armed with smoothbore muskets, using line and column tactics, adjusted for the available technology of the time. The battles were formal. The battlefield was orderly. The approach was linear. It emphasized a military culture of order, including practices which reinforced this order, such as uniforms, saluting, drills, ceremonies, graduation ranks, etc. Examples of it include the American Civil War and the Napoleonic Wars. It was the beginning of the state's monopoly on organized violence.

Second Generation Warfare emerged out of technological improvements from the Industrial Revolution. It was developed by France as a solution to destroying a larger force. It was based on fire and movement, with an emphasis on indirect artillery fire. It still used an attrition-style, linear approach, with heavy firepower. It preserved the military culture of order, such as rules, processes, procedures, discipline, and obedience. It peaked during WWI, and was used by America, Britain and France during this time. America used it in Vietnam, and still uses it as the primary method for conducting warfare, as seen in Afghanistan and Iraq.

---

9   There are no specific references to the use of NLW, protracted struggle, or isolation in the CMO sources provided. However, the US Army's *Field Manual Operations* of February 27, 2008 mentions the use of "nonlethal" actions by soldiers working among the civilian population. Also there are multiple references to "nonlethal activities" used during CMO in the Army's *Civil Affairs Operations* manual of September 2006. So the only missing shared characteristics would be isolation, protracted struggle, and possibly NLW.

Third Generation Warfare was developed in Germany in 1918. It was first used when Germany invaded Poland in 1939, and peaked during the Cold War. It was Germany's response to the mass firepower of the larger industrialized nations. Although there were technological improvements, this generation of warfare was developed primarily by new ideas.

It was nonlinear and did not rely on attrition. Instead, it was based on maneuver, speed, surprise, and the mental and physical dislocation of enemy forces. The method consisted of infiltrating the enemy front line, moving into the rear, and collapsing them from the rear forward. This maneuver-based warfare has been called the *blitzkrieg*.

Fourth generation warfare (4GW) is the most radical change in warfare since the beginning of 1GW in 1648. It ends the state's dominance over the right to wage war. It is a type of *information war* waged by a state or other entity. When used by an independent entity, it often involves an insurgent group or nonstate actor (NSA) trying to implement their own government or reestablish an old one over a current ruling system.

It consists of violent and nonviolent methods used across the political, economic, social, and military spectrum. Violent examples include the slave uprising under Spartacus, Hezbollah, or the Liberation Tigers of Tamil Eelam (LTTE). Nonviolent examples include methods used by Mohandis K. Gandhi against the British crown in South Africa and India, and Martin Luther King Jr. in the American south. William S. Lind described 4GW as, "a contest for legitimacy between the state and a wide variety of non-state primary loyalties."

4GW has also been portrayed as an evolved form of insurgency. The *Fourth Generation War* manual published by the Imperial and Royal Austro-Hungarian Marine Corps, says it is, "a political, social and moral revolution." One of its goals is to influence the enemy's decisionmaking process. Another objective is the psychological collapse of the enemy, which is accomplished using PsyOp.

Forces on the battlefield become more dispersed with each new generation. 4GW includes all of society. It is an interagency, international operation, that, when used by a government consists of small, dispersed, agile forces, with little or no reliance on centralized logistics. These forces have been referred to as small independent action forces (SIAF), as well as 4GW Forces. They essentially, hunt down and neutralize a nation's irregular threats using PsyOp and directed-energy weapons.

According to the theory, 4GW Forces would act on mission orders when neutralizing threats that exist among the civilian population. These targets are mostly civilian rather than military. The forces are allegedly equipped with advanced surveillance technology which has artificial intelligence.

Because 4GW uses the indigenous population as forces it must be perceived as legitimate. Like other forms of warfare, it seeks to create an alliance between a HN's civilian population and its military in order to destroy the nation's internal enemies. In his *Modern War Symposium* articles, William S. Lind, an expert on military affairs, and an author of the original article on 4GW that appeared in the *Marine Corps Gazette*, advocated the creation of a global volunteer citizen militia.

According to Lind and his symposium associates, the militia would not be under the control of federal governments. This global militia would function in each neighborhood. However, he uses terms which are already associated with federally-run informant programs, such as Neighborhood Watch, Community Policing, and Police Corps. This appears to be an attempt to identify the federal programs with militias.

"Of course," says Lind, "they would perform their most important 4GW function, Neighborhood Watch, all the time." Basically he's suggesting that the informant networks, which already exist, should be used in 4GW. According to Lind, it would be used globally to maintain domestic order.

4GW will have no definable battlefields or fronts, and military and civilian forces will be combined. These combined forces will have the ability to concentrate suddenly from very wide dispersion. RAND refers to this as the battleswarm.

PsyOp and directed-energy weapons will be the dominant methods used for "collapsing the enemy internally," according to the *Gazette*. Isolation of the enemy is another important tactic. Political, social, and military actions will also be used to erode an enemy's will.

"Directed energy may permit small elements to destroy targets they could not attack with conventional energy weapons," suggested the *Gazette*. Psychological operations are to become the dominant operational and strategic weapon. 4GW is not the same as terrorism, but terrorists may use these methods. Other enemies of 4GW include those labeled insurgents, adversaries, nonstate actors, "cells of fanatics," and others.

Because legitimacy must be perceived by the indigenous population whose support and participation is required by a state conducing 4GW, anyone disseminating information contrary to a state's interests may become an enemy.

4GW adversaries will be adept at manipulating the media to alter domestic and world opinion, the *Gazette* informs us. "Insurgents," agreed Colonel T. X. Hammes, USMC, "build their plans around a strategic communications campaign designed to shift their enemy's view of the world." And, he added, "The only medium that can change a person's mind is information."

Likewise, *Defense and National Interest* mentioned that drastic measures must be taken by all of the word's democracies to find and destroy "fanatics" who are believed to be conducting 4GW, in its *Fourth-Generation Warfare is Here* article, that appeared in October of 2001. A state's 4GW targets will be primarily in the civilian sector. They will be selected and attacked to achieve not just military, but political and cultural objectives.

Other state enemies are those who value national sovereignty, which, according to some 4GW proponents, will no longer be used as a "facade" to allow individuals and groups to be sheltered in any country. Any entity that is perceived to be causing agitation will be identified and dealt with.

"New and in some instances very unpleasant scenarios must be put in place, announced *Defense and National Interest*. "The world's democracies must pool their resources to ferret out the cells of fanatics who supply the brains and the resources to conduct 4GW." According to *Defense and National Interest*, these small units will be led be incorruptible officers who are carefully selected for their imagination, moral character, courage, and dedication to democratic ideals.[10]

---

10 Unlike other types of warfare which have been described here, 4GW is a theory of warfare and not an actual DOD term. However, because of its underlying similarities and wide acceptance, it is treated as such. The September 2006 *Land Warfare Papers*, report, *Defining Asymmetric Warfare*, by David L. Buffaloe, suggests that 4GW is the same MOOTW, IW, and AW, so it can be considered to exhibit all of the shared characteristics. I've noticed no exact date for the beginning of 4GW. It appears to have started sometime after WWII. Also, the historical examples sited in *Wikipedia*, which precede 4GW's emergence, leads me to conclude that it has always existed alongside more prominent forms of warfare.

Sources

Volume I

Revolution in Warfare

Basic Theory

The new weapons and tactics: *War And Anti-War: Survival at the Dawn of the 21st Century, Alvin and Heidi Toffler, (Little Brown Books, 1993)*

throughout history warfare has developed: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

There are two types of RMAs: *In Athena's Camp: Preparing for Conflict in the Information Age, John Arquilla, David Ronfeldt, (RAND Corporation, 1997); War And Anti-War, Alvin and Heidi Toffler; Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*

Another type, which some suggest: *The E-Bomb: How America's New Directed Energy Weapons Will Change the Way Future Wars will be Fought, Doug Beason, PhD, (Da Capo Press, 2005); Ibid (Toffler)*

Warfare is said by some: *Ibid*

using a spear on horseback: *Effects Based Operations, Edward A. Smith; The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel; Ibid (Toffler)*

the industrial revolution: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

invention of ICBMs: *Ibid*

two great military revolutions: *War And Anti-War, Toffler*

Revolutions, generally speaking: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

A true military revolution occurs only: *War And Anti-War, Toffler*

It is the biggest in our planet's history: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

abolishment of the nation-state: *War And Anti-War, Toffler; Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

are said to be at the center of this revolution: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel; United States Air Force, School of Advanced Military Studies, United States Army Command and General Staff College, Directed Energy Weapons: Do We Have a Game Plan? (Monograph, AY 03-04), Major Timothy J. Lincoln*

Wave Theory

Heidi has been: *Biography of Alvin And Heidi Toffler, www.alvintoffler.net*

In the early 1980s Alvin's book: *War And Anti-War, Toffler*

According to Alvin Toffler's wave theory: *The Third Wave, Alvin Toffler, (William Morrow & Company, Inc., 1980)*

rise of a new civilization: *Ibid*

The First Wave occurred: *War And Anti-War, Toffler*

Prior to the First Wave: *The Third Wave, Alvin Toffler*

the Second Wave has already revolutionized: *Ibid*

The Third Wave began: *War And Anti-War, Toffler; Ibid*

It has been suggested that the industrialized: *War And Anti-War, Toffler*

By conquering these lands: *Ibid*

The Second Wave is instructive: *The Third Wave, Alvin Toffler*

Introduction to the New War

Fundamental changes: *US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley; Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, The "Soft Kill" Fallacy: The Idea of "Non-Lethal Weapons" is Politically Attractive and Purposively Misleading, September 1, 1994, Steven Aftergood*

It includes autonomous robots: *War And Anti-War, Toffler; US Army, Military Review, Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible: Looking Ahead to Military Biotechnology, July-August 2005, Guo Ji-wei, Xue-sen Yang*

It also consists of sophisticated: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

In this new type of warfare: *War And Anti-War, Toffler; US Army, Military Review, Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible, Guo Ji-wei, Xue-sen Yang; In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

complex covert wars of long-duration: *Department of Defense, Quadrennial Defense Review Report, February 2006*

These small units: *Marine Corps Gazette, The Changing Face of War: Into the Fourth Generation, October 1989, William S. Lind, Colonel Keith Nightengale (USA), Captain John F. Schmitt (USMC), Colonel Joseph W. Sutton (USA), Lieutenant Colonel Gary I. Wilson (USMCR); Military Response to Fourth Generation Warfare in Afghanistan, May 5, 2002, Greg Wilcox, Gary I. Wilson*

completely new arsenal of weapons: *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era, Zbigniew Brzezinski, (Penguin Books, 1970)*

Some of this technology: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

Concealed Political Control

observed that a revolution in military: *Omega Research Foundation, Report for the European Parliament, An Appraisal Of The Technologies Of Political Control, September 1998*

The technology of political control includes: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice, (First Edition Penguin Books, 1977)*

was to be blended into the existing political conditions: *Ibid*

Interestingly, in their influential article: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

The Other World

Introduction to Psychopathy

Psychopathy is a character deficiency: *Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley, (C.V. Mosby Co., 1941, 1982); Without Conscience: The Disturbing World of the Psychopaths Among Us, Dr. Robert D. Hare, (Simon and Schuster Inc, 1993)*

It is present in about 4%: *The Sociopath Next Door: The Ruthless Versus the Rest of Us, Martha Stout, PhD, (Broadway Books, 2005)*

Other terms that have: *Ibid*

Those who believe the deficiency: *The Psychopath: Emotion and the Brain, James Blair, Karina Blair, Derek Mitchell, (Blackwell Publishing, 2005); Snakes in Suits: When Psychopaths go to Work, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD, (Harper Collins Publishers, 2006)*

It is important to note: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*

A conscience has been described: *Conscience, wikipedia.org/wiki/Conscience; Conscience, Merriam-webster.com/dictionary/conscience*
It can be viewed as a result: *Ibid*

Cause

The exact cause of psychopathy: *Without Conscience, Dr. Robert D. Hare; Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD; The Psychopath, James Blair, Karina Blair, Derek Mitchell*
It is usually untreatable: *People of the Lie: The Hope for Healing Human Evil, Dr. M. Scott Peck, (Touchstone, January 1998); Ibid (Babiak, Hare)*
There are social rules: *Emotional Vampires: Dealing with People Who Drain You, Albert J. Bernstein, PhD, (McGraw-Hill, 2001)*
having an empty hole: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*
these individuals do not have certain information: *Political Ponerology: A Science on the Nature of Evil Adjusted for Political Purposes, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski, (Red Pill Press, 2006)*
Beginning in infancy: *Ibid*
Upon this irregular substratum: *Ibid*
These events cause us to perform: *Ibid*
High-level emotions: *Ibid*
The combination of emotions: *Conscience, wikipedia.org/wiki/Conscience; Conscience, Merriam-webster.com/dictionary/conscience; Positive Disintegration, wikipedia.org/wiki/Positive_Disintegration; Ibid*
due to the emotional deficiency: *Ibid (Lobaczewski)*

Profile

completely aware of being different: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*
They all exhibit antisocial or aggressive: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; Ibid*
their lives are reduced to an endless game of attempted: *Ibid (Stout)*
Psychopaths view the world much differently: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
Psychopaths see themselves as superior: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD; Ibid*
They understand that they live in a separate world: *Ibid (Lobaczewski)*
Because they do not have access to certain: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD; Ibid*
In addition to seeing themselves as superior: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; Ibid (Lobaczewski)*
They know the difference between right and wrong: *Ibid*
Psychopaths construct their separate worldview: *Ibid (Lobaczewski)*
A conscience allows us to determine: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; Conscience, wikipedia.org/wiki/Conscience; Conscience, Merriam-webster.com/dictionary/conscience*
exist in a primarily cognitive world: *Without Conscience, Dr. Robert D. Hare; Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley; The Psychopath, James Blair, Karina Blair, Derek Mitchell*
Psychopaths do experience primitive emotions: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD; The Psychopathic Mind: Origins, Dynamics, and Treatment, Dr. J. Reid Meloy, (Jason Aronson Inc., 1988)*
they are fully aware that most people have them: *Ibid (Babiak, Hare)*
Measured by standardized tests: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
On average they are not as goal: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*
function fine as lawyers, doctors, psychiatrists: *Without Conscience, Dr. Robert D. Hare; Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley*

Although they may attain positions: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; The Psychopath's Brain, Renato M.E. Sabbatini, PhD*

Psychopaths have tremendous egos: *Without Conscience, Dr. Robert D. Hare; Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley*

The ego has been described: *Ego, Id, wikipedia.org/wiki/Id,_ego,_and_super-ego#Ego; Ego, dictionary.reference.com/browse/ego*

Psychopaths exhibit egoism: *Egotism, dictionary.reference.com/browse/egotism?db=luna; Egoism, dictionary.reference.com/browse/egoism*

Psychopaths have a need for complete power: *Without Conscience, Dr. Robert D. Hare; Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley*

All exhibit overt or covert: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*

They believe they are entitled: *Ibid*

They have an ability to rationalize: *In Sheep's Clothing: Understanding and Dealing with Manipulative People, George K. Simon, Jr., PhD, (A.J. Christopher & Co., First Printing 1996, 2008); The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*

Psychopaths exhibit poor behavior controls: *North Carolina Wesleyan College, Antisocial Personality, Sociopathy, and Psychopathy, www.faculty.ncwc.edu; California Institute of Technology, Division of the Humanities and Social Sciences, Profile of the Sociopath, www.hss.caltech.edu*

They are consistently irresponsible: *Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley; Without Conscience, Dr. Robert D. Hare*

Psychopaths are deceitful and manipulative: *Emotional Vampires: Dealing with People Who Drain You, Albert J. Bernstein, PhD; Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*

Their ability to lie with absolute impunity: *Ibid (Babiak, Hare)*

When most people lie: *Emotional Vampires, Albert J. Bernstein, PhD; In Sheep's Clothing, George K. Simon, Jr., PhD*

they will lie when they stand nothing to gain of apparent value: *Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley; Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*

Psychopaths require considerable excitement : *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; Ibid (Babiak, Hare)*

Psychopaths learn to recognize each other: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski; Ibid (Babiak, Hare)*

They have a special type of insight: *Ibid*

Their impression management skills: *Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley*

They are usually entertaining: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD; Ibid*

excellent communication skills: *Ibid (Babiak, Hare)*

the messages are delivered in a confident manner: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; Ibid*

some of the less intelligent ones: *Ibid (Babiak, Hare)*

their attacks are usually concealed: *Mask of Sanity, Dr. Hervey Milton Cleckley; Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski; The Psychopathic Mind, Dr. J. Reid Meloy*

social chameleons and invisible human predators: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*

Their special knowledge, however, loses: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*

suffer from a type of unconscious inferiority complex: *The Psychopathic Mind, Dr. J. Reid Meloy*

hyperactive need to achieve power: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*

In his book, People of the Lie: *People of the Lie, Dr. M. Scott Peck*

Motivated by these internal anxieties: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*

Realizing the immaturity of these antisocial: *Emotional Vampires, Albert J. Bernstein, PhD*

Most psychopaths don't technically break the law: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski; Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*
They are typically not held accountable: *Ibid (Lobaczewski)*
Psychopaths need frequent amusement: *The Psychopathic Mind, Dr. J. Reid Meloy; The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*
Many psychopaths focus on a single person: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*
ego maintenance: *The Psychopathic Mind, Dr. J. Reid Meloy*
Drs. Paul Babiak and Robert Hare provide: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*
existential vengeance: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*
Upon this impression, they create a fictitious: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*
Because psychopaths view people as objects: *Ibid*
Some specific traits exhibited: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*
Dr. Meloy, who describes psychopaths: *The Psychopathic Mind, Dr. J. Reid Meloy*
In addition, psychopaths will preemptively attack: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
purification process for the psychopath: *The Psychopathic Mind, Dr. J. Reid Meloy*
Most people who are attacked by these characters: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
Although psychopaths are able to keep up their: *Snakes in Suits, Paul Babiak, PhD, Robert D. Hare, PhD*
it requires much mental energy for them: *Ibid*

Worldviews

Psychopaths exist in their own world: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
The common worldview of the normal person: *Ibid*
A worldview is a kind of world perception: *World View, wikipedia.org/wiki/World_view*
While instincts and other influences: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
It is a synthesis of the societal concepts of various: *Ibid*
Our civilization was insufficiently resistant to evil: *Ibid*

Summary

single most meaningful characteristic: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*
Because a conscience and high-level emotions: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski; Psychology Today Magazine, This Charming Psychopath: How to Spot Social Predators Before They Attack, May/June 1999, Robert Hare*

Dictatorship Creation

Psychopathy's Role

Researchers have mentioned that throughout: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*
We now have information which we lacked: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
In any society during any time period: *Ibid*
If they have access to tremendous wealth: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD; Ibid*
They are prepared to fight, suffer, and die: *Ibid (Lobaczewski)*

Overthrows

An overthrow is the rapid seizure: *The Anti-Coup, Gene Sharp, Bruce Jenkins*
With an infiltration, the conspirators have: *Civilian Resistance as a National Defense, Adam Roberts*
At first, the group only occupies: *The Anti-Coup, Gene Sharp, Bruce Jenkins; Ibid*
The usurpers usually like to maintain order: *Ibid (Sharp, Jenkins)*

During the takeover, people: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski; Civilian Resistance as a National Defense, Adam Roberts*
Gradually, all of the offices of government: *Ibid (Roberts)*
At some point after the organization: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
The attributes of a psychopathic state: *Ibid*
One beneficial characteristic of a free society: *From Dictatorship to Democracy: A Conceptual Framework for Liberation, Gene Sharp*
NGOs have great political: *Civilian Resistance as a National Defense, Adam Roberts; Ibid*
A combination of seemingly beneficial ideas: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
An ideology is a set of ideas regarding goals: *Ideology, wikipedia.org/wiki/Ideology*
The ideology used by the group: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski; The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*
All leadership positions in a pathocracy: *Ibid (Lobaczewski)*
The regime seeks complete submission: *Civilian Resistance as a National Defense, Adam Roberts*
This too is made possible by the ideology: *The Sociopath Next Door, Martha Stout, PhD*
Indoctrination through mind-control: *Civilian Resistance as a National Defense, Adam Roberts*
To recruit other psychopaths: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*
Because the pathocracy is forever threatened: *Ibid*
An external war allows the psychopaths: *Civilian Resistance as a National Defense, Adam Roberts; Ibid*
As the regime solidifies: *Ibid (Lobaczewski)*
Terror is a standard trait: *Civilian Resistance as a National Defense, Adam Roberts*

The Groups Facilitating the Revolution

Introduction

moral and psychological disease: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*

Round Table

In February of 1891 a group of wealthy: *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in our Time, Professor Carroll Quigley, (The Macmillan Company, 1966)*
Members of this group would: *The Anglo-American Establishment, Professor Carroll Quigley, (New York: Books in Focus, 1981); Ibid*
The funding for this group: *Ibid (Tragedy and Hope)*
The purpose of the group was: *A Century of War: Anglo-American Oil Politics and the New World Order, William Engdahl, (Pluto Press, October 2004)*
A portion of Rhodes' fortune: *New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies, William T. Still, (Huntington House Publishers, January 1990); The Anglo-American Establishment, Professor Carroll Quigley*
They were constantly harping on lessons: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*
They learned the dangers: *A Century of War, William Engdahl*
It was decided that military occupations: *Ibid*
They also decided it would be best: *The Anglo-American Establishment, Professor Carroll Quigley*
From 1884 to about 1915 this group: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*
The informal name given to the American: *Ibid*
The Eastern Establishment: *Ibid*

League of Nations

The Paris Peace Conference: *League of Nations, wikipedia.org/wiki/League_of_Nations; Paris Peace Conference, wikipedia.org/wiki/Paris_Peace_Conference,_1919*

A treaty known as the Treaty of Versailles: *New World Order, William T. Still*

An important consideration here: *Ibid*

Also at these meetings were American: *A Century of War, William Engdahl; The Anglo-American Establishment, Professor Carroll Quigley*

Round Table members such as Lord Milner: *Ibid (Quigley)*

Lord Milner signed the: *Ibid*

a method for the British and American elite to seize: *New World Order, William T. Still; A Century of War, William Engdahl*

Royal Institute for International Affairs

Beginning in 1919 the Round Table: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*

This meeting was attended: *A Century of War, William Engdahl: Ibid*

The name for the front: *The Anglo-American Establishment, Professor Carroll Quigley; Ibid (Quigley)*

They were formed around the existing: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*

Council on Foreign Relations

The Council on Foreign Relations (CFR): *The Shadows of Power: The Council on Foreign Relations and the American Decline, James Perloff, (Western Islands, November 1988)*

The founding president: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*

Some other early members: *The Shadows of Power, James Perloff; The Invisible Government, Dan Smoot, (Western Islands, June 1977); With No Apologies: The Personal and Political Memoirs of United States Senator Barry M. Goldwater, Senator Barry Goldwater, (Berkley, 1980)*

The CFR exerted control over public opinion: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*

It is made up of international bankers: *Who's Who Of The Elite: Members of the Bilderbergs, Council on Foreign Relations, & Trilateral Commission, Robert Gaylon Ross Sr., (RIE, January 2000)*

CFR members have included executives: *The Rockefeller File, Gary Allen, ('76 Press, 1st edition, June 1976)*

The CFR basically describes itself: *Who's Who Of The Elite, Robert Gaylon Ross Sr.*

Past funding for the CFR: *Rule by Secrecy: The Hidden History That Connects the Trilateral Commission, the Freemasons, and the Great Pyramids, Jim Marrs, (Harper Paperbacks, April 2001); Foundations: Their Power And Influence, Rene Wormser, (Covenent House Books, June 1993)*

When the core members of the CFR decide: *None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen, (Concord Press, 1971)*

It has been the source of some: *The Shadows of Power, James Perloff*

A September 1922 issue of its magazine: *New World Order, William T. Still*

Researchers have concluded that despite the appearance: *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler, Professor Antony C. Sutton, (Bloomfield Books December 1976); The Invisible Government, Dan Smoot*

The CFR has been described by the Reece Committee: *Foundations, Rene Wormser*

the CFR is a front for the Round Table: *The Anglo-American Establishment, Professor Carroll Quigley*

Tax-exempt Foundations

A congressional investigation: *Foundations, Rene Wormser*

It was initially created: *Ibid*

Supreme Court Justice Louis D. Brandeis: *Ibid*

Another attempt to investigate: *Ibid*
They should be investigated: *The Invisible Government, Dan Smoot; Ibid*
One more attempt to investigate tax-exempt foundations: *Ibid (Wormser)*
The committee also had an interest: *How the World Really Works, Alan B. Jones, (ABJ Press, 1996)*
The committee discovered the following: *Foundations, Rene Wormser*
The committee's research director Norman Dodd: *New World Order, William T. Still*
Dodd was also able to examine: *Ibid*
that the Ford Foundation was using its funds: *Ibid*
Unfortunately the committee was unable: *Foundations, Rene Wormser*
However, they did try to warn the public: Ibid
Congress learned that these wealthy interests: *Ibid*
witnesses were being harassed, placed under surveillance: *How the World Really Works, Alan B. Jones*

Communist Russia

a communist world community: *The Open Conspiracy, H.G. Wells, (1928)*
Professor Quigley mentioned: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*
The Bolshevik Revolution: *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler, Professor Antony C. Sutton; None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen; The Shadows of Power, James Perloff*
After the communists took power: *Ibid (Perloff; Allen)*
At the end of WWI the US Federal Reserve: *America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to the Order of Skull & Bones, Professor Antony C. Sutton, (Trine Day, April 2004); Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler, Professor Antony C. Sutton; New World Order, William T. Still*
In the late 1960s Rockefeller: *None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen; With No Apologies, Senator Barry M. Goldwater*
Wall Street continued to fund Communist Russia: *The Shadows of Power, James Perloff*
Communist Russia was built primarily: *None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen; With No Apologies, Senator Barry M. Goldwater*

The Nazi War Machine

Germany went into a recession: *A Century of War, William Engdahl*
The Dawes Plan, a solution for: *Ibid*
The British support for the Hitler Project: *Ibid*
On January 4, 1933 Adolph Hitler met: *None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen: Ibid*
Also at the meeting were John Foster Dulles: *Ibid*
John worked for J.P. Morgan: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*
Norman visited Berlin in May of 1934 to arrange: *A Century of War, William Engdahl*
The Nazi war machine was then built: *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler, Professor Antony C. Sutton*
The financial interests that built Nazi Germany: *Ibid*
More US companies that were involved: *The New Hampshire Gazette, Bush-Nazi Link Confirmed, Documents in National Archives Prove, October, 10, 2003, John Buchanan; The Guardian, How Bush's Grandfather Helped Hitler's Rise to Power, September 25 2004, Ben Aris, Duncan Campbell*
Max Warburg and his brother Paul Warburg: *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler, Professor Antony C. Sutton; The Shadows of Power, James Perloff; Rule by Secrecy, Jim Marrs*
International Business Machines (IBM): *The Guardian, IBM Dealt Directly with Holocaust Organisers, March, 29, 2002; The Village Voice, How IBM Helped Automate the Nazi Death Machine in Poland, March 27, 2002*
Nazi Germany's two largest tank producers: *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler, Professor Antony C. Sutton*

The building of Nazi Germany by Wall Street: *Ibid*
Fascist Italy was also funded by Wall Street: *A Century of War, William Engdahl*
In 1926 Italy's finance minister: *Ibid*

Fascist Plot

During his military career: *Maverick Marine: General Smedley D. Butler and the Contradictions of American Military History, Hans Schmidt, (The University Press of Kentucky, July 1998)*
For his service he was awarded: *Ibid*
General Butler went public in 1934: *The Plot to Seize the White House: The Shocking True Story of the Conspiracy to Overthrow FDR, Jules Archer, (Hawthorn Books, 1973)*
The coup was to be funded: *Ibid*
By this time Wall Street: *A Century of War, William Engdahl*
The plot was investigated: *The Plot to Seize the White House, Jules Archer*

A Central Bank as a Method of Control

Historically, violence has been the primary: *Powershift: Knowledge, Wealth, and Violence at the Edge of the 21st Century, Alvin Toffler, (Bantam, November 1991)*
A slavemaster or feudal lord: *Ibid*
It is now possible to control: *New World Order, William T. Still*
Karl Marx outlined a centralized credit system: *None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen; Ibid*
According to Professor Quigley, the goal of this network: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*
They frequently donated to colleges: *Ibid*
They often sought to control the money: *Ibid*
By the 1920s control over most countries: *New World Order, William T. Still; A Century of War, William Engdahl*
Also, by this time Russia: *Ibid (Still)*
Presidents such as Andrew Jackson: *None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen; The Shadows of Power, James Perloff*
In January of 1835: *Andrew Jackson, wikipedia.org/wiki/Andrew_Jackson*
President James Garfield warned: *James Garfield, wikipedia.org/wiki/Assassination_of_James_A._Garfield*
Lincoln was also opposed: *New World Order, William T. Still*
One notable figure who contributed: *The Shadows of Power, James Perloff*
The Federal Reserve Act was drafted: *None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen*
Other attendees were representatives: *Ibid*
In June of 1932 Congressman Louis McFadden: *The Shadows of Power, James Perloff*
Prior to that, in December of 1913, Congressman: *Ibid*
The Federal Reserve should be abolished: *End The Fed, Ron Paul, (Grand Central Publishing, 2009)*

United Nations

The United Nations (UN) is an intergovernmental: *United Nations, wikipedia.org/wiki/United_Nations; United Nations Conference on International Organization, wikipedia.org/wiki/United_Nations_Conference_on_International_Organization*
Also connected to the UN: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*
The UN was formed after a conference: *United Nations, wikipedia.org/wiki/United_Nations; UNICO, wikipedia.org/wiki/United_Nations_Conference_on_International_Organization*

Also at this meeting were 47 CFR: *The Shadows of Power, James Perloff; New World Order, William T. Still; The Invisible Government, Dan Smoot*
As we've observed, these individuals: *Ibid (Perloff)*
the Anglo-American Establishment decided: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*
Other astute researchers on this subject: *How the World Really Works, Alan B. Jones*
The UN Charter, which the CFR: *The Invisible Government, Dan Smoot*
The Communist Party USA: *New World Order, William T. Still*
communism would be used as a consolidation tool: *New World Order, H.G. Wells, (1941)*

Trilateral Commission

In the form of the Trilateral Commission: *A Century of War, William Engdahl*
According to former Arizona Senator Barry Goldwater: *With No Apologies, Senator Barry M. Goldwater*
Carter then installed other Trilateralists: *A Century of War, William Engdahl*
Ronald Regan was not a member: *The Bilderberg Diary, James P. Tucker, (American Free Press, 2005); Bohemian Grove: Cult Of Conspiracy, Mike Hanson, (iUniverse, 2004)*
George W. Bush was also a Trilateral Commission: *America's Secret Establishment, Professor Antony C. Sutton; Ibid*

The Bilderberg Group

The Bilderberg Group, founded in 1954: *The Bilderberg Diary, James P. Tucker; Who's Who Of The Elite, Robert Gaylon Ross Sr.*
The group is composed of European nobility: *Bohemian Grove, Mike Hanson; Ibid (Tucker)*
There are about 100 members: *America's Secret Establishment, Professor Antony C. Sutton; Ibid (Tucker; Hanson)*
Some past attendees include: *Ibid (Tucker)*
Their meetings are said to be financed: *None Dare Call It Conspiracy, Gary Allen*
Some include representatives from: *Who's Who Of The Elite, Robert Gaylon Ross Sr.; Ibid*
Since the years of Dwight Eisenhower: *The Bilderberg Diary, James P. Tucker*
accustomed to selecting and "owning" the president: *Ibid*
William Clinton attended: *Bohemian Grove, Mike Hanson; Ibid*
Senators Hillary Clinton and Barack Obama: *Global Research, Barack O'Bilderberg: Picking the President, June 9, 2008, Andrew Gavin Marshall; WorldNetDaily, Speculation about Obama, Clinton Attending Bilderberger Meeting, June 07, 2008, Alyssa Farah*
At Bilderberg meetings major policies: *The Bilderberg Diary, James P. Tucker; Who's Who Of The Elite, Robert Gaylon Ross Sr.*
Researchers who have studied this group: *Dark Majesty: The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of a Thousand Points of Light, Texe Marrs, (Rivercrest Publishing, September 2004); Ibid*

Their Goal is Neo-Feudalism

Introduction

Toffler's Third Wave theory: *The Third Wave, Alvin Toffler*
This global civilization: *Ibid*
H.G. Wells too agreed: *New World Order, H.G. Wells*
Professor Quigley also agreed: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*
Just as nationalism represented an entire nation: *The Third Wave, Alvin Toffler*
It is an evolutionary necessity: *Ibid*

The Contract

These individuals recognized that whenever: *Original Intent: The Courts, the Constitution, & Religion, David Barton, (Wallbuilder Press, 2002)*

It was also designed to prevent the growth: *The United States Constitution: What is Says, What it Means, (Oxford University Press, 2005)*

cannot be properly understood without: *Original Intent, David Barton*

Abraham Lincoln said it was: *United States Declaration of Independence, wikipedia.org/wiki/United_States_Declaration_of_Independence*

governments are constructed to serve the people: *Declaration of Independence, www.ushistory.org/declaration/document*

For years the Americans pursued: *Ibid*

The history of the present King of Great Britain: *Ibid*

So, the US Constitution was created to prevent: *The Revolution: A Manifesto, Ron Paul, (Grand Central Publishing, 2008)*

The First Amendment allows people to peacefully: *Plan to Restore Constitutional Order, July 27, 2008, www.wethepeoplefoundation.org*

If their petitions for redress are ignored: *Declaration of Independence, www.ushistory.org/declaration/document*

There is no doubt that America: *Out of Control: Global Turmoil on the Eve of the 21st Century, Zbigniew Brzezinski, (Touchstone, December 1995)*

national constitutional convention was necessary: *Between Two Ages, Zbigniew Brzezinski*

the division of power has traditionally caused programs: *Ibid*

divided authority could be: *New Challenges, New Tools for Defense Decisionmaking, RAND Corporation, 2003*

Toffler says the US Constitution was: *The Third Wave, Alvin Toffler*

According to Toffler, the primary enemies: *Ibid*

the super struggle: *Ibid*

Wells similarly wrote that if constitutions: *New World Order, H.G. Wells; The Open Conspiracy, H.G. Wells*

The forces of nationalism: *US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, Information Operations and Asymmetric Warfare…Are We Ready?, April 09, 2002, LTC LaWarren V. Patterson*

conspiracy theorists believe that the Trilateral Commission: *Future War: Non-Lethal Weapons in Twenty-First Century Warfare, Colonel John B. Alexander, (St. Martin's Press, 1999)*

Feudalism

the structure of earlier empires: *The Grand Chessboard: American Primacy and its Geostrategic Imperatives, Zbigniew Brzezinski, (Basic Books, 1997)*

A vassal is a term: *Vassal, wikipedia.org/wiki/Vassal*

In part 1A, The American Heritage: *The American Heritage Dictionary, Fourth Edition, (Houghton Mifflin Company, 2006)*

A member of a servile feudal class: *Merriam-Webster's Collegiate Dictionary, Eleventh Edition (Merriam Webster Incorporated, 2003)*

a person in a condition of servitude: *Oxford English Dictionary, Sixth Edition, (Oxford University Press, 2007)*

[that] terminology is not altogether: *The Grand Chessboard, Zbigniew Brzezinski*

Nothing less than to create a world: *Tragedy and Hope, Professor Carroll Quigley*

Congress is Complicit

The lobbyists provide these elected officials: *War On The Middle Class: How the Government, Big Business, and Special Interest Groups Are Waging War on the American Dream, Lou Dobbs, (Penquin Books, Ltd., 2006)*

The pharmaceutical industry: *Ibid*

In the late 1960s: *Ibid*

From 1998 to 2004 these corporate: *Ibid*

Millions of lobbying money: *Ibid*

Corporations also influence congress: *Ibid*

The proposal of a thought-based law: *The Baltimore Sun, Here Come the Thought Police, November 19, 2007, Ralph E. Shaffer, R. William Robinson*

As part of an effort to limit free speech on the internet: *Violent Islamist Extremism, The Internet, and the Homegrown Terrorist Threat, United States Senate, Committee on Homeland Security, and Governmental Affairs, May 8, 2008, Joseph Lieberman, Susan Collins*

On April 24, 1996 the Omnibus Counter-Terrorism Bill: *The Spotlight, Politicians Push Agenda As Rubble Settles, Spotlight on Congress, May 15, 1995; Antiterrorism and Effective Death Penalty Act of 1996, wikipedia.org/wiki/Antiterrorism_and_Effective_Death_Penalty_Act_of_1996*

Congress passed the USA Patriot Act: *Washington You're Fired (the film), William Lewis*

Regardless, in summer of 2005 Congress again: *Ibid*

The Posse Comitatus Act of 1878: *John Warner National Defense Authorization Act for Fiscal Year 2007 (H.R. 5122), Public Law No: 109-364, www.govtrack.us; Ibid*

The Military Commission Act of 2006: *American Free Press, Martial Law Made Easy, Issue #46, November 13, 2006, James P. Tucker Jr.; Ibid (Lewis)*

Congressmen are also profiting: *American Free Press, 151 Congressmen Derive Financial Profit From War, Issue 18, May 5, 2008, Ralph Forbes; Global Research, War Profits Taint the Greedy Hands of More Than 25% of Members of the US House and Senate!, May 7, 2008, Richard Skaff*

In the early 1990s the US Congress: *Defense News, Use of Nonlethal Weapons May Alter Military Strategy, November 19, 1990, Barbara Amouyal; University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), The Development of "Non-Lethal" Weapons During the 1990's, March 2007, Neil Davison*

They worked with the DOD to test: *Defense Horizons, Nonlethal Capabilities: Realizing the Opportunities, March, 2002, Emil. R. Bedard; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council, (The National Academies Press, 2003); National Defense Authorization Act of 1996, Public Law 104–106, Nonlethal Weapons Study, Section 219, February 10 1996, www.nist.gov*

They continue to support the development: *Capitol Hill Press Releases, Domenici & Wilson Step Up Effort To Center Directed Energy Work At Kirtland AFB, March 17, 2000; Inside the Army, Multi-National Corps-Iraq Requests 14 Project Sheriff Vehicles, May 30, 2005; Washington Post Staff Writer, US Plans to Test Space-Based Laser To Intercept Missiles, July 18, 2001, Vernon Loeb; Space Daily, Senate Adds Millions for ASAT, Space Laser, May 18, 2000, Frank Sietzen, Jr., www.spacedaily.com*

Warnings by Historical Figures

this group has been able to hide itself: *The Anglo-American Establishment, Professor Carroll Quigley*

Money alone is not enough: *The Rockefeller File, Gary Allen*

In the early 1980s resolutions: *Rule by Secrecy, Jim Marrs*

In 1983 Congressman McDonald died during a curious: *Ibid*

In his farewell speech: *Eisenhower Farewell Address, January 17, 1961, www.eisenhowermemorial.org*

No country that values its safety: *The Anglo-American Establishment, Professor Carroll Quigley*

In New York City on April 27: *President John F. Kennedy, The President and the Press: Address Before the American Newspaper Publishers Association, Waldorf-Astoria Hotel, New York City, April 27, 1961, www.jfklibrary.org*

Problem-Reaction-Solution

Introduction

to cause this global revolution: *New World Order, H.G. Wells*
crises will be strategically placed: *The Third Wave, Alvin Toffler*
By seducing or terrorizing the population: *Powershift, Alvin Toffler*
a false flag operation: *False Flag, wikipedia.org/wiki/False_flag*

The Great Fire of Rome

On the night of July 19: *PBS Station, The Great Fire of Rome, www.pbs.org/wnet/secrets/case_rome*
At an earlier date, Nero had: *Ibid*
Because the people held Nero responsible: *Great Fire of Rome, wikipedia.org/wiki/Great_Fire_of_Rome; Ibid*

Hitler's Reichstag

Although the fire was blamed: *The History Place, The Reichstag Burns, www.historyplace.com/worldwar2/riseofhitler/burns.htm*
One month later: *False Flag, wikipedia.org/wiki/False_flag; Enabling Act, wikipedia.org/wiki/Enabling_Act_of_1933*
It eliminated the Reichstag's participation: *Ibid*

Operation Northwoods

Operation Northwoods was a 1962: *Baltimore Sun, US Terror Plan Called Cuba Invasion Pretext, April 24, 2001, Scott Shane, Tom Bowman; Harper's Magazine, The Truth Is Out There, July, 2001*
America's top military leaders: *ABC News, US Military Wanted to Provoke War With Cuba, May 1, 2001, David Ruppe*
The plan included sinking: *Ibid*
The proposal was given to Kennedy: *Operation Northwoods, wikipedia.org/wiki/Operation_Northwoods; www.geocities.com/CapitolHill/2807/wwcfrjcs.html*
ordered all documents pertaining: *Baltimore Sun, US Terror Plan Called Cuba Invasion Pretext, April 24, 2001, Scott Shane, Tom Bowman*
The plan was mistakenly discovered: *Operation Northwoods, wikipedia.org/wiki/Operation_Northwoods; www.geocities.com/CapitolHill/2807/wwcfrjcs.html*
General Lemnitzer was denied: *Lyman Lemnitzer, wikipedia.org/wiki/Lyman_Lemnitzer; Supreme Allied Commander, Wiki/Supreme_Allied_Commander; Ibid*

Free Speech Zones

the largest anti-globalization protest in US history: *WTO Ministerial Conference of 1999, wikipedia.org/wiki/WTO_Ministerial_Conference_of_1999_protest_activity*
The chaos demonstrated: *Black Bloc, wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_bloc; Free Speech Zone, wikipedia.org/wiki/Free_speech_zone*
Free speech zones are areas: *Ibid*

It was reported by multiple media outlets: *BBC News, The Battle of Seattle, A City Under Civil Emergency, December 2, 1999, Paul Reynolds; The Associated Press, Seattle Officials Declare No-Protest Zone Around World Trade Talks, December 1, 1999; PBS, National Guard Helps Restore Order, December 1, 1999*
black bloc showed up and moved through the peaceful crowd: *BBC News, Seattle Police Tactics Under Scrutiny, December 2, 1999; Ibid (BBC)*
After a significant amount of vandalism: *Ibid (BBC, Seattle Police)*
The immediate result was a decision: *The Associated Press, Federal Court Upholds WTO No-Protest Zone, October 31, 2001*
the black bloc is a group of provocateurs: *Prison Planet, Canadian Police Caught Attempting To Stage Riots, August 24, 2007, Paul Joseph Watson*
This group has been used to justify: *UK Guardian, Italian Police 'Framed G8 Protesters,' June 22, 2002*
Agents provocateurs, in general: *Toronto Star, Police Accused of Using Provocateurs at Summit, August 21, 2007; The Globe and Mail (Canada), Police Planted Provocateurs, Protesters Say, August 23, 2007, Joan Bryden; CBC News, Quebec Police Admit They Went Undercover at Montebello Protest, August 23, 2007*
Since the WTO meeting in 1999: *A National Lawyers Guild Report on Government Violations of First Amendment Rights in the United States, The Assault on Free Speech, Public Assembly, and Dissent, Heidi Boghosian, 2004*
Although these zones have been used sparingly: *CBS News, Silencing Voices Of Dissent, December 4, 2003; San Francisco Gate, Quarantining Dissent, How the Secret Service Protects Bush from Free Speech, January 4, 2004, James Bovard; Free Speech Zone, wikipedia.org/wiki/Free_speech_zone*

Russian Apartment Bombings
In the beginning of September: *Russian Apartment Bombings, wikipedia.org/wiki/Russian_apartment_bombings*
The suspicious events surrounding: *Ibid*
During one attempted bombing: *UK Telegraph, Secret at the Heart of Putin's Rise to Power, March 13, 2004, Julius Strauss*
the entire operation had been just a training drill: *Ibid*
An investigation of the bombings: *Ibid*
A former Russian military: *False Flag, wikipedia.org/wiki/False_flag*
A tycoon named Boris Berezovsky also suggested: *BBC News, Russian Tycoon Blames Moscow for Blasts, March 6, 2002*
He is positive that the FSB: *The Guardian, Former Ally Links Putin to Moscow Blasts, March 6, 2002, Jonathan Steele, Ian Traynor*
As reported by the BBC in March: *BBC News, Russian Tycoon Blames Moscow for Blasts, March 6, 2002*
FSB officer named Alexander Litvinenko: *Russian Apartment Bombings, wikipedia.org/wiki/Russian_apartment_bombings*
Putin, the former head of the FSB: *The Guardian, Former Ally Links Putin to Moscow Blasts, March 6, 2002, Jonathan Steele, Ian Traynor; UK Telegraph, Secret at the Heart of Putin's Rise to Power, March 13, 2004, Julius Strauss*

Other Incidents
Other Incidents which are believed to have: *False Flag, wikipedia.org/wiki/False_flag; Gulf of Tonkin Incident, wikipedia.org/wiki/Gulf_of_Tonkin_Incident; San Antonio Express-News (Texas), Tonkin Incident Might Not Have Occurred, August 3, 2002, Bob Richter*

Questionable Events

The Oklahoma City Bombing which occurred: *WorldNetDaily, Oklahoma City's Lost Information, Early Accounts Differ From Today's 'Official' Explanation Of Bombing, April 23, 2001, Jon Dougherty*
Several mainstream news sources: *Ibid*
The FBI increased the size of the bomb: *Ibid*
An independent investigation was made difficult: *Bomb Damage Analysis Of Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building, July 30, 1995, Brigadier Gen. USAF (Ret.)*
technically impossible: *WorldNetDaily, Oklahoma City's Lost Information, Early Accounts Differ From Today's 'Official' Explanation Of Bombing, April 23, 2001, Jon Dougherty*
was definitely not the result on an ANFO bomb: *The Spotlight, Feds 'Fib' On Oklahoma City Bomb Says Ex-High Level FBI Official, May 15, 1995, Mike Blair*
General Benton K. Partin has a lifetime of explosives: *Bomb Damage Analysis Of Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building, July 30, 1995, Brigadier Gen. USAF (Ret.)*
Sam Gronning, a licensed professional blaster: *Testimony of Sam Gronning, www.geocities.com/Heartland/7006/7experts-support.html*
Professor of physics at the University of Oregon: *Testimony of Dr. Frederick Hansen, www.unexplained-mysteries.com/forum/lofiversion/index.php/t46540.html*
Dr. Ernest B. Paxson, a US Army explosives: *Testimony of Dr. Ernest B. Paxson, Ibid (unexplained-mysteries)*
Samuel Cohen, a physicist and creator: *Testimony of Samuel Cohen, Ibid (unexplained-mysteries)*
Also worth mentioning is that multiple: *The Oklahoma City Bombing and The Politics of Terror, www.apfn.org/apfn/hoffman8.htm*
at least two explosions: *WorldNetDaily, FBI Refused 22 Eyewitness Testimonies, May 16, 2001, Jon Dougherty*
The Oklahoma Daily Gazette obtained hotel receipts: *WorldNetDaily, Hotel Receipt Shows Top Terror Man Showed Up 9 Hours Before Blast, January 19, 2002, Jon Dougherty*
exploited the outrage of the public: *The Spotlight, Politicians Push Agenda as Rubble Settles, Spotlight on Congress, May 15, 1995*
The bill received much support in Congress: *Antiterrorism and Effective Death_Penalty Act of 1996, wikipedia.org/wiki/Antiterrorism_and_Effective_Death_Penalty_Act_of_1996*
Such domestic antiterrorist bills: *WorldNetDaily, Oklahoma City's Lost Information, Early Accounts Differ From Today's 'Official' Explanation of Bombing, April 23, 2001, Jon Dougherty*
In addition to the Twin Towers collapsing: *9/11 Fact Card, www.911Truth.org; The 9/11 Commission Report: Omissions and Distortions, David Ray Griffin, (Olive Branch Press, November 2004)*
former Senator Gary Hart announced: *Global Research, War and the New World Order, August 29, 2007, Mahdi Darius Nazemroaya*
Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld mentioned: *The 9/11 Commission Report, David Ray Griffin*
National Security Strategy of the United States of America: *Ibid*

Concealment for False Flag Operations

Also, during both the first World Trade Center: *New York Times, Tapes Depict Proposal to Thwart Bomb Used in Trade Center Blast, October 28, 1993, Ralph Blumenthal; WorldNetDaily, The FBI and the Mad Bombers, December 09, 1999, Joseph Farah*
The most sensible conclusion: *Ibid (WorldNetDaily)*
The funding and/or planning for both the first WTC: *Ibid*
In what The Boston Globe describes: *The Boston Globe (Associated Press), Agency Planned Exercise on Sept. 11 Built Around a Plane Crashing Into a Building, Aug 21, 2002, John J. Lumpkin*

Adding to the coincidence: *Toronto Star, Northern Guardian, The Scene at NORAD on Sept. 11, December 9, 2001, Scott Simmie; Ibid*

Summary

Who benefits most from terrorist activity?: *WorldNetDaily, The FBI and the Mad Bombers, December 09, 1999, Joseph Farah*

this can be accomplished by terrorizing people: *Capitalist Conspiracy: An Inside View of International Banking, G. Edward Griffin*

The fact that the United States has not faced a recent: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

But the pursuit of power: *The Grand Chessboard, Zbigniew Brzezinski*

Volume II The New War

The New War

Description

Part of this RMA includes a change in competing: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

The US and its allies will now be waging: *Quadrennial Defense Review Report, Department of Defense, February 2006; Department of Defense, Non-Lethal Weapons Program, 2007 Annual Report*

In the future, few rational opponents: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

Due to the conventional military dominance: *United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds*

Unity of Effort/Interagency

These wars are interagency, international operations: *Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008; Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008; Naval War College, Newport R.I., Logistics in Support of Operations Other than War, David A. Larson, May 19, 1997*

The organizations that are involved: *Ibid*

They are working with the civilian population: *Ibid*

The private sector is also involved: *Ibid*

Because of the advancements in communication: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

Synchronization

Synchronization is a type of unified action: *MOOTW, wikipedia.org/wiki/Military_operations_other_than_war*

It is an ancient military tactic: *Understanding Information Age Warfare, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2001, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Richard E. Hayes, David A. Signori*

The US Army explains unified action: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

Synchronization is an international: *Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008; Ibid*

The idea is that launching multiple attacks: *Ibid (JP 3-57)*

It consists of a vertical and horizontal sharing: *Understanding Information Age Warfare, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2001, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Richard E. Hayes, David A. Signori; Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

The MNF uses automated computerized methods: *Ibid*

In fact, as the speed of decisionmaking: *Ibid (DOD)*

Expanded Battlefield

The battlefield for this new: *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein*

The battles take place among: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007; Asymmetry and US Military strategy: Definition, Background, And Strategic Concepts, January 2001, Steven Metz, Douglas V. Johnson; US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit; Ibid*

The physical architecture of the battlespace: *MITRE Corporation, From Netted Sensors to Swarming, October 24, 2005, Dr. Raja Suresh*

Defense of the Homeland involves: Department of Defense, Strategy for Homeland and Civil Support, June 2005

military and civilian organizations will be coordinated: *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein*

Although civilians have been involved: *Ibid*

The operational environment will expand: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

enemy will increasingly seek protection: *Ibid*

Domestic War Rooms

Military campaigns have been typically: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice*

The word communications was added: *US Air Force, Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Military Operations Other Than War, October 5, 1996*

Command is the formulation of intent: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

Intelligence, surveillance, and reconnaissance: *Ibid*

C4ISR has multiple interacting components: *Understanding Information Age Warfare, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2001, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Richard E. Hayes, David A. Signori*

Most C4ISR centers are equipped: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

In the late 1960s, the police in the US: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice*

Riot control rooms which: *Ibid*

By 1969 the Directorate for Civil Disturbance Planning: *Committee on the Judiciary United States Senate, Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights, Army Surveillance of Civilians, 92nd Congress, 2nd Session, 1972*

It was constructed based on: *Ibid*

Similar centers were created in the late 1960s: *Ibid*

The BSSR mentioned that the police: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice*

The C4ISR centers that are used: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Military Operations Other Than War, Joint Doctrine, J-7 Operational Plans and Interoperability Directorate; NATO, Civil-Military Co-operation (CIMIC), Doctrine (AJP-9), June 2003; Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008*

The deployed civil-military units: *Ibid*

Daily meetings take place: *Ibid (JP 3-57)*

The CMOC also coordinates: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Military Operations Other Than War, Joint Doctrine, J-7 Operational Plans and Interoperability Directorate; US Army, Civil Affairs Operations (FM 3-05.40, FM 41-10), September 2006; Ibid*

Communications

The DOD's change to NCW: *Network Centric Warfare: Coalition Operations in the Age of US Military Primacy, Paul T. Mitchell, (International Institute for Strategic Studies, 2006); Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

The Global Information Grid (GIG): *MITRE Corporation Fact Sheet, DOD C3I FFRDC*

The GIG has been called the DOD's: *US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, Information Operations and Asymmetric Warfare…Are We Ready?, April 09, 2002, LTC LaWarren V. Patterson; Global Security, Global Information Grid, www.globalsecurity.org/intell/systems/gig.htm; United States Government Accountability Office, Report to Subcommittee on Terrorism, Unconventional Threats, and Capabilities, Committee on Armed Services, House of Representatives, The Global Information Grid and Challenges Facing Its Implementation, GAO-04-858, July 2004; Department of Defense, Global Information Grid Architectural Vision, Version 1.0, June 2007*

Its information management: *Global Information Grid, www.nsa.gov/ia/programs/global_industry_grid/index.shtml; Ibid (DOD)*

Authorized people can: Ibid

It allows for community collaboration: *Department of Defense, Office of Force Transformation, The Implementation of Network-Centric Warfare, January 5, 2005; Ibid (DOD)*

The exceptional situational awareness: *Global Security, Global Information Grid, www.globalsecurity.org/intell/systems/gig.htm; Network Centric Warfare: Coalition Operations in the Age of US Military Primacy, Paul T. Mitchell, (International Institute for Strategic Studies, 2006); Joint Publication 3-13.1, Electronic Warfare, January 25, 2007*

The GIGs uses existing commercial: *US Army War College Guide to National Security Issues, Department of National Security and Strategy, Volume I: Theory of War and Strategy, Chapter 21, Network Centric Warfare, June 2008; Ibid (Global Security)*

The GIG will eventually integrate: *The Global Information Grid and Challenges Facing Its Implementation, GAO-04-858, July 2004*

The GIG is also connected to communications: *Global Information Grid, www.nsa.gov/ia/programs/global_industry_grid/index.shtml*

According to some sources: *Department of Defense, Global Information Grid Architectural Vision, Version 1.0, June 2007; US Army War College Guide To National Security Issues, June 2008*

Each service has its own tactical: *Ibid (Army War College Guide)*

As part of the transformation to NCW the military: *Pervasive and Mobile Computing, Abstract, Volume 1, Issue 1 March 2005, Mario Gerla; Mobile Computing and Communications Review, Mobile Ad Hoc Networking and the IETF, Joseph P. Macker M. Scott Corson; Mobile Ad Hoc Network, wikipedia.org/wiki/Mobile_ad_hoc_network*

Sources

A MANET does not: *Ibid (Mobile Computing)*

These mobile nodes form: *Ibid*

MANETs are rugged, secure: *Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), Subcommittee on Terrorism, Unconventional Threats and Capabilities, March 27, 2003, Dr. Tony Tether*

To transfer data, a MANET uses: *MANET (Mobile Ad Hoc Network), www.techterms.com/definition/manet*

The physical devices used: *Ibid*

A particular device which: *Military & Aerospace Electronics, Software-defined radio and JTRS, John McHale, December 2004*

JTRS is a vital part of NCW: *Cots Journal, Cognitive Radio Shows Great Promise, October 2004, Dr. Bruce Fette; Congressional Research Service, CRS Report for Congress, The Joint Tactical Radio System (JTRS) and the Army's Future Combat System (FCS), November 17, 2005, Andrew Feickert; Boeing Integrated Defense Systems, Joint Tactical Radio System, Ground Mobile Radios (JTRS GMR), October 2008*

JTRS were designed in the mid 1990s: *The MITRE Corporation, Software Radio Technology Challenges and Opportunities, First European Workshop on Software Radios, May 29, 1997, Joseph Mitola III; Ibid (CRS)*

They allow for the wireless transmission of data: *Military & Aerospace Electronics, Software-defined radio and JTRS, John McHale, December 2004; Global Security, Global Information Grid, www.globalsecurity.org/intell/systems/gig.htm; Ibid (CRS)*

Because the regular physical components: *Cots Journal, Cognitive Radio Shows Great Promise, October 2004, Dr. Bruce Fette; Global Security, Joint Tactical Radio System, www.globalsecurity.org/military/systems/ground/jtrs.htm; Ibid (Global Security)*

Another type of JTRS is the cognitive radio: *Dissertation, Royal Institute of Technology (KTH), Sweden, Cognitive Radio: An Integrated Agent Architecture for Software Defined Radio, May 8, 2000, Joseph Mitola III; Bogazici University, Bebek, Istanbul, Computer Networks Research Laboratory, WiMax Networks & Cognitive Radio Research Group*

DARPA has been involved in the creation: *Applied Research of Telcordia Technologies Inc., Seminar at Nile University, Cognitive Radio For Teaming, April 15, 2008*

Like JTRS, a CR is a computer: *Virginia Tech College of Engineering, Ensuring Security for Cognitive Radio Networks is The Goal of Career Research, March 18, 2008, Liz Crumbley; Bogazici University, Bebek, Istanbul, Computer Networks Research Laboratory, WiMax Networks & Cognitive Radio Research Group*

The CR is an intelligent device: *Ibid (Bogazici University)*

And a CR is not just aware of its location: *Virginia Tech College of Engineering, Ensuring Security for Cognitive Radio Networks is The Goal of Career Research, March 18, 2008, Liz Crumbley; Dissertation, Royal Institute of Technology (KTH), Sweden, Cognitive Radio: An Integrated Agent Architecture for Software Defined Radio, May 8, 2000, Joseph Mitola III*

Using its sensors, it continually: *Ibid*

Like other digital radios the CR: *Applied Research of Telcordia Technologies Inc., Seminar at Nile University, Cognitive Radio for Teaming, April 15, 2008; GizMag, DARPA's Surface Navigation Concept—Without GPS, April 19, 2007; Geospatial Solutions, Cognitive Radio Design for a Military Platform, January 29, 2008, Donald Wilkins; Scientific American Magazine, Cognitive Radio, February 20, 2006, Steven Ashley*

The Warfighter Information Network-Tactical: *Global Security, Warfighter Information Network-Tactical (WIN-T), www.globalsecurity.org/military/systems/ground/win-t.htm; Warfighter Information Network–Tactical, www.army.mil/aps/08/information_papers/transform/WIN-T.html*

WIN-T facilitates real-time organization: *WIN-T-Warfighter's Information Network–Tactical, www.defense-update.com/products/w/win-t.htm; Ibid (Global Security)*

327

It was designed for joint operations: *Warfighter Information Network–Tactical, www.army.mil/aps/08/information_papers/transform/WIN-T.html; Ibid (Global Security)*

It was built by General Dynamics: *Federation of American Scientists, Warfighter Information Network-Tactical (WIN-T), www.fas.org/man/dod-101/sys/land/win-t.htm*

LandWarNet is another tactical communications: *The United States Army, Concept of Operations, TRADOC Pamphlet 525-5-600, LandWarNet, 2015, February 2008*

LandWarNet uses JTRS to create: *Ibid*

It also allows the commander: *Ibid*

NGOs, the interagency, and other decisionmakers: *Ibid*

ForceNet is a reliable: *Global Security, FORCEnet, www.globalsecurity.org/military/systems/ship/systems/forcenet.htm; What is FORCEnet?, www.forcenet.navy.mil/fn-definition.htm*

It uses a visual representation: *Ibid*

With ForceNet, warfighters: *Ibid*

The Command and Control Constellation (C2 Constellation): *Global Security, www.globalsecurity.org/military/systems/aircraft/systems/c2-constellation.htm; Lockheed Martin Press Release, First Demonstration of Air Force C2 Constellation Architecture Showcases Net-Centric Capabilities, September 29th, 2004, www.lockheedmartin.com*

Warfighters connected to C2 Constellation: *Ibid*

The New Enemy

Introduction

This new war is being waged against: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

According to the DOD and other sources: *Department of Defense, Non-Lethal Weapons Program, 2007 Annual Report; Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein*

These threats to US national security: *Los Alamos National Laboratory, Rethinking National Security Requirements And The Need For Non-Lethal Weapons Options, John B. Alexander, PhD*

Regarding these new enemies: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

The US Army's Strategic Studies Institute revealed: *Strategic Studies Institute, US Army War College, Nonlethality and American Land Power: Strategic Context and Operational Concepts, June 15, 1998, Douglas C. Lovelace, Jr., Steven Metz*

[We] must also focus on non-traditional threats: *US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, Defending the Homeland, April 09, 2002, Lieutenant Colonel Benigno Bern Ruiz*

This new enemy includes groups and individuals: *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein; Department of Defense, Quadrennial Defense Review Report, February 2006*

We're not in a war against nations or big armies: *Defense Daily, Pentagon Office Pushes Tactical Laser Demo For Iraq, February 8, 2005, Sharon Weinberger*

The asymmetrical threats currently: *Iosphere, Man-Hunting, Nexus Topography, Dark Networks, and Small Worlds, Winter 2006, Chief Warrant Officer 3 (Retired), John R. Dodson*

The enemies are seldom states: *Toffler Associates, DIA Workforce of the Future: Creating the Future of the Defense Intelligence Agency, May 15, 2003*

this war will be waged against confirmed enemies: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

New asymmetric threats have emerged: *Department of Defense, Non-Lethal Weapons Program, 2007 Annual Report*

Today's threats: *Applied Energetics (Ionatron, Inc.), Government/Military Products and Technology, www.appliedenergetics.com/gov_mil.asp*

Labels of the New Enemy

An adversary is a party acknowledged: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

The US Army's 2008 Unconventional Warfare: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

The Army says the irregular enemies include: *Ibid*

Non-state actors (NSAs) are those who operate outside: *Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Non-State Actors in Conflict, www.sipri.org/contents/conflict/nonstateactors.html; Geneva Centre for the Democratic Control of Armed Forces, Security Governance and Post-conflict Peacebuilding, Excerpt from Chapter 3, Alan Bryden, Heiner Hänggi, (Berlin: Lit Verlag, 2005); James Madison University, Mine Action Information Center, Non-State Actors and Their Significance, Margaret Busé; Non-state Actor/Entity, wikipedia.org/wiki/Non-state_actor*

Other types of NSAs are dissident: *Ibid*

The RAND Corporation further describes: *Networks and Netwars: The Future of Terror, Crime, and Militancy, John Arquilla, David Ronfeldt, (RAND Corporation, 2003)*

entities that have the primary function: *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein*

In another RAND publication: *Toward a Revolution in Intelligence Affairs, Deborah G. Barger, (RAND Corporation, 2005)*

an organized movement aimed: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007*

An insurgency is a revolutionary war: *Association of the United States Army, The Land Warfare Papers, Defining Asymmetric Warfare, September 2006, David L. Buffaloe*

According to the DOD's Dictionary of Military: *DOD Dictionary of Military and Associated Terms, Joint Publication 1-02, April 12, 2001*

Insurgencies usually occur when a population is oppressed: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007; Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

Some insurgents attempt to organize the population: *Ibid*

The Enemy's Structure and Tactics

RAND explains the resistance structure: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

Individuals in these organizations: *Ibid*

Other US government sources describe similar: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007; Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007*

The methods of warfare employed: *Department of Defense, Non-Lethal Weapons Program, 2007 Annual Report*

329

According to the US Army, this is accomplished: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

nonviolent groups in the past to resist tyranny: *Strategic Nonviolent Conflict: The Dynamics of People Power in the Twentieth Century, Peter Ackerman, Christopher Kruegler, (Praeger Paperback, December 1993)*

These information wars, the Army tells: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

the US will most likely face regional threats: *United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds*

The new enemies are those using information attacks: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

Resistance to Global Movement

The most pressing threats of the new security: *Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*

Likewise, the CFR had this to say: *Council On Foreign Relations, Task Force Report, Nonlethal Weapons And Capabilities, 2005, Graham T. Allison, Paul X. Kelley, Richard L. Garwin*

a dispersed resistance movement that is concealed: *Ibid*

As globalization increases world integration: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

The enemies of integration: *Toffler Associates, DIA Workforce of the Future: Creating the Future of the Defense Intelligence Agency, May 15, 2003*

The security forces, therefore, will: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

Information Warfare

According to the US military: *United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds; Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008; Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007; Airpower Journal, Information Warfare, Spring 1995, Prof George J. Stein*

The enemies use their position within a state's military: *Ibid*

In various publications, the act: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

Information attacks, according an article: *Airpower Journal, A Theory of Information Warfare: Preparing For 2020, Spring 1995, Colonel Richard Szafranski, USAF*

Information Operations (IO) have also: *Air and Space Power Journal, Chronicles Online Journal, What is Information Warfare?, November 2, 1999, Col Andrew Borden, USAF (Ret.)*

The DOD describes IO as: *DOD Dictionary of Military and Associated Terms, Joint Publication 1-02, April 12, 2001*

Information Warfare is any action: *Air and Space Power Journal, Chronicles Online Journal, What is Information Warfare?, November 2, 1999, Col Andrew Borden, USAF (Ret.)*

The new war is one fought for political: *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein*

Its battles are fought amongst the people: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

What makes this new type of warfare: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007*

Information warfare techniques: *Joint Force Quarterly, Reconsidering Asymmetric Warfare, December 2004, Steven J. Lambakis*

war of ideas and perception: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

that infects people with a unit of information: *The Information Revolution and National Security, Thomas E. Copeland, (Strategic Studies Institute, 2000)*

During a discussion called Strategic Communications: *Strategic Communications: The Information Battlefield, Address to the Combat Studies Institute Symposium, Fort Leavenworth, KS, September 12, 2007, Lieutenant General William B. Caldwell*

The target of information warfare: *Airpower Journal, Information Warfare, Spring 1995, Prof George J. Stein*

The credibility and perceived legitimacy: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

Future enemies will be striking: *Asymmetry and US Military strategy: Definition, Background, And Strategic Concepts, January 2001, Steven Metz, Douglas V. Johnson*

The DOD's Network Centric Warfare report further: *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein*

Initiatives to Remove Civil Liberties

USA Patriot Act

The USA Patriot Act of 2001 describes: *USA Patriot Act, wikipedia.org/wiki/USA_PATRIOT_Act*

The RAND–MIPT Terrorism Incident Database: *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart*

The USA Patriot Act focuses on American citizens: *The Revolution: A Manifesto, Ron Paul*

The act increases the ability: *USA Patriot Act, wikipedia.org/wiki/USA_PATRIOT_Act*

It legalizes searches through: *Ibid*

Brian Michael Jenkins linked terrorists to those: *Unconquerable Nation: Knowing Our Enemy, Strengthening Ourselves, Brian Michael Jenkins, (RAND, 2006)*

The book Terrorism in Asymmetrical Conflict: *Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Terrorism in Asymmetrical Conflict: Ideological and Structural Aspects, Ekaterina Stepanova*

Similarly, in its Militant Extremists: *Council on Foreign Relations, Militant Extremists in the United States, April 21, 2008, Holly Fletcher*

USA Today reported in November of 2004: *USA TODAY, Domestic Terrorism: New Trouble at Home, November 14, 2004, Larry Copeland*

The global terror movement is broadening in scope: *United States Special Operations Command (USSOCOM), Posture Statement, 2007*

RAND's 1999 book, Countering the New Terrorism: *Countering the New Terrorism, Ian O. Lesser, Bruce Hoffman, John Arquilla, David Ronfeldt, Michele Zanini, Brian Michael Jenkins, (RAND Corporation, 1999)*

This is the battle of ideas: *The White House, Strategy for Winning the War on Terror, http://georgewbush-whitehouse.archives.gov/nsc/nsct/2006/sectionV.html*

NYPD Report

The report, Radicalization in the West: *NYPD Intelligence Division, Radicalization in the West: The Homegrown Threat, August 15, 2007, Mitchell D. Silber, Arvin Bhatt*
The process includes: *Ibid*
The next phase is indoctrination: *Ibid*
Thought processes should: *Ibid*
Where once we would have: *Ibid*

HR1955 (A Law Against Thoughts)

Its purpose is to deal with domestic terrorists: *Violent Radicalization and Homegrown Terrorism Prevention Act of 2007, wikipedia.org/wiki/Violent_Radicalization_and_Homegrown_Terrorism_Prevention_Act_of_2007*
The bill had 15 co-sponsors: *Ibid*
To draft the bill, Harman worked: *The Center for Constitutional Rights, Factsheet: The Violent Radicalization and Homegrown Terrorism Prevention Act of 2007*
Two weeks before Harman: *Ibid*
In Section 899A, the Act defines: *The Library of Congress, Violent Radicalization and Homegrown Terrorism Prevention Act of 2007 (HR1955), 110th CONGRESS, 1st Session, http://thomas.loc.gov*
It describes ideologically-based: Ibid
That means that no force need actually: *The Baltimore Sun, Here Come the Thought Police, November 19, 2007, Ralph E. Shaffer, R. William Robinson*
Also notice the phrase: *Merriam-Webster's Collegiate Dictionary, Eleventh Edition (Merriam Webster Incorporated, 2003)*
intellectual power or vigor: *The American Heritage Dictionary, Fourth Edition, (Houghton Mifflin Company, 2006)*
This was acknowledged by the Center for Constitutional: *The Center for Constitutional Rights, Factsheet: The Violent Radicalization and Homegrown Terrorism Prevention Act of 2007*
HR1955 defines radicalization: *The Library of Congress, Violent Radicalization and Homegrown Terrorism Prevention Act of 2007 (HR1955), 110th CONGRESS, 1st Session, http://thomas.loc.gov*
Section 899D recommends: *Ibid*
It really sets the stage for further: *The Indypendent, Kucinich on HR 1955, December 2, 2007, Jessica Lee, www.indypendent.org/2007/12/02/kucinich-on-hr-1955/*
On August 7, 2007, the Senate version of the bill: *The Baltimore Sun, Here Come the Thought Police, November 19, 2007, Ralph E. Shaffer, R. William Robinson; ACLU Skeptical of Senate Report on Homegrown Terrorism, April 8, 2008, www.aclu.org; New York Times, Joe Lieberman, Would-Be Censor, May 25, 2008*

Free Speech on the Internet Under Attack

more interested in keeping the internet up: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*
the director of the FBI, Robert S. Mueller: *Violent Islamist Extremism, The Internet, and the Homegrown Terrorist Threat, United States Senate, Committee on Homeland Security, and Governmental Affairs, May 8, 2008, Joseph Lieberman, Susan Collins*
The USSOCOM, SIPRI, and NYPD Intelligence Division publications: *United States Special Operations Command (USSOCOM), Posture Statement, 2007; Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Terrorism in Asymmetrical Conflict: Ideological and Structural Aspects, Ekaterina Stepanova, (Oxford University Press, 2008); NYPD Intelligence Division, Radicalization in the West: The Homegrown Threat, August 15, 2007, Mitchell D. Silber, Arvin Bhatt*

HR1955 similarly portrays the internet: *The Library of Congress, Violent Radicalization and Homegrown Terrorism Prevention Act of 2007 (HR1955), 110th CONGRESS, 1st Session, http://thomas.loc.gov*
The White House's Strategy for Winning the War on Terror: *The White House, Strategy for Winning the War on Terror, http://georgewbush-whitehouse.archives.gov/nsc/nsct/2006/sectionV.html*
On November 6, 2007 C-Span broadcasted: *House Subcommittee Presentation Equates 9/11 Truth With Terrorism, November 13, 2007, Steve Watson, Paul Watson, www.infowars.net*
These falsehoods and conspiracy theories: *Ibid*
The United States Senate Committee on Homeland: *Violent Islamist Extremism, The Internet, and the Homegrown Terrorist Threat, United States Senate, Committee on Homeland Security, and Governmental Affairs, May 8, 2008, Joseph Lieberman, Susan Collins*
The internet also functions as a virtual extremist: *Ibid*
Testifying at the US Senate, Committee on Homeland Security: *Ibid*

MIAC Report

possible encounters with conspiracy theorists: *Missouri Information Analysis Center, Missouri State Highway Patrol, MIAC Strategic Report, February 20, 2009*
The report focuses on identifying people: *Ibid*
It is similar to the Phoenix FBI: *Phoenix FBI Joint Terrorism Task Force; Virginia Terrorism Manual, Terrorism & Security Awareness Orientation for State Employees*
The indicators outlined in the MIAC: *Missouri Information Analysis Center, Missouri State Highway Patrol, MIAC Strategic Report, February 20, 2009*
You are the enemy: *Ibid*

The People Are the Enemy

In order to combat the extremists: *Countering the New Terrorism, Ian O. Lesser, Bruce Hoffman, John Arquilla, David Ronfeldt, Michele Zanini, Brian Michael Jenkins, (RAND Corporation, 1999)*
aggressively targeting potential domestic terrorists: *The Nation, Spying on the Protesters, September 19, 2005, John Friedman*
Likewise, articles by MSNBC: *MSNBC.com, Is the Pentagon spying on Americans?, December 14, 2005, Lisa Myers, Douglas Pasternak, Rich Gardella; Bill of Rights Defense Committee, FBI Joint Terrorism Task Force (JTTF), Examples of JTTF Activities, www.bordc.org/resources/jttf-activities.php; Democracy Now, Pentagon Caught Spying on US Anti-War and Anti-Nuclear Activists, December 15, 2005; ABC News, Associated Press, ACLU: Military Skirting Law to Spy, April 2, 2008, Larry Neumeister*
Constitutional free-speech protections: *Reuters, Bush-Era Memos Saw Rights Limits in US Terror War, March 3, 2009, Randall Mikkelsen*
an aggressive expansion by the military: *New York Times Company, Military Expands Intelligence Role in US, January 14, 2007, Eric Lichtblau, Mark Mazzetti*
The FBI hasn't just monitored: *Colorado Springs Independent, Unusual Suspects: FBI Targeted Political Protesters in 'Domestic Terrorism' Cases, December 8, 2005, Terje Langeland*
The Drake University chapter: *Bill of Rights Defense Committee, FBI Joint Terrorism Task Force (JTTF), Examples of JTTF Activities, www.bordc.org/resources/jttf-activities.php*
In 2004, The Fresno California Police: *Ibid*
The California National Guard conducted: *The Nation, Spying on the Protesters, September 19, 2005, John Friedman*
People in Missouri who were planning: *Ibid*
antiwar and defense contractor protesters in Maryland: *The Washington Post, More Groups Than Thought Monitored in Police Spying, January 4, 2009, Lisa Rein, Josh White*

free speech may create permissive conditions: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*
The US military has stepped up intelligence collection: *MSNBC.com, Is the Pentagon spying on Americans?, December 14, 2005, Lisa Myers, Douglas Pasternak, Rich Gardella*
Newly leaked Pentagon documents: *Democracy Now, Pentagon Caught Spying on US Anti-War and Anti-Nuclear Activists, December 15, 2005*
In 2006 Congress passed the Military: *San Francisco Chronicle, Rule by fear or rule by law?, February 4, 2008, Lewis Seiler, Dan Hamburg*

Identified, Isolated, and Destroyed

Steven Metz and James Kievit mentioned: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*
To destroy the new enemy, an irregular approach: *Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith; Department of Defense, Quadrennial Defense Review Report, February 2006*
A protracted method: *Ibid*
For such a foe: *Ibid*
The specific methods which are used: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit; Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein; The Land Warfare Papers, Defining Asymmetric Warfare, September 2006, David L. Buffaloe; Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Ibid*
enemies have been able to avoid attacks: *United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds*
These new enemies depend on the public: *Strategic Communications: The Information Battlefield, Address to the Combat Studies Institute Symposium, Fort Leavenworth, KS, September 12, 2007, Lieutenant General William B. Caldwell*
hunted down, isolated, attacked, denied critical services: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*
We have formally acknowledged: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*
eliminating all safe havens: *The White House, Strategy for Winning the War on Terror, http://georgewbush-whitehouse.archives.gov/nsc/nsct/2006/sectionV.html*
We will direct every resource: *US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, Defending the Homeland, April 09, 2002, Lieutenant Colonel Benigno Bern Ruiz*
to detect and eliminate the underlying causes of extremist: *United States Special Operations Command (USSOCOM), Posture Statement, 2007*
terrorists who live among the civilian population: *National Defense, Non-lethal Weapons to Gain Relevancy in Future Conflicts, March 1 2002, John B. Alexander*
Tactically, the United States must find: *United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds*
will be used for executions: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994*

secrecy must be used to preserve the effectiveness: *Council on Foreign Relations, Report of an Independent Task Force, Non-Lethal Technologies: Military Options and Implications, 1995, Malcolm H. Wiener*

In his 1970 book Between Two Ages: *Between Two Ages, Zbigniew Brzezinski*

The Investigation

What Surveillance Really Means

The investigation can be the result: *The Age of Surveillance: The Aims and Methods of America's Political Intelligence System, Frank J. Donner, (Alfred A. Knopf, Inc., 1980)*

After an investigation has been launched: *Ibid*

the intelligence process, which includes: *Ibid*

The information gathered includes: *Ibid*

It also includes interviews with: *Ibid*

A variety of harassment techniques: *Ibid*

Investigations of this kind: *Ibid*

Instead, it is a justification: *Ibid*

History of Military Surveillance

The military's surveillance of civilians: *Committee on the Judiciary United States Senate, Military Surveillance of Civilian Politics: A Report of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights, 92nd Congress, 1st Session, August 15, 1973*

During WWI civilians who were suspected: *Ibid*

In 1939, the FBI along with the Military: *The Age of Surveillance, Frank J. Donner*

One organization that had been placed: *Ibid*

College campuses became the focal point: *Ibid*

the FBI recruited informants on campuses: *Ibid*

Also beginning in the 1950s: *Ibid*

The CIA would regularly recruit as informants: *Ibid*

Students and faculty were placed under active surveillance: *Ibid*

In the late 1960s a military bureaucracy: *Ibid*

USAINTC had hundreds of offices: *Committee on the Judiciary United States Senate, Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights, Army Surveillance of Civilians, 92nd Congress, 2nd Session, 1972*

The records kept by CONARC: *Ibid*

According to the 1973 Senate report: *Committee on the Judiciary United States Senate, Military Surveillance of Civilian Politics: A Report of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights, 92nd Congress, 1st Session, August 15, 1973*

However, despite the attention: *Ibid*

From 1956 to at least 1971: *COINTELPRO, wikipedia.org/wiki/COINTELPRO*

It consisted of a series of projects: *Ibid*

However, it appears that labeling individuals: *The Age of Surveillance, Frank J. Donner*

The program is known to have expanded: *COINTELPRO, wikipedia.org/wiki/COINTELPRO*

The methods, which included psychological warfare: *Intelligence Activities and the Rights Of Americans, Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations, Book II, April 26, 1976, www.icdc.com/~paulwolf/cointelpro/churchfinalreportfindings.htm*

These were devastating methods used to destroy: *Ibid*

The government used high-tech surveillance equipment: *COINTELPRO, wikipedia.org/wiki/COINTELPRO*

After people were placed under surveillance: *War at Home: Covert Action Against US Activists and What We Can Do About It, Brian Glick, (South End Press, July 1999)*

Psychological warfare was used: *Ibid*

The FBI worked with the police to harass: *Ibid*

The FBI and local police departments: *Ibid*

an "army of informers" deployed across the country: *The Age of Surveillance, Frank J. Donner*

If COINTELPRO had been a short-lived: *Intelligence Activities and the Rights Of Americans, Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations, Book II, April 26, 1976*

Executive Order 12333 signed into law: *War at Home, Brian Glick*

The BSSR warned that the various democratic: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice*

Surveillance Technology and Methods

Persistent Surveillance

For instance, a May 2003 report: *DIA Workforce of the Future: Creating the Future of the Defense Intelligence Agency, May 15, 2003*

Adversaries that know that they are persistently being watched: *Toward a Revolution in Intelligence Affairs, Deborah G. Barger, (RAND Corporation, 2005)*

aggressive and continuous surveillance: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

The DSB commented in its 2004 task force: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

persistent surveillance and vastly: *Department of Defense, Quadrennial Defense Review Report, February 2006*

The Technology

Surveillance technology has been described: *Omega Research Foundation, Report for the European Parliament, An Appraisal Of The Technologies Of Political Control, September 1998*

Satellites, millimeter waves, radar: *Winning The War: Advanced Weapons, Strategies, And Concepts For The Post-911 World, Col. John B. Alexander, US Army (RET.), (St. Martin's Press, 2003)*

Different frequencies of EM: *US Air Force, Air Command And Staff College, Maxwell AFB, An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025: An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities, May 1996*

Sensors are devices used for surveillance: *Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith; In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

A network of a variety of sensors: *Ibid*

At any level of the battlespace: *MITRE Corporation, From Netted Sensors to Swarming, October 24, 2005, Dr. Raja Suresh*

Sensors can scan for radio frequency: *Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide, Edited by Dylan D. Schmorrow, Kay M. Stanney, (Human Factors and Ergonomics Society, 2008); Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Third International Conference, FAC 2007, Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007); Weapons Grade: How Modern Warfare Gave Birth to our High-tech World, David Hambling, (Carroll & Graf Publishers, 2005); The Geeks of War: The Secretive Labs and Brilliant Minds Behind Tomorrow's Warfare Technology, John Edwards (AMACOM, 2005)*

Sensors exist that can monitor: *Ibid*

A network of multimodal: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004; DIA Workforce of the Future: Creating the Future of the Defense Intelligence Agency, May 15, 2003; Ibid (Hambling)*

Sensors known as smart dust: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998; Ibid (Hambling)*

Sensors can be deployed on satellites: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004; DIA Workforce of the Future: Creating the Future of the Defense Intelligence Agency, May 15, 2003*

Fixed sensors which: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation; Department of Defense, Office of Force Transformation, The Implementation of Network-Centric Warfare, January 5, 2005; Ibid (DSB)*

The DOD has done a vast: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

Sensors continue to become smaller: *War And Anti-War, Alvin and Heidi Toffler*

Millimeter waves (MMW): *Weapons Grade, David Hambling; National Defense, Non-Lethal Weapon Readied for Battlefield, January 1 2006, Stew Magnuson*

For instance, a device can be tuned: *Ibid*

The objects which interact with a MMW: *Winning The War, Col. John B. Alexander; Ibid (National Defense)*

Acoustic systems also exist: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

Ground penetrating radar (GPR): *Weapons Grade, David Hambling*

Satellites can be used for surveillance: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

Lasers can be used for high-precision: *Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Lasers In Space: Technological Options For Enhancing US Military Capabilities, November 1997, Mark E. Rogers, Lieutenant Colonel, USAF; Air Command And Staff College, Air University, Maxwell Air Force Base, Laser Options For National Missile Defense, April 1998, Steven G. Leonard, Major, USAF*

As a future capability, the Air Force: *US Air Force, Air Command And Staff College, Maxwell AFB, An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025: An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities, May 1996*

DARPA has been working on similar: *DARPATech 2004 Symposium, Assured Urban Operations Presentation, Anaheim, California, March 9, 2004*

A multi-purpose platform: *An Overview of the HAARP Program, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/gen1.html*

Mind-Reading

History

Since 1973 DARPA has been: *Los Angeles Times, Mind Reading Machine Tells Secrets of the Brain, Sci-Fi Comes True, March 29, 1976*

They developed a system: *Ibid*

In 1974 another very basic mind-reading: *Time Magazine, Mind-Reading Computer, July 1, 1974*

Another method to address this: *Ibid*

Since then, DARPA has sponsored: *The Geeks of War, John Edwards; Popular Science, Mind Over Machine, February 1, 2004, Carl Zimmer*

The Human Computer Interaction: *LiveScience Magazine, Computer to Read Minds, October 2, 2007, Lamont Wood*

Carnegie Mellon University, Stanford University: *Forbes, This is Your Brain On Shopping, January 5, 2007, Elisabeth Eaves*

The Computer Laboratory at the University of Cambridge: *University of Cambridge (UK), Mind-Reading Machines, Peter Robinson*

Other academic institutions that have: *ABC News, Mind-Reading Computer Picks Your Card, March 6, 2008; CNN.com, Military Wants to Study Mind-Reading, August 15, 2008; New Scientist, Mind-Reading Machine Knows What You See, April 25, 2005*

Microsoft has studied mind-reading: *New Scientist, Microsoft Mind Reading, October 15, 2007, Justin Mullins*

Honda Motors and Advanced Telecommunications: *Web Japan, Science & Technology, The Mind-Reading Robot, July 11, 2006*

Neuroimaging Devices

Scientists discovered that the neural: *Mind Wars: Brain Research and National Defense, Dr. Jonathan D. Moreno, (The Dana Foundation, 2006); Popular Science, Mind Over Machine, February 1, 2004, Carl Zimmer*

They now understand that it's not necessary: *Ibid*

There are basically two types of measurements: *Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide, Edited by Dylan D. Schmorrow, Kay M. Stanney, (Human Factors and Ergonomics Society, 2008); Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Third International Conference, FAC 2007, Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007)*

Both of these methods are almost: *Ibid*

Electroencephalography (EEG) provides a direct: *Electroencephalography, wikipedia.org/wiki/Electroencephalography; Ibid*

Wireless EEG which uses non-invasive: *Los Angeles Times, Mind Reading Machine Tells Secrets of the Brain, Sci-Fi Comes True, March 29, 1976*

However, in 2008 Discovery News reported: *Discovery Channel, Discovery News, Mind-Reading Game Headset to Hit Market, March 7, 2008, Eric Bland*

Functional magnetic resonance imaging (fMRI) measures: *Science News For Kids, Mind-reading Machine, March 26, 2008, Jennifer Cutraro; Functional Magnetic Resonance Imaging, wikipedia.org/wiki/Functional_magnetic_resonance_imaging*

The fMRI provides an indirect: *Augmented Cognition, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Kay M. Stanney; Technology Review, Mind Reading with Functional MRI, March 5, 2008, Emily Singer*

Functional near-infrared imaging (fNIR): *LiveScience Magazine, Computer to Read Minds, October 2, 2007, Lamont Wood; Ibid (Schmorrow, Stanney)*

fNIR can provide an almost: *Ibid*

Event-related optical signal (EROS): *Event-Related Optical Signal, wikipedia.org/wiki/Event-related_optical_signal; Ibid (Schmorrow, Stanney)*

Capabilities

The new realization is that every thought: *Newsweek International, Mind Reading is Here, February 4, 2008, Sharon Begley*

Just like you can find one person in a million: *US News and World Report, Reading Your Mind and Injecting Smart Thoughts, January 3, 2000, Douglas Pasternak*

Both words and images can be detected: *Popular Science, Mind Over Machine, February 1, 2004, Carl Zimmer; Computerworld Magazine, Scientists Build Mind-Reading Computer, February 6, 2008, Carrie-Ann Skinner; UK Telegraph, Mind-Reading Technique Developed in US, February 20, 2009; The Hindustan Times, Now, a Mind Reading Device that Could Predict What You're Looking at, March 6, 2008; Scientific American Mind, Neuroscientists Take Important Step toward Mind Reading, May 29, 2008, Christopher Intagliata*

It is possible to read someone's mind: *New Scientist, Mind-Reading Machine Knows What You See, April 25, 2005*

They announced that the technology: *Physorg, Dreams May no Longer be Secret with Japan Computer Screen, December 11, 2008*

Vanderbilt University in Nashville: *UK Telegraph, Mind-Reading Technique Developed in US, February 20, 2009*

University of California at Berkeley accomplished mind-reading: *ABC News, Mind-Reading Computer Picks Your Card, March 6, 2008*

In addition to deciphering these brain patterns: *Scientific American Mind, Neuroscientists Take Important Step toward Mind Reading, May 29, 2008, Christopher Intagliata; Ibid*

The scientists announced: *The Hindustan Times, Now, a Mind Reading Device that Could Predict What You're Looking at, March 6, 2008*

out of 1 billion pictures, the computer: *ABC News, Mind-Reading Computer Picks Your Card, March 6, 2008*

Images which are not consciously seen: *New Scientist, Mind-Reading Machine Knows What You See, April 25, 2005; The Daily Mail (London, England), Mind-Reading Machine that Could Flush Out Fibs, April 30, 2005*

Like a fingerprint, each person: *US News and World Report, Reading Your Mind and Injecting Smart Thoughts, January 3, 2000, Douglas Pasternak*

In the case of EEG: *Discovery Channel, Discovery News, Mind-Reading Game Headset to Hit Market, March 7, 2008, Eric Bland*

Using fMRI, scientists at Carnegie Mellon: *Newsweek International, Mind Reading is Here, February 4, 2008, Sharon Begley*

Scientists at the University of California at Berkeley: *Press and Journal, The Aberdeen (UK), Reading the Mind May be Possible, March 6, 2008*

Likewise, the brain patterns associated with specific: *The Hindustan Times, A Mind Reading Thinking Cap Has Arrived!, March 10, 2006*

A mind-reading machine capable: *Computerworld Magazine, Scientists Build Mind-Reading Computer, February 6, 2008, Carrie-Ann Skinner*

These building blocks could be used: *Ibid*

translate a person's working verbal memory: *Popular Science, Mind Over Machine, February 1, 2004, Carl Zimmer*

fMRI can be used to determine: *US News and World Report, Reading Your Mind and Injecting Smart Thoughts, January 3, 2000, Douglas Pasternak*

And because these patterns are similar: *The Hindustan Times, A Mind Reading Thinking Cap Has Arrived!, March 10, 2006*

In March of 2008 both Technology Review: *ABC News, Mind-Reading Computer Picks Your Card, March 6, 2008; Technology Review, Mind Reading with Functional MRI, March 5, 2008, Emily Singer*

Emotions from love to hate: *LiveScience Magazine, Computer to Read Minds, October 2, 2007, Lamont Wood; US News and World Report, Reading Your Mind and Injecting Smart Thoughts, January 3, 2000, Douglas Pasternak*

Brain states such as honesty: *Mind Wars, Dr. Jonathan D. Moreno*

Patterns associated with decisions: *Forbes, This is Your Brain On Shopping, January 5, 2007, Elisabeth Eaves*
Neuroimaging can also detect decisions: *The Mercury (South Africa), Scientists One Step Closer to Reading Minds, March 6, 2007*
Neuroimaging can be used to determine: *ABC News, Mind-Reading Computer Picks Your Card, March 6, 2008; Science News For Kids, Mind-reading Machine, March 26, 2008, Jennifer Cutraro*
Brain patterns associated with specific physical: *Popular Science, Mind Over Machine, February 1, 2004, Carl Zimmer; Slate Magazine, The Arrival of Mind-Reading Machines, March 20, 2007, William Saletan; Web Japan, Science & Technology, The Mind-Reading Robot, July 11, 2006; The Mercury (South Africa), Scientists One Step Closer to Reading Minds, March 6, 2007*

Cameras

A type of mind-reading is possible with cameras: *CNET News, MIT Group Develops 'Mind-Reading' Device, April 4, 2006, Candace Lombardi*
When an emotional state is detected: *Ibid*
Around this time, the Computer Laboratory: *University of Cambridge (UK), Mind-Reading Machines, Peter Robinson*

Used for Surveillance

Mapping human brain functions is now routine: *US News and World Report, Reading Your Mind and Injecting Smart Thoughts, January 3, 2000, Douglas Pasternak*
The proposed uses for mind-reading: *New Scientist, Mind-Reading Machine Knows What You See, April 25, 2005; CNN.com, Military Wants to Study Mind-Reading, August 15, 2008; CNET News, MIT Group Develops 'Mind-Reading' Device, April 4, 2006, Candace Lombardi; Computerworld Magazine, Scientists Build Mind-Reading Computer, February 6, 2008, Carrie-Ann Skinner; The Daily Mail (London, England), Mind-Reading Machine that Could Flush Out Fibs, April 30, 2005; University of Cambridge (UK), Mind-Reading Machines, Peter Robinson; Slate Magazine, The Arrival of Mind-Reading Machines, March 20, 2007, William Saletan; Komo News, Brain Fingerprinting Could be Breakthrough in Law Enforcement, October 10, 2008; Ibid*
However, other uses that have been suggested: *Ibid (CNN; Komo)*
Dr. John Alexander mentioned that the recent: *Winning The War, Col. John B. Alexander*
Dr. Norseen has sent R&D plans to the pentagon: *US News and World Report, Reading Your Mind and Injecting Smart Thoughts, January 3, 2000, Douglas Pasternak*
used to interrogate the enemy: *CNN.com, Military Wants to Study Mind-Reading, August 15, 2008*
a new forensic technology: *Law Enforcement Technology, What You Don't Know Can't Hurt You, September 1, 2005, Sam Simon; Komo News, Brain Fingerprinting Could be Breakthrough in Law Enforcement, October 10, 2008*

Volume III Weapons of The New War

Introduction to Nonlethal Weapons

Description
Non-lethal weapons (NLW) have also been: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

They are used to incapacitate: *Department of the Army, TRADOC Pamphlet 525-73, Concept for Nonlethal Capabilities in Army Operations, December 1, 1996; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

NLW are not required to have: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

weapons that are explicitly designed and primarily: *Georgetown Journal of International Law, Tangled Up in Khaki and Blue: Lethal and Non-Lethal Weapons in Recent Confrontations, April 1, 2005, David A Koplow*

described by the National Institute of Justice (NIJ): *Ibid*

NLW cover a wide range of many technologies: *US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley; Council on Foreign Relations, Non-Lethal Technologies: Progress and Prospects, October 27, 1999; Daily Breeze (Los Angeles Newspaper), Pentagon is Searching for Non-Lethal Weapons, March 24, 2002, Seth Hettena; Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, Center for Strategy and Technology, Non-Lethal Technologies: Implications for Military Strategy, March 1998, Colonel Joseph Siniscalchi, USAF*

Many of these weapons can be accurately: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

The people who operate these weapons: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

These weapons can be organized by function: *US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley; Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, Center for Strategy and Technology, Non-Lethal Technologies: Implications for Military Strategy, March 1998, Colonel Joseph Siniscalchi, USAF*

For this introduction they'll be listed by technology: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998; Ibid (USAF, Potential Strategic Blessings)*

Used in Combination

NLW are to be used in combination: *Council on Foreign Relations, Non-Lethal Technologies: Progress and Prospects, October 27, 1999; National Defense, Non-lethal Weapons to Gain Relevancy in Future Conflicts, March 1 2002, John B. Alexander*

In both their 2004 Non-Lethal Weapons: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 7, May 2005, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

The NRC described that the synergistic: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

According to the US military: *Daily Breeze (Los Angeles Newspaper), Pentagon is Searching for Non-Lethal Weapons, March 24, 2002, Seth Hettena; University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

Psychological Operations
Description
Psychological operations (PsyOp) are a planned process: *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Psychological Operations and Political Warfare in Long-term Strategic Planning, Janos Radvany, (Praeger, 1990)*

Psychological operations are planned operations: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

A TA is defined by the Joint Chiefs of Staff: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003*

PsyOp is used across the entire spectrum of conflict: *Psychological Operations and Political Warfare in Long-term Strategic Planning, Janos Radvany; Joint Warfighting Center, Irregular Warfare Special Study, August 4, 2006; War on the Mind: The Military Uses and Abuses of Psychology, Peter Watson, (Basic Books Inc., 1978); Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003; Department of the Army, Psychological Operations Tactics, Techniques, and Procedures, FM 3-05.301 (FM 33-1-1), MCRP 3-40.6A, December 2003*

Planning for PsyOp is the same: *Ibid*

Furthermore, the Council on Foreign Relations: *Council on Foreign Relations, Non-Lethal Technologies: Progress and Prospects, October 27, 1999*

directed at the physiological or psychological: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

A book published in 2000: *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein*

have it listed as a type of information operation: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

IO consists of five core capabilities: *Joint Publication 3-13, Information Operations, February 13, 2006*

They include: psychological operations (PsyOp): *Ibid*

Of the five, PsyOp, MILDEC: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

The term psychological warfare: *Science of Coercion: Communication Research and Psychological Warfare, Christopher Simpson, (Oxford University Press, 1994)*

Military deception (MILDEC) seeks: *Joint Publication 3-13.4, Military Deception, July 13, 2006; US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007; Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003*

It does this to the point of managing: *Ibid*

Neocortical warfare is RAND's version of PsyOp: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

the effects based operation (EBO): *Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*

Furthermore, terms used in the UK: *War on the Mind, Peter Watson*

PsyOp has been used since ancient times: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Psychological Operations and Political Warfare in Long-term Strategic Planning, Janos Radvany; Science of Coercion, Christopher Simpson*

Psychological manipulation of opposing forces: *Ibid*

More recently, it has been used by totalitarian regimes: *Psychological Warfare, wikipedia.org/wiki/Psychological_warfare; Ibid (Radvany; Simpson)*

Organizations which had a significant influence: *Ibid (Simpson)*

Structure

PsyOp is a core part of civil-military operations (CMO): *Joint Publication 3-13, Information Operations, February 13, 2006; Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007; Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004*

The controlling faction of these PsyOp/CMO: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Military Operations Other Than War, J-7 Operational Plans and Interoperability Directorate, www.dtic.mil/dtic/index.html; Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003; The Information Revolution and National Security, Thomas E. Copeland*

In the US this means FEMA: *Ibid*

These operations are run from: *Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008*

The host nation (HN) provides the military: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004; The Information Revolution and National Security, Thomas E. Copeland*

Products

A product is an action, event, or media: *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Department of the Army, Psychological Operations Tactics, Techniques, and Procedures, FM 3-05.301 (FM 33-1-1), MCRP 3-40.6A, December 2003*

a line of communication known as a theme: *Ibid*

Audio products include radio broadcasts: *Associated Press, Navy, Marines Urged to Give Nonlethal Weapon Development Top Priority, November 5, 2002, Randolph E. Schmid; Ibid (US Army)*

Visual products include items: *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Ibid (US Army)*

They include: matches, lighters, soap: *Ibid*

Other visual products are: *Medscape General Medicine, Psychiatry & Mental Health, PSYOPS: Psychological Operations, February 24, 2003, Ronnie S. Stangler, MD; US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006; Ibid*

PsyOP audiovisual products use sight: *Ibid (US Army; Canadian Forces Doctrine Board)*

To help create professional quality audiovisual: *Ibid*

PsyOp Organizations

In PsyOp the battlespace is sometimes: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Joint Publication 3-13, Information Operations, February 13, 2006; US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

a psychological operations group (POG): *Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008*

The POG consists of military: *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004*

The Fourth Psychological Operations Group (4th POG): *Global Security, 4th POG, www.globalsecurity.org/military/agency/army/4psyopgp.htm; War on the Mind, Peter Watson; Psychological Operations and Political Warfare in Long-term Strategic Planning, Janos Radvany*

It has intelligence sections that gather: *Ibid*

The 4th POG provides support such as propaganda: *Ibid*

It has mobile radio monitoring stations: *Ibid*

It also has tactical teams: *Ibid*

The United States Special Operations Command (SOCOM): *United States Special Operations Command, wikipedia.org/wiki/USSOCOM*

SOCOM has multiple units: *Ibid*

SOCOM conducts PsyOp: *Ibid*

The PsyOp Task Force (POTF): *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

The Tactical PsyOp Detachment (TPD): *Ibid*

A Tactical PsyOp Team (TPT): *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Ibid*

A Tactical Product Development Detachment: *Ibid (Canadian Forces Doctrine Board)*

Prior to PsyOp activities, a PsyOp Assessment Team: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

Equipment

The equipment used by PsyOp units: *War on the Mind, Peter Watson; Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Department of the Army, Psychological Operations Tactics, Techniques, and Procedures, FM 3-05.301 (FM 33-1-1), MCRP 3-40.6A, December 2003*

Production may be done by the 4th POG: *Ibid*

PsyOp units locate and establish contracts: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Headquarters, Peace Operations (FM 100-23), December 30, 1994; Ibid (US Army; Canadian Forces Doctrine Board)*

The units also determine the location of radio: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003; Medscape General Medicine, Psychiatry & Mental Health, PSYOPS: Psychological Operations, February 24, 2003, Ronnie S. Stangler, MD; Air Force Doctrine Document 2-5.3, Psychological Operations, August 27, 1999; Air and Space Power Journal, Leveraging Technology for PSYOP Beyond 2010, April 6, 2004, Maj Douglas W. Jaquish, USAF; Ibid (US Army; Canadian Forces Doctrine Board)*

In addition to transmitting PsyOp: *Ibid (Air and Space Power Journal)*

The Council on Foreign Relations: *Council On Foreign Relations, Task Force Report, Nonlethal Weapons And Capabilities, 2005, Graham T. Allison, Paul X. Kelley, Richard L. Garwin; Council on Foreign Relations, Report of an Independent Task Force, Non-Lethal Technologies: Military Options and Implications, 1995, Malcolm H. Wiener; Council on Foreign Relations, Non-Lethal Technologies: Progress and Prospects, October 27, 1999*

Also worth mentioning is digital morphing: *Washington Post, When Seeing and Hearing Isn't Believing, Febuary 1, 1999, William M. Arkin; CBS News, Some of What You See Isn't There, January 12, 2000, Alex Kuczynski*

In addition, morphing allows for graphics: *Ibid*

The DSB recognized the usefulness: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

C4ISR

PsyOp units use a C4ISR system: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003; Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Air Force Doctrine Document 2-5.3, Psychological Operations, August 27, 1999*

Units are connected to the intelligence cycle: *Ibid*

In addition, the C4ISR system allows: *Ibid (USAF)*

Each AO has a senior PsyOp officer: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003; Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds*

The TA's reaction: *Ibid (JP 3-53)*

TA Profile

TA analysis is necessary to plan: *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology, by Lt Colonel, David J. Dean, USAF; War on the Mind, Peter Watson; Psychological Operations and Political Warfare in Long-term Strategic Planning, Janos Radvany*

Experts in the behavioral sciences: *Ibid*

Factors that are considered include: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003; British War Office, Staff Officers Guide to Psychological Operations, 1962, www.psywar.org; Ibid (Canadian Forces Doctrine Board)*

Themes and Symbols

Communication with a TA usually: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Ibid (Canadian Forces Doctrine Board; JP 3-53)*

A theme can be thought of as a series: *Ibid*

PsyOp personnel use the principles of marketing: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006; Department of the Army, Psychological Operations Tactics, Techniques, and Procedures, FM 3-05.301 (FM 33-1-1), MCRP 3-40.6A, December 2003; Ibid (Canadian Forces Doctrine Board)*

There are several categories of themes: *Ibid (US Army)*

Legitimacy themes: *War on the Mind, Peter Watson; Ibid*

Inevitability themes rely on the fear: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Ibid (US Army)*

Any recent tragedies suffered: *Ibid*

Other types of messages that exploit: *British War Office, Staff Officers Guide to Psychological Operations, 1962, www.psywar.org*

Psychological Actions

The military also establishes contact: *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Department of the Army, Psychological Operations Tactics, Techniques, and Procedures, FM 3-05.301 (FM 33-1-1), MCRP 3-40.6A, December 2003*

Both require that the people involved: *Ibid*

There are multiple references: *Ibid (US Army)*

Only the limitations of the supported unit: *Ibid*

agents of action (also called actors): *Ibid*

Key communicators are individuals (including civilians): *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Ibid*

PsyActs can take place during rallies: *Ibid (Canadian Forces Doctrine Board)*

This is a type of live theater performance: *Ibid*

Preparation of AO/Perception Management

Those who design PsyOp campaigns: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

After a person has been profiled: *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004; Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003*

Products are distributed to the TA: *Ibid*

Part of PsyOp production involves: *Ibid*

After learning an individual's representational system: *The Structure of Magic: A Book About Language and Therapy, Richard Bandler, John Grinder, (Science and Behavior Books, June 1975); The Structure of Magic II: A Book About Communication and Change, Richard Bandler, John Grinder, (Science and Behavior Books, August 1975)*

Knowing what the adversary values: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

In order to change the behavior of a TA: *The Information Revolution and National Security, Thomas E. Copeland*

To accomplish this, the entire system: *Joint Publication 3-13.4, Military Deception, July 13, 2006*

almost complete control can be established: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

Behavior modification also requires that the TA's: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003*

To modify the behavior of the TA: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

Through maximizing all media assets: *Department of the Army, Psychological Operations Tactics, Techniques, and Procedures, FM 3-05.301 (FM 33-1-1), MCRP 3-40.6A, December 2003*

powerfully disseminated directly to the targeted audiences: *Department of Defense, Information Operations Roadmap, October 30, 2003*

no possible channel of communication can be ignored: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

Other Tactics

Isolating people from their support structure: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

They also seek to establish: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003*

The types of support: *Ibid*

denying the enemy basic human needs: *United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds*

Removing food and water: *Ibid*

The US military has specifically stated: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

by conducting a rumor campaign: *Canadian Forces Doctrine Board, Joint Psychological Operations (B-GJ-005-313/FP-001), January 15, 2004*

The R2 also sharpens the story: Ibid

PsyOp attacks are synchronized with core: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004; Joint Publication 3-13, Information Operations, February 13, 2006*

The innovative combination of electronic weapons platforms: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

EW is used to isolate, disrupt, and influence: *Joint Publication 3-13, Information Operations, February 13, 2006; Joint Publication 3-13.1, Electronic Warfare, January 25, 2007*

CNO are used to attack, deny: *Ibid (JP 3-13 IO)*

The battlespace includes the internet: *Department of Defense, Information Operations Roadmap, October 30, 2003; Air Force Doctrine Document 2-5.3, Psychological Operations, August 27, 1999*

Some IW activities, such as terrorism: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007*

frightening the population into inactivity: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

Objectives

the ultimate goal of PsyOp is to modify: *Department of the Army, Decisive Force: The Army in Theater Operations (FM 100-7); US Air Force, Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Military Operations Other Than War, October 5, 1996*

To accomplish this, a relentless campaign: *Psychological Operations and Political Warfare in Long-term Strategic Planning, Janos Radvany*

Attrition is the product of gradual: *Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*

The triggers contained in these themes: *United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds; Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Publication 3-53, Doctrine for Joint Psychological Operations, September 2003*

A psychologist looking at our efforts: *Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*

Messages and themes must be clearly understood: *United States Army Command and General Staff College, School of Advanced Military Studies, Deterring and Responding to Asymmetrical Threats, May 22, 2003, Major John W. Reynolds*

An anchor is created when an emotional state: *Introducing NLP: Psychological Skills for Understanding and Influencing People, Joseph O'Connor and John Seymour, (Thorsons Publishers, 1993)*

Once the anchor has been established: *Ibid*

NLP has been used by personal-growth: *NLP: The New Technology of Achievement, Steve Andreas and Charles Faulkner, (Harper Paperbacks, 1996); Ibid*

An intelligence and security unit: *The Warrior's Edge, Colonel John B. Alexander, Janet Morris, Major Richard Groller, (Avon Books, 1992)*

The RAND Corporation has suggested that NLP: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

Pain is inflicted until the victim: *Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*

The BSSR described how the application: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice*

It was also used by the KGB: *Ibid*

Electronic Warfare Part 1

Introduction to Directed Energy Weapons

Description

DE is an umbrella term covering technologies: *Joint Publication 3-13.1, Electronic Warfare, January 25, 2007*

Microwaves and lasers are both part: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

Toward the low end of the spectrum: *Electromagnetic Spectrum, wikipedia.org/wiki/Electromagnetic_spectrum*

Because lasers have a shorter wavelength: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

A high-powered microwave (HPM) and microwave oven: *Ibid*

This feature makes them rheostatic: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

An example of this is the Active Denial: *National Defense, High-Tech Weapons Mix Targets Urban Hazards, June 1 2006, Stew Magnuson*

The second is the electromagnetic bomb: *Journal of California Law Enforcement, Radio Frequency Weapons: Issues and Potentials, January 1, 2002, Robert J. Bunker; Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007*

Lasers consist of two basic groups: *US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley*

DEWs are subject to diffraction: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

Diffraction can be used to the advantage: *Ibid*

DEWs offer the following capabilities: *Journal of California Law Enforcement, Radio Frequency Weapons: Issues and Potentials, January 1, 2002, Robert J. Bunker; National Defense, High-Tech Weapons Mix Targets Urban Hazards, June 1 2006, Stew Magnuson; US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley; Chicago Sun-Times, Military May Use Light, Radio Beams To Fight, July 10, 2005, Brian Bergstein; The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel*

In addition, they are scalable: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006; Ibid (Chicago Sun-Times)*

Some can pass through most: *Ibid (Chicago Sun-Times)*

And their use is virtually: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel*

These weapons are mounted: *War And Anti-War, Alvin and Heidi Toffler*

Other platforms evidently exist: *Journal of California Law Enforcement, Radio Frequency Weapons: Issues and Potentials, January 1, 2002, Robert J. Bunker*

The advantage of directed energy: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

Tracking & Fire Control

Much research on FTP/FC: *Global Security, Acquisition, Tracking, Pointing, and Fire Control Program, www.globalsecurity.org/space/systems/atp-fc.htm*

Wide-area (broad) sensors: *Ibid*

Different sensors are used during the multiple phases: *Ibid*
Then the next target is selected: *Federation of American Scientists, Ballistic Missile Defense Budget Activity, Acquisition, Tracking, Pointing and Fire Control Technology, February 1994, www.fas.org/spp/starwars/budget/peds_95/603217c9.htm*
In its 1984 directed-energy plan: *Global Security, Acquisition, Tracking, Pointing, and Fire Control Program, www.globalsecurity.org/space/systems/atp-fc.htm*

High-Powered Microwaves

Introduction

High-powered Microwaves (HPM) include two: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel*
They have a variety of applications: *United States Air Force, School of Advanced Military Studies, United States Army Command and General Staff College, Directed Energy Weapons: Do We Have a Game Plan? (Monograph, AY 03-04), Major Timothy J. Lincoln*
Many of the details: *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart*

Active Denial Technology

A maser is similar to a laser: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*
The ADT is a type of maser: USA Today, Military Embrace Of 'Non-Lethal' Energy Weapons Sparks Debate, August 2, 2004, Michael P. Regan
The ADT's development: *Wired, Say Hello to the Goodbye Weapon, December 05, 2006, David Hambling*
The wave emitted from: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*
The ADS is a counter-personnel, non-lethal: *JNLWP, ADS Fact Sheet*
In addition, there are both hardware: *Ibid*
It is powered by a 100 kW ultra-high: *Design News, Military Beams Over New Non-Lethal Weapon, May 12, 2008, John Dodge*
The device is cooled with: *Ibid*
The power level of the ADS is adjustable: *National Public Radio (NPR), All Things Considered, Non-Lethal Weapon Emits Invisible Rays of Pain, October 29 2007, Robert Siegel (Host)*
Its focal point can be adjusted too: *Ibid*
They include a heating: *National Defense, Non-Lethal Weapon Readied for Battlefield, January 1 2006, Stew Magnuson; Journal of California Law Enforcement, Radio Frequency Weapons: Issues and Potentials, January 1, 2002, Robert J. Bunker*
It can also produce resonance: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*
The ADS passes through: *National Defense, Non-Lethal Weapon Readied for Battlefield, January 1 2006, Stew Magnuson*
for neutralizing individuals: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*
With its long range and rapid: *Council On Foreign Relations, Task Force Report, Nonlethal Weapons And Capabilities, 2005, Graham T. Allison, Paul X. Kelley, Richard L. Garwin*
a person suffered an injury: *New Scientist, Details of US Microwave-Weapon Tests Revealed, July 22, 2005, David Hambling*
flesh-frying killer: *ABC News, Army Orders Pain Ray Trucks, New Report Shows Potential for Death, October 10, 2008, David Hambling*

traceless form of urban political control: *The Guardian, Targeting the Pain Business, October 5, 2006, Steve Wright, Charles Arthur*

The National Institute of Justice (NIJ): *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 7, May 2005, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

mobile ADT units to police forces: *New Scientist, Police Toy With 'Less Lethal' Weapons, May 2005, David Hambling*

And National Defense News reported: *National Defense, Non-Lethal Weapon Readied for Battlefield, January 1 2006, Stew Magnuson*

The NIJ's interest in these smaller weapons: *ABC News, Army Orders Pain Ray Trucks, New Report Shows Potential for Death, October 10, 2008, David Hambling*

Active Denial System 2

The ADS2, also called System 2: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 8, March 2006, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

ADS1 was the prototype version of this weapon: *National Defense Magazine, Defense Dept. Pursuing Next-Generation Nonlethal Weapons, February 2,009, David B. Law*

The ADS2 has improvements: *United Press International, Raytheon Delivers ADS2 to USAF, September 11, 2007*

Project Sheriff

Project Sheriff, also called Full Spectrum Effects Platform: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 8, March 2006, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer; New Scientist, Details of US Microwave-Weapon Tests Revealed, July 22, 2005, David Hambling*

The unit contains a suite of lethal: *National Defense, High-Tech Weapons Mix Targets Urban Hazards, June 1 2006, Stew Magnuson*

The FSEP is also equipped with a lethal: *Ibid*

it automatically swivels: *Ibid*

Silent Guardian

The Silent Guardian, built by Raytheon: *The Guardian, Targeting the Pain Business, October 5, 2006, Steve Wright, Charles Arthur; Popular Mechanics, Tech Watch: Forecasting Pain, December 2006, David Hambling*

It can switch from standby: *Raytheon Company, Silent Guardian Protection System Fact Sheet, www.raytheon.com; ABC News, Army Orders Pain Ray Trucks, New Report Shows Potential for Death, October 10, 2008, David Hambling*

Allegedly it will be used for checkpoint security: *The Guardian, Targeting the Pain Business, October 5, 2006, Steve Wright, Charles Arthur*

precise targeting of specific individuals: *Raytheon Company, Silent Guardian Protection System Fact Sheet, www.raytheon.com*

In addition to the auto-tracking feature: *ABC News, Army Orders Pain Ray Trucks, New Report Shows Potential for Death, October 10, 2008, David Hambling; Popular Mechanics, Tech Watch: Forecasting Pain, December 2006, David Hambling*

The infrared sensors: *The Guardian, Targeting the Pain Business, October 5, 2006, Steve Wright, Charles Arthur*

Vigilant Eagle

Vigilant Eagle is a ground-based: *Microwave Journal, Defense News, Raytheon to Demonstrate Aircraft Protection System, December 2006*

Its intended use is to detect: *The Guardian, Targeting the Pain Business, October 5, 2006, Steve Wright, Charles Arthur; Wired (Associated Press), Beam It Right There, Scotty, July 10, 2005*

The sensor unit includes: *Microwave Journal, Defense News, Raytheon to Demonstrate Aircraft Protection System, December 2006*

The C2 unit is referred: *Space Daily, Vigilant Eagle Incorporates New Technology For Urban Warfare, May 18, 2006, www.spacedaily.com*

The large rectangular antenna: *Global Security, Vigilant Eagle, www.globalsecurity.org/security/systems/vigilant-eagle.htm; Raytheon Produces Active Denial and Other Directed Energy Solutions, www.raytheon.com/newsroom/technology/rtn08_ads/index.html*

Electromagnetic Pulse Weapon

The electromagnetic pulse (EMP): *Journal of Electronic Defense, Killing Them Softly, August 1, 1993, Don Herskovitz; Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart*

The weapon accomplishes this: *International Review of the Red Cross, The Development of New Antipersonnel Weapons, November 1, 1990, Louise Doswald-Beck, Gerald C. Cauderay; Ibid*

These pulses are similar to a lightening: *Ibid (Red Cross)*

The specific method by which the pulse: *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart*

It can also occur with ports: *Journal of Electronic Defense, Killing Them Softly, August 1, 1993, Don Herskovitz*

The precise targeting of electronic devices: *Federation of American Scientists, Non-Lethal Weapons for Military Operations Other Than War, Spring 1997, Vol III, Cadet First Class Joseph M. Suhajda*

Next, it can be configured to send a single pulse: *United States Air Force, School of Advanced Military Studies, United States Army Command and General Staff College, Directed Energy Weapons: Do We Have a Game Plan? (Monograph, AY 03-04), Major Timothy J. Lincoln*

Furthermore, a series of fast pulses: *Ibid*

It is possible today to generate a very powerful: *International Review of the Red Cross, The Development of New Antipersonnel Weapons, November 1, 1990, Louise Doswald-Beck, Gerald C. Cauderay*

There is allegedly no unshielded device: *Star Wars, Star Trek and Killing Politely, Dr. Nick Begich, www.earthpulse.com*

destroy any electronic device within its range: *Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, Center for Strategy and Technology, Non-Lethal Technologies: Implications for Military Strategy, March 1998, Colonel Joseph Siniscalchi, USAF*

Its intended targets include: *Journal of Electronic Defense, Killing Them Softly, August 1, 1993, Don Herskovitz; The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel*

Another proposed use: *Journal of California Law Enforcement, Radio Frequency Weapons: Issues and Potentials, January 1, 2002, Robert J. Bunker*

They can be mounted on aircraft: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel*

The ground-based weapons: *Journal of California Law Enforcement, Radio Frequency Weapons: Issues and Potentials, January 1, 2002, Robert J. Bunker*

In 1997 the FAS advocated: *Federation of American Scientists, Non-Lethal Weapons for Military Operations Other Than War, Spring 1997, Vol III, Cadet First Class Joseph M. Suhajda*
The space-based high-power microwave (HPM) weapon: *US Air Force, Air Command And Staff College, Maxwell AFB, An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025: An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities, May 1996*

High-Powered Lasers

Introduction

Lasers (light amplification by stimulated emission of radiation): *Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007; Naval War College (Joint Military Operations Department), Transforming How We Fight Through Effects-Based Operations & Non-Lethal Weapons, May 17, 2004, Lieutenant Colonel David B. Hall, USMC; National Defense, Directed Energy Viewed as Transforming, October 1, 2002, Elizabeth G. Book*
They have both counter personnel: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley*
While laser research dates back to the late 1950s: *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart; Maxwell Air Force Base, Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Air University, Lasers and Missile Defense: New Concepts For Space-Based And Ground-Based Laser Weapons, July 1998, William H. Possel, Lt Col, USAF*
In the late 1960s Russia: *Flug Review, Kosmoplan, Killer Satellites and a Battle Station, December 2000, Gerhard Kowalski*
Lasers can be infrared, ultraviolet: *Laser, wikipedia.org/wiki/Laser*
The two basic modes of operation are pulsed: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*
Lasers can be phased: *Ibid*
Laser weapon platforms: *Maxwell Air Force Base, Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Air University, Lasers and Missile Defense: New Concepts For Space-Based And Ground-Based Laser Weapons, July 1998, William H. Possel, Lt Col, USAF; Maxwell Air Force Base, Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Airborne and Space-Based Lasers: An Analysis of Technological and Operational Compatibility, June 1999, Kenneth W. Barker, Lt. Colonel, USAF*
All of these conditions exist: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD; The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel*
So, a feature called Adaptive Optics: *Ibid (Beason)*
The mirror is adjusted so the high-powered: *Maxwell Air Force Base, Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Air University, Lasers and Missile Defense: New Concepts For Space-Based And Ground-Based Laser Weapons, July 1998, William H. Possel, Lt Col, USAF; Ibid*

Chemical Lasers

Chemical lasers are capable: *Chemical Laser, wikipedia.org/wiki/Chemical_laser*
They include the Chemical Oxygen: *Maxwell Air Force Base, Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Air University, Lasers and Missile Defense: New Concepts For Space-Based And Ground-Based Laser Weapons, July 1998, William H. Possel, Lt Col, USAF*

The Airborne Laser (ABL): *Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007*

Because of the corrosive nature of these: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

The Pulsed-Energy Projectile (PEP): *Daily Mail, UK, Run Away the Ray-Gun is Coming: We Test US Army's New Secret Weapon, September 18, 2007, Michael Hanlon*

It has a tunable effect: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

Some of its effects: *In These Times, Non-Lethal Weaponry: The Next Generation, January 1, 2007, Silja Talvi*

A single burst can produce: *National Defense, Non-lethal Weapons to Gain Relevancy in Future Conflicts, March 1 2002, John B. Alexander*

Mission Research Corporation: *Ibid*

According to the National Research Council: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

The Center for Technology and National: *Defense Horizons (Center for Technology and National Security Policy), Nonlethal Capabilities: Realizing the Opportunities, March, 2002, Emil. R. Bedard*

In May 2005, New Scientist reported: *New Scientist, Police Toy With 'Less Lethal' Weapons, May 2005, David Hambling*

Both the Tactical High-Energy Laser (THEL): *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

The THEL will be used to protect: *Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007*

It uses a combination of radar: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel*

In the summer of 2004 the THEL successfully: *Business Wire, TRW Uses World's First Laser Weapon to Shoot Down Operational Rocket, June 7, 2000; Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007; Ibid*

capable of moving around solid objects: *National Defense, Directed-Energy Weapons Promise Low Cost Per Kill, September 1, 2001, Sandra I. Erwin*

SkyGuard, developed by Northrop Grumman: *SpaceWar, Ray Guns: Northrop Grumman Develops Skyguard Laser Defense System For Local Defense, July 13, 2006, www.spacewar.com*

a wide range of threats: *Ibid*

The Advanced Tactical Laser (ATL) is a product: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

Although it was originally intended: *National Defense, Non-lethal Weapons to Gain Relevancy in Future Conflicts, March 1 2002, John B. Alexander*

The platform consists of a laser: *National Defense, Directed-Energy Weapons Promise Low Cost Per Kill, September 1, 2001, Sandra I. Erwin; National Defense, Directed Energy: Low Power Weapons on the Rise, February 1, 2008, Breanne Wagner*

The ATL has an ultra-precision: *United States Air Force, School of Advanced Military Studies, United States Army Command and General Staff College, Directed Energy Weapons: Do We Have a Game Plan? (Monograph, AY 03-04), Major Timothy J. Lincoln*

capable of attacking military targets at 15 miles: *National Defense, Non-lethal Weapons to Gain Relevancy in Future Conflicts, March 1 2002, John B. Alexander; Ibid*

The Airborne Laser (ABL) is an air-based: *Ibid (USAF)*

The detection, tracking and acquisition unit: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel; The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

The ABL was originally designed: *Journal of Electronic Defense, Directed Energy Warfare: Something for a Star Wars Sequel?, December 1, 1997, Beth Jannery*

It was tested: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel*

Solid-State Lasers

Solid-state lasers (SSL) have an electric gain medium: *Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

They have kilowatt power levels: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

Some solid-state pulsed lasers: *Ibid*

A CW laser can cut through: *Ibid*

Due to their potentially unlimited magazine capacity: *Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007; National Defense, Directed-Energy Weapons Promise Low Cost Per Kill, September 1, 2001, Sandra I. Erwin*

Under the section, Joint High Power Man-Portable: *Department of Defense, Non-Lethal Weapons Program, 2007 Annual Report*

a highly portable 100 kilowatt electric laser: *The Los Angeles Times, Northrop Advance Brings Era Of The Laser Gun Closer, March 19, 2009, Peter Pae*

The High Energy Liquid Laser Area Defense System: *High Energy Liquid Laser Area Defense System, wikipedia.org/wiki/High_Energy_Liquid_Laser_Area_Defense_System*

Although the gain medium consists of a liquid: *New Scientist, US on Course For Shrink-To-Fit Laser, August 2005, David Cohen, Helen Knight*

It is to be built by General Atomics: *DARPA's 'Star Wars'-Style Laser Cannon, August 30, 2005, Bill Christensen, www.space.com*

DARPA had this to say: *High Energy Liquid Laser Area Defense System (HELLADS), Don Woodbury, www.darpa.mil/tto/programs/hellads.htm*

It was intended to be an air-based weapon: *New Scientist, US on Course For Shrink-To-Fit Laser, August 2005, David Cohen, Helen Knight*

Lockheed Martin says the laser: *Press Release, Lockheed Martin Corporation, Friday, May 6, 2005, www.spaceref.com*

The Laser Area Defense System (LADS): *LADS Specification Sheet, Laser Area Defense System (LADS), Close-in Protection Against Asymmetric Threats, www.raytheon.com*

LADS can be powered by a commercially: *PRNewswire, Raytheon Company, January 9, 2007*

According to Raytheon, the control: *LADS Specification Sheet, Laser Area Defense System (LADS), Close-in Protection Against Asymmetric Threats, www.raytheon.com; Ibid*

Free Electron Lasers (FEL) are: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

This includes the millimeter wavelength: The Geeks of War, John Edwards

It is expected to produce: *Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007*

In 2004 the creation a 10 kilowatt FEL: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 6, October 2004, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

The DSB says the FEL is equipped: *Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007*

The Laser Induced Plasma Channel (LIPC): *Applied Energetics (AE), Laser Guided Energy, www.appliedenergetics.com*

AE built this weapon for the US Military: *Ibid*

DRS built its energy management: *Business Wire, DRS Technologies and Ionatron Sign Strategic Agreement for Laser-Induced, May 4, 2006*

It is a counter personnel and counter material weapon: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 5, May 2004, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

precision delivery of massive amounts: *National Defense Magazine, Defense Dept. Pursuing Next-Generation Nonlethal Weapons, February 2,009, David B. Law*

And the NATO Human Effects of Non-Lethal: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

It is tunable from lethal to nonlethal: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 8, March 2006, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

disabling of individuals and groups: *National Defense Magazine, Defense Dept. Pursuing Next-Generation Nonlethal Weapons, February 2,009, David B. Law*

In 2002, Time Magazine mentioned: *Time Magazine, Beyond the Rubber Bullet, July 21, 2002, Lev Grossman*

Space-Based Lasers (SBL)

In the early 1980s research on Space-Based Lasers (SBLs): *Federation of American Scientists, Space Based Laser, www.fas.org/spp/starwars/program/sbl.htm*

The US Air Force and the BMDO: *Associated Press, Options For Saving a US City from Missile Attack, May 5, 2001, Calvin Woodward*

The program team also consists: *Space Daily, Senate Adds Millions for ASAT, Space Laser, May 18, 2000, Frank Sietzen, Jr., www.spacedaily.com; Space Daily, Space-Based Laser Team Advances Design With Successful Test, January 25, 2001, www.spacedaily.com; Business Wire, Team SBL-IFX Awarded $97 Million for Next Phase of Space-Based Laser Program, November 6, 2000*

An SBL allows for missile interception: *Federation of American Scientists, Space Based Laser, www.fas.org/spp/starwars/program/sbl.htm; Associated Press, Options For Saving a US City from Missile Attack, May 5, 2001, Calvin Woodward; The Ottawa Citizen, US Wants to Build Space Laser in Total Secrecy, Weapon Could be in Use Before it's Made Public, Canadian Military Fears, June 1, 2004, David Pugliese*

The lasers will be able to destroy: *Ibid*

According to the US Air Force, these systems: *United States Air Force, School of Advanced Military Studies, United States Army Command and General Staff College, Directed Energy Weapons: Do We Have a Game Plan? (Monograph, AY 03-04), Major Timothy J. Lincoln*

Canadian Military warned that the public: *The Ottawa Citizen, US Wants to Build Space Laser in Total Secrecy, Weapon Could be in Use Before it's Made Public, Canadian Military Fears, June 1, 2004, David Pugliese*

SBLs offer the capability to strike targets: *Defense Science Board (DSB), Office of the Under Secretary of Defense For Acquisition, Technology, and Logistics (AT&L), Task Force Report: Directed Energy Weapons and Technology Applications, December 2007*

The SBL will also be used for ground: *Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Lasers In Space: Technological Options For Enhancing US Military Capabilities, November 1997, Mark E. Rogers, Lieutenant Colonel, USAF; United States Air Force, School of Advanced Military Studies, United States Army Command and General Staff College, Directed Energy Weapons: Do We Have a Game Plan? (Monograph, AY 03-04), Major Timothy J. Lincoln*

The SBL will be used in direct, offensive roles: *Ibid (USAF, Lasers In Space)*

But an SBL isn't required to send a beam of energy: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel; Maxwell Air Force Base, Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Air University, Lasers and Missile Defense: New Concepts For Space-Based And Ground-Based Laser Weapons, July 1998, William H. Possel, Lt Col, USAF; Ibid*

With a minimum of three space-based mirrors: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

The mirrors can be either space-based: *Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Lasers In Space: Technological Options For Enhancing US Military Capabilities, November 1997, Mark E. Rogers, Lieutenant Colonel, USAF*

In 1991 the Air Force's relay mirror: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD; Federation of American Scientists, Space Based Laser, www.fas.org/spp/starwars/program/sbl.htm*

this approach offers more pointing accuracy: *Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Lasers In Space: Technological Options For Enhancing US Military Capabilities, November 1997, Mark E. Rogers, Lieutenant Colonel, USAF*

In May 1996 the US Air Force suggested: *US Air Force, Air Command And Staff College, Maxwell AFB, An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025: An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities, May 1996*

The solar-powered high-energy laser system: *Ibid*

The SEOW allows: *Ibid*

Uses and Effects

Admitted uses for lasers: *The Heritage Foundation, The Viability of Directed-Energy Weapons, April 28, 2006, Alane Kochems, Andrew Gudgel; National Defense Magazine, Defense Dept. Pursuing Next-Generation Nonlethal Weapons, February 2,009, David B. Law*

They can also burst tires, or crack fuel tanks: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

crack glass in less than a second: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

Air Force was considering using the multimegawatt ABL: *Journal of Electronic Defense, Directed Energy Warfare: Something for a Star Wars Sequel?, December 1, 1997, Beth Jannery*

Author Doug Beason describes in his book: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

Lasers such as the PEP: *National Defense, Non-lethal Weapons to Gain Relevancy in Future Conflicts, March 1 2002, John B. Alexander*

advocates using DF and HF lasers on people: *US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley*

direct applicability in the non-lethal counter-personnel area: *Ibid*

Once an asset has been turned over to the warfighter: *The E-Bomb, Doug Beason, PhD*

Depending on how they are adjusted: *Department of Defense, US Army, Bioeffects of Selected Non-lethal Weapons, Addendum to the Nonlethal Technologies Worldwide Study (NGIC-I 147-101-98), 1998, FOI Request to Donald Friedman, December 13, 2006*

They can temporarily or permanently blind: *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

Upon hitting a person, they can produce: *Council On Foreign Relations, Task Force Report, Nonlethal Weapons And Capabilities, 2005, Graham T. Allison, Paul X. Kelley, Richard L. Garwin*

minor or severe skin burns: *Department of Defense, US Army, Bioeffects of Selected Non-lethal Weapons, Addendum to the Nonlethal Technologies Worldwide Study (NGIC-I 147-101-98), 1998, FOI Request to Donald Friedman, December 13, 2006*

The eyes are the most sensitive external organs: *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart; Ibid*

Lasers can paralyze specific parts of the body: *National Defense Magazine, Defense Dept. Pursuing Next-Generation Nonlethal Weapons, February 2,009, David B. Law; University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 1, November 1997, Dr. Nick Lewer*

These spasms can be clonic: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

At high powers, lasers: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

neutralize targets from tens of miles away: *Chicago Sun-Times, Military May Use Light, Radio Beams To Fight, July 10, 2005, Brian Bergstein*

Laser technologies, which have application: *Naval War College (Joint Military Operations Department), Transforming How We Fight Through Effects-Based Operations & Non-Lethal Weapons, May 17, 2004, Lieutenant Colonel David B. Hall, USMC*

Electronic Warfare Part 2

Sonic Weapons
Introduction

A variety of high powered sonic weapons: *Omega Foundation, Future Sub-Lethal, Incapacitating & Paralysing Technologies, October 2002, Dr Steve Wright*

These weapons produces both psychological: *LRAD Datasheets, www.atcsd.com; Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

Infrasonic generators can cause negative: *Global Security, Acoustic Weapons, www.globalsecurity.org; National Public Radio (NPR), Malcolm Davies Discusses the Non-Lethal Weapon Used by the Israeli Army to Disperse a Palestinian Crowd Using Sound Waves, June 13, 2005, Melissa Block (Host); Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann*

Most of these weapons function between: *Radio Waves, www.vlf.it*

Within the ELF region of the spectrum: *UK Department for Environment, Food and Rural Affairs, A Review of Published Research on Low Frequency Noise and its Effects, May 2003, Dr. Geoff Leventhall*

Ultrasound, begins in the VLF: *Ibid*

Any sound begins to become physically painful: *New Scientist, Pentagon Considers Ear-Blasting Anti-Hijack Gun, November 14, 2001, Ian Sample; The Sydney Morning Herald, Discipline and Punish, June 6, 2002*

At about 130 decibels: *Threshold of Pain (Hearing), wikipedia.org/wiki/Threshold_of_pain*

Resonance

All of the chemical reactions in the cells: *Controlling the Human Mind: The Technologies of Political Control or Tools for Peak Performance, Nick Begich, (Nick Begich, 2006)*

Once resonance has been achieved: *Ibid*

Both infrasound and ultrasound are capable: *UK Department for Environment, Food and Rural Affairs, A Review of Published Research on Low Frequency Noise and its Effects, May 2003, Dr. Geoff Leventhall*

Some organic and inorganic objects can function: *Sound and Vibration Magazine, Acoustic Noise as a Non-Lethal Weapon, October, 2004, Roman Vinokur; Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann; Resonance, wikipedia.org/wiki/Resonance*

Sound can be used to shatter: *Ibid*

Resonance can be induced electromagnetically: *Ibid*

Infrasonic and Ultrasonic Weapons

Infrasonic and ultrasonic generators: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker; Sonic Weapon, wikipedia.org/wiki/Sonic_weaponry; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006; Federation of American Scientists, Non-Lethal Weapons for Military Operations Other Than War, Spring 1997, Vol III, Cadet First Class Joseph M. Suhajda*

And by 1973 the Squawk Box: *Ibid*

In the early 1990s Russia: *Ibid*

Such a device could also target: *Angels Don't Play This HAARP: Advances in Tesla Technology, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich; International Review of the Red Cross, The Development of New Antipersonnel Weapons, November 1, 1990, Louise Doswald-Beck, Gerald C. Cauderay*

Infrasound occurs within the ELF range: *UK Department for Environment, Food and Rural Affairs, A Review of Published Research on Low Frequency Noise and its Effects, May 2003, Dr. Geoff Leventhall; Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann*

So, within this range, if the power level remains: *Ibid*

Infrasound travels great distances: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

Natural examples of this include: *Infrasound, wikipedia.org/wiki/Infrasound*

Infrasound is said to be superior: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

From about 100 to 140 decibels infrasound causes: *National Defense Magazine, Acoustic-Energy Research Hits Sour Note, March 2002, Roxana Tiron; UK Department for Environment, Food and Rural Affairs, A Review of Published Research on Low Frequency Noise and its Effects, May 2003, Dr. Geoff Leventhall; Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

The effects include: *Ibid*

Infrasound can also cause feelings of pressure: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; Department of Defense, US Army, Bioeffects of Selected Non-lethal Weapons, Addendum to the Nonlethal Technologies Worldwide Study (NGIC-I 147-101-98), 1998, FOI Request to Donald Friedman, December 13, 2006; Infrasound, wikipedia.org/wiki/Infrasound*

High powered, low frequency sound: *UK Department for Environment, Food and Rural Affairs, A Review of Published Research on Low Frequency Noise and its Effects, May 2003, Dr. Geoff Leventhall; Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann; Sound and Vibration Magazine, Acoustic Noise as a Non-Lethal Weapon, October, 2004, Roman Vinokur*

Infrasound causes a variety of psychological effects: *Global Research, 'Invisible Wars' of the Future: E-Bombs, Laser Guns and Acoustic Weapons, Nezavisimaya Gazeta, July 6, 2008; The Sydney Morning Herald, Sounds Like Terror in The Air, September 9, 2003; Ibid (UK Department for Environment; Science and Global Security)*

These transmissions: *Military Review, The New Mental Battlefield, December 1980, Lt. Col. John B. Alexander*

infrasound can produce localized earthquakes: *Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann*

Sound that occurs beyond human hearing: *Ultrasound, wikipedia.org/wiki/Ultrasound*

It is said to be less effective: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

Ultrasonic weapons produce a variety of effects: *Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; Federation of American Scientists, Non-Lethal Weapons for Military Operations Other Than War, Spring 1997, Vol III, Cadet First Class Joseph M. Suhajda*

Aimed at the head, the resonating: *Ibid (FAS)*

Sonic Projectiles

The same ELF modulators: *Cabinet Magazine, The Acoustics of War, Winter 2001/02, Issue 5, Daria Vaisman*

The Nazis are said to have developed a sonic cannon: *Ibid*

In the early 1990s Russia had created: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker; Global Security, Acoustic Weapons, www.globalsecurity.org*

The 1997 FAS report described: *Federation of American Scientists, Non-Lethal Weapons for Military Operations Other Than War, Spring 1997, Vol III, Cadet First Class Joseph M. Suhajda*

Then on July 16, 2002, ABC News announced: *ABC News, Sonic Bullets Acoustic Weapon of the Future, July 16, 2002, Judy Muller*

Vortex Gun

The Vortex Launcher: *International Online Defense Magazine, PoliceOne News, No Longer Science Fiction: Less Than Lethal & Directed Energy Weapons, February 22, 2005; The Independent on Sunday, Revealed: Police's New Supergun Will Blast Rioters off Their Feet, October 9, 2005, Severin Carrell; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

It can also be used to transmit: *Ibid*

Most of the current information: *Ibid (The Independent)*

But in the late 1990s the US Military: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

It has a distance of at least 50 meters: *Weapons Grade, David Hambling*

The UK, Russia, and Germany: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*
This weapon dates back to: *Weapons Grade, David Hambling*
In addition to the explosion-driven method: *Ibid*
After the air is generated, it exits: *Ibid*
A natural example of this a is tornado: *Sound and Vibration Magazine, Acoustic Noise as a Non-Lethal Weapon, October, 2004, Roman Vinokur*
As far as movement is concerned: *Weapons Grade, David Hambling*
Normally, a burst of air passing: *Ibid*

Electromagnetic Personnel Interdiction Control

The Electromagnetic Personnel Interdiction Control: *Contract number M67854-04-C-1013, EPIC (Electromagnetic Personnel Interdiction Control), 2004, www.navysbirprogram.com; Vestibular System, wikipedia.org/wiki/Vestibular_system; The Register, UK, US Navy Research Throws Up Vomit Ray, March 7, 2007, Lewis Page*
The Navy declared: *Ibid (www.navysbirprogram.com)*

Long Range Acoustic Device

The Long Range Acoustic Device (LRAD): *LRAD Datasheets, www.atcsd.com; Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*
While the exact frequency is unknown: *Ibid*
The weapon can transmit MP3 sound files: *National Defense, High-Tech Weapons Mix Targets Urban Hazards, June 1 2006, Stew Magnuson; Associated Press, Iraq Troops Get High-Tech Sonic Weapon, March 02, 2004; University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer; Ibid (www.atcsd.com)*

Directed Stick Radiator

Directed Stick Radiator: *The Sydney Morning Herald, Discipline and Punish, June 6, 2002; LA Weekly, Weapons of Mass Compliance, July 10, 2003, Ben Ehrenreich*
The device contains a series: *New Scientist, Pentagon Considers Ear-Blasting Anti-Hijack Gun, November 14, 2001, Ian Sample; United States Patent 5940347, Directed Stick Radiator, www.freepatentsonline.com*
The weapon can transmit speech: *The Sydney Morning Herald, Discipline and Punish, June 6, 2002; Ibid (New Scientist Magazine)*
it will be used for psychological operations: *Business Wire, American Technology Announces Non-Lethal Acoustical Weapon Technology for Military and Law Enforcement, October 30, 2001; BBC News, Science Fiction Edges Towards Fact, August 10, 2002, David Jamieson*
Universal Guardian Holdings has: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 5, May 2004, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

Computer Network Operations

Computer Network Operations (CNO): *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007; Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Council on Foreign Relations, Non-Lethal Technologies: Progress and Prospects, October 27, 1999*
CNO is used in conjunction with PsyOp: *Joint Publication 3-13.1, Electronic Warfare, January 25, 2007*

Offensive, defensive, and supporting: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007*

The attacks include the physical destruction: *Council on Foreign Relations, Non-Lethal Technologies: Progress and Prospects, October 27, 1999; Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*

usurpation of an enemy's computer: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

In addition to individual computers: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007*

NetOp attacks may include spoofing: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

The CFR also advocated the substitution: *Council on Foreign Relations, Report of an Independent Task Force, Non-Lethal Technologies: Military Options and Implications, 1995, Malcolm H. Wiener*

US and coalition forces: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007*

Web spoofing allows an attacker: *Princeton University, Department of Computer Science, Web Spoofing: An Internet Con Game, February 1997, Edward W. Felten, Dirk Balfanz, Drew Dean, Dan S. Wallach*

To spoof the entire web: *Ibid*

It basically works in the following way: *Ibid*

Normally, if a user clicks: *Ibid*

Secure connections don't help: *Ibid*

The Air Force mentioned that an enemy's internet: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996*

Internet spoofing, and the covert intrusion: *Department of the Army, TRADOC Pamphlet 525-73, Concept for Nonlethal Capabilities in Army Operations, December 1, 1996; Special Warfare, Future War: Non-Lethal Weapons in Modern Warfare, January 1, 2001, Bill Gormley*

The RAND Corporation revealed that the internet: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

Other NLW attacks which may: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998; Wall Street Journal, Nonlethal Arms, New Class of Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, January 4, 1993, Thomas B. Ricks; Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, The "Soft Kill" Fallacy: The Idea of "Non-Lethal Weapons" is Politically Attractive and Purposively Misleading, September 1, 1994, Steven Aftergood*

Microwave Hearing

Existing radar units: *Department of Defense, US Army, Bioeffects of Selected Non-lethal Weapons, Addendum to the Nonlethal Technologies Worldwide Study (NGIC-I 147-101-98), 1998, FOI Request to Donald Friedman, December 13, 2006; Los Angeles Herald-Examiner, Mind-Altering Microwaves, Soviets Studying Invisible Ray, November 22,1976*

The sounds, which originate: *Ibid*

In his 1962 report, Human Auditory: *Journal of Applied Physiology, Human Auditory System Response to Modulated Electromagnetic Energy (Abstract), Volume 17, 1962, Allan H. Frey; Controlling the Human Mind, Nick Begich*

The transmitter used pulse-modulated: *Ibid*

Then in the mid 1970s, Dr. Sharp helped: *Nexus Magazine, Mind Control and the New World Order, February/March 1993, Glenn Krawczyk; Microwave Auditory Effect, wikipedia.org/wiki/Microwave_auditory_effect*

In 1976 it was reported: *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner, Mind-Altering Microwaves, Soviets Studying Invisible Ray, November 22, 1976*

The October 1998 US Patent 4877027: US Patent 4877027—Hearing System, October 31, 1989, Wayne B. Brunkan

The waves consist of frequency: *Ibid*

Others patents pertaining to microwave hearing: *US Patent 4858612—Hearing Device, August 22, 1989, Philip L. Stocklin; US Patent 6587729—Apparatus for Audibly Communicating Speech Using the Radio Frequency Hearing Effect, July 1, 2003, James P. O'Loughlin, Diana L. Loree*

In July of 2008 New Scientist announced: *New Scientist, Microwave Ray Gun Controls Crowds with Noise, July 03, 2008, David Hambling*

Wired's February 2008 story: *Wired, Pentagon Report: Nonlethal Weapons Could Target Brain, Mimic Schizophrenia, February, 18, 2008, Michael Vail*

bone conduction (thermal expansion): *Motorola Florida Research Laboratories, Ft. Lauderdale, FL, Auditory Response to Pulsed Radiofrequency Energy, 2003, J.A. Elder, C.K. Chou; Walter Reed Army Institute of Research (WRAIR), US Army Medical Research Detachment, Microwave Hearing Pathway*

Bone conduction works basically: *Health Physics, The Radiation Safety Journal, Hearing of Microwave Pulses by Humans and Animals (Abstract), June 2007, James C. Lin; Motorola Florida Research Laboratories, Ft. Lauderdale, FL, Auditory Response to Pulsed Radiofrequency Energy, 2003, J.A. Elder, C.K. Chou; Ibid (WRAIR)*

This acoustic energy launches: *Ibid*

Although the increase in tissue temperature: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006; Ibid (Motorola)*

According to some researchers: *Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann; Ibid (Motorola)*

Microwave hearing is a well-established phenomenon: *Department of Defense, US Army, Bioeffects of Selected Non-lethal Weapons, Addendum to the Nonlethal Technologies Worldwide Study (NGIC-I 147-101-98), 1998, FOI Request to Donald Friedman, December 13, 2006; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

Dr. Robert Becker, author of multiple: *Controlling the Human Mind, Nick Begich*

It would be pure terror: *Star Wars, Star Trek and Killing Politely, Dr. Nick Begich, www.earthpulse.com*

The use of this technology: *Department of Defense, US Army, Bioeffects of Selected Non-lethal Weapons, Addendum to the Nonlethal Technologies Worldwide Study (NGIC-I 147-101-98), 1998, FOI Request to Donald Friedman, December 13, 2006*

Silent Subliminals

Subliminal mind-control is considered a NLW: *Harpers Magazine, When Killing Just Won't Do, February 2003; Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998; Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker; US Army War College Quarterly, From Parameters, The Mind Has No Firewall, Spring 1998, Timothy L. Thomas*

defense scientists all over the planet: *India Daily, New Advanced Mind Control Techniques Gives a New Flavor to Modern Warfare, May 20, 2005*

The Russian government perfected: *Defense News, US Explores Russian Mind-control Technology, January 11-17, 1993, Barbara Opall*

It consisted of powerful subliminal messages: *US Army War College Quarterly, From Parameters, The Mind Has No Firewall, Spring 1998, Timothy L. Thomas; Ibid*

Because the messages were transmitted: *Ibid*

In order for subliminals to be successful: *US Patent 5159703—Silent Subliminal Presentation System, October 27, 1992, Dr. Oliver Lowery; Our Technology, www.brainspeak.com*

This is important because with regular subliminals: *Ibid*

The Psychor Center: *Defense News, US Explores Russian Mind-control Technology, January 11-17, 1993, Barbara Opall*

In the early 1990s the US began: *Ibid*

During this time, Dr. Janet Morris: *US Army War College Quarterly, From Parameters, The Mind Has No Firewall, Spring 1998, Timothy L. Thomas; Ibid*

Then, in October of 1992, US Patent 5159703: *US Patent 5159703—Silent Subliminal Presentation System, October 27, 1992, Dr. Oliver Lowery*

Its industry names include: *Ultra High Frequency (UHF), www.brainspeak.com*

Because Silent Sound is transmitted above: *US Patent 5159703—Silent Subliminal Presentation System, October 27, 1992, Dr. Oliver Lowery*

Furthermore, the frequency, which is: *Ibid*

These messages can be transmitted: *Nexus Magazine, Military Use of Mind Control Weapons, October/November 1998, Volume 5, Issue 6, Judy Wall; Ibid*

The Whole Brain Learning Institute: *Ultra High Frequency (UHF), www.brainspeak.com*

Their products use Silent Sound: *Ibid*

Their staff includes behaviorists: *Our Technology, www.brainspeak.com*

During the first Gulf War: *Nexus Magazine, Military Use of Mind Control Weapons, October/November 1998, Volume 5, Issue 6, Judy Wall; ITV News Bureau, Ltd., High Tech Psychological Warfare Arrives In The Middle East, Dhahran, Saudi Arabia, March 23, 1991, www.bibliotecapleyades.net*

There, they transmitted a high-powered: *Ibid*

Although completely silent to the human ear: *Ibid*

uses the exact Russian term: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

Similarly, the Naval Law Review's: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

While your conscious mind is engaged in other activities: *www.brainspeak.com*

Conflicts in belief systems: *Controlling the Human Mind, Nick Begich*

The unique factor is that the recipient: *Military Review, The New Mental Battlefield, December 1980, Lt. Col. John B. Alexander*

Janet Morris indicated: *Defense News, US Explores Russian Mind-control Technology, January 11-17, 1993, Barbara Opall*

As far as it has become possible: *Ibid*

Informant Networks

Chemical and Biological Weapons

Weather Warfare

Miscellaneous Weapons and Tactics

Use of Citizen Informants

History

Informants are private citizens who unofficially: *The Age of Surveillance, Frank J. Donne*r

They are also used to infiltrate: *Ibid*

Informants have been used: *Ibid*

Networks of citizen informants are used: *Understanding the Solzhenitsyn Affair: Dissent and its Control in the USSR, (Center for Strategic and International Studies (CSIS), 1974), Ray S. Cline*

The East German dictatorship: *Man Without a Face, Markus Wolf, (PublicAffairs, 1999); The People's State: East German Society from Hitler to Honecker, Mary Fulbrook, (Yale University Press, 2005)*

If full and part time informants are considered: *Stasi: The East German Secret Police, John O. Koehler, (Westview Press, 2000)*

Targeted people were group stalked: *Stasiland: True Stories from Behind the Berlin Wall, Anna Funder, (Granta Books, 2003)*

The MfS also ran its own version: *Man Without a Face, Markus Wolf; Ibid*

Networks of citizens have been used in other countries: *BBC News, Czech Collaborators to be Named, March 6, 3003; BBC News, Czech Communists Guilty Of Harassment, February 12, 2002; Czech Republic, Timothy G. Borden, www.espionageinfo.com; StB, wikipedia.org/wiki/StB; New York Times, Polish Assembly Votes to Release Files on Communist Collaborators, May 29, 1992; BBC News, New Polish Archbishop in Spy Row, January 5, 2007; Minitry of Public Security, wikipedia.org/wiki/Ministry_of_Public_Security_of_Poland; Sluzba Bezpieczenstwa, wikipedia.org/wiki/Sluzba_Bezpieczenstwa; State Protection Authority, wikipedia.org/wiki/State_Protection_Authority; People's Republic of Hungary, wikipedia.org/wiki/People %27s_Republic_of_Hungar*y

The International and State Defense Police: *PIDE, wikipedia.org/wiki/PIDE*

When the British Crown proposed the Sedition Act: *The Age of Surveillance, Frank J. Donner*

Informants in the US

civil affairs in the US as far back as 1917: *The Age of Surveillance, Frank J. Donner*

After the war and into the 1920s: *Ibid*

One of these groups was the American: *New York Times, German Intrigue is Still Kept Up, November 22, 1918*

Its unpaid members disrupted political protests: *American Protective League, wikipedia.org/wiki/American_Protective_League*

Because it functioned silently and secretly: *New York Times, What America Did, June 29, 1919*

One included the Anti-Yellow Dog League: A*merican Protective League, wikipedia.org/wiki/American_Protective_League; The American Protective League, www.johntaylorgatto.com/chapters/11g.htm*

US Attorney General Thomas Gregory praised: *New York Times, Topics of the Times, Peace Does Not Change Their Minds, November 23, 1918; New York Times, German Intrigue is Still Kept Up, November 22, 1918*

After the war the Attorney General: *Ibid (NYT, Topics of the Times)*

By the end of the war: *Committee on the Judiciary United States Senate, Military Surveillance of Civilian Politics: A Report of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights, 92nd Congress, 1st Session, August 15, 1973*

Toward the end of the 1920s this network: *The Age of Surveillance, Frank J. Donner*

described as a political subculture: *Ibid*

The Boston Globe reported: *The Boston Globe, Building a Nation of Snoops, May 14, 2003, Carl Takei*

Similar reports appeared: *The American Civil Liberties Union, The Surveillance-Industrial Complex: How the American Government Is Conscripting Businesses and Individuals in the Construction of a Surveillance Society, August 2004, Jay Stanley; The New American, TIPping Off Big Brother, October 7, 2002, Steve Bonta; Washington Times, Planned Volunteer-Informant Corps Elicits '1984' Fears, July 15, 2002, Ellen Sorokin*

Swarming

Another major component of this new war is the swarm: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

It has been used in the air, on land: *Swarming & the Future of Conflict, John Arquilla, David Ronfeldt, (RAND Corporation, 2000)*

The Mongols under Genghis Khan: *Swarming (Military), wikipedia.org/wiki/Swarming_(military)*

Since then, it's been used by the Zulu tribes: *Swarming & the Future of Conflict, John Arquilla, David Ronfeld*

Swarming occurs throughout the animal kingdom: *Ibid*

Swarming is used across the entire spectrum: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

A node can be an aircraft, vehicle, ship: *Global Security, Global Information Grid, www.globalsecurity.org/intell/systems/gig.htm; US Army War College Guide to National Security Issues, Department of National Security and Strategy, Volume I: Theory of War and Strategy, Chapter 21, Network Centric Warfare, June 2008; Ibid*

Until the pulse occurs: *Ibid (RAND)*

Each node can receive instructions: *Swarming (Military), wikipedia.org/wiki/Swarming_(military)*

The MITRE and RAND Corporations: *Swarming & the Future of Conflict, John Arquilla, David Ronfeld; The MITRE Corporation, Learning from Nature: Applying Biomimetic Approaches to Military Tactics and Concepts, May 24, 2005, Lashon Booker*

RAND proclaimed that the swarm: *Ibid (Arquilla, Ronfeld)*

new generation of information systems: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

The MITRE Corporation has worked on the creation: *The MITRE Corporation, Learning from Nature: Applying Biomimetic Approaches to Military Tactics and Concepts, May 24, 2005, Lashon Booker*

Since each agent has only a local view: *Ibid*

The DOD has used them to control swarms: *Ibid*

Chemical and Biological

Calmatives

are used on people to render: *Telegraph Herald (Dubuque, Associated Press), Non-Lethal Methods: Military Considers Using Valium in Crowd-Control Situations, September 26, 2002; Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004; US Army War College Quarterly, From Parameters, The Mind Has No Firewall, Spring 1998, Timothy L. Thomas*

They cause a variety of effects: *Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Chemical And Biochemical Non-Lethal Weapons, Policy Paper 23, November 2008, Ronald G. Sutherland*

Broad categories of calmatives: *Pennsylvania State University, Applied Research Laboratory, The Advantages and Limitations of Calmatives for Use as a Non-lethal Technique, October 3, 2000*

They include drugs which: *Ibid*

The chemical's impact on the central: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart; US Army War College Quarterly, From Parameters, The Mind Has No Firewall, Spring 1998, Timothy L. Thomas*

Other types of incapacitants: *US Air Force Wright Laboratory, Wright-Patterson AFB (OH), Harassing, Annoying, and "Bad Guy" Identifying Chemicals, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1994; Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

In the variety of situations: *Pennsylvania State University, Applied Research Laboratory, The Advantages and Limitations of Calmatives for Use as a Non-lethal Technique, October 3, 2000*

US Newswire reported: *US Newswire, Pentagon Confirms Report of Planned Gay Conversion Chemical Weapon, January 14, 2005*

Chemicals, explained, the NRC: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

various military and law enforcement scenarios: *US Army Edgewood Research, Development and Engineering Center (MD), Antipersonnel Chemical Immobilizers: Synthetic Opiods, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), April 1994*

Calmatives are essentially drugs too dangerous: *Asia Times, Next Up: Non-Lethal Chemicals That Kill, April 1, 2003, David Isenberg*

Time Magazine acknowledged that the US: *Time Magazine, Beyond the Rubber Bullet, July 21, 2002, Lev Grossman*

PSU advised that that they should: *Pennsylvania State University, Applied Research Laboratory, The Advantages and Limitations of Calmatives for Use as a Non-lethal Technique, October 3, 2000*

inflict intense pain, alter bodily functions: *The Record (Bergen County, NJ), The Threat of Non-Lethal Weapons, December 8, 2002, Barbara Hatch Rosenberg, Mark L. Wheelis*

The chemicals are available in solid: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer; Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart*

The most common methods: *US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley*

The form, method of delivery, and type of chemical: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

Long-distance weapon platforms: *Ibid*

Another proposed platform: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

The Vortex Gun: *Weapons Grade, David Hambling*

Other possible dispersion methods: *Omega Foundation, Future Sub-Lethal, Incapacitating & Paralysing Technologies, October 2002, Dr Steve Wright; United Press International, US: 'Non-Lethal' Weapons Being Developed, October 31, 2002, Pamela Hess*

easily be delivered into a room: *Weapons of Mass Casualties and Terrorism Response Handbook, Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons, Dr. Charles Stewart*

Metz and Kievit told of a scenario: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

PSU also advocates covert: *Pennsylvania State University, Applied Research Laboratory, The Advantages and Limitations of Calmatives for Use as a Non-lethal Technique, October 3, 2000*

Biological Weapons

The US military will be using biological weapons: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

nonfatal diseases targeted: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

changing the genetic structure of targeted individuals: *US Army, Military Review, Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible: Looking Ahead to Military Biotechnology, July-August 2005, Guo Ji-wei, Xue-sen Yang; The Village Voice, Biological Weapons Might Not Be Color Blind, January 26, 1999, James Ridgeway*

a variety of other capabilities: *Georgetown Journal of International Law, Tangled Up in Khaki and Blue: Lethal and Non-Lethal Weapons in Recent Confrontations, April 1, 2005, David A Koplow*

Biological weapons can be sprayed: *PBS, Frontline, Plague War, Interview with Dr. Christopher Davis, October 1998, www.pbs.org; Omega Foundation, Future Sub-Lethal, Incapacitating & Paralysing Technologies, October 2002, Dr Steve Wright; The Sunday Times, UK, Israel Planning Ethnic Bomb as Saddam Caves In, November 15, 1998, Uzi Mahnaimi, Marie Colvin*

There are apparently biogenetic: *US Army, Military Review, Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible: Looking Ahead to Military Biotechnology, July-August 2005, Guo Ji-wei, Xue-sen Yang*

When these weapons are designed: *PBS, Frontline, Plague War, Interview with Dr. Christopher Davis, October 1998, www.pbs.org*

In the late 1970s Soviet scientists apparently: *War And Anti-War, Alvin and Heidi Toffler*

not just against an ethnic group, but a family as well: *The Village Voice, Biological Weapons Might Not Be Color Blind, January 26, 1999, James Ridgeway*

The Truth and Reconciliation Commission: *BBC, World: Africa, Apartheid Government Sought Germs To Kill Blacks, June 12, 1998; BBC, World: Africa, Apartheid Era Anthrax Plan Revealed, June 11, 1998; The Sunday Times, UK, Israel Planning Ethnic Bomb as Saddam Caves In, November 15, 1998, Uzi Mahnaimi, Marie Colvin*

The former director of a chemical: *Ibid*

In November of 1998, Wired and the Sunday Times: *Wired, Israel's Ethnic Weapon?, November 16, 1998; Ibid (Times)*

The development for the virus: *Ibid*

denounced such stories as a hoax: *Ethnic Bioweapon, wikipedia.org/wiki/Ethnic_bioweapon*

such a weapon is currently unattainable: *Salon News, Debunking the Ethno-Bomb, December 2, 1998, Jeff Stein*

Bill Richardson, a deputy assistant: *Ibid*

It's theoretically possible: *Ibid*

However, such a database now exists: *Department of Energy, Human Genome Project, www.ornl.gov/sci/techresources/Human_Genome/project/about.shtml; Human Genome Project, wikipedia.org/wiki/Human_Genome_Project*

Most research was conducted by universities: *Ibid*

Despite the positive intentions: *US Army, Military Review, Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible: Looking Ahead to Military Biotechnology, July-August 2005, Guo Ji-wei, Xue-sen Yang*

It makes possible, not just attacks against ethnic groups: *Ibid*

Many other newly developed biotechnologies: *Ibid*

Nearly all major advances, in whatever: *International Committee of the Red Cross, Preventing the Use of Biological and Chemical Weapons, October 6, 2005*

Genomics allows for the precision injury: *US Army, Military Review, Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible: Looking Ahead to Military Biotechnology, July-August 2005, Guo Ji-wei, Xue-sen Yang*
Using gene manipulation as a biotechnological: *Ibid*
The act of changing genetic code: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*
difficult to detect, very portable: *US Army, Military Review, Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible: Looking Ahead to Military Biotechnology, July-August 2005, Guo Ji-wei, Xue-sen Yang*
Gene alteration can be accomplished: *PBS, Frontline, Plague War, Interview with Dr. Christopher Davis, October 1998, www.pbs.org; Ibid*
Because the gene has been altered: *Ibid*
Only after obvious wounding occurs: *Ibid (Review)*
The same technological revolution: *The Record (Bergen County, NJ), The Threat of Non-Lethal Weapons, December 8, 2002, Barbara Hatch Rosenberg, Mark L. Wheelis*
These biological weapons are the result: U*S Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*
As a result of breakthroughs in the Human Genome: *Omega Foundation, Future Sub-Lethal, Incapacitating & Paralysing Technologies, October 2002, Dr Steve Wright*
There are international bans on biological: *The Christian Science Monitor, US Moves into Emerging Bioweapon Era, November 4 2002, Brad Knickerbocker; Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, Center for Strategy and Technology, Non-Lethal Technologies: Implications for Military Strategy, March 1998, Colonel Joseph Siniscalchi, USAF; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; Georgetown Journal of International Law, Tangled Up in Khaki and Blue: Lethal and Non-Lethal Weapons in Recent Confrontations, April 1, 2005, David A Koplow*
Multiple researchers have arrived at the conclusion: *The Record (Bergen County, NJ), The Threat of Non-Lethal Weapons, December 8, 2002, Barbara Hatch Rosenberg, Mark L. Wheelis; Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Chemical And Biochemical Non-Lethal Weapons, Policy Paper 23, November 2008, Ronald G. Sutherland; The Sunshine Project, News Release, The Destabilizing Danger of "Non-Lethal" Chemical and Biological Weapons in the War on Terrorism, September 19, 2001*
these weapons must be rejected for the highly destructive: *Ibid (Sunshine Project)*

Antimaterial

will be used to deteriorate enemy infrastructure: *Naval Research Laboratory, Enhanced Degradation of Military Material, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), 1998; Defense Horizons, Nonlethal Capabilities: Realizing the Opportunities, March, 2002, Emil. R. Bedard; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006; Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, The "Soft Kill" Solution (Non-Lethal Weapons), March 1, 1994, Linda Rothstein; National Defense Magazine, Defense Dept. Pursuing Next-Generation Nonlethal Weapons, February 2,009, David B. Law*
The destruction of these materials: *Ibid*
The degradation and eventual destruction: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*
In a 1994 paper, Lubricant and Grease: *Sandia National Laboratory (NM), Lubricant and Grease Additives for Immobilizing Machinery, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), 1994*
ways to poison lubricants: *Associated Press Writer, Non-Lethal Weapons Under Study, May 10, 2002, Randolph E. Schmid*

Viscosifiers can also be placed in fuel tanks: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

Additionally, engines can be disabled: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

Supercaustics, also called supercorrosives: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

They include acids known as embrittlements: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

Metal embrittlement are liquid chemicals: *Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, Center for Strategy and Technology, Non-Lethal Technologies: Implications for Military Strategy, March 1998, Colonel Joseph Siniscalchi, USAF*

They can be delivered in an aerosol: *Georgetown Journal of International Law, Tangled Up in Khaki and Blue: Lethal and Non-Lethal Weapons in Recent Confrontations, April 1, 2005, David A Koplow*

Depolymisers are liquid chemical compounds: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

Microorganisms (microbs) are another: *Naval Research Laboratory, Enhanced Degradation of Military Material, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), 1998; Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Chemical And Biochemical Non-Lethal Weapons, Policy Paper 23, November 2008, Ronald G. Sutherland; Microorganism, wikipedia.org/wiki/Microorganism*

Intended uses for supercaustics include: *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists, The "Soft Kill" Solution (Non-Lethal Weapons), March 1, 1994, Linda Rothstein; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006; Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, Center for Strategy and Technology, Non-Lethal Technologies: Implications for Military Strategy, March 1998, Colonel Joseph Siniscalchi, USAF; Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

There are also airborne materials: *Associated Press Writer, Non-Lethal Weapons Under Study, May 10, 2002, Randolph E. Schmid*

NRC says that these weapons: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

In addition to viscosifiers: *Department of the Army, TRADOC Pamphlet 525-73, Concept for Nonlethal Capabilities in Army Operations, December 1, 1996; National Defense Magazine, Defense Dept. Pursuing Next-Generation Nonlethal Weapons, February 2,009, David B. Law; Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

The engine remains disabled: *USA Today, Military Embrace Of 'Non-Lethal' Energy Weapons Sparks Debate, August 2, 2004, Michael P. Regan; The Milwaukee Journal Sentinel (Associated Press), Navy, Marines Urged to Develop Non-Lethal Weapons, November 5, 2002, Randolph E. Schmid; The Futurist, Nonlethal Weapons: When Deadly Force is Not Enough, October 1, 1999, John B. Alexander; Ibid (National Defense)*

Lasers too will be used: *Defense Horizons, Nonlethal Capabilities: Realizing the Opportunities, March, 2002, Emil. R. Bedard*

According to the NRC: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

Antitraction agents, also called polymers: *Time Magazine, Beyond the Rubber Bullet, July 21, 2002, Lev Grossman; Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, Center for Strategy and Technology, Non-Lethal Technologies: Implications for Military Strategy, March 1998, Colonel Joseph Siniscalchi, USAF; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

The Marines have a polymer-based spray: *Daily Breeze (Los Angeles Newspaper), Pentagon is Searching for Non-Lethal Weapons, March 24, 2002, Seth Hettena*

Some types are reportedly 10 times: *National Defense, Non-Lethal Weapons Find Their Niche in Urban Combat, March 1, 2004, Geoff S. Fein*

Airborne delivery systems: *Wall Street Journal, Nonlethal Arms, New Class of Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, January 4, 1993, Thomas B. Ricks*

Sandia National Laboratories and the Emulsion: *Associated Press Writer, Non-Lethal Weapons Under Study, May 10, 2002, Randolph E. Schmid; University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 4, December 2003, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

Research was being conducted: *Ibid*

Reported target surfaces for these agents: *Wall Street Journal, Nonlethal Arms, New Class of Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, January 4, 1993, Thomas B. Ricks; Time Magazine, Beyond the Rubber Bullet, July 21, 2002, Lev Grossman; National Defense, Non-Lethal Weapons Find Their Niche in Urban Combat, March 1, 2004, Geoff S. Fein*

Dirt roads can also be made: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

Chemical compounds known as defoliants: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker; Ibid*

used as NLWs to poison a target's food: *US Army, Military Review, Ultramicro, Nonlethal, and Reversible: Looking Ahead to Military Biotechnology, July-August 2005, Guo Ji-wei, Xue-sen Yang*

The goal of attacking the enemy: *Naval Research Laboratory, Enhanced Degradation of Military Material, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), 1998*

In their 1994 paper, Biofouling and Biocorrosion: *Idaho National Engineering Laboratory (INEL), Biofouling and Biocorrosion, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), 1994*

platforms to deliver these weapons: *Associated Press Writer, Non-Lethal Weapons Under Study, May 10, 2002, Randolph E. Schmid*

could be spread surreptitiously onto enemy equipment: *Georgetown Journal of International Law, Tangled Up in Khaki and Blue: Lethal and Non-Lethal Weapons in Recent Confrontations, April 1, 2005, David A Koplow*

freezedried antimaterial biological weapons: *Future War, Colonel John B. Alexander*

In 1998 the Biotechnology Branch of the Radiofrequency: *Brooks Air Force Base, Texas, Anti-material Biocatalysts & Sensors, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), 1998*

The application of this technology is limitless: *Ibid*

Malodorants

Malodorants (stink bombs) are non-toxic: *Monell Chemical Senses Center (PA), Establishment of Odor Response Profiles: Ethnic, Racial, and Cultural Influences, Report to US Army Chemical Research, Development and Engineering Center (CBDCOM), February 4, 1999; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

The use of malodorants goes back: *US Army Edgewood Research, Development, and Engineering Center, Odorous Substances, July 1997*

As early as 1966 DARPA: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker; University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 7, May 2005, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer; Time Magazine, Beyond the Rubber Bullet, July 21, 2002, Lev Grossman; Los Angeles Times, Foul Odors Tantalize in Quest for Non-Lethal Weapons, November 28, 2002, Aaron Zitner; War on the Mind, Peter Watson*

A variety of delivery methods: *Associated Press Writer, Non-Lethal Weapons Under Study, May 10, 2002, Randolph E. Schmid; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; Weapons Grade, David Hambling*

The delayed release of malodorants: *Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Chemical And Biochemical Non-Lethal Weapons, Policy Paper 23, November 2008, Ronald G. Sutherland; US Army Edgewood Research, Development, and Engineering Center, Odorous Substances, July 1997; Micro-Encapsulation, wikipedia.org/wiki/Micro-encapsulation*

The Boston Globe hinted that: *The Boston Globe, Non-Lethal Weapons: Sci-fi Meets Pentagon, November 20, 2000, Ellen Barry*

The odor typically lasts: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 6, October 2004, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

Enzymes can be taken by operators: *Science Applications International Corporation, San Deigo, Prepared for USMC, Joint Non-lethal Directorate, Situational Control by Olfactory Stimuli, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1998*

Some of the more common ones: *Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Chemical And Biochemical Non-Lethal Weapons, Policy Paper 23, November 2008, Ronald G. Sutherland; Time Magazine, Beyond the Rubber Bullet, July 21, 2002, Lev Grossman; Omega Foundation, Future Sub-Lethal, Incapacitating & Paralysing Technologies, October 2002, Dr Steve Wright; The Boston Globe, Non-Lethal Weapons: Sci-fi Meets Pentagon, November 20, 2000, Ellen Barry*

Combinations can be used: *Los Angeles Times, Foul Odors Tantalize in Quest for Non-Lethal Weapons, November 28, 2002, Aaron Zitner*

a large odor atlas is available: *US Army Edgewood Research, Development, and Engineering Center, Odorous Substances, July 1997*

The olfactory nerves are responsible: *Monell Chemical Senses Center (PA), Establishment of Odor Response Profiles: Ethnic, Racial, and Cultural Influences, Report to US Army Chemical Research, Development and Engineering Center (CBDCOM), February 4, 1999*

Therefore, an olfactory response: *Science Applications International Corporation, San Deigo, Prepared for USMC, Joint Non-lethal Directorate, Situational Control by Olfactory Stimuli, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1998*

Research on odor and memory suggests: *Defense Intelligence Agency, Controlled Offensive Behavior—USSR, Prepared by the US Army Office of the Surgeon General (ST-CS-01-169-72), July 1972, Captain John D. Lamothe; Monell Chemical Senses Center (PA), Establishment of Odor Response Profiles: Ethnic, Racial, and Cultural Influences, Report to US Army Chemical Research, Development and Engineering Center (CBDCOM), February 4, 1999*

serve as powerful agents of behavior modification: *Ibid (Monell)*

The effects of malodorants: *Ibid*

They can influence people to leave an area: *Associated Press Writer, Non-Lethal Weapons Under Study, May 10, 2002, Randolph E. Schmid*

The eyes may tear, the stomach: *Los Angeles Times, Foul Odors Tantalize in Quest for Non-Lethal Weapons, November 28, 2002, Aaron Zitner*

For potent formulas, the usual responses: *Science Applications International Corporation, San Deigo, Prepared for USMC, Joint Non-lethal Directorate, Situational Control by Olfactory Stimuli, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1998*

Mathematical formulas: *The Boston Globe, Non-Lethal Weapons: Sci-fi Meets Pentagon, November 20, 2000, Ellen Barry*

used to warn, annoy, disgust: *Future Sub-Lethal, Incapacitating & Paralysing Technologies, October 2002, Dr Steve Wright*

Specific applications include peacekeeping: *Government Product News, Non-lethal Weapons Offer More Counter-Terrorism Options, November 1, 2003; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; The Boston Globe, Non-Lethal Weapons: Sci-fi Meets Pentagon, November 20, 2000, Ellen Barry; Los Angeles Times, Foul Odors Tantalize in Quest for Non-Lethal Weapons, November 28, 2002, Aaron Zitner; Time Magazine, Beyond the Rubber Bullet, July 21, 2002, Lev Grossman; Science Applications International Corporation, San Deigo, Prepared for USMC, Joint Non-lethal Directorate, Situational Control by Olfactory Stimuli, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1998*

disrupt demonstrations and other types of undesirable behavior: *Monell Chemical Senses Center (PA), Establishment of Odor Response Profiles: Ethnic, Racial, and Cultural Influences, Report to US Army Chemical Research, Development and Engineering Center (CBDCOM), February 4, 1999*

they'll be used for attitude adjustment: *Science Applications International Corporation, San Deigo, Prepared for USMC, Joint Non-lethal Directorate, Situational Control by Olfactory Stimuli, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1998*

Sensory profiles on ethnic and racial groups: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

The genetic differences between these groups: *US Army Edgewood Research, Development and Engineering Center (MD), Antipersonnel Chemical Immobilizers: Synthetic Opiods, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), April 1994*

Studies have also been conducted: *Science Applications International Corporation, San Deigo, Prepared for USMC, Joint Non-lethal Directorate, Situational Control by Olfactory Stimuli, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1998; Stockholm International Peace Research Institute, Chemical And Biochemical Non-Lethal Weapons, Policy Paper 23, November 2008, Ronald G. Sutherland*

Because of these studies, operators: *Monell Chemical Senses Center (PA), Establishment of Odor Response Profiles: Ethnic, Racial, and Cultural Influences, Report to US Army Chemical Research, Development and Engineering Center (CBDCOM), February 4, 1999*

Weather Warfare

Introduction

In his 1931 book: *The Scientific Outlook, Bertrand Russell, (George Allen & Unwin Ltd., 1931)*

Charles Galton Darwin: *The Next Million Years, Charles Galton Darwin (Rupert Hart-Davis 1952); Charles Galton Darwin, wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_Galton_Darwin*

Weather modification is now possible: *The Wall Street Journal, Malaysia to Battle Smog With Cyclones, November 13, 1997, Chen May Yee*

Attempts to modify the weather: *Project Stormfury, wikipedia.org/wiki/Project_Stormfury*

Project Cumulus, carried out: *The Guardian, RAF Rainmakers Caused 1952 Flood, August 30, 2001, John Vidal, Helen Weinstein*

In the 1950s the US Forest Service: *The University of Arizona, College of Agriculture and Life Sciences, Weather Modification: A Water Resource Strategy to be Researched, Tested Before Tried, Spring 1992, Volume 6, Joe Gelt; Angels Don't Play This HAARP: Advances in Tesla Technology, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich*

Then, under Project Stormfury: *Project Stormfury, wikipedia.org/wiki/Project_Stormfury; Project Stormfury, www.aoml.noaa.gov/hrd/hrd_sub/sfury.html*

Weather modification involves: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996; US Air Force, An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025, An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities, May 1996*

Multiple countries, including the United States: *The Wall Street Journal, Malaysia to Battle Smog With Cyclones, November 13, 1997, Chen May Yee*

The state-run Oklahoma Weather: *Oklahoma Weather Modification Program, www.evac.ou.edu/okwmdp*

China, Russia, and Mexico: *Business Week Online, Rainmaking Has Its True Believers—And Skeptics, October 24, 2005*

Weather Modification Incorporated of Fargo: *Weather Modification Incorporated, www.weathermod.com*

Elate Intelligent Technologies Incorporated: *Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich*

An Instrument of War

According to US military reports: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996; US Air Force, An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025, An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities, May 1996*

During the Vietnam War: *United States Senate Subcommittee on Oceans and International Environment of the Committee on Foreign Relations, Weather Modification, March 20, 1974; New York Times (Popular Mechanics), Weather Wars: Pentagon Plans Weather as a Weapon, February 1, 1997, Jim Wilson*

advocated the covert use of weather attacks: *Between Two Ages, Zbigniew Brzezinski*

The United Nations Weather Weapons: *United Nations Weather Weapons Treaty, Convention On The Prohibition Of Military Or Any Other Hostile Use Of Environmental Modification Techniques, Proposed at Geneva Convention, May 18, 1977*

UN's weather modification treaty which prohibits: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996*

Regarding the deception: *Ibid*

weather modification could be used as a NLW: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*

A 1994 US Air Force JNLWD: *US Air Force, Joint Non-Lethal Weapons Directorate, Weather Modification Using Carbon Black, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), 1994*

weapon of mass destruction: *Winning The War, Col. John B. Alexander*

used to destroy a nation's economy: *US Navy, Joint Non-Lethal Weapons Directorate, Nonlethal Warfare Proposal, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), April 1994*

The creation of fog: *Enabling Technologies and Design of Nonlethal Weapons, Glenn T. Shwaery, John G. Blitch, Carlton Land, (The International Society for Optical Engineering, 2006)*

According to the US Air Force, equipment exists: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996*

artificial lightning had been accomplished: *Weapons Grade, David Hambling*

using such lasers for lightning attacks: *New York Times (Popular Mechanics), Weather Wars: Pentagon Plans Weather as a Weapon, February 1, 1997, Jim Wilson*

The US Air Force itself referenced: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996*
The Tofflers suggested that lasers: *War And Anti-War, Alvin and Heidi Toffler*

HAARP

most powerful multi-purpose weapons: *Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich*
HAARP is a world-class facility: *An Overview of the HAARP Program, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/gen1.html; High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program, wikipedia.org/wiki/High_Frequency_Active_Auroral_Research_Program; HAARP: Research and Applications, A Joint Program of the Air Force Research Laboratory and the Office of Naval Research, November 5, 1998*
It works by heating the ionosphere: *Ground-Based Star Wars, Disaster Or Pure Research?, Dr. Nick Begich, Jeane Manning, www.earthpulse.com; Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich; E Magazine, The Air Force is Preparing to Militarize the Ionosphere—with Electrifying Results, January 1, 1997, Tracey C. Rembert*
The primary component of HAARP: *HAARP Fact Sheet, What Is HAARP?, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/factSheet.html; Wireless News, BAE Systems Completes Facility for Ionospheric Physics Research, June 28, 2007*
The entire IRI: *Ibid*
Every dipole has: *The HAARP IRI as Described in the EIS, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/iriEis.html; Ibid*
Each contains 12, 10 kW transmitters: *Ibid*
The energy generated by the IRI is combined: *Ground-Based Star Wars, Disaster Or Pure Research?, Dr. Nick Begich, Jeane Manning, www.earthpulse.com; Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich*
It has a variety of diagnostic instruments: *High Frequency Active Auroral Research Project (HAARP), www.darpa.mil/tto/programs/haarp.htm*
They include ELF and VLF receivers: *Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, Joint Services Program Plans and Activities, HAARP Executive Summary, HF Active Auroral Research Program; HAARP Fact Sheet, What Is HAARP?, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/factSheet.html*
HAARP was created in three phases: *High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program, wikipedia.org/wiki/High_Frequency_Active_Auroral_Research_Program*
The next was the Filled Developmental Prototype: *Ibid*
The best scientists in ionosphere research: *An Overview of the HAARP Program, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/gen1.html*
The facility, including computer systems: *Ground-Based Star Wars, Disaster Or Pure Research?, Dr. Nick Begich, Jeane Manning, www.earthpulse.com; Wireless News, BAE Systems Completes Facility for Ionospheric Physics Research, June 28, 2007*
It was approved by congress: *High Frequency Active Auroral Research Project (HAARP), www.darpa.mil/tto/programs/haarp.htm; US Fed News Service, Including US State News, Congress Passes 2008 Defense Spending Bill, November 9, 2007*
Research for HAARP began in 1992: *The Washington Post, Pentagon Fights Secret Scenario Speculation Over Alaska Antennas, April 17, 1995, John Mintz; Global Research, Weather Warfare: Beware the US military's Experiments With Climatic Warfare, December 7, 2007, Professor Michel Chossudovsky*
APTI, along with the HAARP patents: *Ibid*
Other institutions that helped to create: *High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program, wikipedia.org/wiki/High_Frequency_Active_Auroral_Research_Program*

HAARP is managed: *Ground-Based Star Wars, Disaster Or Pure Research?, Dr. Nick Begich, Jeane Manning, www.earthpulse.com; HAARP Fact Sheet, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/factSheet.html; Purpose and Objectives of the HAARP Program, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/prpeis.html*

HAARP can produce continuous wave (CW): *HAARP: Research and Applications, A Joint Program of the Air Force Research Laboratory and the Office of Naval Research, November 5, 1998; Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich*

In low-frequency conversion mode: *Wireless News, BAE Systems Completes Facility for Ionospheric Physics Research, June 28, 2007*

The ELF waves which it produces: *Wired, New Document Reveals Military Mystery's Powers, December 10, 2007, David Hambling; HAARP: Research and Applications, A Joint Program of the Air Force Research Laboratory and the Office of Naval Research, November 5, 1998*

HAARP is also capable of transferring massive: *E Magazine, The Air Force is Preparing to Militarize the Ionosphere—with Electrifying Results, January 1, 1997, Tracey C. Rembert; Air Force Geophysics Laboratory, Navy Office of Naval Research, Joint Services Program Plans and Activities, HAARP Executive Summary, HF Active Auroral Research Program; Ground-Based Star Wars, Disaster Or Pure Research?, Dr. Nick Begich, Jeane Manning, www.earthpulse.com*

They're created by focusing energy: *Ibid (HAARP Executive Summary; Begich, Manning)*

According to the US Air Force: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996*

By creating virtual mirrors in the ionosphere: *Wired, New Document Reveals Military Mystery's Powers, December 10, 2007, David Hambling*

HAARP is basically a multi-purpose tool: *An Overview of the HAARP Program, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/gen1.html*

The program's purpose is to provide: *Purpose and Objectives of the HAARP Program, www.haarp.alaska.edu/haarp/prpeis.html*

enhance the performance of C4ISR: *Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich; Ibid*

The Tesla Death Ray

Dr. Bernard Eastland, the physicist: *The Washington Post, Pentagon Fights Secret Scenario Speculation Over Alaska Antennas, April 17, 1995, John Mintz*

The military denies that HAARP: *Ibid*

Furthermore, Manning and Dr. Begich provide: *Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich*

Dr. Nikola Tesla, the famous: *My Inventions: The Autobiography of Nikola Tesla, Nikola Tesla, (Hart Brothers, 1982); The Tesla Papers: Nikola Tesla on Free Energy & Wireless Transmission of Power, David Hatcher Childress, (Adventures Unlimited Press, December 2000); The Lost Journals of Nikola Tesla: HAARP—Chemtrails and Secret of Alternative 4, Tim Swartz, (Global Communications, October 2000)*

Dr. Tesla had plans for an aircraft: *Ibid*

capable of destroying a fleet of 10,000 airplanes: *New York Times, Tesla, at 78, Bares New Death Beam, July 11, 1934*

It describes a ground-based, multi-purpose: *US Patent 4686605, Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region in the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere, and/or Magnetosphere, August 11, 1987, Bernard J. Eastland, www.patentstorm.us*

Eastland's weapon can disrupt or even modify: *Ibid*

Dr. Tesla's invention consisted of large, land-based: *New York Times, Tesla, at 78, Bares New Death Beam, July 11, 1934; New York Sun, Tesla Describes His Beam of Destructive Energy, July 10, 1934*

used to create a series of AIMs in the ionosphere: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996*
According to the Air Force, the same technology: *Ibid*
Similarly, Eastland's patent describes how mirrors: *US Patent 4686605, Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region in the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere, and/or Magnetosphere, August 11, 1987, Bernard J. Eastland, www.patentstorm.us*
stratosphere to light the sky: *New York Herald Tribune, Tesla Predicts Ships Powered By Shore Beam, June 5, 1935*
This seems similar to the Navy/Air Force's 1998: *HAARP: Research and Applications, A Joint Program of the Air Force Research Laboratory and the Office of Naval Research, November 5, 1998*
According to Eastland's patent, the guidance: *US Patent 4686605, Method and Apparatus for Altering a Region in the Earth's Atmosphere, Ionosphere, and/or Magnetosphere, August 11, 1987, Bernard J. Eastland, www.patentstorm.us*
This would have significant military implications: *Ibid*
The Air Force has expressed an interest: *US Air Force, An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025, An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities, May 1996*
In July 1934, the New York Sun wrote that Dr. Tesla: *New York Sun, Tesla Describes His Beam of Destructive Energy, July 10, 1934*
Anything with which the ray came in contact: *Ibid*
Another characteristic connecting Eastland's weapon: *US Patent 5038664, Method for Producing a Shell of Relativistic Particles at an Altitude Above the Earths Surface, August 13, 1991, Bernard J. Eastland*
It works in the following way: *Ibid*
According to E Magazine, Pravda, Wired: *E Magazine, The Air Force is Preparing to Militarize the Ionosphere—with Electrifying Results, January 1, 1997, Tracey C. Rembert; Pravda, USA and Russia Supposedly Develop Secret Meteorological Weapons, September 30, 2005; Wired, New Document Reveals Military Mystery's Powers, December 10, 2007, David Hambling; Wired, Russian Journal: HAARP Could Capsize Planet, January 8, 2008, Sharon Weinberger; Global Research, Washington's New World Order Weapons Have the Ability to Trigger Climate Change, January 4, 2002, Professor Michael Chossudovsky; Star Wars, Star Trek and Killing Politely, Dr. Nick Begich, www.earthpulse.com*
It is allegedly capable of destroying: *Ibid*
although HAARP is presented to the public: *Ibid (Global Research)*
complete dominance of global communications: *Air Force, Department of Defense, Weather as a Force Multiplier: Owning the Weather in 2025, August 1996*
This will be accomplished using high-powered: *Ibid*
Wired announced in January 2008: *Wired, Russian Journal: HAARP Could Capsize Planet, January 8, 2008, Sharon Weinberger*
In it's Acoustic Weapons Prospective: *Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann*
sophisticated ecological weaponry: *War And Anti-War, Alvin and Heidi Toffler*
Secretary of Defense William S. Cohen: *Federation of American Scientists, Cohen Address, University of Georgia, Athens, Georgia, Weapons of Mass Destruction and US Strategy, April 28, 1997*
According to Brzezinski, weather warfare: *Between Two Ages, Zbigniew Brzezinski*
so accurate it could paralyze or kill anyone: *New York Times, Tesla's New Device Like Bolts of Thor, December 8, 1915, Nikola Tesla*
In addition to HAARP's destructive capabilities: *Ground-Based Star Wars, Disaster Or Pure Research?, Dr. Nick Begich, Jeane Manning, www.earthpulse.com; Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Jeane Manning, Dr. Nick Begich; E Magazine, The Air Force is Preparing to Militarize the Ionosphere—with Electrifying Results, January 1, 1997, Tracey C. Rembert*

376

entraining the human brain: *Ibid (Begich, Manning)*

Congressman Dennis J. Kucinich of Ohio: *Space Preservation Act of 2001, HR 2977, 107th Congress, 1st Session, October 2, 2001, http://thomas.loc.gov*

An analysis of statements emanating: *Global Research, Weather Warfare: Beware the US military's Experiments With Climatic Warfare, December 7, 2007, Professor Michael Chossudovsky*

Miscellaneous Weapons and Tactics

Audible Noise

Audible sound has been used: *Journal of Electronic Defense, Killing Them Softly, August 1, 1993, Don Herskovitz; Defense Intelligence Agency, Controlled Offensive Behavior—USSR, Prepared by the US Army Office of the Surgeon General (ST-CS-01-169-72), July 1972, Captain John D. Lamothe; Sound and Vibration Magazine, Acoustic Noise as a Non-Lethal Weapon, October, 2004, Roman Vinokur*

Sound, from one source or another: *Ibid (Controlled Offensive Behavior)*

The Scottish military is said: *Journal of Electronic Defense, Killing Them Softly, August 1, 1993, Don Herskovitz; Sound and Vibration Magazine, Acoustic Noise as a Non-Lethal Weapon, October, 2004, Roman Vinokur; Ibid*

More recently, in December: *US Air Force, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Non-Lethal Weapons: Potential Strategic Blessings and Curses of Non-Lethal Weapons on the Battlefield, August 2003, Lieutenant Colonel Erik L. Nutley*

The FBI used loud aggravating: *Journal of Electronic Defense, Killing Them Softly, August 1, 1993, Don Herskovitz*

The British have used loud sounds: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

Noise is used as an irritating NLW: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998; Daily Breeze (Los Angeles Newspaper), Pentagon is Searching for Non-Lethal Weapons, March 24, 2002, Seth Hettena; National Defense Magazine, Defense Dept. Pursuing Next-Generation Nonlethal Weapons, February 2,009, David B. Law*

"aggravating" noise: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

an entire town could be rendered uninhabitable: *Council on Foreign Relations, Report of an Independent Task Force, Non-Lethal Technologies: Military Options and Implications, 1995, Malcolm H. Wiener*

Various methods of producing aggravating: *Sound and Vibration Magazine, Acoustic Noise as a Non-Lethal Weapon, October, 2004, Roman Vinokur; An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998; Defense Intelligence Agency, Controlled Offensive Behavior—USSR, Prepared by the US Army Office of the Surgeon General (ST-CS-01-169-72), July 1972, Captain John D. Lamothe*

Audible noise, occurring between: *Department of the Army, TRADOC Pamphlet 525-73, Concept for Nonlethal Capabilities in Army Operations, December 1, 1996; Ibid (Sound and Vibration Magazine)*

The repeated use of loud noise: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

The biological effects: *Department of Defense, US Army, Bioeffects of Selected Non-lethal Weapons, Addendum to the Nonlethal Technologies Worldwide Study (NGIC-I 147-101-98), 1998, FOI Request to Donald Friedman, December 13, 2006; Ibid*

Loud noise is dangerous: *Sound and Vibration Magazine, Acoustic Noise as a Non-Lethal Weapon, October, 2004, Roman Vinokur*

Chronic exposure to even low-level: *Archives of Environmental Health, Chronic Effects of Workplace Noise on Blood Pressure and Heart Rate, July 1, 2002, Claire C. Caruso; Environmental Health Perspectives, How Earplugs Can Help Your Heart: Health Effects of Noise Pollution, March 1, 2002, Bob Weinhold; Newsletter-People's Medical Society, Now Hear This (Detrimental Effects of Noise), April 1, 1999; Nutrition Health Review, The increase in Noise Pollution: What Are the Health Effects?, September, 22, 1996, Arlene, L. Bronzaft*

A burst of sudden noise: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

Sudden noise at about 140 decibels: *Department of Defense, US Army, Bioeffects of Selected Non-lethal Weapons, Addendum to the Nonlethal Technologies Worldwide Study (NGIC-I 147-101-98), 1998, FOI Request to Donald Friedman, December 13, 2006*

an actual or psychological weapon: *Journal of Electronic Defense, Killing Them Softly, August 1, 1993, Don Herskovitz*

Holograms

Three-dimensional images that look like real: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker; Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004; CNN, Holographic Television to Become Reality, July 10, 2008*

Holograms can be projected: *US Air Force, Air Command And Staff College, Maxwell AFB, An Operational Analysis for Air Force 2025: An Application of Value-Focused Thinking to Future Air and Space Capabilities, May 1996; The New Hampshire, UNH is Hub of Pentagon's 'Non-Lethal' Weapons Research Program, April 25, 2008, Derek Price; The Boston Globe, Non-Lethal Weapons: Sci-fi Meets Pentagon, November 20, 2000, Ellen Barry; Wall Street Journal, Nonlethal Arms, New Class of Weapons Could Incapacitate Foe Yet Limit Casualties, January 4, 1993, Thomas B. Ricks; Government Product News, Non-lethal Weapons Offer More Counter-Terrorism Options, November 1, 2003; Strategic Studies Institute, US Army War College, Nonlethality and American Land Power: Strategic Context and Operational Concepts, June 15, 1998, Douglas C. Lovelace, Jr., Steven Metz*

Holograms are also to be projected into rooms: *University of Bradford, UK, Bradford Non-Lethal Weapons Research Project (BNLWRP), Research Report Number 5, May 2004, Neil Davison, Dr. Nick Lewer*

sophisticated PsyOp to be used on the civilian: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004*

to scare a target individual to death: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

The Air Force has also considered using satellites: *Center for Strategy and Technology, Air War College, Maxwell Air Force Base, Lasers In Space: Technological Options For Enhancing US Military Capabilities, November 1997, Mark E. Rogers, Lieutenant Colonel, USAF*

Show Of Force Operation (SOFO)

A Show of Force Operation: *Show of Force, wikipedia.org/wiki/Show_of_force*

A show of force is an operation: *Department of the Army, Field Manual FM 3-0, June 14, 2001*

The BSSR describes a SOFO: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice*

Although SOFO are military in nature: *Show of Force, wikipedia.org/wiki/Show_of_force; Joint Chiefs of Staff, Military Operations Other Than War, Joint Doctrine, J-7 Operational Plans and Interoperability Directorate; US Air Force, Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Military Operations Other Than War, October 5, 1996*

378

They may occur during times of peace: *Ibid*
SOFO are conducted for a few primary reasons: *Department of the Army, Field Manual FM 3-0, June 14, 2001; Department of The Army, Field Manual 3-21.91, November 26, 2002*
SOFO may be used by the military: *Show of Force, wikipedia.org/wiki/Show_of_force; Air Force Doctrine Document 2-10, Homeland Operations, Air Force Support to the National Strategy for Homeland Security, March 21, 2006*
usually involving routine overhead flights: *US Air Force, Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Military Operations Other Than War, October 5, 1996*
The US Army too mentioned that aircraft: *Department of the Army, Decisive Force: The Army in Theater Operations (FM 100-7)*
air patrols over specific locations: *Air Force Doctrine Document 2-10, Homeland Operations, Air Force Support to the National Strategy for Homeland Security, March 21, 2006*

Isolation

A primary component of this: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007*
NLW will be used with surveillance: *Department of the Army, TRADOC Pamphlet 525-73, Concept for Nonlethal Capabilities in Army Operations, December 1, 1996*
to deny an enemy or adversary: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*
Basically any city, state, or country: *US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, Information Operations and Asymmetric Warfare…Are We Ready?, April 09, 2002, LTC LaWarren V. Patterson; Strategic Studies Institute, US Army War College, Nonlethality and American Land Power: Strategic Context and Operational Concepts, June 15, 1998, Douglas C. Lovelace, Jr., Steven Metz*
Multinational capabilities, Says the US Army: *Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*
To achieve this, US law enforcement: *Ibid*
At a military history symposium: *The Information Battlefield, Address to the Combat Studies Institute Symposium, Fort Leavenworth, KS, September 12, 2007, Lieutenant General William B. Caldwell*
General Caldwell's solution is the same: *Ibid*
Psychological isolation can be accomplished: *Naval Law Review, A Primer on the Employment of Non-Lethal Weapons, Lieutenant Colonel James C. Duncan, 1998*
The RAND Corporation calls this: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*
In the spring 1998 issue of the US Army War: *US Army War College Quarterly, From Parameters, The Mind Has No Firewall, Spring 1998, Timothy L. Thomas*

Disruption of Utilities

There have been multiple references: *Council on Foreign Relations, Report of an Independent Task Force, Non-Lethal Technologies: Military Options and Implications, 1995, Malcolm H. Wiener; Los Alamos National Laboratory, Rethinking National Security Requirements And The Need For Non-Lethal Weapons Options, John B. Alexander, PhD; Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*
It was suggested by Lord Bertrand Arthur Russell: *The Scientific Outlook, Bertrand Russell; The Impact of Science on Society (Simon & Shuster, 1951), Bertrand Russell*

Finances

The blatant use of both bribery: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

Destroying people financially has been: *Defense Science Board, Future Strategic Strike Forces, February 2004; Department of the Army, Field Manual Operations 3-0, February 27, 2008*

can apply economic and financial incentives: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

The disruption of the enemy's credit system: *Council on Foreign Relations, Non-Lethal Technologies: Progress and Prospects, October 27, 1999*

Use of Animals

Genetically altered insects: *Federation of American Scientists, Cohen Address, University of Georgia, Athens, Georgia, Weapons of Mass Destruction and US Strategy, April 28, 1997; War And Anti-War, Alvin and Heidi Toffler*

Chemicals which attract: *US Air Force Wright Laboratory, Wright-Patterson AFB (OH), Harassing, Annoying, and "Bad Guy" Identifying Chemicals, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1994*

Chemicals called pheromones: *Institute for National Security Studies, US Air Force Academy, Nonlethal Weapons: Terms and References, July 1997, Dr. Robert J. Bunker*

These pheromones: *US Air Force Wright Laboratory, Wright-Patterson AFB (OH), Harassing, Annoying, and "Bad Guy" Identifying Chemicals, (FOI obtained by Sunshine Project), June 1994*

Some of these chemicals can allegedly: *Ibid*

trying to sleep or work: *Future War, Colonel John B. Alexander*

animals can be used for surveillance: *War on the Mind, Peter Watson*

In 1944 he discovered that pigeons: *Ibid*

The Israelis took an interest: *Ibid*

The US Navy has used whales: *The Boston Globe, Non-Lethal Weapons: Sci-fi Meets Pentagon, November 20, 2000, Ellen Barry; Ibid*

Dogs have regularly been used: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006; Ibid (Watson)*

Radio waves can also be used: *The Body Electric: Electromagnetism and the Foundation of Life, Robert O. Becker, MD, Gary Selden, (William Morrow & Company, 1985)*

DARPA contracted the JASON Group: *JASON Group, The MITRE Corporation, Small Scale Propulsion: Fly on the Wall, Cockroach in the Corner, Rat in the Basement, Bird in the Sky, (JSR-97-135), September 18, 1997*

Creating tiny robots in the form: *Ibid*

Instead, DARPA suggests using living creatures: *Ibid*

The creatures, says DARPA: *Ibid*

scientists at Tsuka University: *Ibid*

In 2002 it was reported by the UK Guardian: *UK Guardian, Live Rats Driven by Remote Control, May 2 2002, James Meek; National Geographic News, Scientists Drive Rats By Remote Control, May 1, 2002, Ben Harder*

The control that they were able to establish: *Ibid*

The rodents are to be used for rescue: *Ibid*

Barriers/Blocking

Barriers have been used by military: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

The NRC says: *Ibid (NRC)*

The US Army suggests that physical obstacles: *Department of the Army, TRADOC Pamphlet 525-73, Concept for Nonlethal Capabilities in Army Operations, December 1, 1996*

are used to deter, prevent, or discourage: *North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, (NATO), Research And Technology Organisation (RTO), The Human Effects of Non-Lethal Technologies (TR-HFM-073), August 2006*

Volume IV The Coverup

Schizophrenia Spectrum Disorders

Introduction

Schizophrenia is a mixture of signs: *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders Fourth Edition (DSM-IV-TR), (American Psychiatric Association, 2000); National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery: What You Need to Know About this Medical Illness, August 2008*

Its chronic, long-lasting symptoms: *Ibid*

The symptoms, treatment, and course of schizophrenia: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich, (The Guilford Press, 2006), Ibid (DSM-IV-TR)*

These disorders are called schizophrenia spectrum disorders: *Ibid*

Closely associated with schizophrenia: *US Department of Health and Human Services, National Institutes of Health, Bipolar Disorder, NIH Publication 08-3679, 2008; Surviving Schizophrenia: A Manual for Families, Patients, and Providers, E. Fuller Torrey, MD, (Harper Collins Publishers, 2006)*

Also, about 50%: *Ibid*

Description

Schizophrenia can be found in about 1%: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery: What You Need to Know About this Medical Illness, August 2008; Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason, (Columbia University Press, 2002); National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD, February 2007; Ibid (Torrey)*

The life expectancy of schizophrenics: *DSM-IV-TR*

While both groups are at: *Ibid*

Most people with it are not violent: *National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD; Ibid*

Other than people with a history: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*

Schizophrenia can be developed: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008; The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; Ibid*

History

Although the name schizophrenia: *Schizophrenia: Diseases and People, Jane E. Philips, David P. Ketelsen, (Enslow Publishers, 2003); Me, Myself, and Them: A firsthand Account of One Young Person's Experience with Schizophrenia, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews, (Oxford University Press, 2007); The Encyclopedia of Schizophrenia and other Psychotic Disorders, Richard Noll, PhD, (Facts on File Inc., 2007)*

However, it is a debatable issue: *Ibid (Noll)*

The symptoms that characterize schizophrenia: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

A French researcher named Jean Pierre Falret: *Schizophrenia, Jane E. Philips, David P. Ketelsen*

In 1874 Hecker's teacher: *Understanding and Treating Schizophrenia: Contemporary Research, Theory, and Practice, Glenn D. Shean, PhD, (The Haworth Clinical Practice Press, 2004); Ibid*

One was hebetic paraphrenia: *Ibid*

Although many different people: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

Emil Kraepelin (1856-1926): *Understanding and Treating Schizophrenia, Glenn D. Shean, PhD; Schizophrenia, Jane E. Philips, David P. Ketelsen*

In 1896 he published the fifth edition: Ibid

Kraepelin was the first to recognize: *Emil Kraepelin, http://dictionary.reference.com/browse/emil+kraepelin; Emil Kraepelin, wikipedia.org/wiki/Emil_Kraepelin*

Then in 1911 the term was changed: *Understanding and Treating Schizophrenia, Glenn D. Shean, PhD; The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

Unlike Kraepelin, he thought: *Ibid*

Symptoms

In the DSM-IV symptoms occur in two broad categories: *DSM-IV-TR*

Categories A1 through A4 contain: *Ibid*

Positive symptoms (also known as psychotic symptoms): *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008; Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

One narrow meaning of the word: *DSM-IV-TR*

Delusions are a very common symptom: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; The Encyclopedia of Schizophrenia and other Psychotic Disorders, Richard Noll, PhD*

The two basic categories of delusions include: *DSM-IV-TR*

The most common type is the persecutory: *The Encyclopedia of Schizophrenia and other Psychotic Disorders, Richard Noll, PhD; The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; Delusions, FAQ, www.schizophrenia.com*

A variation of the persecutory delusion: *Ibid*

there is a government plot to destroy them: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews; Ibid*

Referential delusions are also common: *DSM-IV-TR; Ibid (Noll; Mueser, Gingerich)*

Those suffering such delusions: *Ibid*

Examples of delusions of control: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008; National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD, February 2007; Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; National Institute of Mental Health, US Department of Health and Human Services, Schizophrenia, January, 2007; Ibid (DSM-IV-TR)*

Hallucinations are false sensory: *Ibid*

The auditory hallucinations are experienced: *Ibid*

Although they are less prominent: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews; Ibid (NAMI 2008; DSM-IV-TR)*

These additions include: *Ibid (Snyder, Gur, Andrews)*

Problems with emotional expression: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; DSM-IV-TR*

Affective flattening: *Ibid*

Alogia is a poverty: *National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD, February 2007; Ibid*

Avolition is lack: *Ibid*

Grossly disorganized behavior: *Ibid (DSM-IV-TR)*

Catatonic motor behaviors: *Ibid*

Schizophrenia also involves a dysfunction: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; Ibid*

According to the DSM-IV, disorganized: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews: Ibid (DSM-IV-TR)*

A person may jump from one: *Ibid (DSM-IV-TR)*

a symptom called anosognosia: *I Am Not Sick, I Don't Need Help, Xavier Amador, Anna-Lisa Johanson, (Vida Press, 2000); Ibid*

In addition to the positive, negative: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD, February 2007*

When mood instability is the primary: *Ibid*

Schizophrenia is expressed differently: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008*

Causes and Studies

Schizophrenia is not caused by a lesion: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008*

The most widely accepted is the dopamine: *Ibid*

The imbalance is thought: Diagnosis: *Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; DSM-IV-TR*

Diagnosis

They include the Criterion A symptoms: *DSM-IV-TR*

Furthermore, other underlying causes: *Ibid*

Criterion C requires that some signs: *Ibid*

Also, if delusions are judged bizarre: *Ibid*

Other exclusions that do not belong: *Ibid*

Delusions that occur while falling asleep: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008; Ibid*

Linguistic differences may account: *Ibid (NAMI)*

Some conditions which can cause these symptoms: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews; Schizophrenia Symptoms, Diagnosis FAQ, www.schizophrenia.com; Ibid*

There is no physical or laboratory test: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; Ibid (NAMI)*

The most accurate way to detect schizophrenia: *Ibid (Mueser, Gingerich)*

The diagnosis is made by asking questions: *Schizophrenia Revealed: From Neurons to Social Interactions, Michael Foster Green, PhD, (W.W. Norton & Company, 2001); Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

Because a person who: *Ibid*

The clinician evaluates the person: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008; The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

The two most widely used: *Ibid*

subtypes are used for a more accurate description: *DSM-IV-TR*

Course, Prognosis, Process

The progression of the illness can vary: *Bristol-Myers Squibb Company and Otsuka Pharmaceuticals Europe Ltd., Schizophrenia Handbook, 2004*

The prodromal phase includes: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; Schizophrenia, Jane E. Philips, David P. Ketelsen; The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

This phase may develop over: *Bristol-Myers Squibb Company and Otsuka Pharmaceuticals Europe Ltd., Schizophrenia Handbook, 2004; Ibid (CMHA; Mueser, Gingerich)*

The residual phase includes: *Schizophrenia, Jane E. Philips, David P. Ketelsen; Ibid (Bristol-Myers)*

Residual symptoms include lack of energy: *Ibid*

After the hospital discharge: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason*

They may also have a therapist: *Ibid*

The course of the illness for people: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008; National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD, February 2007; DSM-IV-TR*

Treatment

The drugs used to treat schizophrenia: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*

Medication is also associated with a reduction: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

Medication does not completely: *Ibid*

Scientists think: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery, August 2008; Ibid*

Some theories suggest: *Ibid*

Others are available in long-lasting injections: *Ibid*

The two basic types of antipsychotics: *Ibid*

Typical antipsychotics were: *National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD, February 2007; Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason*

Side effects of typical antipsychotics: *Ibid*

Atypical antipsychotics appeared: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

Atypical antipsychotics cause fewer: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD, February 2007; Ibid*

In addition to taking medications for psychotic: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; Ibid (CMHA; Mueser, Gingerich)*

Although it is not usually used anymore: *Ibid (Mueser, Gingerich)*

There is a variety of reasons: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*

Family members and doctors can work together: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; Ibid*

Relatives of those diagnosed with schizophrenia: *Ibid (Mueser, Gingerich)*

A variety of therapeutic approaches: *Ibid*

The types of programs offered: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*

Another is behavior therapy: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

Family education (psychoeducation): *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*

However, psychotherapy is usually reserved: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

Peer groups exist: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*

Involuntary Commitment (Assisted Treatment)

In a situation where someone who is thought: *Surviving Schizophrenia, E. Fuller Torrey, MD*

An involuntary commitment process: *I Am Not Sick, I Don't Need Help, Xavier Amador, Anna-Lisa Johanson*

Some common signs which constitute: *Ibid*

Most hospitals have mobile crisis teams: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; Ibid*

Commitments can be long: *Ibid*

A person may then be released: *Getting Treatment for People When They Lack Insight into Their Illness, www.schizophrenia.com/invol.html*

they can be force medicated at any time: *I Am Not Sick, I Don't Need Help, Xavier Amador, Anna-Lisa Johanson*

With assertive case management: *Surviving Schizophrenia, E. Fuller Torrey, MD; Ibid*

With a guardianship a court appoints: *Getting Treatment for People When They Lack Insight into Their Illness, www.schizophrenia.com/invol.html*

Control of the Medical Industry

Manipulation of Washington

Pharmaceutical companies basically run Washington: *Selling Sickness: How the World's Biggest Pharmaceutical Companies are Turning us All Into Patients, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels, (National Books, 2005); Our Daily Meds: How the Pharmaceutical Companies Transformed Themselves into Slick Marketing Machines and Hooked the Nation on Prescription Drugs, Melody Petersen, (Sarah Crichton Books, 2008); The Center for Public Integrity, Drug Lobby Second to None: How the Pharmaceutical Industry Gets Its Way in Washington, July 7, 2005, M. Asif Ismail*

Between 1998 and 2004: *Ibid (Petersen)*

In addition to each member of congress: *New York Times, F.D.A. Reveals it Fell to a Push by Lawmakers, September 25, 2009, Gardiner Harris, David M. Halbfinger; USA TODAY, Senators Who Weakened Drug Bill Got Millions from Industry, May 10, 2008, Ken Dilanian*

The industry's influence in Washington: *Commonsense Rebellion: Debunking Psychiatry, Confronting Society, Bruce E. Levine, (Continuum Publishing, 2001); Medication Madness: A Psychiatrist Exposes the Dangers of Mood-Altering Medications, Peter R. Breggin, MD, (St. Martin's Press, 2008)*

Dan Quayle's campaign: *Ibid*

Washington is the axis: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

Drug corporations have a tremendous: *The Center for Public Integrity, Drug Lobby Second to None: How the Pharmaceutical Industry Gets Its Way in Washington, July 7, 2005, M. Asif Ismail*

(NIH) consist of about 27 federal research centers: *Los Angeles Times, Stealth Merger: Drug Companies and Government Medical Research, December 7, 2003, David Willman*

The NIH is partially funded by drug: *On The Take: How America's Complicity with Big Business Can Endanger Your Health, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD, (Oxford University Press, 2005)*

These officials have made hundreds of thousands: *Los Angeles Times, Stealth Merger: Drug Companies and Government Medical Research, December 7, 2003, David Willman*

Records obtained by the Times: *Ibid*

Dr. Stephen Katz: *Ibid*

Beginning in 1997 up to about 2003: *Ibid*

Dr. Ronald N. Germain: *Ibid*

Over a 10 year period, Dr. Jeffrey Schlom: *Ibid*

Jeffrey M. Trent received: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen; Ibid*

These and other NIH connections: *Ibid (LA Times)*

A component of the NIH, the National Institute: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem: How and Why to Stop Taking Psychiatric Drugs, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD, (Perseus books, 1999)*

Dr. Peter R. Breggin, author of the book: *Brain-Disabling Treatments in Psychiatry, Drugs, Electroshock, and the Psychopharmaceutical Complex, Peter R. Breggin, (Springer Publishing, 2008)*

The NIMH conducts highly expensive: *Ibid*

Both the FDA and NIMH: *Ibid*

The FDA does not perform its: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*

The FDA relies almost entirely: *Brain-Disabling Treatments in Psychiatry, Drugs, Electroshock, and the Psychopharmaceutical Complex, Peter R. Breggin; Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

The division of the FDA that approves: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels; Health Affairs, Approval Times for New Drugs, December 17, 2003, Daniel Carpenter, Michael Chernew, Dean G. Smith, Mark Fendrick; Ibid (Breggin)*

Front Groups

Front groups have the appearance: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*

Drug corporations not only sponsor: *Ibid*

Many medical professional groups: *Ibid*

A few of the societies under the industry's: *Ibid*

In addition, they form panels: *Ibid*

The American Psychiatric Association (APA): *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine; Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

Operating through these professional: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*

In addition to the societies themselves: *Ibid*

From the many complex arrangements: *Ibid*

At least two-thirds of consumer advocacy groups: Y*our Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD; Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

These corporate-funded groups produce: *Ibid*

In addition, they provide a network: *Ibid*

CHADD receives about $700,000: *Ibid (Moynihan, Cassels)*

NAMI is the largest patient advocacy group: *Bloomberg, Grassley Probes Financing of Advocacy Group for Mental Health, April 6, 2009, Nicole Gaouette; New York Times, Drug Makers are Advocacy Group's Biggest Donors, October 22, 2009, Gardiner Harris*

In addition to being financed heavily: *Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org; Ibid (NYT)*

I have come to understand that money: *Bloomberg, Grassley Probes Financing of Advocacy Group for Mental Health, April 6, 2009, Nicole Gaouette*

The American Medical Association (AMA): *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

Before 1951 it was a truly independent: *Mad in America: Bad Science, Bad Medicine, and the Enduring Mistreatment of the Mentally Ill, Robert Whitaker, (Perseus Publishing, 2002)*

Then in 1950 it received about $2.5 million: *Ibid*

Mental Health America (MHA), formerly the National: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*

In 1993 Eli Lilly contributed about $3 million to MHA: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*

MHA has since received millions in financing: *Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org*

The Industry's Influence of Doctors

The majority of the industry's marketing: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

The recruitment of physicians begins: *Ibid*

According to the New England Journal of Medicine: *New England Journal of Medicine, Is Academic Medicine for Sale?, Volume 342, May 18, 2000, Marcia Angell, MD; On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*

Drug company representatives appreciate: *Ibid (Kassirer)*

Dr. Kassirer witnessed a typical: *Ibid*

describe the recruitment process this way: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

After graduation, physicians are usually: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*

There is a silent progression: *Ibid*

With no restrictions: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

Those not recruited during med school: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels; On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*

Some gifts have included: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen; Ibid (Kassirer)*

Petersen cites a manual: *Ibid (Petersen)*
Some of these gifts are offered under the guise: *Ibid*
Some receive phone calls from representatives: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*
pay physicians or pharmacies: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*
They reportedly make tens of thousands: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*
In the area of psychiatric drug testing: *Psychology Today, Are Psychiatrists Betraying Their Patients?, Volume 32, Number 5, September/October 1999, Loren R. Mosher, MD*
University psychiatry departments: *Ibid*
Most physicians with ties to: *New England Journal of Medicine, Is Academic Medicine for Sale?, Volume 342, May 18, 2000, Marcia Angell, MD*
this posture ignores what we know: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*
Professor Cialdini discovered: *Ibid*
In fact, reciprocation is the first: *The 6 Weapons of Influence, Patricia Fripp, CSP, CPAE, David Palmer, Ph.D, CPA, www.fripp.com/art.of_influence.html*
almost all American doctors: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*
For the last 50 years, what's developed: *National Public Radio, Interview with Dr. Robert Cialdini, Ira Flatow (Host), August 22, 2008, www.npr.org*
Most states require physicians to take: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD; Ibid*
Almost half of the refresher courses themselves: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*
Furthermore, many medical: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*
For instance, the Massachusetts General Hospital: *The Boston Globe, Psychiatry Funding Questioned, May 14, 2005, Liz Kowalczyk*
The lectures were to be offered at hospitals: *Ibid*
As much as they prescribe these drugs: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*
Dr. Jerry Avorn and his colleagues at Harvard Medical: *Disease-Mongers: How Doctors, Drug Companies, and Insurers are Making You Feel Sick, Lynn Payer, (Wiley & Sons, Inc., 1992)*
Only very few become experts: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*
Many of our doctors, no matter how committed: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*
You can trust your doctors: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*
There are more than 300,000: Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels
During these meetings: *Ibid*
In addition to the presentation material: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*
For instance, at the 2005 APA: *Ibid*
At some of these meetings, clusters of doctors: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*
The halls themselves are filled: *Ibid*
Attendees receive free items: *Ibid*
People outside of medicine: *Ibid*
Peterson recognized the same behavior: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*
At some booths doctors can simply: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*
Journalist Ray Moynihan and policy researcher: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*
Hundreds of doctors: *Ibid*
At this conference, companies paid about: *Ibid*

The Industry's Control of Research

The senior physicians who significantly: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

They also "educate" their colleagues: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD; Ibid*

Some Madison Avenue PR Firms have divisions: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

Thought leaders are a critical part: *New England Journal of Medicine, Is Academic Medicine for Sale?, Volume 342, May 18, 2000, Marcia Angell, MD; On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD; Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

These leaders may be on the advisory: *Ibid*

Up to three-quarters of the scientific research: *Public Library of Science (PLoS) Medicine, Medical Journals Are an Extension of the Marketing Arm of Pharmaceutical Companies, May 17, 2005, Richard Smith; Ibid (NEJM; Kassirer)*

These researchers receive not: *Ibid (NEJM)*

Some medical schools receive research: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*

The industry reportedly has: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

The results of these studies: *Los Angeles Times, Stealth Merger: Drug Companies and Government Medical Research, December 7, 2003, David Willman; Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels; New England Journal of Medicine, Is Academic Medicine for Sale?, Volume 342, May 18, 2000, Marcia Angell, MD*

In their May 2005 article, Medical Journals: *Public Library of Science (PLoS) Medicine, Medical Journals Are an Extension of the Marketing Arm of Pharmaceutical Companies, May 17, 2005, Richard Smith*

Dr. Richard Horton: *Ibid*

Dr. Kassirer notes a study conducted: *On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD*

Even the peer review process: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen; Ibid*

ghostwriters in the pay of drug companies: *UK Guardian, Revealed: How Drug Firms 'Hoodwink' Medical Journals, December 7, 2003, Antony Barnett*

They, and the involvement of the pharmaceutical firms: *Ibid*

The ghostwriters are medical writing experts: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

The new controversy: *New York Times, The Doctor's World; Some Authors in Medical Journals May be Paid by Spin Doctors, October 4, 1994, Lawrence K. Altman, MD*

Although there are reportedly dozens of medical writing: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

Some of the evidence linking: *Ibid*

The Guardian interviewed former ghostwriters: *UK Guardian, Revealed: How Drug Firms 'Hoodwink' Medical Journals, December 7, 2003, Antony Barnett*

When Dr. David Healy: *Ibid*

Dr. Troyen Brennan of the Harvard School: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

that a significant number of articles that appeared: *New York Times, Ghostwriting is Called Rife in Medical Journals, September 10, 2009, Duff Wilson, Natasha Singer*

these ghostwritten articles are routinely circulated: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen; On The Take, Jerome P. Kassirer, MD; UK Guardian, Revealed: How Drug Firms 'Hoodwink' Medical Journals, December 7, 2003, Antony Barnett; Ibid*

Professional societies are intricately involved: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD; Ibid (Kassirer)*

The senior experts on these panels: *Ibid*

they revealed that 87% were in regular contact: *The Journal of the American Medical Association, Relationships Between Authors of Clinical Practice Guidelines and the Pharmaceutical Industry, Volume 287, February 6, 2002, Niteesh K. Choudhry, MD, Henry Thomas Stelfox, MD, Allan S. Detsky, MD*

A diagnostic tool called Prime-MD: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*

A questionnaire created by Pfizer: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

The Diagnostic Statistical Manual: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*

In addition to influencing the creation of CPGs: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

a high degree of interaction between authors: *The Journal of the American Medical Association, Relationships Between Authors of Clinical Practice Guidelines and the Pharmaceutical Industry, Volume 287, February 6, 2002, Niteesh K. Choudhry, MD, Henry Thomas Stelfox, MD, Allan S. Detsky, MD*

Illnesses Creation

According to multiple researchers, drug companies: *Disease-Mongers, Lynn Payer; Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

The famous Madison Avenue: *Ibid (Moynihan, Cassels)*

Parry described it this way: *Medical Marketing and Media, The Art of Branding a Condition, May 1 2003, Vince Parry*

the explosion of mental disorders: *Ibid*

Condition branding, says Parry: *Ibid*

Warner-Lambert found its answer: *Ibid*

A frequent excuse used: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

This is done by the pharmaceutical industry: *Disease-Mongers, Lynn Payer*

Although there are many, many: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

GSK, the manufacturer of the antidepressant: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

Dr. Stein has allegedly worked: *Ibid*

An Expanded Target Set

a 2003 Reuters Business Insight report: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

We now have clinical names: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

The ups and downs of life: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*

According to Petersen's sources: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

increasing emphasis on marketing psychiatric drugs: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

However, rather than focusing on parents: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

Their promotional campaigns include: *Ibid*

Toys bearing the labels: *Ibid*

Toy needles have even been: *Ibid*

Chief of the Program in Pediatric: *Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org*

Dr. Biederman and his colleagues: *New York Times, Researchers Fail to Reveal Full Drug Pay, June 8, 2008, Benedict Carey, Gardiner Harris; New York Times, Psychiatric Group Faces Scrutiny Over Drug Industry Ties, July 12, 2008, Benedict Carey, Gardiner Harris*

Professor of Psychiatry and Human Behavior: *Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org*

Co-author of Study 329: *Ibid*

The Boston Globe reported that a complaint filed: *The Boston Globe, US Cites Boston Psychiatrist in Case vs. Drug Firm, March 6, 2009, Liz Kowalczyk*

Between 2000 and 2006 Dr. Bostic gave 350: *Shall We Add Dr Jeffrey Bostic to the Psych Crew Honour Roll?, Friday, March 06, 2009, http://pharmagossip.blogspot.com; Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org*

Head of the Department of Psychiatry: *Ibid (CCHR)*

increasing payments to doctors have coincided: *New York Times, Psychiatrists, Children and Drug Industry's Role, May 10, 2007, Gardiner Harris, Benedict Carey, Janet Roberts*

Dr. DelBello led a research team: *Ibid*

Three of the four panel experts: *Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org; Ibid*

Both Dr. DelBello and Dr. Kowatch: *Ibid*

The scenario unfolding: *Disease-Mongers, Lynn Payer*

Because as Wall Street knows: Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels

In 2006 it was a $643 billion dollar industry: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen; Kaiser Family Foundation, Prescription Drug Trends, May 2007; Pharmaceutical Industry, wikipedia.org/wiki/Pharmaceutical_industry*

A basic goal of the pharmaceutical marketers: *Our Daily Meds, Melody Petersen*

Few if any people realize: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

the seeds must be sown: *Medical Marketing and Media, The Art of Branding a Condition, May 1 2003, Vince Parry*

Another Look at Schizophrenia

Its Controversial Discovery

the discovery of schizophrenia: *Schizophrenia: Medical Diagnosis or Moral Verdict, Theodore R. Sarbin, James C. Mancuso, (Pergamon Press, 1980)*

they were unaware that probably a large: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin, Professor of Psychology, University of California, Santa Cruz*

Encephalitis was identified by an Austrian: *Brain and Cognition, Parallels Between Neuroleptic Effects and Lethargic Encephalitis: The Production of Dyskinesias and Cognitive Disorders, September 23, 1993, Dr. Peter R. Breggin; Ibid*

the symptoms of the disease included: *Ibid*

Kraepelin, Bleuler, and von Economo: *Journal of the History of the Behavioral Sciences, Is Schizophrenia What it Was?, A Re-Analysis of Kraepelin's and Bleuler's Population, Volume 26, October 1990, Mary Boyle; Ibid*

Not only is there a significant overlap: *Ibid*

Considerable confusion followed von Economo's: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker; Ibid (Breggin; Boyle)*

It was even referred to as epidemic: *Ibid (Whitaker)*

von Economo acknowledged the confusion: *Brain and Cognition, Parallels Between Neuroleptic Effects and Lethargic Encephalitis: The Production of Dyskinesias and Cognitive Disorders, September 23, 1993, Dr. Peter R. Breggin*

Thus the social construction of schizophrenia: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*

The original symptoms of schizophrenia: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

The original signs and symptoms associated: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin; Journal of the History of the Behavioral Sciences, Is Schizophrenia What it Was?, A Re-Analysis of Kraepelin's and Bleuler's Population, Volume 26, October 1990, Mary Boyle*

What remained were the mental symptoms: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker; Ibid (Boyle)*

The secondary symptoms which remained: *Ibid (Boyle)*

No detailed explanation: *Ibid*

this constitutes medical fraud: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*

Studies Show it Doesn't Exist

In addition to the confusion surrounding: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*

The current hypothesis for the cause: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

Standard neuroleptics work: *Ibid*

He published his findings: *Ibid*

Then, in 1975 Robert Post at the NIMH: *Ibid*

Because the researchers could not determine: *Ibid*

However, all of these patients: *Ibid*

The tests that showed an excessive: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

pure guesswork: *Ibid*

UCLA neuroscientist John Haracz: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

This was evidence of a normal brain's: *Ibid*

An article published by German researchers: *Ibid*

No increase in dopamine levels: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*

No chemical imbalance has been found: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD; Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*

most of what we know: *Ibid (Breggin, Cohen)*

There is little or no chance: *Ibid*

they also cause a pathological increase: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

The only known biochemical imbalances: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

claims that CT and MRI scans prove conclusively: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine; Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*

An MRI or CT scan cannot: *Ibid*

The claims that genetic studies: *Journal of the History of the Behavioral Sciences, Is Schizophrenia What it Was?, A Re-Analysis of Kraepelin's and Bleuler's Population, Volume 26, October 1990, Mary Boyle*

The statistical and methodological practices: *Ibid*

Dr. Franz Kallman, conducted: *International Journal of Risk & Safety in Medicine, Psychiatry's Role in the Holocaust, Issue 4, 1993, Dr. Peter R. Breggin*

From 1929 to 1935 Dr. Kallmann: *Franz Josef Kallmann, www.whonamedit.com/doctor.cfm/2231.html; Franz Josef Kallmann, Eugenics Society Member, www.eugenics-watch.com/briteugen/eug_k.html; Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine; Archives of Psychiatry and Neurological Science, The Historical Context of France Kallmann and Psychiatric Genetics, 1981, Elliot S. Gershon; Ibid*

Dr. Kallmann demanded more sterilization: *Ibid (Levine)*

While in the US, Dr. Kallman became: *Archives of Psychiatry and Neurological Science, The Historical Context of France Kallmann and Psychiatric Genetics, 1981, Elliot S. Gershon; Ibid*

It was even included in the American Handbook: *Franz Josef Kallmann, Eugenics Society Member, www.eugenics-watch.com/briteugen/eug_k.html; Ibid (Levine)*

The Danish adoption study is probably: *Ibid (Levine)*

According to Dr. Levine, the studies reported: *Ibid*

Also, as reported by Boyle: *Journal of the History of the Behavioral Sciences, Is Schizophrenia What it Was?, A Re-Analysis of Kraepelin's and Bleuler's Population, Volume 26, October 1990, Mary Boyle*

No gene for schizophrenia: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*

Professor Sarbin wondered why research: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*
In fact, the BBC reported: *BBC News, Schizophrenia Term Use 'Invalid', October 9, 2006*
We do not doubt there are people: *Ibid*
No existing blood test: *Schizophrenia Revealed, Michael Foster Green, PhD*
Even the DSM-IV admits: *DSM-IV-TR*
Professor Sarbin, along with another University: *Schizophrenia, Theodore R. Sarbin, James C. Mancuso*
Our scrutiny of the conclusions: *Ibid*
A critical review of the scientific: *The Biopsychiatric Model of "Mental Illness": A Critical Bibliography, Loren R. Mosher MD, www.moshersoteria.com*
there is no cross-cultural, epidemiological: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*
schizophrenia should be abolished as a psychiatric illness: *The University of Manchester, UK, School of Nursing, Midwifery and Social Work, Does Schizophrenia Really Exist?, October 2006*
schizophrenia are based on false assumptions: *Medical News Today, Schizophrenia May Not Exist, September 6, 2005*
It was created during a period of confusion: *The University of Manchester, UK, School of Nursing, Midwifery and Social Work, Does Schizophrenia Really Exist?, October 2006; The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*
Sarbin and Mancuso tell us that proponents: *Schizophrenia, Theodore R. Sarbin, James C. Mancuso*
One reason for this, says author and lecturer: *Ethical Human Science and Services, A Critique of Psychiatry and an Invitation to Dialogue, December 27, 2000, Ron Leifer, MD*

Deceptive Initiatives by the Industry
It is no coincidence that most people: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*
As we've seen, upon closer: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD; Ibid*
genetic predisposition to schizophrenia: *Schizophrenia, Jane E. Philips, David P. Ketelsen*
a biological illness: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason*
chronic, severe, and disabling brain disease: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*
helping to correct an imbalance: *National Alliance on Mental Illness (NAMI), Schizophrenia, Ken Duckworth, MD, February 2007*
false and misleading: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*
schizophrenia is linked to biological illnesses: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery: What You Need to Know About this Medical Illness, August 2008*
Schizophrenia is a biologically based brain disease: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

Organized Psychiatry
Dr. Charles Nemeroff, Professor and Chairman: *New York Times, Radio Host Has Drug Company Ties, November 22, 2008, Gardiner Harris; New York Times, Top Psychiatrist Didn't Report Drug Makers' Pay, October 4, 2008, Gardiner Harris; Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org*
Dr. Alan Schatzberg at one time: *Ibid (CCHR; NYT Top Psychiatrist)*
The industry gave at least $1 million to Dr. Thomas Spencer: *Ibid (CCHR)*

Dr. Timothy Wilens: *Ibid*
Dr. Augustus John Rush: *Ibid*
Dr. Frederick K. Goodwin: *New York Times, Radio Host Has Drug Company Ties, November 22, 2008, Gardiner Harris; Frederick K. Goodwin, wikipedia.org/wiki/Frederick_K._Goodwin; Ibid*
He has also been paid hundreds: *Ibid*
Interestingly, the current president: *Ibid (CCHR)*
Two people who have direct experience: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*
In the late 1970s he conducted: *Psychology Today, Are Psychiatrists Betraying Their Patients?, Volume 32, Number 5, September/October 1999, Loren R. Mosher, MD*
As a result, Dr. Mosher: *Ibid*

The Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders

In 2006 drug corporations funded: *New York Times, Psychiatric Group Faces Scrutiny Over Drug Industry Ties, July 12, 2008, Benedict Carey, Gardiner Harris*
The APA's annual conference is funded: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*
The DSM is the most used: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD; Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*
According to multiple researchers: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels; Disease-Mongers, Lynn Payer*
Most of the experts who write the drug: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*
Tufts University revealed that more than half: *Ibid*
Dr. David Kupfer: *Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org*
Dr. Kupfer's wife, Dr. Ellen Frank: *Psychiatry and Pharma: The Unholy Alliance, Heavy Pharma Funding Increasing Antipsychotic Prescriptions to Kids, www.cchrint.org*
DSM-IV Task Force member: *Citizen Commission on Human Rights International, The Corrupt Alliance of the Psychiatric-Pharmaceutical Industry, www.cchrint.org*
Former DSM-IV Task Force member, Dr. David Shaffer: *Psychiatry and Pharma: The Unholy Alliance, Heavy Pharma Funding Increasing Antipsychotic Prescriptions to Kids, www.cchrint.org*
According to another study done by Dr. Cosgrove: *Psychiatric Times, Toward Credible Conflict of Interest Policies in Clinical Psychiatry, Volume 26 Number 1, January 1, 2009, Lisa Cosgrove, PhD, Harold J. Bursztajn, MD*
have a vested interest in the structure and content of DSM: *Ibid*
When it was first released in 1952: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*
In the mid 1980s social phobia: *Selling Sickness, Ray Moynihan, Alan Cassels*
In the 1970s panic disorder fell: *Medical Marketing and Media, The Art of Branding a Condition, May 1 2003, Vince Parry*
Bipolar disorder entered the DSM: *Public Library of Science (PLoS) Medicine, The Latest Mania: Selling Bipolar Disorder, April 11, 2006, Dr David Healy*
Dr. David Healy of North Wales: *Ibid*
new initiatives were launched to promote awareness: *Ibid*
Watching the Diagnostic and Statistical: *Medical Marketing and Media, The Art of Branding a Condition, May 1 2003, Vince Parry*

Neuroleptics are Toxic

The neuroleptics used to treat: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD; Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*

to a class called the phenothiazines: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker; Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

By the 1980s the results: *Ibid (Whitaker)*

Many of the traits that people associate: *Ibid*

Dr. Breggin has researched: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*

Dr. Breggin says that psychiatric drugs: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

Psychiatric drugs, one and all, always: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*

Antidepressants cause suicide: *Ibid*

When patients complain: *Ibid*

The medical and psychiatric textbooks: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD; Ibid*

But in addition to being literally toxic: *Ibid (Breggin)*

A part of the brain called the prefrontal lobes: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine; Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

Dopamine is manufactured: *Substantia Nigra, wikipedia.org/wiki/Substantia_nigra; Ventral Tegmental, wikipedia.org/wiki/Ventral_tegmentum; Mesocortical Pathway, wikipedia.org/wiki/Mesocortical_pathway*

The dopamine created in this area: *Tegmentum, www.biology.about.com/library/organs/brain/bltegmentum.htm; Substantia Nigra, www.biology.about.com/library/organs/brain/blsubstantianigra.htm; Ibid*

In a lobotomy, the frontal lobes: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine*

In both instances: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

Neuroleptics facilitate a chemical: *Schizophrenia, Theodore R. Sarbin, James C. Mancuso*

Once that mechanism of action is understood: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

Organized psychiatry, drug corporations: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD*

it is no exaggeration to call this effect: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

The Rockefeller Foundation has had: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

Political Considerations

Schizophrenia Serves a Purpose

Despite the fact that the disease: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*

Dr. Leifer says that labeling some thoughts: *Ethical Human Science and Services, A Critique of Psychiatry and an Invitation to Dialogue, December 27, 2000, Ron Leifer, MD*

Prior to our transition: *Ibid*

The disease model appeared in the 1800s: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*

It was during this time that medical practitioners: *Ibid*

The creation of the asylum: *Ibid*

Labeling someone mentally ill allowed: *Ibid*

Because a society could not be considered: *Ethical Human Science and Services, A Critique of Psychiatry and an Invitation to Dialogue, December 27, 2000, Ron Leifer, MD*

A Covert Method of Social Control

Besides the rule of law, our society: *Schizophrenia, Theodore R. Sarbin, James C. Mancuso*

The medical model of schizophrenia: *Ibid*

At the bottom of the spectrum: *Ibid*

There are those in our society who: *Ibid*

A vast powerful bureaucratic network: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin; Ibid*

behavior regulation services: *Ibid (Sarbin, Mancuso)*

However, because the term nonperson: *Ethical Human Science and Services, A Critique of Psychiatry and an Invitation to Dialogue, December 27, 2000, Ron Leifer, MD; Ibid*

Like all other status labels: *Ibid (Sarbin, Mancuso)*

The policy of identifying and segregating: *Ibid*

The individual that has been identified: *Ibid*

Obtaining an official diagnosis: *Your Drugs May Be Your Problem, Peter R. Breggin, MD, David Cohen, PhD*

Although for some, being diagnosed: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine; Ibid*

Depression, guilt, anxiety, shame: *Medication Madness, Peter R. Breggin, MD; Ibid (Breggin, Cohen)*

However, a majority of those: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*

The people who resist hospitalization: *The Reign of Error: Psychiatry, Authority, and Law, Lee Coleman, MD, (Beacon Press, 1984)*

concealed involuntary commitment: *Ibid*

During the hospitalization a psychiatric dossier: *Ibid*

Even with the use of diagnostic manuals: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice; Disease-Mongers, Lynn Payer*

These researchers conclude that political: *Commonsense Rebellion, Bruce E. Levine; Schizophrenia, Theodore R. Sarbin, James C. Mancuso*

To deny that involuntary hospitalization: *Ethical Human Science and Services, A Critique of Psychiatry and an Invitation to Dialogue, December 27, 2000, Ron Leifer, MD*

After they are released from the hospital: *The Reign of Error, Lee Coleman, MD*

Because there is no scientific measurement: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice; Disease-Mongers, Lynn Payer*

a false personal belief: *The Encyclopedia of Schizophrenia and other Psychotic Disorders, Richard Noll, PhD*

Whether or not a particular belief: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*

The judgment is based on the ideology: *Ibid*

The word hallucination belongs: *Ibid*

Examples of these include: *Ibid*

hallucinations belong to a negative class of behaviors: *Ibid*

He says that because the types: *Ibid*

no more than an individual making a comment on their imaginings: *Ibid*

Other researchers have arrived: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

The conclusion to my efforts: *The Journal of Mind and Behavior, Toward the Obsolescence of the Schizophrenia Hypothesis, Volume 11, Summer/Autumn 1990, Dr. Theodore R. Sarbin*

a public mandate for a covert form of social control: *Ethical Human Science and Services, A Critique of Psychiatry and an Invitation to Dialogue, December 27, 2000, Ron Leifer, MD*

Punitive Psychiatry in Communist Russia

In Communist Russia: *Defense Intelligence Agency, Controlled Offensive Behavior—USSR, Prepared by the US Army Office of the Surgeon General (ST-CS-01-169-72), July 1972, Captain John D. Lamothe; Punitive psychiatry in the Soviet Union, wikipedia.org/wiki/Psikhushka*

Punitive psychiatry had been used: *Psychiatric Terror: How Soviet Psychiatry is Used to Suppress Dissent, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway, (Basic Books Inc., 1977); Abuse of Psychiatry in the Soviet Union, Hearing Before the Subcommittee on Human Rights and International Organizations, September 20, 1983*

In the late 1960s people: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker; Implementation of the Helsinki Accords, Hearing before the Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe, Soviet Psychiatric Practices, July 12, 1989*

It was discovered that psychiatrists: *Psychiatric Terror, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway*

The Moscow Serbsky Institute: *US News and World Report, Mad Russians, December 8, 1996, Victoria Pope*

This was accomplished by Dr. Andrei Snezhnevsky: *New York Times, The World Of Soviet Psychiatry, January 30, 1983, Walter Reich*

There were three basic forms of schizophrenia: *Psychiatric Terror, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway*

Its course included: *Ibid*

Its developmental pattern: *Ibid*

Delusional symptoms associated: *US News and World Report, Mad Russians, December 8, 1996, Victoria Pope; Washington Post, In Russia, Psychiatry is Again a Tool Against Dissent, September 30, 2006, Peter Finn; Punitive psychiatry in the Soviet Union, wikipedia.org/wiki/Psikhushka; A Manual on Psychiatry for Dissidents, Vladimir Bukovsky, Dr. Semyon Gluzman; Ibid*

People in Russia that have been: *The Other Russia, Activist Freed from Mental Hospital, February 28th, 2008; Implementation of the Helsinki Accords, Hearing before the Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe, Dr. Anatoly Koryagin and Alexander Shatravka on the Abuse of Psychiatry in the USSR, May 15, 1987; Ibid (Washington Post; Bukovsky, Gluzman; Bloch, Reddaway)*

The KGB would often not directly have people forcefully committed: *Ibid (Bukovsky, Gluzman; Bloch, Reddaway)*

There were two types of hospitals: *Institute of Fools: A Dissident's Memoir of his Detention in the Most Notorious Soviet Psychiatric Institution, Victor Nekipelov, (Farrar, Staus and Giroux, Inc., 1980); Ibid (Bloch, Reddaway)*

The chief doctor in an SPH: *Punitive Medicine, Alexander Podrabinek, (Karoma Publishers, Inc., 1980); New York Times, Reports of Psychiatry Abuse Counter Talk of a Soviet Shift, October 21, 1987, Felcity Barringer; Ibid (Nekipelov)*

Each SPH had a number of doctors: *Ibid*

the environment was arranged so as to lower moral: *Defense Intelligence Agency, Controlled Offensive Behavior—USSR, Prepared by the US Army Office of the Surgeon General (ST-CS-01-169-72), July 1972, Captain John D. Lamothe*

The noted Russian dissident: *Times Online, The Sunday Times, Putin Brings Back Mental Ward Torment, August 26, 2007, Mark Franchetti*

In addition to nonconformists: *Mad in America, Robert Whitaker*

a multitude of resources which were used to degrade: *Abuse of Psychiatry in the Soviet Union, Hearing before the Subcommittee on Human Rights and International Organizations, September 20, 1983*

Most former patients report: *US News and World Report, Mad Russians, December 8, 1996, Victoria Pope; Punitive Medicine, Alexander Podrabinek*

Even after a person gave up their beliefs: *Psychiatric Terror, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway; Implementation of the Helsinki Accords, Hearing before the Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe, Soviet Psychiatric Practices, July 12, 1989*

the horrors he witnessed: *Time Magazine, The Psukhushka Horror, February 16, 1976, Soviet Scientist Leonid*

After being released from the hospital: *The Other Russia, Activist Freed from Mental Hospital, February 28th, 2008; Implementation of the Helsinki Accords, Hearing before the Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe, Dr. Anatoly Koryagin and Alexander Shatravka on the Abuse of Psychiatry in the USSR, May 15, 1987; Psychiatric Terror, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway; A Manual on Psychiatry for Dissidents, Vladimir Bukovsky, Dr. Semyon Gluzman; Washington Post, In Russia, Psychiatry is Again a Tool Against Dissent, September 30, 2006, Peter Finn*

The typical profile of those selected: *Punitive Medicine, Alexander Podrabinek; New York Times, Soviet Study of Abuse of Psychiatry is Urged, March 17, 1987, Bill Keller; Abuse of Psychiatry in the Soviet Union, Hearing before the Subcommittee on Human Rights and International Organizations, September 20, 1983; Ibid (Bloch, Reddaway)*

Psychiatrists who exposed: *Ibid*

Some of these people complained: *Los Angeles Times, Speak Out? Are You Crazy?, May 30, 2006, Kim Murphy; The UK Independent, Russian Dissident Forcibly Detained in Mental Hospital, July 30, 2007, Alastair Gee; Ibid (Podrabinek)*

In addition to it being used: *London Telegraph, Student Sectioned for Anti-Putin Activities, February 10, 2008 Nick Holdsworth; Times Online, The Sunday Times, Putin Brings Back Mental Ward Torment, August 26, 2007, Mark Franchetti; Washington Post, In Russia, Psychiatry is Again a Tool Against Dissent, September 30, 2006, Peter Finn; Ibid (Podrabinek)*

Business partners or relatives: *Ibid*

The entire legal procedure: *Defense Intelligence Agency, Controlled Offensive Behavior—USSR, Prepared by the US Army Office of the Surgeon General (ST-CS-01-169-72), July 1972, Captain John D. Lamothe; A Manual on Psychiatry for Dissidents, Vladimir Bukovsky, Dr. Semyon Gluzman; Psychiatric Terror, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway; Ibid (Podrabinek)*

In court, the doctors added: *Ibid*

The judges and jury members: *Ibid*

The state, mental health system, police: *Soviet PsychoPrisons, Harvey Fireside, (W.W. Norton Company, 1979); Ibid (Bloch, Reddaway)*

It also included the Ministry of Health: *Ibid*

Ideological factors played: *Ibid*

Because the psychiatrist was: *Ibid (Bloch, Reddaway)*

There was a leading group of prominent: *Soviet PsychoPrisons, Harvey Fireside*

Some included Professor Andrei Snezhnevsky: *Psychiatric Terror, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway*

Some of the most useful information: *Institute of Fools, Victor Nekipelov; Defense Intelligence Agency, Controlled Offensive Behavior—USSR, Prepared by the US Army Office of the Surgeon General (ST-CS-01-169-72), July 1972, Captain John D. Lamothe*

A few of these individuals kept notes: *Ibid*

Petro Grigorenko: *Psychiatric Terror, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway*

Another was Dr. Anatoly Koryagin: *New York Times, Psychiatric Abuse in Soviet Assailed, May 14, 1987, Daniel Goleman*

In 1982 Amnesty International: *Anatoly Koryagin, wikipedia.org/wiki/Anatoly_Koryagin*

Dr. Semyon Gluzman and Vladimir Bukovsky mentioned: *A Manual on Psychiatry for Dissidents, Vladimir Bukovsky, Dr. Semyon Gluzman*

Most psychiatrists were civilians: *Soviet PsychoPrisons, Harvey Fireside*

Because if the statements: *Ibid*

Punitive psychiatry was a mechanism: *Psychiatric Terror, Sidney Bloch, Peter Reddaway*

The use of punitive psychiatry against: *New York Times, Soviet Study of Abuse of Psychiatry is Urged, March 17, 1987, Bill Keller; London Telegraph, Student Sectioned for Anti-Putin Activities, February 10, 2008 Nick Holdsworth*

it has increased since it became public: *New York Times, Reports of Psychiatry Abuse Counter Talk of a Soviet Shift, October 21, 1987, Felcity Barringer; Los Angeles Times, Dissidents Still Sent to Asylums, Russia Activists Say, August 12, 2007, Alex Rodriguez*

it has also occurred in South Africa, Romania, Bulgari: *Institute of Fools, Victor Nekipelov; Abuse of Psychiatry in the Soviet Union, Hearing Before the Subcommittee on Human Rights and International Organizations, September 20, 1983*

Of particular interest is China: *The Guardian, In the Grip of the Ankang, December 20, 2005; UK Independent, China Accused of Locking Sane Dissidents in Asylums, March 18, 2006, Clifford Coonan*

allows the Chinese government to neutralize certain people: *The International Herald Tribune, Chinese Dissident's Asylum Stay Called Unjustified, March 16, 2006, Joseph Kahn; Los Angeles Times, Chinese Dissident Tells of Abuse in Asylum, November 09, 2005, Mark Magnier; AsiaNews, Wang Lianxi, a Tiananmen Square Dissident, in Psychiatric Hospital, January 24, 2009*

Coverup Initiatives

Control of Psychological Sciences

Whenever a society falls under the rule: *Political Ponerology, Dr. Andrew M. Lobaczewski*

Therefore, an exceptionally malicious: *Ibid*

In a society run by psychopaths, every single: *Ibid*

Scientifically and morally degenerate: *Ibid*

Even mental health specialists: *Ibid*

The Industry's Literature

includes a method developed by him to convince: *I Am Not Sick, I Don't Need Help, Xavier Amador, Anna-Lisa Johanson*

Listen for beliefs about the self and the illness: *Ibid*

In order to learn about someone's delusions: *Ibid*

In the Empathize phase: *Ibid*

avoid trying to convince them: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

If your relative is willing to talk: *Ibid*

The book refers to this manipulative: *Ibid*

By temporarily agreeing: *How To Manage 5 Common Symptoms Of Schizophrenia, www.schizophrenia.com*

suggests frequent daily reminders: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

A common feature of the disorder: *Ibid*

having someone forcefully medicated: *Surviving Schizophrenia, E. Fuller Torrey, MD*

Dr. Torrey is a former consultant: *E. Fuller Torrey, wikipedia.org/wiki/E._Fuller_Torrey#National_Alliance_on_Mental_Illness*

must act to ensure that medication is taken according: *Bristol-Myers Squibb Company and Otsuka Pharmaceuticals Europe Ltd., Schizophrenia Handbook, 2004*

Talk therapy has limited value: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*

NAMI explains that a person's refusal: *National Alliance for the Mentally Ill (NAMI), Understanding Schizophrenia and Recovery: What You Need to Know About this Medical Illness, August 2008*

Similarly, schizophrenia.com tells us that: *Getting Treatment for People When They Lack Insight Into Their Illness, www.schizophrenia.com/invol.html*

If the patient refuses, Dr. Amador and Mrs. Johanson: *I Am Not Sick, I Don't Need Help, Xavier Amador, Anna-Lisa Johanson*

An examination of the industry's publications: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

One important part of the "healing" process: *Ibid (Snyder, Gur, Andrews)*

The statements below: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; Schizophrenia Revealed, Michael Foster Green, PhD; Ibid (Snyder, Gur, Andrews)*

Statements below made by people: *Ibid (Miller, Mason)*

false personal beliefs that have: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

In his book, Mr. Snyder claims: *Ibid*

The nature of delusion: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich*

thoughts that people are stalking you or trying to harm you: *Bristol-Myers Squibb Company and Otsuka Pharmaceuticals Europe Ltd., Schizophrenia Handbook, 2004*

Similarly, the Canadian Mental Health: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517*

suffering from a misinterpretation of events: *Delusions, www.schizophrenia.com/family/delusions.html*

an over-sensitivity to noises: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews; Ibid (Delusions)*

They even have delusions that aircraft: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; Surviving Schizophrenia, E. Fuller Torrey, MD*

But entertaining the possibility that the noises: Delusions, www.schizophrenia.com/family/delusions.html

stories of people whose delusional systems: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; Schizophrenia Revealed, Michael Foster Green, PhD*

Many have delusions that government agencies: *Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; Hallucinations, www.schizophrenia.com/family/delusions.html; Delusions, www.schizophrenia.com/family/sz.overview.htm; Ibid (Miller, Mason)*

Often it is the FBI or the CIA: *Surviving Schizophrenia, E. Fuller Torrey, MD*

agonizing radiation weapons: *I Am Not Sick, I Don't Need Help, Xavier Amador, Anna-Lisa Johanson*

Below are more examples: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews; Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; BC Partners for Mental Health and Addiction Information, What are Mental Disorders?, Bipolar Disorder*

Most suffer from delusions of reference: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; Bristol-Myers Squibb Company and Otsuka Pharmaceuticals Europe Ltd., Schizophrenia Handbook, 2004; The Encyclopedia of Schizophrenia and other Psychotic Disorders, Richard Noll, PhD; Ibid (Miller, Mason)*

They believe these messages are symbolically conveyed: *Ibid*

According to Dr. Torrey, the internet: *Surviving Schizophrenia, E. Fuller Torrey, MD*

Some reported PC and internet delusions: *Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrews*

Other common delusions experienced: *The Complete Family Guide to Schizophrenia, Kim T. Mueser, PhD, Susan Gingerich; Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; British Columbia Schizophrenia Society (BCSS), Basic Facts About Schizophrenia, 2008; Ibid*

Obsessive religious beliefs: *Bristol-Myers Squibb Company and Otsuka Pharmaceuticals Europe Ltd., Schizophrenia Handbook, 2004*

Auditory hallucinations are quite common: *Hallucinations, www.schizophrenia.com/family/delusions.html; Canadian Mental Health Association (CMHA), Schizophrenia, NIH Publication Number 99-3517; Ibid (Mueser, Gingerich; Snyder, Gur, Andrews)*

The hallucinations are usually consistent: *Ibid*

We are advised by schizophrenia.com that: *Ibid (Hallucinations)*

Below are some descriptions of hallucinations: *Diagnosis: Schizophrenia, Rachel Miller, Susan E. Mason; Me, Myself, and Them, Kurt Snyder, Raquel E. Gur, MD, PhD, Linda Wasmer Andrew*

The delusions continue inside mental hospitals: *Ibid*

One girl, who has since been convinced: *Ibid (Miller, Mason)*

She felt as though the treatment was really an attack: *Ibid*

The Latest Disorder

Psychiatric experts have identified: *NewsWeek, When Life is Like a TV Show, August 02, 2008; New York Times, Culture of Surveillance May Contribute to Delusional Condition, August 29, 2008, Sarah Kershaw*

The idea for the disorder originates: *San Francisco Chronicle, Truman Syndrome Identified in Delusional People, November 30, 2008, Jennifer Peltz*

The illness was first discovered: *WebMD, The Truman Show Delusion: Real or Imagined?, August 06, 2008, Suzanne Wright; Ibid*

Truman Show Delusion is a combination: *National Post, Reality Bites, July 21, 2008, www.canada.com*

Although for years mental health specialists: *The Telegraph, UK, Truman Show Syndrome Delusion: Sufferers Convinced They Are on Reality TV, November 25, 2008, Tom Leonard*

The new delusion encompasses: *WebMD, The Truman Show Delusion: Real or Imagined?, August 06, 2008, Suzanne Wright; New York Times, Culture of Surveillance May Contribute to Delusional Condition, August 29, 2008, Sarah Kershaw*

Since presenting their findings: *NineMSN, Truman Show Syndrome is a Real Nightmare, November 26 2008, Ninemsn Staff*

Psychiatrists in the US and Britain: *New York Times, Culture of Surveillance May Contribute to Delusional Condition, August 29, 2008, Sarah Kershaw*

The new illness is considered: *Ibid*

WebMD informs us: *WebMD, The Truman Show Delusion: Real or Imagined?, August 06, 2008, Suzanne Wright*

The Gold brothers are working: *San Francisco Chronicle, Truman Syndrome Identified in Delusional People, November 30, 2008, Jennifer Peltz*

Attempts to Discredit Efforts to Expose Them

Over the last several years clinicians: *Journal of Mental Health (Informa Healthcare), Online Information, Extreme Communities and Internet Therapy: Is the Internet Good for our Mental Health?, Volume 16, Issue 4, August 2007, Vaughan Bell; New York times, Sharing Their Demons on the Web: Health Professionals Fear Web Sites that Support Theories on Mind Control, November 13, 2008, Sarah Kershaw; Psychology Today, Psychotic Websites, Does the Internet Encourage Psychotic Thinking?, July 20, 2009*

In the past, people who complained: *Ibid (NYT)*

The Times mentioned that although: *Ibid*

Therefore, such sites have drawn: *Journal of Mental Health (Informa Healthcare), Online Information, Extreme Communities and Internet Therapy: Is the Internet Good for our Mental Health?, Volume 16, Issue 4, August 2007, Vaughan Bell; Ibid*

Dr. Vaughan Bell, a visiting research: *Dr Vaughan Bell, www.iop.kcl.ac.uk; Ibid (NYT)*

He evaluated the content: *Psychopathology, 'Mind Control' Experiences On The Internet: Implications for the Psychiatric Diagnosis of Delusions, February 2006, Volume 39, Issue 2, Vaughan Bell, Cara Maiden, Antonio Muñoz-Solomando, Venu Reddy*

He described this organization: *Ibid*

It is also beyond the influence: *Ibid*

The members of this community: *Journal of Mental Health (Informa Healthcare), Online Information, Extreme Communities and Internet Therapy: Is the Internet Good for our Mental Health?, Volume 16, Issue 4, August 2007, Vaughan Bell*

These sites have postings of people: *New York times, Sharing Their Demons on the Web: Health Professionals Fear Web Sites that Support Theories on Mind Control, November 13, 2008, Sarah Kershaw*

In July of 2009, Psychology Today: *Psychology Today, Psychotic Websites, Does the Internet Encourage Psychotic Thinking?, July 20, 2009*

The fact that people can form: *Psychopathology, 'Mind Control' Experiences On The Internet: Implications for the Psychiatric Diagnosis of Delusions, February 2006, Volume 39, Issue 2, Vaughan Bell, Cara Maiden, Antonio Muñoz-Solomando, Venu Reddy*

If this trend continues: *Journal of Mental Health (Informa Healthcare), Online Information, Extreme Communities and Internet Therapy: Is the Internet Good for our Mental Health?, Volume 16, Issue 4, August 2007, Vaughan Bell*

An earlier report released: *Psychopathology, "Internet delusions": A Case Series and Theoretical Integration, Volume 38, May-June 2005, Vaughan Bell, Ethan Grech, Cara Maiden, Peter W. Halligan, Hadyn D. Ellis*

Appendix

Human-Computer Intelligence Network

Augmented Cognition (AugCog) is the result: *Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide, Edited by Dylan D. Schmorrow, Kay M. Stanney, (Human Factors and Ergonomics Society, 2008)*

AugCog is a type of human-computer interface: *Augmented Cognition Grand Challenge, Cognition-Driven Data Analyst: Augmenting Analysts, Engineers and Scientists Capacity to Interpret Diverse Data, www.sandia.gov/cog.systems/Projects.htm*

It uses a network of sensors: *Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007), Third International Conference, FAC 2007 Held as Part of Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Proceedings; The Economist, Computers That Read Your Mind, September 21, 2006*

It then makes changes: *Ibid*

The goal of Augmented Cognition: *Ibid (Schmorrow, Reeves)*

Because it reads minds and bodies: *Augmented Cognition Grand Challenge, Cognition-Driven Data Analyst: Augmenting Analysts, Engineers and Scientists Capacity to Interpret Diverse Data, www.sandia.gov/cog.systems/Projects.htm; Augmented Cognition International Society, AC-TG, www.augmentedcognition.org/actg.htm; Augmented Cognition International Society, Overview, www.augmentedcognition.org/about.htm; Daily Tech, US Army, DARPA Working on Mind-Reading System, January 17, 2006, Michael Hoffman*

It then uses adaptive strategies: *Ibid*

AugCog development has included: *Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007), Third International Conference, FAC 2007 Held as Part of Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Proceedings; Signal Magazine, Human-Computer Interface Gets Personal, July 2006, Maryann Lawlor; DARPA Augmented Cognition, Engineering a Transformation of Human-Machine Interaction to an Augmented Cognitive Relationship, www.sandia.gov/cog.systems/Projects.htm*

The Department of Defense has studied: *Ibid (Schmorrow, Reeves)*

The uses for AugCog: *Signal Magazine, Army Uses Advanced Systems to Understand What Soldiers Know, March 2008, Rita Boland; DARPA Augmented Cognition Program, www.honeywell.com; Daily Tech, Honeywell Details Augmented Cognition Research Programs, November 13, 2007, Jason Mick; Avionics Magazine, Empathetic Avionics: The Pilot as an Avionics System, December 1, 2005, Charlotte Adams*

AugCog will allegedly: *Ibid*

The main components of these systems: *US Army Soldier Systems Center-Natick, SSC-Natick Press Release, Augmented Cognition, January 17, 2006; Signal Magazine, Human-Computer Interface Gets Personal, July 2006, Maryann Lawlor; Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide, Edited by Dylan D. Schmorrow, Kay M. Stanney*

The automated sensor network: *Ibid (Schmorrow, Stanney)*

Data obtained: *Signal Magazine, Human-Computer Interface Gets Personal, July 2006, Maryann Lawlor; Ibid (Schmorrow, Stanney)*

Portable wireless systems exist: *Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007), Third International Conference, FAC 2007 Held as Part of Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Proceedings; Aviation Week, DARPA Pursues Neuroscience to Enhance Analyst, Soldier Performance, January 28, 2008, David Hughes; US Army Soldier Systems Center-Natick, SSC-Natick Press Release, Augmented Cognition, January 17, 2006*

DARPA is working on wireless: *Daily Tech, US Army, DARPA Working on Mind-Reading System, January 17, 2006, Michael Hoffman; Signal Magazine, Army Uses Advanced Systems to Understand What Soldiers Know, March 2008, Rita Boland*

Eye tracking is another AugCog: *Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide, Edited by Dylan D. Schmorrow, Kay M. Stanney; Avionics Magazine, Empathetic Avionics: The Pilot as an Avionics System, December 1, 2005, Charlotte Adams; Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007), Third International Conference, FAC 2007 Held as Part of Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Proceedings*

In addition to the movement of the eyes: *Ibid*

Neuroimaging devices: *Ibid (Schmorrow, Stanney)*

Small portable mind reading devices: *CNET News, MIT Group Develops Mind-Reading Device, April 4, 2006, Candace Lombardi; University of Cambridge (UK), Mind-Reading Machines, Peter Robinson*

Other sensors that provide: *Signal Magazine, Human-Computer Interface Gets Personal, July 2006, Maryann Lawlor; Daily Tech, Honeywell Details Augmented Cognition Research Programs, November 13, 2007, Jason Mick; Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007), Third International Conference, FAC 2007 Held as Part of Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Proceedings; Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide, Edited by Dylan D. Schmorrow, Kay M. Stanney*

The next part of the system: *Ibid (Schmorrow, Stanney)*

A modality is a sensing channel: *Modality, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Modality_(human-computer_interaction)*

AugCog determines which channel: *Wired News, Pentagon's Mind-Reading Computers Replicate, March 19, 2008*

AugCog adjusts the information: *US Army Soldier Systems Center-Natick, SSC-Natick Press Release, Augmented Cognition, January 17, 2006*

Sensory channels are monitored: *Augmented Cognition: A Practitioner's Guide, Edited by Dylan D. Schmorrow, Kay M. Stanney; Wired News, Pentagon's Mind-Reading Computers Replicate, March 19, 2008*

A mitigation strategy is a series: *Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007), Third International Conference, FAC 2007 Held as Part of Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Proceedings; Augmented Cognition Grand Challenge, Cognition-Driven Data Analyst: Augmenting Analysts, Engineers and Scientists Capacity to Interpret Diverse Data, www.sandia.gov/cog.systems/Projects.htm*

To accomplish this, the system: *US Army Soldier Systems Center-Natick, SSC-Natick Press Release, Augmented Cognition, January 17, 2006; Ibid (Schmorrow, Reeves)*

This reading is then compared: *Augmented Cognition Grand Challenge, Cognition-Driven Data Analyst: Augmenting Analysts, Engineers and Scientists Capacity to Interpret Diverse Data, www.sandia.gov/cog.systems/Projects.htm; Signal Magazine, Human-Computer Interface Gets Personal, July 2006, Maryann Lawlor; Ibid (SSC-Natick)*

As the techniques are applied: *Foundations of Augmented Cognition, Dylan D. Schmorrow, Leah M. Reeves, (Springer, 2007), Third International Conference, FAC 2007 Held as Part of Human Computer Interaction International 2007 Beijing, China, July 2007, Proceedings*

AugCog can be integrated: *US Army Soldier Systems Center-Natick, SSC-Natick Press Release, Augmented Cognition, January 17, 2006*

The idea of linking a directed-energy: Controlling the Human Mind, Nick Begich

In February of 1995 a similar system: *Ibid*

Further evidence for the existence: *Ibid*

surveillance systems connected to directed-energy weapons: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council*

Wired reported in December of 2007 that Raytheon: *Wired, US Eyes Pain Beam for Home Security, Law Enforcement, December 10, 2007, David Hambling*

an automated remote surveillance system: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

What is emerging: *Omega Research Foundation, Report for the European Parliament, An Appraisal Of The Technologies Of Political Control, September 1998*

In 1977 the BSSR predicted that such a system: *The Technology of Political Control, Carol Ackroyd, Karen Margolis, Jonathan Rosenhead, Tim Shallice*

According to the Department of Defense's June 2007 report: *Department of Defense, Global Information Grid Architectural Vision, Version 1.0, June 2007*

Metz and Kievit mentioned that a small device: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

The DOD mentioned a method of linking people: *Department of Defense, Global Information Grid Architectural Vision, Version 1.0, June 2007*
In their 1994 US Army War College article: *US Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute, The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War, July 25, 1994, Steven Metz, James Kievit*

Nongovernmental Organizations

Non-governmental organizations (NGOs): *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Non-governmental Organization, wikipedia.org/wiki/Non-governmental_organization*
NGOs address issues pertaining: *Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008; Ibid (FM 3-05.130)*
There is a variety of ways: *Ibid*
The term NGO has no legal status: *Non-governmental Organization, wikipedia.org/wiki/Non-governmental_organization*
However, some contend: *Ibid*
Despite the term "non-governmental," many: *Army Special Operations Forces Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*
They significantly influence: *Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008; Non-governmental Organizations wikipedia.org/wiki/Non-governmental_organization; Ibid*
A related group is an intergovernmental: *Ibid (JP 3-57)*

A Brief History of PsyOp

Much of the social science research: *Science of Coercion, Christopher Simpson*
After WWI US PsyOp projects: *Ibid*
Lasswell authored the 1926 publication: *Ibid*
Lasswell wrote an article: *The University of Chicago Press, The American Journal of Sociology, Vol. 46, No. 4 (January 1941), The Garrison State, (Abstract), Harold D. Lasswell*
Walter Lippmann, based his writings: *Science of Coercion, Christopher Simpson*
would use manipulation to rule society: *Walter Lippmann, wikipedia.org/wiki/Walter_Lippmann; Council on Foreign Relations, wikipedia.org/wiki/Council_on_Foreign_Relations; Ibid*
During the late 1930s the Rockefeller Foundation: *Ibid (Simpson)*
manipulation and deceit: *Ibid*
Shortly after WWII and into the 1950s: *Ibid*
This small informal network: *Ibid*
The DOD and a group of influential academic: *Ibid*
Of particular interest is the Panel on Human: *Ibid*
Advisors to the panel included members: *Ibid*
During the 1940s/WWII period: *Ibid*
Wilbur Schramm, for instance, was a social: *Ibid*
Devereux Josephs of Harvard University: *Ibid*
The Office of War Information (OWI): *United States Office of War Information, wikipedia.org/wiki/Office_of_War_Information; Ibid*
Psychological Warfare Division of the US Army (PWD): *Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology, Lt Col, David J. Dean, USAF, Editor, (Air University Press, June, 1986); Ibid*
new psychological weapons: *Ibid (Simpson)*
Beginning in 1951 Chitra M. Smith: *War on the Mind, Peter Watson; Ibid*

During the 1950s the Rockefeller and Russell Sage: *Ibid (Simpson)*
Cantril was the primary author: *Hadley Cantril, wikipedia.org/wiki/Hadley_Cantril; New York Times, Radio Listeners in Panic, Taking War Drama as Fact, October 31, 1938*
caused a nation-wide panic: *War of the Worlds, wikipedia.org/wiki/The_War_of_the_Worlds_(radio)*
Leonard Cottrell, an enthusiastic promoter of PsyOp: *Science of Coercion, Christopher Simpson*
The Center for International Studies (CENIS) at MIT: *Ibid*
McCloy is yet one more example: *John J. McCloy, wikipedia.org/wiki/John_J._McCloy; Ibid*
McCloy was chairman of the Ford Foundation: *Ibid*
William Donovan, another Wall Street lawyer: *William Joseph, Donovan, wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Joseph_Donovan; Ibid (Simpson)*
engineering of consent: *Ibid (Simpson)*
The Office of Policy Coordination (OPC): *Office of Policy Coordination, wikipedia.org/wiki/Office_of_Policy_Coordination; Ibid*
The Center for Research in Social Systems: *War on the Mind, Peter Watson*
continued into the 1960s and 1970s: *Science of Coercion, Christopher Simpson; Ibid*
A very substantial fraction of the funding: *Ibid (Simpson)*
Reece Committee investigated parts of this network: *Foundations, Rene Wormser*

Small–Scale Wars

Effects-Based Operations

are US military concepts that began: *Effects-Based Operations, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Effects-Based_Operations*
Operations conceived and planned: *Effects-Based Effects-Based Operations Operations: A Grand Challenge for the Analytical Community, Paul K. Davis, (RAND, 2001)*
Coordinated sets of actions directed: *Department of Defense, Command and Control Research Program (CCRP), Effects Based Operations: Applying Network Centric Warfare in Peace, Crisis, and War, November 2002, Edward A. Smith*
These operations are used against asymmetric political: *Ibid*

Network-Centric Warfare

a linking of people, weapons platforms: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*
an information superiority-enabled concept: *Network Centric Warfare: Developing and Leveraging Information Superiority, David S. Alberts, John J. Garstka, Frederick P. Stein, (Department of Defense C4SI Cooperative Research Program, 2000)*
It uses a network-based approach: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*
Also connected to the C4ISR: *Department of Defense, Office of Force Transformation, The Implementation of Network-Centric Warfare, January 5, 2005; Ibid*
Netwar also employs PsyOp: *Ibid*
It includes the various dispersed nodes: *Ibid (RAND)*
Assisting these forces are PVOs, NGOs: *Ibid*

Military Operations Other Than War

The nation where MOOTW: *MOOTW, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Military_operations_other_than_war; Joint Chiefs of Staff, Military Operations Other Than War, Joint Doctrine, J-7 Operational Plans and Interoperability Directorate*
Because of this, the operations: *Ibid*

legitimacy is a condition based: *Ibid (J-7)*

The joint interagency and international operation: *Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008; Federation of American Scientists, Air Force Doctrine Document, Military Operations Other Than War, October 5, 1996; Department of the Army, Decisive Force: The Army In Theater Operations (FM 100-7)*

quickly and efficiently identify, isolate, and neutralize threats: *Strategic Studies Institute, US Army War College, Nonlethality and American Land Power: Strategic Context and Operational Concepts, June 15, 1998, Douglas C. Lovelace, Jr., Steven Metz*

Some of these activities are conducted: *Joint Chiefs of Staff, Military Operations Other Than War, Joint Doctrine, J-7 Operational Plans and Interoperability Directorate*

The C2 faction uses the term: *Ibid*

A MOOTW campaign is planned: *Ibid*

show of force operations (SOFO): *Ibid*

All of these forces are used to compel: *An assessment of Non-lethal Weapons Science and Technology, National Research Council; Naval War College, Newport R.I., Logistics in Support of Operations Other than War, David A. Larson, May 19, 1997; Association of the United States Army, The Land Warfare Papers, Defining Asymmetric Warfare, September 2006, David L. Buffaloe*

The term MOOTW is being: *Ibid*

Peace Operations

Peace operations (PO), also called peacekeeping operations: *Peacekeeping Operations, www.un.org/Depts/dpko/dpko/info/page3.htm; Department of the Army , Peace Operations, FM 100-23, December 30, 1994; Joint Publication 3-07.3, Peace Operations, October 17, 2007*

The US Army Peace Operations manual: *Ibid (FM 100-23)*

PO are crisis response and limited contingency: *Joint Publication 3-07.3, Peace Operations, October 17, 2007*

unique and dynamic instrument: *Peacekeeping Operations, www.un.org/Depts/dpko/dpko/index.asp*

The UN Charter gives the UN Security Council: *Peacekeeping, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peacekeeping; Ibid*

These interagency, international operations: J*oint Publication 3-07.3, Peace Operations, October 17, 2007; Peacekeeping Operations, www.un.org/Depts/dpko/dpko/info/page3.htm; Peacekeeping Operations, www.un.org/Depts/dpko/dpko/index.asp; Department of the Army, Peace Operations, FM 100-23, December 30, 1994; Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008; United Nations, Peacekeeping Operations: Principles and Guidelines, Department of Peacekeeping Operations, January 2008*

To help coordinate their activities: *Council on Foreign Relations, Report of an Independent Task Force, Non-Lethal Technologies: Military Options and Implications, 1995, Malcolm H. Wiener*

Over the years, UN peacekeeping: *Peacekeeping Operations, www.un.org/Depts/dpko/dpko/info/page3.htm; Peacekeeping Operations, www.un.org/Depts/dpko/dpko/index.asp*

The UN has a direct impact on the political: *Ibid*

while maintaining the peace, other adversaries: *Department of the Army, Peace Operations, FM 100-23, December 30, 1994*

In addition to regular military force: *Council on Foreign Relations, Report of an Independent Task Force, Non-Lethal Technologies: Military Options and Implications, 1995, Malcolm H. Wiener; Science and Global Security, Acoustic Weapons Prospective Assessment, 2001, Volume 9, Jürgen Altmann*

PO includes three basic areas: *Department of the Army, Peace Operations, FM 100-23, December 30, 1994; Joint Publication 3-07.3, Peace Operations, October 17, 2007; Peace Enforcement, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peace_enforcement*

All PO require perceived legitimacy: *Ibid*
Support to diplomacy includes: *Ibid (FM 100-23)*
Peace building (PB) are post-conflict: *United Nations, Peacekeeping Operations: Principles and Guidelines, Department of Peacekeeping Operations, January 2008; Joint Publication 3-07.3, Peace Operations, October 17, 2007; Ibid*
It is a complex, long-term process: *Peace Enforcement, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peace_enforcement; Ibid (FM 100-23; JP 3-07.3)*
PM includes meetings with leaders: *Ibid*
Conflict prevention, also called preventative: *Ibid (FM 100-23, JP 3-07.3)*
Peacekeeping (PK) are military or paramilitary: *United Nations, Peacekeeping Operations: Principles and Guidelines, Department of Peacekeeping Operations, January 2008; Peacekeeping, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peacekeeping*
Most PK operations originate: *Joint Publication 3-07.3, Peace Operations, October 17, 2007; Department of the Army, Peace Operations, FM 100-23, December 30, 1994*
Peace enforcement (PE) is the practice: *United Nations, Peacekeeping Operations: Principles and Guidelines, Department of Peacekeeping Operations, January 2008; Peace Enforcement, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peace_enforcement; Ibid (JP 3-07.3)*
The application, with the authorization: *Ibid (UN)*
the application of military force: *Department of the Army, Peace Operations, FM 100-23, December 30, 1994*
It may include combat actions: *Joint Publication 3-07.3, Peace Operations, October 17, 2007; Ibid*
PE is authorized by the UN Security: *United Nations, Peacekeeping Operations: Principles and Guidelines, Department of Peacekeeping Operations, January 2008; Peacekeeping, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peacekeeping; Ibid (JP 3-07.3)*

Low-Intensity Conflict

Low-Intensity Conflict (LIC) is a political-military: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007; Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology, Lt Col, David J. Dean, USAF, Editor*
The term LIC is being phased: *Association of the United States Army, The Land Warfare Papers, Defining Asymmetric Warfare, September 2006, David L. Buffaloe*

Irregular Warfare

Irregular Warfare (IW) consists of violent: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007; Joint Warfighting Center, Irregular Warfare Special Study, August 4, 2006*
Some of these clandestine conflicts: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007*
These are global, inter-agency, political: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*
IW is a political struggle: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Ibid*
One of IW's primary uses: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007; Ibid*
Low visibility, covert operations: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007; Ibid (Department of the Army)*
Although IW is a violent struggle: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007; Ibid*

undermining an enemy's popular support: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

Potential enemies are those who: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007*

The enemies are state and nonstate actors: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

if you are trying to influence the population: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007*

IW, says the US Army, requires that the government: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

These global operations are composed: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006; US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007*

It uses a C4ISR: *Ibid (US Air Force)*

To recruit a HN's indigenous: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007*

In their Irregular Warfare document: *Ibid*

These operations are being used increasingly: *Ibid*

Waging protracted IW depends: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

IW is also used to conceal US: *US Marine Corps Combat Development Command and US Special Operations Command Center, Multi-Service Concept for Irregular Warfare, August 2006*

Specific attrition-based tactics: *US Air Force Doctrine Document 2-3, Irregular Warfare, August 1, 2007; Joint Warfighting Center, Irregular Warfare Special Study, August 4, 2006; Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007; Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008; Ibid*

Terrorism will be used: *Ibid (DOD/JOC)*

Unconventional Warfare

Operations conducted by, with: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

UW includes a wide spectrum: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007; Department of the Army, Decisive Force: The Army In Theater Operations (FM 100-7)*

These are interagency, international operations: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

The interagency uses multiple interrelated intelligence: *Ibid*

Based on these evaluations and the resulting: *Ibid*

The US Army says that in order to accomplish: *Ibid*

The primary value of the mass base: *Ibid*

One example of this: *Federation of American Scientists, Air Force Doctrine Document, Military Operations Other Than War, October 5, 1996*

The interagency force: *Department of the Army, Army Special Operations Forces, Unconventional Warfare (FM 3-05.130), September 2008*

Without recognized legitimacy: *Ibid*

A combination of offensive and defensive: *Ibid*

Asymmetric Warfare

The Defining Asymmetric Warfare report: *Association of the United States Army, The Land Warfare Papers, Defining Asymmetric Warfare, September 2006, David L. Buffaloe*

AW is an interagency, international operation: *Asymmetry and US Military strategy: Definition, Background, And Strategic Concepts, January 2001, Steven Metz, Douglas V. Johnson; US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, Information Operations and Asymmetric Warfare…Are We Ready?, April 09, 2002, LTC LaWarren V. Patterson; Ibid*

The US Army refers: *Ibid (US Army, Defining Asymmetric Warfare)*

The enemy wages information warfare: *Ibid*

One solution to these threats: *US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, Information Operations and Asymmetric Warfare…Are We Ready?, April 09, 2002, LTC LaWarren V. Patterson*

The NLW and PsyOp attacks against: *Asymmetry and US Military strategy: Definition, Background, And Strategic Concepts, January 2001, Steven Metz, Douglas V. Johnson; Association of the United States Army, The Land Warfare Papers, Defining Asymmetric Warfare, September 2006, David L. Buffaloe*

Civil-Military Operations

Those military operations conducted: *Joint Publication 3-07.3, Peace Operations, October 17, 2007*

The purpose of CMO is to consolidate: *Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008*

It is used across the full spectrum: *Department of Defense, Irregular Warfare (IW), Joint Operating Concept (JOC), September 11, 2007; Ibid*

CMO are interagency and global: *Joint Warfighting Center, Irregular Warfare Special Study, August 4, 2006; Department of the Army, Civil Affairs Operations, FM 3-05.40 (FM 41-10), September 2006; Ibid (JP 3-57)*

The HN provides civil and military: *NATO, Civil-Military Co-Operation (CIMIC), Doctrine (AJP-9), June 2003; Ibid (JP 3-57)*

CMO is coordinated with the United Nations: *Ibid (JP 3-57)*

A CMOC is established: *NATO, Civil-Military Co-Operation (CIMIC), Doctrine (AJP-9), June 2003; Ibid (JP 3-57)*

At the strategic, operational: *Ibid (JP 3-57)*

the "comprehensive use" of intergovernmental: *Ibid*

These takeovers may be performed in the absence: *Joint Warfighting Center, Irregular Warfare Special Study, August 4, 2006*

After dealing with irregular threats: *NATO, Civil-Military Co-Operation (CIMIC), Doctrine (AJP-9), June 2003*

During the occupation, the tactics: *Joint Warfighting Center, Irregular Warfare Special Study, August 4, 2006; Joint Publication 3-57, Civil-Military Operations, July 08, 2008*

Fourth Generation Warfare (4GW)

The theory suggests that states: *The Sling and The Stone: On War in the 21st Century, Colonel Thomas X. Hammes, USMC, (Zenith Press, 2004)*

The first generation began in 1648: *Defense and National Interest, Fourth-Generation Warfare is Here, October 15, 2001, Harold A. Gould and Franklin C. Spinney; Understanding Fourth Generation War, January 15, 2004, William S. Lind; Institute for Defense Analyses for Office of the Under Secretary of Defense, Learning to Adapt to Asymmetric Threats, August 2005, John Tillson, MG. Waldo D. Freeman, US Army (Ret), Capt. William R. Burns, US Navy (Ret), Lt Col. John Michel, US Air Force, Col. Jack A. LeCuyer, US Army (Ret), MG. Robert H. Scales, US Army (Ret), Dr. D. Robert Worley*

It consisted of mass armies: *Marine Corps Gazette, The Changing Face of War: Into the Fourth Generation, October 1989, William S. Lind, Colonel Keith Nightengale (USA), Captain John F. Schmitt (USMC), Colonel Joseph W. Sutton (USA), Lieutenant Colonel Gary I. Wilson (USMCR); Military Response to Fourth Generation Warfare in Afghanistan, May 5, 2002, Greg Wilcox, Gary I. Wilson; Ibid (Gould, Spinney)*

Second Generation Warfare emerged: *Understanding Fourth Generation War, January 15, 2004, William S. Lind; Institute for Defense Analyses for Office of the Under Secretary of Defense, Learning to Adapt to Asymmetric Threats, August 2005, John Tillson, MG. Waldo D. Freeman, US Army (Ret), Capt. William R. Burns, US Navy (Ret), Lt Col. John Michel, US Air Force, Col. Jack A. LeCuyer, US Army (Ret), MG. Robert H. Scales, US Army (Ret), Dr. D. Robert Worley; Ibid (Wilcox, Wilson)*

It peaked during WWI: *Ibid*

Third Generation Warfare was developed: *Defense and National Interest, Fourth-Generation Warfare is Here, October 15, 2001, Harold A. Gould and Franklin C. Spinney; Ibid (Lind)*

It was nonlinear and did not: *Ibid*

Fourth Generation Warfare (4GW): *Fourth Generation Warfare, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fourth_generation_warfare; Ibid (Lind)*

It consists of violent and non-violent: *Retrospective, April 21, 2009, William S. Lind*

Violent examples: *Fourth Generation Warfare, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fourth_generation_warfare*

a contest for legitimacy between: *Retrospective, April 21, 2009, William S. Lind*

4GW has also been portrayed as: *Institute for Defense Analyses for Office of the Under Secretary of Defense, Learning to Adapt to Asymmetric Threats, August 2005, John Tillson, MG. Waldo D. Freeman, US Army (Ret), Capt. William R. Burns, US Navy (Ret), Lt Col. John Michel, US Air Force, Col. Jack A. LeCuyer, US Army (Ret), MG. Robert H. Scales, US Army (Ret), Dr. D. Robert Worley; Military Response to Fourth Generation Warfare in Afghanistan, May 5, 2002, Greg Wilcox, Gary I. Wilson; Small Wars Journal, 4th Generation Warfare, February 2006, Captain John W. Bellflower, USAF; Understanding Fourth Generation War, January 15, 2004, William S. Lind; Royal Austro-Hungarian Marine Corps, Fourth Generation War (FMFM 1-A)*

The Fourth Generation War manual published: *Ibid (FMFM 1-A)*

Forces on the battlefield become more dispersed: *Marine Corps Gazette, The Changing Face of War: Into the Fourth Generation, October 1989, William S. Lind, Colonel Keith Nightengale (USA), Captain John F. Schmitt (USMC), Colonel Joseph W. Sutton (USA), Lieutenant Colonel Gary I. Wilson (USMCR); Military Response to Fourth Generation Warfare in Afghanistan, May 5, 2002, Greg Wilcox, Gary I. Wilson; Understanding Fourth Generation War, January 15, 2004, William S. Lind*

According to the theory, 4GW Forces: *Ibid (Gazette; Wilcox, Wilson)*

Because 4GW uses the indigenous population: *Defense and National Interest, Fourth-Generation Warfare is Here, October 15, 2001, Harold A. Gould and Franklin C. Spinney*

According to Lind and his symposium: *Modern Warfare Symposium, August 4, 2005, William S. Lind*

their most important 4GW function: *Modern Warfare Symposium, On War, August 10, 2005, William S. Lind; The 9/11 Commission Report: Reorganization, Not Reform, July 29, 2004, William S. Lind*

4GW will have no definable battlefields: *Marine Corps Gazette, The Changing Face of War: Into the Fourth Generation, October 1989, William S. Lind, Colonel Keith Nightengale (USA), Captain John F. Schmitt (USMC), Colonel Joseph W. Sutton (USA), Lieutenant Colonel Gary I. Wilson (USMCR); Fourth Generation Warfare, www.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fourth_generation_warfare*

RAND refers to this: *In Athena's Camp, RAND Corporation*

PsyOp and directed-energy weapons: *Small Wars Journal, 4th Generation Warfare, February 2006, Captain John W. Bellflower, USAF; Marine Corps Gazette, The Changing Face of War: Into the Fourth Generation, October 1989, William S. Lind, Colonel Keith Nightengale (USA), Captain John F. Schmitt (USMC), Colonel Joseph W. Sutton (USA), Lieutenant Colonel Gary I. Wilson (USMCR)*

build their plans around a strategic: *Military Review, Fourth Generation Warfare Evolves, Fifth Emerges, May-June 2007, Col T.X. Hammes, USMC retired*

drastic measures must be taken: *Defense and National Interest, Fourth-Generation Warfare is Here, October 15, 2001, Harold A. Gould and Franklin C. Spinney*

A state's 4GW targets will be primarily: *Marine Corps Gazette, The Changing Face of War: Into the Fourth Generation, October 1989, William S. Lind, Colonel Keith Nightengale (USA), Captain John F. Schmitt (USMC), Colonel Joseph W. Sutton (USA), Lieutenant Colonel Gary I. Wilson (USMCR)*

Other state enemies are those who value: *Defense and National Interest, Fourth-Generation Warfare is Here, October 15, 2001, Harold A. Gould and Franklin C. Spinney*

New and in some instances very unpleasant: *Ibid*

Index